

ROCK AND ROLL

SIXTH EDITION

Its History
and Stylistic
Development

Joe Stuessy
Scott Lipscomb

A dark silhouette of an electric guitar is positioned horizontally across the top of the page. The body of the guitar is on the left, and the neck with tuning pegs extends towards the right.

Rock and Roll:

Its History and Stylistic Development

A dark silhouette of a guitar is positioned horizontally across the top half of the cover, behind the title text.

Rock and Roll: Its History and Stylistic Development

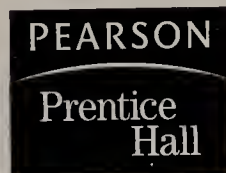
Sixth Edition

Joe Stuessy

Texas State University—San Marcos

Scott Lipscomb

University of Minnesota



Upper Saddle River, NJ 07458



Contents

<i>Acknowledgments</i>	<i>xi</i>
1 INTRODUCTION	1
Why Study Rock?	1
Why This Book?	1
Before We Begin: A Liberal View of Rock History	3
2 THE ROOTS OF ROCK	6
Overview: The Early 1950s	6
Pop Music	8
Musical Close-Up: The Elements of Music	10
Country and Western	16
Musical Close-Up: Instrumentation in Rock and Roll	17
Rhythm and Blues	22
Musical Close-Up: The 12-Bar Blues	23
3 THE EMERGENCE OF ROCK AND ROLL	26
Overview: Crossovers and Covers	26
Bill Haley and the Comets	27
Elvis Presley	28
Three Basic Trends Emerge	33
Musical Close-Up: Rhythm in Early Rock and Roll	39
4 ROCK AND ROLL: 1950s STYLE	42
Overview: Five Style Setters of the 1950s	42
Little Richard	42
Fats Domino	45
Chuck Berry	46

	Jerry Lee Lewis	47
	Buddy Holly	49
	Others in the 1950s	51
	The Industry	56
	Musical Close-Up: Is Soft Rock Really Rock?	59
5	TRANSITION: THE EARLY 1960s	63
	Overview: The Fragmentation of the Market	63
	The Beginnings of the Folk Music Trend	65
	Surfing Music	69
	The Dance Craze	72
	Musical Close-Up: Musical Texture and the Beach Boys	73
6	THE BEATLES	77
	Overview: Revolution within a Revolution	77
	The Early Beatles	78
	The Middle Period: Experimentation	87
	The Later Beatles: Revolution	91
	Musical Close-Up: The Technical Side of the Beatles' Music	102
7	THE BRITISH INVASION	113
	Overview: The British Are Coming!	113
	The Rolling Stones	114
	All the Others	125
	Musical Close-Up: The Musical Style of the Rolling Stones	128
8	FOLK MUSIC AND FOLK ROCK	132
	Overview: The Youth Generation of the 1960s	132
	Bob Dylan	133
	The Byrds	136
	The Mamas and the Papas	138
	Simon and Garfunkel	139
	Other Folk Rockers	141
	Musical Close-Up: The Song Style of Bob Dylan	143
9	SOUL AND MOTOWN	148
	Overview: Soul Music: Its Definition and History	148
	Atlantic and Stax	150
	Aretha Franklin	152
	James Brown	153
	Motown	157
	Diana Ross and the Supremes	163
	Musical Close-Up: Melody and the Soul Singer	165
10	SAN FRANCISCO	169
	Overview: America Counters the British Invasion	169
	The Jefferson Airplane	171
	The Grateful Dead	172
	Janis Joplin	175

Other San Francisco Groups	176
Acid Rock Outside San Francisco	177
Musical Close-Up: The Art of Improvisation	180
11 JAZZ ROCK	184
Overview: A Tale of Sibling Rivalry and Its Resolution	184
Blood, Sweat, and Tears	185
Chicago	189
Other Jazz Rock Groups	191
Musical Close-Up: An Analysis of “Symphony for the Devil/Sympathy for the Devil” (Blood, Sweat, and Tears)	192
12 ART ROCK	198
Overview: Rock as a “Legitimate” Musical Vocabulary	198
Rock with Orchestra	199
Rock Operas and Theatrical Works	202
Nontheatrical Art Rock by Unaccompanied Rock Groups	206
Musical Close-Up: An Analysis of <i>Karn Evil 9</i> by Emerson, Lake, and Palmer	212
13 MAINSTREAM ROCK	219
Overview: The Decade of Nondirection	219
Mainstream Trends of the 1970s	221
Mainstream Rock in the 1980s	229
Mainstream Rock Beyond the 1980s	233
Musical Close-Up: A Look at Rock Lyrics	235
14 THE CONTINUING FRAGMENTATION OF ROCK	239
Overview: Substyles of the 1960s Evolve into the 1970s and Beyond	239
Art Rock Evolves into Progressive Rock	240
Jazz Rock Evolves into Fusion	242
The Singer-Songwriters of the 1970s	246
Folk Influences in the 1980s and 1990s	252
Country Rock and Progressive Country	253
The Jam Band Phenomenon	260
Soft Rock of the 1970s	261
Soft Rock Continues to Evolve	264
Musical Close-Up: Country or Rock?	268
15 HEAVY METAL	275
Overview: “We’re Not Gonna Take It Anymore”	275
British Heavy Metal Evolves	276
American Heavy Metal	279
The 1980s: Heavy Metal Continues	282
Musical Close-Up: Meter in Heavy Metal and Alternative Rock	288
16 DANCE MUSIC	290
Overview: The Selling of Rock—Changes in the 1980s and 1990s	290
The Return of Dance Music	294

Disco	295
Motown Keeps Dancing	298
Other Music for Dancing	301
Dancing Through the 1990s and Beyond	303
The Latin Invasion	307
Musical Close-Up: The Anatomy of Disco	309
17 RAP AND HIP-HOP	313
Overview: Technology, the Internet, and the Music Industry	313
Rap's Beginnings	316
Rap Comes of Age	321
Other Rappers	324
New Jack Swing	326
Musical Close-Up: Expressive Musical Performance—	
Rhythmic Delivery of Rap	328
18 ALTERNATIVE STYLES	331
Overview: Boomers and Postboomers	331
Alternative Rock: The Problem of Definitions	333
The Beginnings of Alternative Rock: The 1970s	335
Punk Movements: Back to Basics	336
Alternative Styles	342
Grunge	343
Indie Rock	350
Punk III: Neo-Punk Propels Rock into the New Millennium	351
Prog Rock	353
Musical Close-Up: Alternative Views of Alternative Rock	356
19 AN OVERVIEW AND AN EDITORIAL	361
Overview: Eight Basic Statements	361
Editorial	368
Where to Now?	371
DISCOGRAPHY	373
A Basic Recorded Library of Rock and Roll	373
Selected Discography	374
Anthologies	379
Music DVDs and Rockumentaries	380
BIBLIOGRAPHY	381
GLOSSARY	387
INDEX	397



Acknowledgments

Even rock and rollers grow older. Some of the key figures in the early chapters of this book are now in their 60s (or deceased). The remaining Fab Four and the Bad Boys of Rock are over 60 years old. I began playing in rock and roll bands in about 1957, at the age of 14. Some quick math reveals that I, too, crossed the mid-century mark over a decade ago. While creating the third edition of this book, it became obvious that a new chapter was needed on recent trends in rock. I feared that my appreciation for and knowledge of most post-1980s rock left much to be desired. My attitude toward much of this recent music was that of a crusty curmudgeon. The need for a more sympathetic (but still critical) approach was apparent.

Dr. Scott Lipscomb has, I believe, admirably filled this need in the third and subsequent editions. I continue to appreciate his contributions.

I also want to thank Dr. Charles Eagle, former professor of music at Southern Methodist University. Over the past 35 years, he has greatly influenced my growth as a musician, scholar, and person. He has helped me see beyond the trivial, think beyond the obvious, and feel beyond the immediate.

I have taught a course in rock music for over 35 years. From the more than 10,000 students in these classes, I have learned a great deal about how non-music majors interact with music. Many of these students—at Southern Methodist University, the University of Texas at San Antonio, and Texas State University—have made helpful comments, asked provocative questions, offered loans of recordings, and shared important pieces of information. I am grateful to all of them for their help and interest.

Special thanks go to the many people at Prentice Hall who helped see this project through to its completion.

Finally, I want to thank my family for their unswerving support. My parents, Mr. and Mrs. C. J. Stuessy, never gave less than their total support, whether I was playing a piano concerto with the Houston Symphony or “Rock Around the Clock” with my teenage rock and roll combo. My wife Chris has injected a whole new spirit into my life and work. Her unwavering love and support are appreciated more than I can say. And my kids—Debbi

and Kevin—have shown continuing interest in and appreciation of the fact that Dad would be writing a book about rock and roll!

—Joe Stuessy

Many individuals played an important role in the preparation of this text. I am extremely fortunate to have benefited greatly over the years from the knowledge of my many students at the University of California, Los Angeles, the University of Texas at San Antonio, Northwestern University, and the University of Minnesota. I arrive in the classroom every day, well prepared for the purpose of filling the fertile minds of my students with the wonders of music, and yet my students manage to teach me something new during every class session. Particularly important to more recent developments referenced in Chapters 13–18 of this text was the substantial amount of assistance received from several gifted past students. Sarah Williams, Jennifer Walshe, Michael Gaertner, and Kristin Bird were extremely helpful in providing an additional (i.e., younger) perspective regarding current groups, artists, and musical trends. Without their input, the more recent evolutions evident in popular music would not have been covered with near the depth or insight that you will find in these pages. I would also like to express my appreciation to Chelsea Valenzo-Duggan and Alissa Yatchko for their assistance with a variety of research- and library-related tasks. Additionally, as many scholars working in the field of popular music have found, the research of Joel Whitburn and his published compilations of dates, lists, and statistics derived from the *Billboard* charts were indispensable to our work. His kind and unhesitating willingness to assist personally with a couple of requests is greatly appreciated by both authors. Likewise, the *Rolling Stone Encyclopedia of Rock & Roll* (3rd edition) was a valuable and oft-used resource. The Web site of the Recording Industry Association of America (<http://www.riaa.com>) and the official *Billboard* site (<http://www.billboard.com>) were indispensable in finding up-to-date information on Gold and Platinum certification and chart histories of various recordings. Of course, special thanks to my coauthor, Joe Stuessy, our editors Richard Carlin and Lauren Wilcox, and Prentice Hall for allowing me the privilege of participating in the revision of this sixth edition text, the fourth with which I have been involved.

Most important, I want to acknowledge the essential role my family plays in every aspect of my life and the patience they have shown as I spent many late nights and weekends burning the midnight oil to complete this labor of love. I would like to express my heartfelt appreciation to my loving wife, Jordana, and our children Sterling, Kevin, and J.D.

—Scott Lipscomb

REVIEWERS

Walter Carr
Portland Community College
Portland, OR

M. Douglas Jones
Jefferson Community & Technical School
Louisville, KY

Terence O'Grady
University of Wisconsin
Green Bay, WI

Lawrence Ferrara
City College of San Francisco
San Francisco, CA

James Payne
University of Nebraska
Kearney, NE

John Harding
Central Piedmont Community College
Charlotte, NC

LYRIC PERMISSIONS

“My Back Pages” © 1964 by Warner Bros. Inc. Copyright renewed 1992 by Special Rider Music. All rights reserved. International copyright secured. Reprinted by permission.

“Mr. Tambourine Man” © 1964, 1965 by Warner Bros. Inc. Copyright renewed 1992 by Special Rider Music. All rights reserved. International copyright secured. Reprinted by permission.

“Blowin’ in the Wind” © 1962 by Warner Bros. Inc. Copyright renewed 1990 by Special Rider Music. All rights reserved. International copyright secured. Reprinted by permission.

“The Times They Are A-Changin’” © 1963, 1964 by Warner Bros. Inc. Copyright renewed 1991 by Special Rider Music. All rights reserved. International copyright secured. Reprinted by permission.

“And Your Bird Can Sing” © 1966 (renewed) by Sony/ATV Tunes LLC. Words and music by John Lennon and Paul McCartney. All rights administered by Sony/ATV Music Publishing, 8 Music Square West, Nashville, TN 37203. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

“Being for the Benefit of Mr. Kite” © 1967 (renewed) by Sony/ATV Tunes LLC. Words and music by John Lennon and Paul McCartney. All rights administered by Sony/ATV Music Publishing, 8 Music Square West, Nashville, TN 37203. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

“Help” © 1965 (renewed) by Sony/ATV Songs LLC. Words and music by John Lennon and Paul McCartney. All rights administered by Sony/ATV Music Publishing, 8 Music Square West, Nashville, TN 37203. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

“Tutti Frutti” © 1955 (renewed) by Sony/ATV Songs LLC. Words and music by Richard Penniman, Dorothy La Bostrie, and Joe Lubin. All rights administered by Sony/ATV Music Publishing, 8 Music Square West, Nashville, TN 37203. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

“Hound Dog” by Jerry Leiber and Mike Stoller. Copyright © 1956 by Elvis Presley Music Inc. and Lion Publishing Co. Inc. Copyright renewed and assigned to Gladys Music and Universal-MCA Music Publishing, a division of Universal Studios Inc. All rights administered by Cherry Lane Music Publishing Company Inc. and Chrysalis Music. International copyright secured. All rights reserved.

“Copkiller” © 1992 by Universal-MCA Music Limited. Written by Ernie Cunnigan and Tracy Marrow. Administered by Universal-PolyGram International Publishing Inc., OBO Itself, Ernknesea Music, and Rhyme Syndicate Music (ASCAP). International copyright secured. All rights reserved.

Introduction

Why Study Rock?

Let us begin with the question, Why study rock and roll? One might reply somewhat flip-pantly, "Because it's there!" But the question deserves a more thoughtful answer than that.

First, we must realize that rock and roll is basically and primarily a musical style. It utilizes the same musical elements (rhythm, pitch, dynamics, form, timbre, etc.) found in all styles of music. How these ingredients are combined, in what proportions and with what characteristics, defines rock as a distinct musical style.

As with all musical styles, there are some good examples, some bad examples, and a lot in between. It is as inaccurate to say that all rock is bad as it is to say that all classical music is good. Such musical value judgments should rest not on a total style per se, but on how creatively and skillfully the musical creator uses the musical resources appropriate to the specific style.

But rock and roll is more than just a musical style. It is an extremely important and influential social factor. When the final figures are in from the second half of the 20th century, rock will undoubtedly prove to be the single most potent economic factor in the multibillion-dollar music industry. Musically, rock has influenced the music we hear on television, in films, and in commercials. It has influenced jazz, church music, classical music, and even its own ancestors: rhythm and blues and country and western. Socially, rock culture's influence has been witnessed in hairstyles, clothing, language, lifestyles, and politics. In other words, any historian of the last half of the 20th century must devote significant consideration to rock and roll being one of the primary forces in our society as a whole (socially, culturally, economically, politically, and musically). Any force that has that kind of impact on society deserves study. That is the purpose of this book.

Why This Book?

Certainly there is no lack of written material on the subject of rock and roll. Over 200 books have been written on Elvis Presley alone. Several books also deal effectively with the general history of rock and roll. So why this book?

Obviously, one driving motivation for any author who sets out to write a book is that there is a need for that new book—specifically, that it will either cover new areas of the

general topic or cover previously discussed areas in a new way. This study of rock hopes to bring to the reader the history of rock and roll with the following four guiding principles in mind:

1. *Don't let the trees get in the way of the forest.* Many books on rock and roll make the admirable attempt to discuss virtually every rock and roll performer who ever plugged in a guitar or stepped up to a microphone. That is not the purpose of this study. Rather, we have attempted to determine major trends and primary influential performers, thus painting the history of rock and roll in broad brush strokes. The result is that many performers in the history of rock are only briefly mentioned in these pages, or not mentioned at all.

To write a study of contemporary (or recent) history in this way is to engage in a continuing exercise in self-control. When we approach the history of the 16th century, for example, we have an easier time identifying the main trends, most influential ideas, and principal characters. Our vantage point from 500 years away allows us to take that perspective. We have the advantage of 20/20 hindsight and know with assurance what really proved to be important in light of subsequent human experience.

But when we look at our own times, our temporal closeness, although it is an advantage in some ways, is also our worst enemy. Our perspective is cluttered with details; we know too much! Therefore, we must repetitively force ourselves to ask questions like, Was this really important in light of what followed? or, Was this so-called new style or idea really a significant departure from that which preceded it? It is hoped, then, that this study will provide the reader with a feeling for the evolution of rock and roll over a 50-year period, not through a recitation of each and every detail along the way, but by means of a broader representation of the general flow of styles, people, and ideas.

2. *Try to "tell it like it is."* Another pitfall of being too close to a subject is that one's personal biases may creep into the writing and prejudice the reader's perspective. As much as possible, we hope that histories are objectively written, but again, our closeness to the subject makes such objectivity difficult (for author and reader). It is fairly easy to be objective about some phenomenon of the 15th century, but we often have strong feelings about ideas, events, and people in our own lifetimes. We are hard-pressed to remain objective about something (such as music) that interacts with us at a very personal level.

Nevertheless, there has been a conscious attempt in this study to outline the history of rock as fairly as possible. Of course, any author is a distinct human being and, therefore, cannot totally escape his or her own particular perspective. Thus, there is always some amount of the author's personality and philosophy reflected in his or her work, no matter how honest the attempt to achieve complete objectivity.

Indeed, we should expect the historian to have subjective opinions about his or her subject. Such opinions, in fact, might prove especially insightful to the reader. In this book, such personal reflections have been stored up to be presented all in one chapter, clearly labeled as such (see Chapter 19). If the comments contained therein prove provocative or instructive, so be it; if not, perhaps they will prove interesting or at least entertaining.

3. *Rock and roll is, first and foremost, music.* Rock and roll is many things: It is show biz; it is money; it is record contracts, Top 40 radio, and role models; it is all this and much more. But strip all that away, and one still comes to one inescapable fact: Rock and roll is a musical style. Many books speak of performers' lives, tell amusing anecdotes, reveal sales statistics, chronicle albums and songs, and analyze lyrics but neglect to describe what is fundamental to all of the above: the music.

Although the current study will include the foregoing elements, it also will address the basic question, What, musically speaking, is rock and roll? It is assumed that most readers will not be conversant with the technical aspects of music (if so, all the better!). Thus, each chapter includes a section that discusses a specific aspect of the music of rock and roll. These sections, called Musical Close-Ups, focus on a particular aspect of the music itself. (The organization of Chapter 2 is a bit different; it has three Musical Close-Ups—one following each of the three main topic areas.) In some of the Musical Close-Ups, various elements of the music are discussed (e.g., rhythm, melody, form, or texture). In other Musical Close-Ups, related musical topics are addressed (e.g., improvisation or lyrics); and in Chapters 11 and 12, specific pieces of music are analyzed in detail.

It is hoped that this approach will remind the reader that the person who is knowledgeable about rock music must know more than album titles, song lyrics, sales charts, and performers' lives. Whereas understanding the social, economic, and political implications of rock and roll is of great importance, understanding the music is fundamental.

4. *Rock and roll is an important part of society.* Rock and roll has not existed in a vacuum. Quite the contrary, it has had a vital and active interrelationship with the general society. Various aspects of this interrelationship (social, economic, and political) will be discussed as appropriate within each chapter. But, in addition to that, each chapter begins with an Overview. These Overview sections provide a general introduction to each chapter's topic, setting the scene for what is to follow. As appropriate, the Overview may discuss where a particular style came from, how it fits into a broader historical perspective, and how it interrelates with other aspects of society.

The sixth edition of this book includes a number of additions and modifications that should be of help to the reader. These changes include the following:

- *Listening Guides.* There are 17 Listening Guides that are new to the sixth edition. Each guide provides a formal analysis plus commentary about what is happening in the music (all correlated to second-by-second timings).
- *Glossary.* The Glossary, near the end of the book, provides definitions for terms that are highlighted in bold face throughout the chapters.
- *Reorganization of material.* There is some redistribution of material (e.g., Chapters 3 and 4) that not only enhances the logical flow of the text, but also creates more comparable chapter lengths.
- *Updated and revised text.* As with each previous edition, the authors have attempted to revise and update the material so that it is as current as possible. More than 20 years have passed since the first edition of this book was published. A 30-year-old art form is now 50 years old. To accommodate for this constantly expanding material, there must be a corresponding tightening of previous material. It is hoped that the sixth edition will achieve a desirable balance between adding the new and preserving the old.
- *New photos.* There are additional photos of more recent performers. Readers of previous editions will also note that some photos (standard publicity shots) have been replaced by more performance-oriented photos.

Before We Begin: A Liberal View of Rock History

When we speak of so-called musical snobs, many people immediately think of the stereotyped classical musician or classical music lover. In fact, musical snobs come in many forms. For example, there are several varieties of jazz snobs. One variety feels that jazz is

the only true American music, dismissing rock, for example, as being a rather decadent musical corruption and a mindless glob of musical nonsense. Even within jazz, there are specialists in snobbery. Some, for instance, feel that the early Dixieland was the only true and classic jazz, with all that follows being a declining aberration of a once-pure style. Others feel that the bop style of the mid- and late 1940s was the apex of jazz history, viewing all that preceded it as being preparatory and that which followed as being a subsequent decline. Some look at a very popular jazz style, such as swing (the big band era music), and vehemently assert that it is not jazz at all!

Similarly, in rock and roll, we have our resident snobs. Like jazz fans, they identify one particular style (such as the Beatles, or Jimi Hendrix, or the Presley–Little Richard style) as the real rock and roll and dismiss most other styles with words of damnation such as *soft rock*, *wimp rock*, *bubblegum rock*, or (worst of all) *commercial junk*! Usually, comments such as these reveal more about the person making the statement than about the music being discussed. Perhaps an accurate translation of these lofty statements would be, “The style I like is real rock; other styles are not.” This is, to say the least, a very narrow-minded and egocentric view of musical style. Perhaps a better perspective is to say, “I prefer this particular style, but I recognize that there are many other legitimate styles that others may prefer.”

This study opts for the latter, rather liberal, view. *Rock* is interpreted here as a broad, generic term under which a diverse subsystem of styles can legitimately exist. The list of substyles is mind-boggling: rockabilly, country rock, folk rock, jazz rock, hard rock, soft rock, punk rock, heavy metal rock, Latin rock, progressive rock, disco, fusion, new wave, reggae, glitter rock, art rock—the list could go on and on. Many labels are simply the artificial creations of the media and the public relations persons who must promote yet another rock band as being somehow “new” and “different.” Often, there is little or nothing new, different, or significant, and the stylistic label has virtually no musical meaning. To give too much credence to this myriad of ministyles would lead to utter bewilderment on the part of the student of rock history. Therefore, we shall propose a very broad organizational pattern for the history of rock.

As we shall see in Chapters 2 and 3, the early formation of rock resulted from the flowing together (in unequal proportions) of three preexisting styles: pop, country and western, and rhythm and blues. Somewhat later, a second infusion came from jazz, folk music, gospel, and classical music (again in unequal proportions). These, then, are the seven basic styles that have flowed into the creation and development of rock. In some instances, these tributaries flowed together into an integrated mainstream, in which the individual donors lost their distinct identities in the mixture known as rock and roll. In other cases, elements of one of the tributaries retained a distinctive presence and created a shading of rock and roll closer to the tributary’s original identity. As an example of this, consider pop music (discussed in Chapter 2). In some ways, pop elements were absorbed into early rock and roll. But we must also note that there has always been a softer side of rock that favors one of its direct ancestors: pop.

In this way, rock is very much like a child as related to parents and grandparents. To a large extent, the child is a blend of characteristics (in unequal proportions) of all these direct ancestors. The child has his or her own distinct look and personality; he or she is not a carbon copy of any one ancestor but is an indefinable mixture. Nevertheless, as he or she develops, there are certain characteristics and behaviors that occasionally remind us very distinctly of one of the parents or grandparents. For example, as the child reaches adolescence, he or she may develop a body build much like Dad’s or display a natural talent for music, reminding us of his or her maternal grandmother.

Two colossal entities will appear in this history of rock music. In some ways, they are similar, but they serve very different purposes. The first, Elvis Presley, was able to bring

together the three tributary streams that led to rock and roll and embody them all within himself. At times, he was the indefinable mixture; at other times, he set one or another of rock's ancestors into clear relief. He was the master chef who blended the ingredients into a new dish, without, however, allowing the distinctiveness of each ingredient to be destroyed.

As with Presley, the incalculable value of the Beatles was their musical breadth. Through their leadership, they pulled rock together one last time and slung it into the future in a variety of fragmented quantities. They were like the boy playing in the snow who gathers up a huge handful of snow, compresses it into a simple ball, and then hurls it into the air, only to see it fragment into dozens of pieces.

Let us begin in the early 1950s—a time when almost no one had heard the term *rock and roll* or had any idea of the musical and social revolution that was about to occur.

The Roots of Rock

KEY TERMS

contours	triad	volume
rhythm	root	dynamics
tempo	octave	form
pitch	tonality	indies
melody	key	yodel
range	timbre	sequencer
conjunct	texture	Musical Instrument
disjunct	monophony	Digital Interface
motive	homophony	(MIDI)
harmony	polyphony	12-bar blues
chord	synthesizer	

Overview: The Early 1950s

The General Society

Preceded and followed by turbulent decades, the 1950s seemed serene and comfortable. The late 1920s to mid-1930s were years of extreme financial pressure. The early 1940s were consumed by the most destructive war the world has ever known. From 1950 to 1952, the United States was involved in a so-called police action (war) in Korea. The decade following the 1950s was one of the most turbulent in our nation's history, a time of social and political unrest as well as war (Vietnam).

Certainly no decade is trouble-free. Even the 1950s witnessed several dramatic issues. Senator Joe McCarthy stirred up considerable controversy regarding the invasion of American society by communism. The Supreme Court issued a landmark decision in 1954 that declared the policy of "separate but equal" education for blacks and whites to be unconstitutional. A lingering fear of "the bomb" caused many people to build bomb shelters in their backyards and prompted schools to hold weekly air raid drills.

Despite these concerns, in general, things were relatively good. General Dwight Eisenhower was inaugurated as president in 1953. The economy stabilized with little or no inflation. There was a feeling of well-being throughout the nation. After years of war and depression, American society was finally able to settle down and go on with the business of progress. Families looked forward to a stable and relatively predictable future. The game plan was clear: Do well in school; go to college; marry and raise a family somewhat more affluently than you were raised. The plan called for men to follow their careers and provide well for their families; women were to keep a stable and decent environment functioning at home. If one followed the game plan, personal happiness and professional success were the inevitable rewards.

Gradually, economic affluence sifted down to middle-class families, who were now able to own their own home, buy a new car, take a vacation, and purchase a newcomer to the entertainment scene: a television set. The fascination with television was overwhelming. There were those who would watch a test pattern if nothing else was on! The programming was good, clean family entertainment: variety shows, family comedies, westerns, children's shows, news, cartoons, drama, sports, and music (*Your Hit Parade*).

The popular music of the early 1950s fit the pattern perfectly. Most of the nation was listening to a style of music we shall refer to as pop. This style of music was a continuation of the popular styles of earlier decades. The lyrics typically dealt with innocent boy-girl love; the lyrical and musical content was nonthreatening. Like society in general, pop music sought to be comfortable, pleasant, and righteous; excess was avoided. Musically, it seemed to express a society's desire to be left alone to enjoy the good life, unthreatened by the turmoil, controversy, and ugliness endured in previous decades.

Subcultures

Of course, we oversimplify when we speak of *society*. Although we may use the term to represent the majority of average citizens, we must also recognize a number of subcultures that showed characteristics quite different from the norms of society in general. To begin our study of rock and roll, we must focus on two of these subcultures.

The black culture of the early 1950s was quite distinct from the general white middle-class society. Racial segregation was the norm, especially in the South and the Southwest. It is hard for us to realize today that it was just over 50 years ago that blacks were required to sit in the last three or four rows of city buses. Public areas usually had separate drinking fountains and bathrooms for colored and white. Blacks were routinely barred from many public accommodations such as hotels and restaurants. Of course, separate housing districts and schools existed for blacks and whites (even after the 1954 Supreme Court decision barring segregation in public schools).

With such strict segregation, it is only natural that the segregated culture would maintain its own distinct characteristics such as speech, dance, religion, dress, and music. Among the musical styles associated with the black culture were jazz (in a variety of sub-styles), gospel (a religiously oriented style), and rhythm and blues. Rhythm and blues (R&B) is of great importance in our story of the development of rock and roll. Various blues styles had developed during the 20th century.

Related to jazz and the spiritual and gospel styles, R&B grew as a distinct style unto itself. Just as blacks were segregated from white society, so R&B music existed separately from the pop music market. R&B had its own performers, record companies, and consumers. R&B records, often referred to as race records, sold within their own distinct market. An R&B performer or record rarely crossed over into the national pop market (conversely, pop music rarely infiltrated the R&B market).

A second subculture was identified with country and western (C&W) music. The poorer whites of the South developed a style of folk music often referred to as hillbilly. As time passed and the style spread, variations inevitably occurred (e.g., bluegrass and western swing). As with R&B, the C&W market was quite distinct from the larger pop market. Appealing primarily to poorer rural whites in the South, Midwest, and Southwest, C&W maintained its own performers, record companies, and consumers. Pop songs rarely crossed over into the C&W market. However, a few C&W performers and songs managed to break into the national pop scene (more about that later).

Each of these three markets—pop, R&B, and C&W—contributed in varying degrees to the formation of rock and roll. R&B was by far the heaviest musical contributor; C&W also made its contribution; pop music contributed the least but must not be overlooked.

Pop Music

Tin Pan Alley

To appreciate the tremendous impact of rock and roll, one must first understand the nature of the popular music the nation listened to in the early 1950s. Pop music was derived from the long Tin Pan Alley tradition, with influences from the old swing period of the 1930s and early 1940s, Hollywood movie music, and Broadway show tunes. Tin Pan Alley is the name given to an area of New York City that became the center of popular music publishing from the late 1800s to the late 1950s. Tin Pan Alley songs were written primarily by white professional songwriters. Although the style changed over the decades, certain general characteristics were constant.

Typically, the lyrics were nonoffensive, noncontroversial, and most often dealt with simple boy-girl romantic love. Usually, Tin Pan Alley songs had a very straight, uncomplicated rhythm, with four (or sometimes three) beats to each measure. The rhythm was kept in the background of the musical fabric. Melodies were very important; they were usually rather easy to remember, so the average person could sing or whistle them after hearing them a few times. The melodies were pretty in the traditional sense; they usually moved freely within one octave (sometimes a little more) and moved stepwise or with small leaps. The melodic **contours** were interesting, much like a gently undulating curve. The musical material was symmetrically organized into units of four measures (called phrases). Tempos were usually moderate to slow; faster tunes were typically bouncy and cute, often with light or humorous lyrics. Usually, the songs were recorded by professional singers with fine voices and were accompanied by a full orchestra and small chorus.

This Tin Pan Alley tradition was still very much alive in the pop songs of the early 1950s. Songs from Broadway shows and Hollywood movies conformed to the popular style and provided a wealth of material. Table 2-1 gives 10 representative selections of the Top 50 songs from 1950 to 1954, with a brief description of each.

Notice that all but two of these songs are in a slow to moderate tempo; most are love-oriented; several are pure instrumentals. Two of the songs deserve additional comment. Nat “King” Cole’s “Too Young” is a rather rare example of an early 1950s pop song that speaks directly to youth. Specifically, it commiserates with a person who is told that he or she is too young to really be in love. Johnnie Ray’s “Cry” is unusual because of the vocal style, which, due to Ray’s very emotive performance, almost approaches the shouting level of some early rockers. Note also that only one of the artists, Nat “King” Cole, was black (there were a few other black pop performers, such as the Mills Brothers and the Ink Spots). Note also that most of the songs held their peak popularity for about two months. Usually, there was a period of rising popularity that lasted about four weeks and an equal period of declining popularity. Thus a top song would exist on the charts for 16–20 weeks, sometimes as long as 25 weeks.

TABLE 2-1

Title	Artist	Date of Peak Popularity	Comments
"Goodnight Irene"	The Weavers	Aug.–Nov. 1950	slow, lush, romantic ballad
"Mona Lisa"	Nat "King" Cole	July–Aug. 1950	slow, romantic ballad
"Music, Music, Music"	Teresa Brewer	March–April 1950	upbeat, cute
"Tennessee Waltz"	Patti Page	Jan.–Feb. 1951	moderate tempo; cover of a C&W hit
"Too Young"	Nat "King" Cole	June–July 1951	slow, romantic ballad
"Cry"	Johnnie Ray	Jan.–March 1952	an early "screamer" about lost love
"Wheel of Fortune"	Kay Starr	March–May 1952	moderate to slow; ballad
"Doggie in the Window"	Patti Page	March–May 1953	upbeat; cutesy-pie novelty song
"Wanted"	Perry Como	April–May 1954	slow; lonely-for-love song
"Hey There"	Rosemary Clooney	Sept.–Oct. 1954	slow love song; Broadway show

The Majors

Another facet of the early 1950s pop market was the complete domination by a handful of major recording companies known as the majors—RCA Victor, Columbia, Capitol, Mercury, and Decca. In 1954, of the 50 top-selling discs, 42 were produced by the five majors. Although the majors' biggest income came from pop music, they also produced classical, jazz, and some C&W.

These major companies held a large number of artists under contract. Their promotion and distribution systems were sophisticated and effective. Thus when a new record was to be released, a nationwide promotion campaign was launched, and the product was distributed through a network of middlemen to retail outlets throughout the nation. Several of these major companies also produced phonographs, were tied to radio and television networks and stations, and had subsidiary sheet music publishing operations. They truly seemed to have a stranglehold on the popular music industry.

The huge resources of these companies were used to create a very professional product. Professional composers and arrangers created the songs. The written arrangements



Nat "King" Cole, Eddie Fisher, Tony Bennett, and Frank Sinatra (Source: Michael Ochs Archive Ltd.)

were placed in the hands of professional musicians. Typically, large musical forces were used—a full orchestra and small chorus. All these musicians read their music; there was virtually no improvisation. The lead singers were pros: They read music and had fine voices, with excellent range, superb control, and good voice quality.

The popular music market was national in its scope. Over a period of four to eight weeks, a song's popularity would peak in every regional market. Furthermore, it was not uncommon to have multiple versions of a given hit song. Thus, if an artist on Columbia had commercial success with a particular song, the other companies would quickly produce a version of the same song featuring one of their artists.

Two final characteristics of considerable importance must be underscored. First, the pop music market was adult-oriented. Although the 1950s were years of increasing affluence, the adults still controlled the money in the early years of the decade. The recording companies were controlled by adults; the professional songwriters, performers, and consumers were adults. Teens simply listened to and accepted their parents' music. There seemed to be no real alternative; in fact, most teens saw nothing unusual about the situation.

Finally, the pop music market of the early 1950s was almost exclusively white. Again, the record company personnel, the songwriters, the performers, and the consumers were predominantly white. As with most aspects of the music industry, the basic reason had to do with the pocketbook. The adult whites were the primary consumers; thus the recording industry aimed its product squarely at that market.

Neither the pop music consumer nor the recording industry could have anticipated that within a few years, the music market would experience a total revolution—one that would reverse almost every one of the foregoing characteristics!

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: THE ELEMENTS OF MUSIC

To fully understand any musical style, one must be able to analyze the various elements of music as they exist in that particular style. In this first Musical Close-Up, we shall briefly describe these elements of music. In subsequent Musical Close-Ups, we shall examine one or another of these elements in greater detail as it pertains to a given style or topic.

Rhythm

We begin with rhythm because it is basic to all music. **Rhythm** refers to the interrelationship between music and time. Music, even in its simplest form, exists in time. Whether we are speaking of Beethoven's Ninth Symphony or just one note, there is a beginning, a duration, and an ending. Although we often compare music and art, they are dissimilar in at least this one respect. When you look at a painting, your eye sees it all at once. Music is more like dance, plays, books, movies, and even baseball games. All these develop through time. We cannot listen to Beethoven's Ninth Symphony, read *War and Peace*, or watch the seventh game of the World Series in an instant. We must allow each to unfold over its own appropriate period of time. Furthermore, each has an internal pace of activity, with moments of exciting activity alternating with moments in which the action subsides.

In music, the composer must determine the rhythmic nature of his or her creation. In the broadest sense, the composer must determine how long he or she wishes the piece to be. At a middle level, he or she can control the rhythmic flow of the piece. For example, the piece might have a slow-moving, rather uncomplicated opening, followed by a sudden flurry of activity; then it may build to a busy and fast climax, allowing the rhythmic tension to dissipate in the final section. At the closest level, the composer must determine the exact length of each note and how it relates to the length of the other notes sounding before, after, and simultaneously. All of this results in how the music exists in time—its rhythm.

However, usually, when we speak of rhythm, we mean the specific rhythmic patterns produced by the varying lengths of notes. The following two patterns, because the notes relate to each other differently in time, produce different rhythmic effects.

Example A

Fast

Example B

Moderate

Notice the words *fast* and *moderate*. They describe how fast all of the notes are moving through time (example A, therefore, moves faster than example B). This is called **tempo** and is a part of the total rhythmic aspect of a song.

Study examples A and B closely. You will see that at a given moment (within each beat), there are simultaneous occurrences of long notes, short notes, and sometimes silence. If possible, perform these rhythms in class (using hand claps, nonsense syllables, or numbers). Each example has a totally different effect as a result of the differing rhythms.

It is not so terribly important that you understand everything about the rhythmic patterns in examples A and B. What is important is that you realize that the rhythmic element of a piece is made up of many notes, each with different lengths compared with the others. These must be determined and performed rather exactly for the rhythmic part of the piece to make sense.

You participate in the rhythm of a piece when you tap your foot, clap to the beat, or dance. These reactions are natural and help explain why strongly rhythmic pieces have such appeal. In Chapter 3's Musical Close-Up, we shall review some of these comments about rhythm and see how they apply to the early styles of rock and roll.

Melody

When a vibrating body (e.g., a guitar string, a piano string, or a saxophone reed) is put into motion fast enough, we begin to perceive that a **pitch** or tone is created. The faster the vibration, the higher the pitch seems to be. Thus, if a string vibrates 100 times per second, we hear a very low pitch; if it vibrates 12,000 times per second, we hear a very high pitch. When we hear two or more pitches in succession, we begin to think of a **melody** or tune.

If you whistle or hum four to six notes (pitches) in succession, you will have created a short melody. Melodies are very important in music. Although we may physically feel the rhythm of the music, usually what we remember about a song is the tune (and sometimes the words associated with that tune).

When discussing melody, we shall encounter several new terms. The **range** of a melody describes how high and how low the melody goes. Melodies that move from very low to very high notes have a wide range; those that move up or down very little have a narrow range.

The terms **conjunct** and **disjunct** tell us whether a melody is moving gradually from its lower pitches to its higher pitches (conjunct) or whether it is jumping from high to low (disjunct). Examples C and D show what we mean by conjunct and disjunct.

Example C

Example D

← contour →

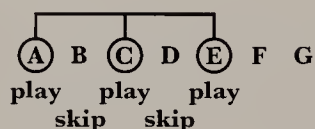
Notice that the contours of these two melodies are very different. One smoothly moves up and down (conjunct); the other is jagged and angular (disjunct). Melodic contours are similar to the contours of landscapes: softly rolling hills versus angular mountain ranges.

Sometimes melodies are repetitive. In a repetitive melody, a short melodic pattern (**motive**) might be repeated over and over. This is quite different from the kind of melody that seems to spin itself out continually, rarely repeating itself. Finally, we should note briefly that sometimes melodies are combined with other melodies simultaneously. This is an important idea and will be discussed further when we speak of texture.

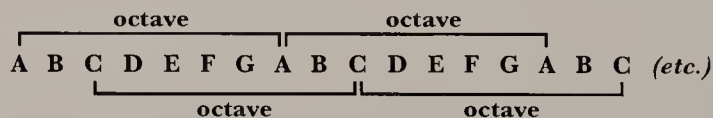
Harmony and Tonality

If melody is the combination of notes in *succession*, **harmony** is the combination of notes simultaneously. If a friend sings a certain note and you join in with a higher or lower note, you are harmonizing. When three or more notes are sounded simultaneously, we have a **chord**. If you place your entire forearm down on a piano keyboard, the resulting sound will be a chord—not a particularly pretty chord, but a chord nevertheless.

Over the centuries, musicians have developed a way of creating chords that sound a bit better than the one you and your forearm just created. The most basic traditional chord consists of the minimum number of notes—three—and is called a **triad**. But as you might guess, a traditional triad is not just any three notes. There is a system for creating a good-sounding traditional triad. Musicians work with seven pitches, named according to the first seven letters of the alphabet: A, B, C, D, E, F, and G (there are also other notes known as sharps and flats, but we really do not need to worry about them yet). To create a traditional triad, one starts on any of the seven basic pitches, skips the next one, plays the third one, skips the fourth one, and plays the fifth one.



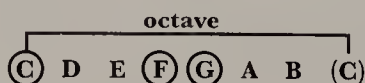
Now the notes A, C, and E have created a triad. We call it the A triad because A is its basic, or **root**, pitch. If one used C as the root of a triad, the three notes would be C, E, and G. The musical alphabet repeats up and down the pitch spectrum as follows:



The distance from a given note to its next occurrence in the musical alphabet is called an **octave**.

Chords are extremely important in music. If all we had were melody and rhythm, music would sound rather empty. Harmony is used to accompany melodies and to fill out the sound of the music. Effective harmonic practice is not a simple matter. For now, be sure you understand the concept of the traditional triad. More complicated chord structures will be explained as necessary.

Closely related to harmony is the concept of **tonality**. You have no doubt heard musicians speak of the **key** of B-flat or the key of E. For most traditional music, the words *key* and *tonality* are interchangeable. Perhaps the easiest key to understand is the key of C. When lined up starting on C, the seven notes of the musical alphabet result in the key of C.



The note C is the beginning and ending note, so we call this entire key C. Also of great importance are the fourth and fifth notes of the key, F and G.

Each note in the key of C can have its own triad:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} \text{G} & \text{A} & \text{B} & \text{C} & \text{D} & \text{E} & \text{F} & \left(\begin{array}{c} \text{G} \\ \text{E} \end{array} \right) \\ \text{E} & \text{F} & \text{G} & \text{A} & \text{B} & \text{C} & \text{D} & \\ \textcircled{\text{C}} & \text{D} & \text{E} & \textcircled{\text{F}} & \textcircled{\text{G}} & \text{A} & \text{B} & \left(\begin{array}{c} \text{C} \end{array} \right) \end{array}$$

Other keys have a different lineup of notes; for example, the key of E-flat has the following members:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} \text{B}\flat & \text{C} & \text{D} & \text{E}\flat & \text{F} & \text{G} & \text{A}\flat & \left(\begin{array}{c} \text{B}\flat \\ \text{G} \end{array} \right) \\ \text{G} & \text{A}\flat & \text{B}\flat & \text{C} & \text{D} & \text{E}\flat & \text{F} & \\ \textcircled{\text{E}\flat} & \text{F} & \text{G} & \textcircled{\text{A}\flat} & \textcircled{\text{B}\flat} & \text{C} & \text{D} & \left(\begin{array}{c} \text{E}\flat \end{array} \right) \end{array}$$

Do not worry about the flats (\flat) in this example; just understand that a different collection of notes creates a different key. Again, notice that the first, fourth, and fifth notes are the most important and that the name of the key comes from the name of the first and last notes.

We will have more to say about keys and chords in a later Musical Close-Up in this chapter.

Timbre

Next we must consider the exact quality of the sounds being produced. After all, pianos do not sound like clarinets, and clarinets do not sound like guitars. The difference in the sound quality of these instruments involves **timbre**—the tone quality of sound. Have you ever thought about how many different voices you recognize? Even if they were all speaking exactly the same words, you would probably recognize the voices of your parents, your siblings, quite a few close friends, several movie and television stars, and even some politicians. Each voice has a distinctive sound quality or timbre (pronounced “tam-burr”).

Composers must decide whether a melody is to be played on a trumpet or saxophone and whether a chord is to be played by piano, banjo, or guitar. Shall the bass be an acoustic string bass, a tuba, or a bass guitar? Decisions like these have a great effect on how the final piece of music sounds. Elvis’s “Hound Dog” would not be the same if it were played by a marching band, even if the melody, harmony, and rhythm were exactly the same. Certain timbres are associated with certain styles of music. Dixieland music sounds best when played by a small ensemble of trumpet, clarinet, trombone, tuba, banjo, and drums (and maybe a piano); rock and roll requires several electric guitars and drums; swing bands need trumpets, saxophones, trombones, piano, bass, and drums.

In the last few decades, the recording industry and rock and roll have added considerably to the world of timbre. For one thing, there is now a huge arsenal of electronic instruments to be considered. Some are basically acoustic instruments, the sounds of which are electronically amplified, like guitars. However, in most cases, the sound itself is electronically produced and modified (most notably, the synthesizer). Also, the contemporary recording studio can do much to change the timbre of the musical product. With today’s technical resources for mixing, overdubbing, and editing (plus echo, phase shifting, etc.), the competent studio engineer can dramatically alter the sound of the basic raw material. This, too, is an aspect of timbre.

Texture

One of the factors that makes a given piece of music sound the way it does is its **texture**—the way the various musical lines function in relation to each other. There are three basic possibilities: **monophony**, **homophony**, and **polyphony**.

Monophony is the simplest musical texture. Monophonic texture exists when there is one and only one musical line. Thus one singer, without any accompaniment, singing a solo line is an example of monophony. The essential point is not how many singers (or players) there are, but how many musical lines. Thus 10 singers all singing exactly the same melodic line are still creating monophony.

Homophony is a bit more complex. With a homophonic texture, one musical line predominates, but other lines are also present in a subservient role. One of the most common types of homophony is the melody-and-accompaniment texture. Here one line is clearly the melody, and all other musical sounds serve as accompaniment. A folk singer accompanied by a guitar is an example of homophony. Perhaps you have heard quartets where the top line is the primary melodic line and the other three lines simply harmonize the top line. This is another type of homophony, but again, one line predominates and the other lines are subservient.

In polyphony, we find two or more independent lines of approximately equal importance. If you have ever sung a round like “Row, Row, Row Your Boat,” you have participated in a polyphonic texture. One singer begins the song, and then a second singer begins four beats later; if a third singer is available, he or she begins four beats after the second singer. Each singer is singing the tune rather independently; each is just as important as the others. Music that is polyphonic can be a bit difficult to listen to at first because it sounds so busy. There are, after all, multiple melodic lines to try to hear, rather than just one.

Sometimes we speak of texture as being thick or thin. In this sense, texture may be perceived as a continuum. Two singers singing a duet would be on one end of the continuum—a very thin texture. On the opposite end, we might find a song with several vocal melodic lines, a full orchestra with the high brass playing fanfarelike material, the strings playing scale passages, the woodwinds playing frilly ornaments, the low brass playing a powerful countermelody, and the percussion playing frenziedly. Add a background chorus and some **synthesizer** chords, and we have a very thick texture.

Most popular music, including rock and roll, utilizes the melody-and-accompaniment texture, a type of homophony. On occasion, however, some musically creative minds have explored other textures; we will take special note of such cases as we encounter them.

Volume

When a vibrating body is displaced a little, it produces a relatively quiet sound; when it is displaced a lot, it produces a louder sound. If you barely touch a piano key, the hammer inside touches the string and hardly moves it. A very soft sound is produced. If you give the key a sharp whack, the hammer pops against the string, setting it into violent motion. A louder sound is produced. Technically, this is called the amplitude (amount of displacement) of a vibrating body. Usually, though, we call it **volume** or loudness.

Most rock and roll is loud, but we will study some styles and songs that use a variety of volume levels. As with any of the elements of music, the constant, unchanging use of a certain element leads to boredom. **Dynamics** is the term musicians use to describe the various fluctuations in amplitude. The creative mind skillfully manipulates all of the available musical elements—including dynamics.

Form

Form is the organizational structure of a piece of music. It is the result of changes in some or all of the musical elements.

Think for a moment about one of your favorite television shows. Possibly, there is a short teaser, or introduction, that gives you a hint of what is to come and sets the scene. After a commercial, there is a series of scenes that set forth the primary and secondary characters and problems in that particular episode. Following another commercial, another

series of scenes introduces more complications and conflicts. After another commercial, a series of scenes leads to a turning point of some kind that suggests that the end is in sight and all will be well. A final scene shows the happy participants basking in the glow of another successful escapade.

Your television show, which exists over a period of time (e.g., 30 minutes), is organized into sections and subsections. The sections and subsections are delineated by changes, as characters appear and disappear, as complications arise and are resolved, and as settings change.

So it is with a musical composition. Often a song begins with an introduction; then there is a section that introduces a main melody and the lyrical topic. This section may be repeated with new lyrics. Next there may be a section with new music and new lyrics. Subsequent sections may repeat earlier music with new or repeated lyrics. Usually, there is an instrumental section near the middle of the piece and a fade-out section at the end. We can chart this organizational structure as follows:



In this diagram, the repeating *A* shows that the music is repeated; the single and double quotation marks indicate new lyrics. What tells us when a section is ending and a new section is beginning? Change in one or more of the musical elements. From one section to the next, there may be a change in the rhythm, melody, key, texture, or lyrics. At any juncture in the musical form, there are a limited set of options: The musicians can (1) repeat previous material, (2) play new material, or (3) play something based on earlier material, but not an exact repetition (we call this last one *variation* or *development*). This may sound complicated, but you will be surprised how easy it is to feel the changes from section to section.

A Word About Words

Technically speaking, the lyrics of a song are not an integral part of the music. Thus, although “Yesterday” by the Beatles certainly has words (lyrics), there are many purely instrumental arrangements that are entirely recognizable, even though no lyrics are sung or spoken. Nevertheless, lyrics are intimately associated with the music of most popular songs.

People are funny where lyrics are concerned. Many people say, “Oh, I don’t really pay attention to the words; I just like the music (or the beat).” Yet they can often sing the words along with an instrumental arrangement or mouth the words as the song is being played on the radio. If the music suddenly stops, they continue singing the tune by themselves, words and all.

Too often, we think only of lyrics and forget about the music. For example, if asked to write a paper about the music of a 1960s folk singer or group, one usually tells all about the protest songs, the antiwar sentiments, the pleas for racial equality, the love songs, the symbolism, and so on. Often, little is said about the melodic lines, harmonies, forms, and other musical elements.

Lyrics are, of course, verbal expression; music is nonverbal expression. Frequently, we listen closely to songs with lyrics but find our minds wandering when listening to pure instrumentals. Perhaps this is because the average nonmusician understands the verbal language of the lyrics but does not understand the nonverbal language of the instrumental. Similarly, we can usually identify groups by ear when one or more voices are singing words. But it is more difficult to identify purely instrumental groups.

However, music, too, is a language. The trained musician has learned to communicate using that language. It is just as intelligible, and probably more powerful, than verbal

language. It is hoped that this book will enhance your appreciation of, and ability to understand, some aspects of this nonverbal language.

One final word about words. Just as with the other aspects of rock and roll, the lyrics have undergone dramatic stylistic changes through the five decades of rock's history. At times, the lyrics have been the subject of derision, and at other times, the subject of heated controversy. Our study will comment on the verbal aspects of rock as one part of the total picture, distinct from the music yet intimately associated with it.

Country and Western

Unlike the huge pop market, the C&W market had a relatively small and regionally well-defined audience. Although there were C&W radio stations, performers, and recording companies all over the nation, by the early 1950s, the South, Southwest, and Midwest had become the real centers of development for this style. The most influential C&W-oriented radio show was *The Grand Ole Opry*, broadcast from Nashville's WSM. In the late 1940s and early 1950s, the *Opry* attracted more and more C&W songwriters and performers to Nashville.

Led by the Acuff-Rose publishing house, publishers flooded to Nashville. The recording industry was not far behind. The C&W market had been served largely by small, independent record companies scattered throughout the South, Southwest, and Midwest. Each of these small companies (called **indies**, short for *independent*) was a low-budget operation with a few artists under contract. Each specialized in a certain sound it hoped would make its products recognizable. They usually produced singles, rather than albums, because that is what they and their consumers could afford. Unlike the major companies, the indies' distribution system was simple and unsophisticated—often just a guy in a pickup truck carrying a box of records from store to store. To promote a new record, they did not need to blanket the country as the majors did. They could hit a definable list of radio stations in a specific list of cities in a certain geographic region. The system worked well.

This is not to say that the majors had no interest in C&W. Indeed, the majors produced a number of prominent C&W acts, often on subsidiary labels. First Decca, and then Capitol, Columbia, and RCA, established Nashville offices. The popularity of the cowboy western movies in the 1930s and 1940s and cowboy television shows in the late 1940s and early 1950s had promoted a national market for the singing cowboy (Gene Autry, Roy Rogers and Dale Evans, and Tex Ritter). Their success opened the national pop market to the C&W style. As a result, a number of major artists were able to escape the smaller C&W market and become national stars (e.g., Eddy Arnold and Hank Snow).

Like the pop market, the C&W market consisted of white adults. Not generally a very affluent market, what money did exist in the subculture belonged to the adults.

C&W music showed both similarities and dissimilarities to pop music. As with pop music, C&W's melodies and lyrics were of prime importance. The lyrics were often love oriented (usually tales of unrequited love or the jilted lover). The harmonies were usually simpler than those of pop music. The form of the typical C&W song was similar to that of the Tin Pan Alley pop song. C&W rhythm was simple and straightforward and usually more prominent than was typical of pop music. There were usually three or four beats per measure, with little or no subdivision, thus creating a very simple square-cut sound. There was usually a lead singer, often with a vocal trio or quartet in the background. The musicians often performed their own original material, although there was also a repertoire of traditional songs handed down from earlier generations. Generally, the music was not notated; arrangements were worked out in rehearsal and, once set, were performed according to that

plan. When instrumental solo breaks occurred, the solos stayed very close to the established melody, rather than wandering into intricate flights of fancy, as they might in jazz.

Perhaps the most recognizable characteristic of C&W music of the early 1950s was its timbre, much of which emanated from two specific sources: the vocalist and the steel guitar. C&W vocalists often sang with a rather nasal quality. Instead of carefully intoning each melodic pitch, they would slide from note to note. A number of male C&W singers developed the ability to **yodel**—a vocal device in which the singer cracks his voice, allowing it to move into a female range (called falsetto).

The steel guitar entered the C&W picture from a rather unlikely source: Hawaii. After Hawaii became a U.S. territory in 1900, the mainland was swept with a fascination for the exotic island culture. By the 1920s, the steel guitar's popularity was set. In 1931, the first electric Hawaiian steel guitar was introduced. Later developments included placing the instrument on a stand, adding the double-neck feature, and adding pedals. Being a rather conservative culture, the C&W music market was slow to include some of these innovations, especially electronic amplification.

By the early 1950s, the typical C&W band included a vocalist, a vocal backup group, electric pedal steel guitar, piano, violin, bass (acoustic or stand-up bass), and acoustic and electric guitars. Note the obvious omission: drums. Although there were a few nonconformists, most traditional C&W bands avoided drums until the mid-1950s. The rhythm was set by the bass player, who slapped his strings on the accented beats, and by the guitars and piano, which reinforced all the beats.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: INSTRUMENTATION IN ROCK AND ROLL

When we think of rock and roll, we usually think of electric guitars, drums, and singers. These are, in fact, the essential ingredients for a rock and roll band from the early 1950s to today. However, there have been changes in the nature of these instruments, and some styles have added other instruments to the rock and roll ensemble. In this Musical Close-Up, we shall briefly survey the instrumentation of rock from 1955 to today and then take a closer look at specific instruments.

The typical 1950s rock and roll band consisted of four to six players. The usual ingredients included drums, bass (acoustic), two electric guitars (one rhythm and one lead), piano (acoustic), and saxophone (alto or tenor). Some bands, of course, varied from this basic ensemble. Thus Bill Haley's Comets used a steel guitar instead of a piano, reflecting their C&W background. Buddy Holly's Crickets used only drums, an acoustic bass, and two guitars. Elvis Presley's early Sun recording used only two guitars and a bass (remember that drums were traditionally avoided in C&W music). Jerry Lee Lewis's early hits also used a trio: piano, guitar, and drums. Little Richard's recording sessions for his big hits on Specialty used various instrumental lineups but usually included piano, bass, drums, guitar, and several saxophones.

The 1960s saw a greater diversification in rock instrumentation. The Beatles' lineup of three guitars (lead, rhythm, and bass) and drums was widely imitated. If any instrument was added to this basic foursome, it was usually piano (increasingly in its electronic form and with its various electronic spin-offs). The folk movement of the 1960s went back to basics, using acoustic guitar, harmonica, banjo, acoustic bass, and sometimes bongo drums. The Motown sound featured a vocal group plus full orchestral instrumentation. Finally, the jazz-rock trend near the end of the decade added a so-called horn line consisting of trumpet(s), woodwinds (saxes or flute), and trombone.

The 1970s and 1980s witnessed the expansion of electronic instruments. Every few months, a new synthesizer appeared that rendered its predecessors outmoded. A synthesizer can create a myriad of instrumental sounds, from guitar to flute to drums, as well as original sounds not found in traditional musical instruments. The first synthesizers used the piano keyboard—something most musicians know—as a way for the player to signal the note to be played. So it was natural for the pianist—now called the *keyboard player*—to be the first in rock groups to embrace the instrument.

Other than this electronic expansion, the basic instrumentation of the 1960s was simply carried forward. The ensemble of three or four guitars and drums remained basic to hard rock and heavy metal. Some black groups continued to use horn lines; disco utilized full orchestral instrumentation. The electronic explosion has continued with increasing use of guitar synthesizers, drum synthesizers, and computer-interfaced keyboards.

Guitar

Guitars, the basic instruments of all rock and roll, come in two basic varieties: acoustic and electric. Some early rock and rollers (e.g., Elvis Presley) started with the acoustic guitar, but most quickly learned that the unamplified acoustic guitar was no match for the electric guitars, piano, saxophone, and drums of the rock ensemble. Some guitarists stayed with their acoustic instrument, merely adding electronic amplification by a contact microphone, a fairly common practice since the mid-1930s. However, except for the folk- or country-influenced rock performers, rock guitarists quickly adopted the true electric guitar as the basic instrument.

Electric guitars have electromagnetic pickup devices placed below the steel strings that send a signal through an amplifier and on to a loudspeaker. Various controls operated by the hands or feet can change volume, tone, and equalization and can add special effects such as reverberation, fuzz tones, wah-wah, and phase shifting. Because electric guitars do not require the wooden sound chamber of the acoustic guitar, they may be made of metal or wood, have hollow or solid bodies, and take on a variety of shapes.

In 1954, Leo Fender introduced the Stratocaster, a solid-body guitar that became the model for electric guitars in rock and roll for many years. Also, the Gibson company, a leading guitar manufacturer since the early part of this century, had introduced a solid-body electric guitar in 1952, designed by and named for Les Paul. Among the important developments in recent years has been the wireless electric guitar, which broadcasts its electric signal to an amplifier without the use of wires. This has had important ramifications for onstage performance, allowing some of the more acrobatic acts to run, jump, roll, and cavort all over a huge and elaborate stage setting, without fear of entangling themselves in wires. Over the years, there have been various experiments with the basic guitar sound of rock and roll. There have been double-necked guitars and 12-string guitars (the usual guitar has six strings).

In the early 1950s, Leo Fender introduced the solid-body electric bass guitar. The early rock and roll bands continued to prefer the acoustic bass, but by the end of the decade, more and more players had switched to the electric instrument. By the 1960s, the old stand-up bass was gone, except in some folk- or country-influenced bands. The electric bass was much more portable and provided powerful bass lines that could match the volume level of the drums, electric guitars, and electric pianos.

Through the late 1970s and early 1980s, synthesizer technology—once the province of the keyboard player—became available to the guitarist. Although the guitarist appears to be playing a typical electric guitar, he is really sending a series of electrical impulses to a synthesizer, which in turn translates the notes into the timbre of a flute, trumpet, and so on.

Voice

One of the most basic and essential instruments of all is the human voice. Although there are a number of purely instrumental rock hits, the vast majority contain vocals. When

asked to name rock stars, we will almost invariably name singers (some, of course, may also be instrumentalists—usually guitarists or keyboard players).

In the early 1950s, the ideal pop singer was the crooner, who was at his best singing soft, slow love songs—so-called ballads. The crooner (usually male) had a pleasant voice quality in the traditional sense: He sang perfectly in tune and had a wide range and excellent control of his voice. This ideal carried over into the softer side of rock with singers like Pat Boone, Paul Anka, Frankie Avalon, the Carpenters, and Barry Manilow.

On the opposite end of the continuum from the crooners were the shouters or screamers. There is little precedence for this style in white music prior to rock and roll. However, R&B singers had developed a shouting style several decades before rock and roll. R&B stars like Joe Turner, Big Mama Thornton, Wynonie Harris, and Elmore James half sang, half yelled their songs. There was usually a harsh, raspy quality to the voice. The general melodic contour was followed, but exact melodic pitches were only approximated. This shouting style carried over into the harder styles of rock and roll, best exemplified in the early days by Little Richard and later by Janis Joplin, James Brown, and a host of the hard rock and heavy metal bands of the 1970s and 1980s.

In between the crooners and the shouters was a wide variety of vocal styles. Characterized by a harder and more powerful vocal quality than the crooners, these mainstream singers still adhered to the correct melodic pitches but were prone to provide strong vocal accents, bend some pitches, and add various vocal embellishments to their rhythmically driving songs. This large middle ground between crooners and shouters is exemplified by such diverse singers as Jerry Lee Lewis, Fats Domino, the Beach Boys, and a good many of the Motown singers of the 1960s and later.

Of course, some of the more versatile performers can convincingly sing two or three styles. Using Presley as an example, consider these songs: “Hound Dog,” “Jailhouse Rock,” and “Hard-Headed Woman” (shouter); “Love Me Tender,” “Don’t,” and “Can’t Help Falling in Love” (crooner); “All Shook Up,” “Don’t Be Cruel,” and “Heartbreak Hotel” (in between). Although the terms *crooner* and *shouter* may prove useful in describing some singers, we should not force a label on a given voice—truly the most personal and unique of all musical instruments.

Drums

If rhythm is the heart of rock and roll, drums must be the central ingredient in the rock band. Except for a few very early rock recordings (from the C&W background) and some folk music of the early 1960s, drums have been an integral part of the rock music scene.

The typical rock drum set (sometimes called trap set, or traps) is played by one person and consists of a bass drum (played by a foot pedal), a snare drum, a tenor drum, a tomtom, a sock cymbal, a ride cymbal, a pair of hi-hat cymbals, and a cowbell. There may be a variety of mallets: soft mallets, hard sticks, and wire brushes.

Drum sets remained relatively constant until the late 1970s. From 1975 to 1985, however, several innovations occurred. The traditional acoustic drum requires a hollow-sounding chamber to shape and color its sound (thus the big bass drum and the narrower, smaller snare drum), but innovators realized that the sound of a drumhead being struck by a stick could be produced electronically—thus the advent of the compact, solid-body drums. For example, Simmons made a drum set in which the drumheads (or pads) have electronic pickups that sense how hard the pad is struck. Resulting pulses are then sent to a control unit that fires analog or digitally recorded sounds. Each drum is just a few inches deep. With these systems, an entire drum set can be packed into a relatively small case and easily transported. Drummers like that.

What drummers do not like is the development of electronic drum machines. The various drum sounds (snare, bass, cymbal, etc.) are among the easiest sounds to artificially reproduce electronically. Thus we now have drum boxes or drum machines that do a



A drum kit (Source: Getty Images Inc./PhotoDisc Inc.)

remarkably good job of replacing the drummer. A typical drum box may be no more than 16 inches long, 4 inches high, and 8 inches deep. The user can program a steady bass drumbeat and a variety of subdivisions on a snare drum, a tenor drum, and cymbals; he or she can even add accents on a cowbell or hand claps. The machines are easy to use and reproduce a very believable drum sound with absolute technical accuracy. Most can store about 100 patterns and 10 full-length songs in memory for instant recall.

Keyboards

In the beginning, there was the simple, old upright piano with two or three pedals and 88 keys, but since rock's early days, there has appeared a bewildering catalog of keyboards of every size, shape, and description. About the time that the performer has invested in and mastered his or her shiny new keyboard, a newer and shinier one is marketed that makes the former one seem old-fashioned. Our purpose here will not be to describe every keyboard modern technology has developed, but to discuss a few of the principal models from which the others are derived.

One of the problems pianists faced was that they were at the mercy of the instrument they found at the job site, if the piano was not properly maintained, pedals failed to work, some of the keys did not play, or the instrument was out of tune. The electric piano solved all this. In the mid- to late 1960s, it gradually replaced the old acoustic piano in most rock bands. At least the performer could be sure the piano was in tune, all its notes played, and it could be placed anywhere on stage.

Even though electric pianos had shortened keyboards (usually only 64 notes) and did not sound exactly like the acoustic piano, practicality triumphed, and the electric piano became the standard keyboard for rock and roll. Soon there were variations on the basic electric piano. For example, the clavinet allowed the pianist to switch between two different timbres; RMI made an instrument that allowed a similar switch between a piano and a harpsichord sound.

This turn to electronics launched a revolution in rock and roll keyboards. New electronic keyboard instruments appeared that attempted to imitate a wider variety of instruments.

An early example was the Mellotron, an instrument that used tapes of prerecorded tones by various instruments. The popular Mellotron 400 contained a rack of tapes with three tracks, each of which provided a different timbre (e.g., brass, strings, flute). By selecting one of these three timbres and then pressing a key, one obtained the actual sound of a particular instrument playing a particular note. Although a number of groups experimented with the Mellotron, its sound became especially identified with the Moody Blues. (The most famous Mellotron solo can be heard at the beginning of the Beatles' "Strawberry Fields Forever.")

At about the same time (late 1960s and early 1970s), synthesizers were being developed that were practical to use in performance. Basically, synthesizers do two things: (1) They generate sounds by means of oscillators and (2) they modify sounds by means of various devices such as filters, envelope shapers, and ring modulators. With the synthesizer, the keyboard player could produce an entire range of sounds by mastering a complex of knobs, buttons, slides, and patch cords. It required some retraining, but the result was worth the trouble.

As the synthesizer revolution advanced, newer, easier-to-use models poured into the market. Some specialized in string sounds, whereas others allowed for a variety of preprogrammed sounds, each available at the touch of a button. Add-ons were developed, such as the **sequencer**, which allowed the user to set up a series of pitches, rhythms, timbres, and volumes that could be set into motion at the flip of a switch. Some newer synthesizers allow the user to devise all of the settings and then assign them to the synthesizer's memory for later recall. Of course, the inevitable linkage between the computer and the synthesizer has been made with the development of **Musical Instrument Digital Interface (MIDI)**.

Electronic organs, instruments that predate the beginnings of rock and roll, added still other sounds to the rock keyboard player's resources. Laurens Hammond introduced the electronic organ in 1939. As rock musicians discovered its sound in the 1960s (most notably the Hammond B-3 model), other companies (e.g., Farfisa and Vox) entered the market in competition with Hammond.

The keyboard player of the 1970s and 1980s was typically surrounded by four to six keyboards, each with a specialized role to play. The most elaborate electronic keyboardists (e.g., Keith Emerson and Rick Wakeman) confronted racks of instruments that resembled the cockpit of a 747.

Saxophone

There are five basic saxophones: soprano, alto, tenor, baritone, and bass. The fingering among all of the saxes is similar, so if a player can play one, he or she can generally play them all. The saxophone (sax) became a favorite in the jazz of the 1930s and 1940s, crossing over into R&B as well. The black bluesmen particularly favored the versatility and sensuality of the tenor sax. Thus it was natural that the early rock and roll bands, which borrowed so much from R&B, often included the saxophone. Fats Domino's songs usually included not only a saxophone accompaniment, but frequently a sax solo at the instrumental break. Little Richard's bands contained up to three or four saxophones. Even Bill Haley's Comets, in spite of their primarily C&W background, included a saxophone.

Since then, saxophones have alternately appeared and disappeared in various rock styles. The Motown sound of the 1960s utilized the saxophone, especially the baritone sax, which doubled bass lines and occasionally played solos. The jazz rock sound of the late 1960s and early 1970s incorporated various saxophones. The sound of the soprano sax became particularly popular in the early 1970s, with groups such as Weather Report and Chuck Mangione's band. In the years 1975 to 1985, occasional specialty songs featured the sax, and many black groups—such as Earth, Wind, and Fire—continued to rely on its sound.

Rhythm and Blues

The last of the three main tributaries leading to rock and roll, R&B, is also by far the most important. So direct is the line from R&B to early rock and roll that one may listen to certain R&B tunes from the 1945 to 1955 period and be convinced that one is hearing 1958 vintage rock and roll.

Unlike either the pop or the C&W market, R&B's performers and consumers were black. The R&B market was served, almost exclusively, by small, independent record companies—indies—and there were many of them, most owned and administered by whites.

Like C&W, R&B had a limited but well-defined audience. The basic center of R&B's development was the South; however, as the black population spread throughout the Southwest, the Midwest, and into the major metropolitan centers, R&B went along. Thus, although most R&B singers traced their roots back to New Orleans, the Mississippi Delta, Alabama, Georgia, Tennessee, and Florida, by the 1930s and 1940s, many had relocated to other parts of the country. The small, independent R&B record companies were located where there was talent and a market; Chicago, New York City, and Los Angeles became three leading centers for R&B recording. Many labels were formed in the late 1940s and went on to have considerable impact in the 1950s, notably Atlantic (New York), Chess (Chicago), Speciality (Los Angeles), and Imperial (Los Angeles). The records produced by these and other indies for the R&B market served only their well-defined pattern of consumers. They rarely, if ever, expected sales in either the pop or C&W markets, and, conversely, they expected no competition in their market from pop or C&W records.

R&B was quite different from pop and C&W. A large percentage of R&B songs were based on a set musical scheme known as the **12-bar blues** (see next Musical Close-Up). The music was rarely notated; as with C&W, it was usually worked out in rehearsal and then performed according to a loosely predetermined plan. Although it did not approach the complexity of the finest jazz of its time, R&B improvisation allowed for considerable freedom and spontaneous invention. Although some traditional songs were passed from generation to generation, most R&B songs were originals created by the performer. Many expressed personal sentiments related to love, jobs, hard knocks, and general philosophies of life.

A typical R&B combo might consist of some or all of the following instruments: guitars (electric or acoustic or both), bass (acoustic), piano, drums, saxophone, and harmonica. As its name implies, R&B was characterized by a hard-driving, prominent rhythm. The harmonies are those of the 12-bar blues: just three basic chords, with occasional variations. Although the words were important, the melody got minimal creative attention, generally seeming to be little more than a vehicle to carry the lyrics. In fact, there is great similarity among blues melodies, only partially because they usually conformed to the structure of the 12-bar blues.

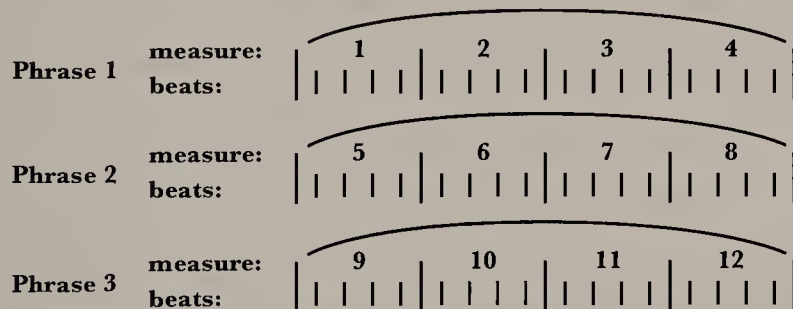
The power of R&B resided in the strong, insistent rhythm, the personally expressive lyrics, and the vocal performance style (which was often of the shouting variety). Some outstanding R&B performers from earlier decades had a lasting impact on both R&B and rock and roll. Listening to many of these stars, one can hear elements of 1950s rock and roll up to three decades before "Heartbreak Hotel." For example, Memphis Slim's "All by Myself" hints at the later style of Fats Domino. In "Roll 'em Pete" by Joe Turner and Pete Johnson, one can hear the beginnings of the 1950s rock piano style and harbingers of "Bony Moronie." In Elmore James's "Sunnyland," one hears hints of Chuck Berry's guitar style. And in Otis Spann's "Bloody Murder," there are fragments of bass lines that are exactly replicated in 1950s rock and roll. Although pop music and C&W played their

respective roles in the creation of rock, it was black R&B that led most directly and powerfully into rock and roll.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: THE 12-BAR BLUES

The term *blues* is used many different ways in music. Various types of songs—urban blues, rural blues, country blues, jump blues, talkin’ blues, rhythm and blues—share an association with the more general blues style. Originally, though, at least in terms of musical form, the blues had a specific meaning. Much of the music of the early blues singers and R&B players followed a similar musical scheme. Specifically, three or four common patterns evolved using 8-, 12-, or 16-measure forms, with a consistent use of three basic chords. Over the years, one of these forms came to be favored: the 12-bar blues. By the late 1920s, when musicians referred to the blues progression, they meant this standard form. This form became the basis for most boogie-woogie jazz of the 1930s, a large percentage of R&B of the 1930s and 1940s, and much of the upbeat rock and roll of the 1950s. Although used less frequently, it still appeared occasionally in the rock of the 1960s and beyond. For any one musical formula to be so durable and omnipresent, it must have considerable appeal to performers and listeners alike. It is so basic that we must study it more closely.

As any rock fan knows, music has beats. These are simply rhythmic pulses put into the music by the composer or performer and heard and felt by the listener. Musicians group these beats into units called *measures* or *bars*. One blues chorus consists of 48 beats. Because the beats are usually grouped into measures of four beats each, there are 12 measures in a standard blues chorus.



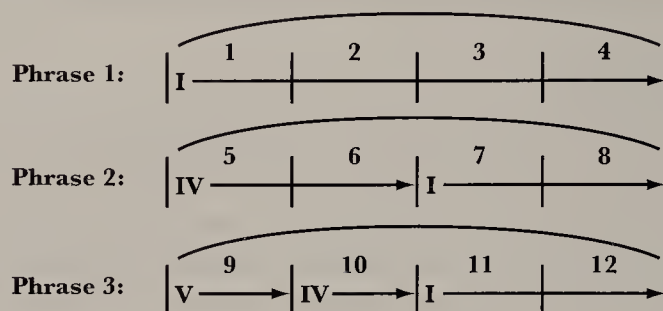
A single blues chorus is comparable to a sentence in English. As with most sentences, our 12-bar “sentence” divides into smaller units called *phrases* (a term common to both music and English). In the standard 12-bar blues, each phrase is four bars long. In music, we indicate phrases by large, curving lines over the measures, as shown in the example.

Recall that a key is like a family of seven different notes, each of which can have its own triad (three-note chord). The triads in the key of C are shown in the following:

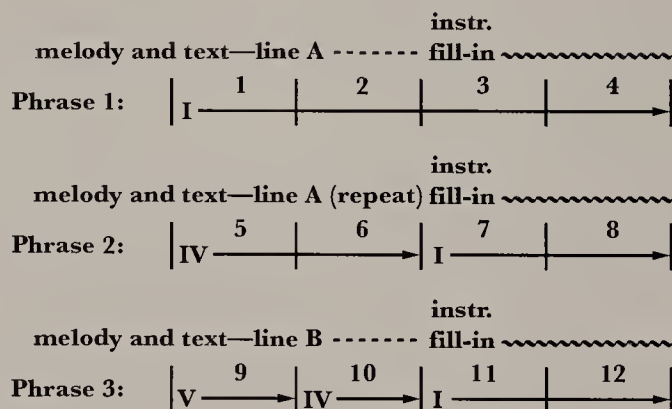
triads on each note							
G	A	B	C	D	E	F	G
E	F	G	A	B	C	D	E
C	D	E	F	G	A	B	C
I	II	III	IV	V	VI	VII	I

Notes in the key of C:→

For ease of reference, we can number these chords with Roman numerals. For the basic 12-bar blues, we can concern ourselves with only three of these chords: the I, IV, and V. These three chords are distributed in the 12-bar blues form as shown:

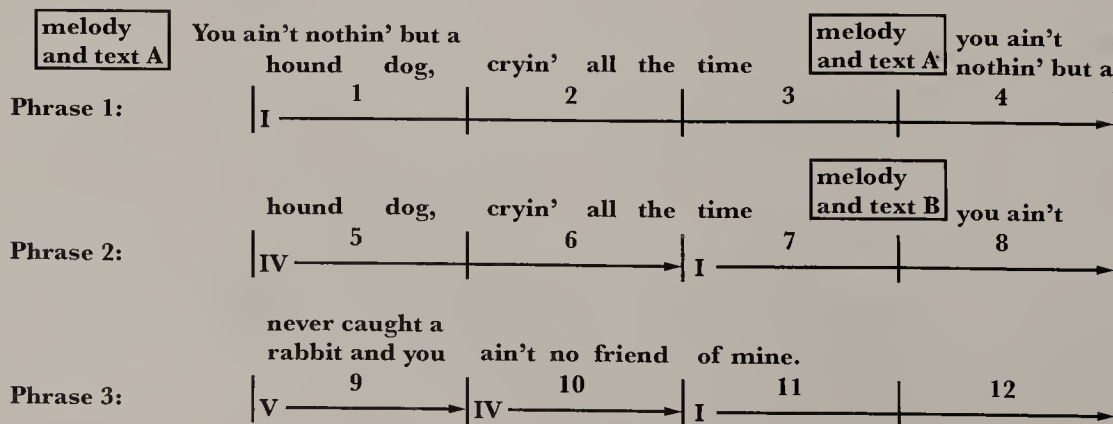


Now let us add the melody and lyrics. The words used in a 12-bar blues are usually in the form of a couplet—that is, two lines that rhyme. At this point, you may perceive a potential problem. We have two rhyming lines of text, but three phrases of music. Something has to give! The blues singer's solution is to repeat the first line of the couplet, thus creating an A-A-B scheme. The melody of the first phrase is also repeated for the second phrase. The second line of the couplet is therefore delayed until the third phrase of the music; the melody carrying this second line of the couplet is usually slightly different from the melody used in the first two phrases.



One final point: In the traditional 12-bar blues, each line of text consumes about half the musical phrase (about two measures). The last two measures of each phrase are filled in by the instrumentalists.

Now let us apply this scheme to a real rock and roll record. Listen to Elvis Presley's version of "Hound Dog":



Elvis cheats a little by beginning each line of text a little before the downbeat of the phrase, but other than that, this song follows the scheme nicely. You can actually count along by enunciating each beat (“1, 2, 3, 4”), keeping track of which measure you are in by counting the measure numbers on each downbeat: 1-2-3-4, 2-2-3-4, 3-2-3-4, 4-2-3-4, and so on. Listen several times, until you really feel the form. On one listening, focus on the background singers. They are singing the I, IV, and V chords, so you can hear them change at the appropriate moments.

This basic 12-bar blues has been used for thousands of songs for at least a hundred years (probably more). Although there are many examples that follow our 12-bar blues scheme perfectly, there are many more that modify one or more aspects of it. Some performers have changed some of the chords; others have eliminated the instrumental accompaniment for a few measures; still others have varied the melodic and text schemes. There are almost as many variations as there are songs and performers. Still, the basic 12-bar blues comes through. It is a very resilient concept.

The serviceability of the 12-bar blues is truly remarkable. If no singer is present, instrumentalists can still improvise a 12-bar blues. All any musician needs to say to another is “Let’s do a blues in B-flat,” and after someone counts off four beats to set the tempo, off they go! The basic scheme is adaptable to any style of rock and roll, jazz, C&W, and, of course, R&B. There are even examples of classical uses of this basic scheme.

One last point: Just in case you think we have just described one of the shortest songs in history—only 12 measures long—understand that the 12-bar chorus is repeated any number of times. If it is a vocal blues, the text normally changes with each chorus. Some jazz recordings repeat the chorus some 40–50 times. With each chorus, the instrumentalist who has the lead improvises on a new musical idea—thus providing variety and interest to what would otherwise be a rather boring situation.

The Emergence of Rock and Roll

KEY TERMS

crossovers
cover versions
backbeat
rockabilly

slapped
doo-wop
close harmony
beats

meter
measure
subdivision

Overview: Crossovers and Covers

Pop, country and western (C&W), and rhythm and blues (R&B) coexisted in the early 1950s as three separate and distinct markets, as if separated by tall brick walls, but in a short, three-year period (roughly 1954 to 1956), the walls came tumbling down. What emerged from the ruins was a new giant on the musical scene: rock and roll.

To understand how this happened, we must understand the related phenomena of **crossovers** and **cover versions**. Crossovers were records that originated in one market but succeeded in another. Although there had been a few crossover hits before the 1950s, they became more frequent in the early 1950s and typically were R&B songs on the lower end of the pop charts. Among the early crossover hits were “Lawdy Miss Clawdy” (Lloyd Price), “Gee” (the Crows), and “Earth Angel” (the Penguins). “Cryin’ in the Chapel” (the Orioles) is a particularly good example because in July 1953, while holding the top position in the R&B market, it also climbed to number 11 in the pop charts, thus narrowly missing the Top 10.

Observing the new interest in crossover R&B, the major companies moved quickly to produce their own popularized versions of R&B originals. These were called cover versions, or *covers*, that is, a subsequent version of an original song. Of course, multiple versions of hits were common within the pop market long before the 1950s. Much has been written about white artists covering the songs of black musicians, but in reality, the practice worked both ways. For example, Doris Day’s pop hit “Secret Love” was covered by the Moonglows, and “Cryin’ in the Chapel” was originally a C&W ballad before being covered by the Orioles, who in turn were covered by at least five more versions. What was

new about the cover versions of 1954 was that the major companies were covering R&B originals. These pop covers usually equaled or exceeded the sales of the original hits and sometimes appeared on the charts simultaneously. For example, the Penguins' "Earth Angel" reached number 8 on the R&B charts but was surpassed by the Crewcuts' version, which reached number 3 on the much more lucrative pop charts. Sometimes both the original version and the pop cover version coexisted on the pop charts (a good example is "Ain't That a Shame," original version by Fats Domino, cover version by Pat Boone). The pop market also made an attempt at creating its own originals in a style similar to the new R&B cover sound. Thus Eddie Fisher, a pop singer, sang "Dungaree Doll," and Kay Starr recorded "Rock and Roll Waltz."

To say that 1954 and 1955 were years of turmoil and confusion in the pop music industry would be a considerable understatement. The crossover sales, the R&B cover versions, and the pop soundalikes reflected an important new phenomenon: the emergence of a distinct youth culture.

Previously, the entertainment industry had been primarily the province of adults, who were the primary customers for entertainment, but in the mid- and late 1950s, some of that money gradually flowed down into the pockets of the youth. Movies appeared that were aimed at a teenage audience: for example, *Rebel Without a Cause* with James Dean and *Blackboard Jungle* with Sidney Poitier and Glenn Ford. If, as psychologists tell us, youth is naturally a time of rebellion, the typical 1955 youth had a problem: What to rebel against? In *Rebel Without a Cause*, Dean portrayed an angry teenager who has no real targets for his rebellion. In *Blackboard Jungle*, the teenagers strike out at whatever is around: parents, the educational system (teachers), and each other.

An image began to form of the rebellious teenager, sullen, brooding, rebelling against his or her environment, often with little justifiable reason. The model was the so-called juvenile delinquent—black leather jacket, shirt open, collar upturned, hair slicked back into a ducktail, long sideburns, spit curl in front, and permanent sneer. A tough guy and a swinging chick—cool, but ready to lash out at any moment.

No longer were youth content to await the passage of time until they were admitted to adult society. They coalesced into a society of their own and increasingly identified with their own movies, role models, dress code, slang, hairstyles, behavior, and, of course, music.

What music? That question was answered best by the movie *Blackboard Jungle*, which featured in its opening credits a Bill Haley song called "Rock Around the Clock." This song firmly connected the new youth culture with rock and roll, and Bill Haley came to symbolize the new music's emergence.

Bill Haley and the Comets

Haley was born in Detroit in 1927, and his musical career swept across the three music markets (pop, C&W, R&B), thus representing what rock and roll as a genre did in the mid-1950s. Haley's primary early identification was with C&W. His band originally was called the Saddlemen, and it consisted of the usual C&W instrumentation (including steel guitar), plus the drum set and saxophone from the R&B tradition.

Haley admired R&B music. Even when playing typical C&W jobs, he and his band would slip in the occasional R&B song in a C&W style that would not offend his patrons. After changing his group's name to the Comets, Haley made a serious attempt to achieve national attention with his unique combination of R&B and C&W. In 1952 came "Crazy, Man, Crazy," followed in 1954 by "Shake, Rattle, and Roll" (an original R&B hit by Joe Turner). But rock history was made with Haley's version of an R&B hit, "Rock Around the



Bill Haley and the Comets (Source: © 1956 Columbia Pictures Corporation. All rights reserved. Courtesy of Columbia Pictures)

Clock” (originally recorded by Sonny Dae), in 1954. Only mildly successful at first, its association with the popular movie *Blackboard Jungle* put it over the top in 1955.

With the huge success of “Rock Around the Clock,” the walls between R&B, C&W, and pop began to crumble. Here was a white C&W band singing their version of an R&B song and seeing that song move up the pop charts until it peaked at number 1 in July 1955, a position it held for two months, and, according to *Cash Box* magazine, becoming the top-selling record in 1955. Even though Haley’s “Shake, Rattle, and Roll” (1954) eventually sold over 1 million copies and was among the top five for nearly five months, it was “Rock Around the Clock” that had the most dramatic impact on the nation’s consciousness. Haley followed with “Dim, Dim the Lights” (1955), which crossed over to appear on the R&B charts, a particularly unusual phenomenon because so-called white records rarely appeared on the R&B charts.

In that crucial year of 1955, Haley and his Comets seemed to represent the raucous new style called rock and roll. His popularity continued into 1956 (and beyond) with his film *Rock Around the Clock* (an early prototype of the teen rock film, which still exists today) and several more hits, including “See You Later, Alligator,” “Corrine, Corrina,” and “Green Door.” But Haley simply was not the person needed to personify the continuing development of the new youth-oriented rock and roll. Haley was nearly 40 years old and had a rather round, innocent baby face with a receding hairline (in spite of his 1950s-style spit curl in front). His straighter C&W background was all too evident.

A new figure was needed to be the front man for rock and roll: someone younger, someone who could project a combination of raw power and slightly menacing rebellion. As so often happens, the right person appeared in the right place at the right time.

Elvis Presley

Elvis Presley was a unique, central figure in the early development of rock and roll. He popularized the new style, disseminating it throughout society in a way no other individual could. It is probably not too great an overstatement to suggest that without Presley, rock might well have proven to be the musical fad its detractors claimed it to be, falling into the same category as the hula hoop and the Davy Crockett coonskin cap—sensations of American culture that consume our attention and then disappear into the realm of nostalgia.

Presley's Life and Career

Elvis Aron Presley was born in Tupelo, Mississippi, in 1935. In a nation that rigidly observed racial segregation (especially in the Deep South), it is hard to imagine how black and white cultures could ever mix. But in Southern white society, those at the very bottom of the socioeconomic scale were called “poor white trash” and were considered to be on a par with blacks. This was more than simply an abstract social stratification; it was a reality. The poorest whites lived “on the other side of the tracks” in many southern towns, sometimes alongside blacks.

And so Elvis was in a position to absorb a real variety of musical influences, including R&B, white and black gospel, C&W, bluegrass, western swing, and pop. From the radio, which brought the young Elvis both pop music and various forms of C&W, and from his living circumstances, which brought him the R&B and gospel sounds, the musical Elvis became, in effect, racially integrated.

The Presleys' economic fortunes did not improve significantly after their move to Memphis in 1948. They lived in a federally funded housing project, and Elvis attended a high school whose population was drawn from predominantly lower income levels. Naturally surrounded by white musical influences (pop and C&W), Elvis sought out the black musical sounds with which he had become familiar in Tupelo, reportedly hanging out around the Beale Street area, a hotbed of black music.

Elvis's high school years seem to have passed rather unremarkably. He was merely an average student; he was not a member of the popular in crowd. He just seemed different. Elvis crossed the lines of racial identity. He wore loud and outrageous clothes and liked and sang black-style music. He dressed like a *hood*, which meant black leather jackets, open shirts, and upturned collars. He wore long sideburns, with his hair greased back into a ducktail. Thus his image was not that of the typical mid-1950s white middle-class teenager, but a combination of black and lower-class white. His one point of popularity was his singing. His peers enjoyed his musical performances such as the one at the 1952 school variety show. Shortly after his graduation in 1953, Presley went to a small local recording company called the Memphis Recording Service to make a record as a gift for his mother. Although Sam Phillips, its owner, was not present at this first recording session, his secretary, Marion Keisker, was. She brought Presley's unique musical style to Phillips's attention on his return.

Phillips had recorded a number of black artists in the R&B style. He also enjoyed some success in the C&W market. Phillips is reputed to have said, “If I could find a white man who had the Negro sound and the Negro feel, I could make a billion dollars” (Hopkins 1971, 56). When he heard Presley's tapes, he knew he had his man. Presley's contract with Sun Records was signed in July 1954.

Elvis released five singles on the Sun label between mid-1954 and the end of 1955. The first Sun release underscores the biracial nature of rock and roll's roots and its most famous practitioner. On one side of the single was “That's All Right (Mama),” an R&B song by Arthur “Big Boy” Crudup. On the flip side was “Blue Moon of Kentucky,” a C&W standard by Bill Monroe. Backed by Scotty Moore (guitar) and Bill Black (bass), Presley's first record became a regional hit, eventually selling about 20,000 copies. Interestingly enough, some white radio stations refused to play Elvis's early releases because they assumed he was of mixed race.

By the time of his fifth and final Sun release (“Mystery Train” and “I Forgot to Remember to Forget”), Presley had become an important figure in the C&W world and was named the number 1 “up and coming” C&W artist in a 1955 *Billboard* disc jockey poll. Over this same year and a half, his reputation also spread by means of personal appearances, primarily in the South and Southwest, the prime market for C&W music, and on the country-oriented *Louisiana Hayride* radio show.



Elvis and his parents, Gladys and Vernon

(Source: Reproduced by permission of the Estate of Elvis Presley. Courtesy of Elvis Presley Enterprises Inc.)

However, Elvis was not the typical C&W act. His vocal and musical style was heavily influenced by R&B and black gospel. His appearance was a mixture of black fashion and the teenage rebel. His performance style included sexually suggestive body movements. Traditional C&W performers just did not do that. Whenever a package show (a show including a roster of artists) included Elvis, promoters noticed that the audience included more and more teenagers, especially females, who screamed and cried for Elvis. The other artists and their adult fans became increasingly irritated with this new phenomenon.

They did not realize that they were witnessing the beginnings of a major musical, social, and economic revolution.

Near the end of 1955 and the beginning of 1956, two related events occurred that would set into motion Presley's national impact. First, "Colonel" Tom Parker took over the personal management of Presley from his former manager. Parker was a shrewd industry insider, who had previously built the successful careers of country singers Eddy Arnold and Hank Snow. In his first major move, he negotiated Presley's release from Sun Records, signing him with the industry giant RCA Victor. In retrospect, RCA's purchase of Elvis Presley for a total of \$40,000 stands as one of the best business deals since the purchase of Manhattan from the Indians for a few trinkets.

With the release of "Heartbreak Hotel" in 1956, Presley was off and running (as was rock and roll). His first national hit sold more than 1 million copies in a matter of months. A subsequent release, "Hound Dog"/"Don't Be Cruel," sold over 3 million copies in one year. Sales orders for "Love Me Tender" exceeded 1 million before its release. In 1956,



Presley's record sales went over the 10 million mark. Some of these figures may fail to impress today, but they were mind-boggling statistics in the mid-1950s. Another amazing phenomenon was that both sides of a Presley single often achieved popularity. Normally, the A side is promoted for chart sales; the backup, or B side, is a throwaway. For example, "Hound Dog" and "Don't Be Cruel" (two sides of the same single) both reached number 1 on the charts; "Don't" and "I Beg of You" both reached the Top 10, as did "One Night"/"I Got Stung" and "A Fool Such As I"/"I Need Your Love Tonight."

Elvis as a young rock and roller (Source:

Reproduced by permission of the Estate of Elvis Presley. Courtesy of Elvis Presley Enterprises Inc.)



Elvis as a teen idol (Source: Reproduced by permission of the Estate of Elvis Presley. Courtesy of Elvis Presley Enterprises Inc.)

Through this period, Presley continued to cover C&W and R&B songs, thus continuing the biracial musicality that brought him to national prominence. Among his R&B covers were “Hound Dog” (Big Mama Thornton), “Shake, Rattle, and Roll” (Joe Turner), “Lawdy Miss Clawdy” (Lloyd Price), “Cryin’ in the Chapel” (the Orioles), and a host of Little Richard songs (including “Tutti Frutti,” “Long Tall Sally,” “Rip It Up,” and “Ready Teddy”). There were also C&W covers (the most famous being “Blue Suede Shoes” by Carl Perkins) and even pop covers (e.g., “Blue Moon” by Richard Rodgers,

1934). Elvis also had a number of crossover hits. “Heartbreak Hotel” reached number 1 on both pop and C&W charts and number 3 on the R&B charts. “Don’t Be Cruel,” “Hound Dog,” “Teddy Bear,” “Jailhouse Rock,” and “All Shook Up” hit number 1 on all three charts. “Love Me Tender” reached number 1 on the pop, number 3 on the C&W, and number 4 on the R&B charts. Even as late as 1960, “Are You Lonesome Tonight?” made all three charts.

In 1958, Presley was inducted into the army. Two life-altering events occurred during Elvis’s service period. First, his mother, Gladys, died during his first year of service. The effect on Elvis was profound as he was deeply devoted to his mother. Second, he met Priscilla Beaulieu, the woman he would marry.

On his return from Germany in 1960, Elvis’s career resumed with a movie called *G.I. Blues*. It exploited his return and, of course, his identification as a soldier. This was not Elvis’s first film. Beginning with *Love Me Tender* in 1956, Elvis made some 33 films over the next 16 years. Most were teen-rock exploitation films of little dramatic merit, although Elvis longed for more substantial dramatic roles.

As rock and roll moved on to newer styles in the 1960s, the frequency and impact of Elvis’s single hits declined. He began to pull back from live performances in the early 1960s and, from about 1962 to 1968, was rarely seen in person. He did produce several fine gospel albums during these years (*His Hand in Mine* and *How Great Thou Art*). He surrounded

himself with a group of loyal good old boys known as the Memphis Mafia and retreated to his Memphis home, Graceland.

In 1967, Elvis married Priscilla Beaulieu; a daughter, Lisa Marie, was born nine months later. With a television special in December 1968, Elvis returned to live performances. He still retained a tremendous appeal, especially to audiences in the 30-year-old-plus age group (his original fans). Colonel Parker successfully marketed him in Las Vegas and on



Elvis and Priscilla (Source: Reproduced by permission of the Estate of Elvis Presley. Courtesy of Elvis Presley Enterprises Inc.)



Elvis in the 1970s (Source: Reproduced by permission of the Estate of Elvis Presley. Courtesy of Elvis Presley Enterprises Inc.)

tour to major cities as well as minor sites that rarely had the opportunity to host live concerts by big-name acts. A high point came in 1973 with another television special, *Aloha from Hawaii*, the first television show to be transmitted internationally by satellite; the audience was estimated at 1 billion viewers.

However, his personal problems became more pressing in the 1970s. Elvis developed a weight problem that detracted from his image as a rock sex symbol. When off the road, his weight would balloon to well over 200 pounds. Facing the beginning of a tour, he would go on a crash diet program, complete with pills, and lose 20–30 pounds in a matter of weeks. Following the tour, the weight returned. This extreme up-and-down

weight pattern and an increasing reliance on drugs played havoc with his mental and physical health. His divorce from Priscilla in October 1973 and the resulting loss of Lisa Marie was a devastating personal shock. His personal life and his health continued to deteriorate throughout the 1970s. He finally died of heart-related problems in Memphis on August 16, 1977 (he was 42 years old).

After his death, Elvis's recording of "My Way," a song written by Paul Anka and popularized by Frank Sinatra, was released and became a big seller. Since then, millions of Presley albums (some old, some elaborately repackaged) have been sold. Numerous books have been written about his life, and Graceland has become a major tourist attraction.

The Importance of Presley

Although rock's early influences are still hotly debated, the consensus is that Elvis Presley really was "the King." Among the reasons are the following:

1. *He personified rock and roll.* Rock and roll developed as a biracial music, and more than anyone else's, Presley's musical style genuinely reflected those biracial influences. Perhaps the only one to approach Presley's biracial style was Jerry Lee Lewis, but Lewis's short-lived career as a rock and roll artist did not hold a candle to Presley's.
2. *His multifaceted personality and his musical versatility gave him an appeal beyond that of the typical rock and roll star.* Elvis was many things to many people: sexy, rebellious, God-fearing, patriotic, and respectful. Whether your musical tastes ran toward shoutin' rock and roll, softer rock, romantic ballads, hymns, gospel, country, patriotic anthems, social commentary, escapism, or tearjerkers, you could find an Elvis song to your liking. How could one person fill so many contradictory demands and still succeed? The music industry would love to know. It tried to create Elvis clones, but such attempts just did not work. He was unique.
3. *Elvis was an overwhelming commercial success.* By the time of his death, at least 500 million copies of Presley records had been sold. Record sales since his death and on into the future will multiply that staggering figure. Presley holds the record for the most charted albums, the most hits in the Top 10, the most two-sided hit singles,

the most consecutive Top 10 records, and the most total weeks in the number 1 position (80 weeks). He also holds the record for the most consecutive years on the charts (including posthumous albums): 27. This is just over a quarter of a century.

Elvis's Legacy

Let us return for just a moment to Elvis's versatility and multifaceted appeal. Presley's critics argue that he began as a true rock and roller but disintegrated into a bland, somewhat pathetic pop star, with no contributions to rock music after about 1960.

However, what is sometimes portrayed as a weakness may, in fact, be a strength. Presley assimilated many styles into his own musical style. Sometimes his style was more of a unique mix; other times, he followed an existing style. Even his early hits included a shouting rock and roll song like "Hound Dog," a sultry song like "Don't Be Cruel," and a romantic pop ballad like "Love Me Tender." In spite of the movies and sound tracks of the 1960s, the original musical roots were still alive in Elvis, as evidenced by his NBC television special of December 1968. Rejoined by members of his original group and clad in black leather, he gave a powerful demonstration that rock and roll, raw and basic, was still alive and well within the King. His versatility and multifaceted appeal is what made him the most influential and successful proponent of rock and roll of his time. Had Presley stayed in a narrow style of so-called real rock and roll, the new musical style might well have remained a subculture music like C&W, R&B, and gospel. Instead, largely because of Elvis's pivotal impact, rock and roll moved out of its identity as teen music to become the popular musical style of the second half of the 20th century.

Three Basic Trends Emerge

As rock and roll developed in the 1950s, it began to break into different streams, or genres. Drawing on varied influences from C&W, R&B, and pop, rock styles developed that emphasized one or more different aspects of these sources. Rock began to subdivide into three major streams: mainstream rock, rockabilly, and soft rock.

Mainstream Rock

Of rock's three primary ancestors (pop, C&W, and R&B), R&B provided the heaviest influence. In fact, some argue that rock and roll is essentially a newer, updated continuation of R&B, with other styles merely being offshoots of this main line of development.

It is true that the harder "mainstream" styles of 1950s rock and roll show a definite lineage back to R&B. First, there was the heavy reliance on the 12-bar blues form. A majority of upbeat (fast), hard-driving 1950s rock songs were based on the 12-bar blues. Some were pure (adhering closely to all the aspects of the 12-bar blues pattern), whereas others modified one or more of the pattern's characteristics. For example, "Jailhouse Rock" expands to a 16-bar blues; several songs change the traditional lyric pattern, and a few move to a middle section not related to blues. But all use the basic 12-bar blues as the point of departure.

Another characteristic of R&B evident in the harder 1950s rock and roll songs is the vocal performance style. Just as there had been R&B shouters, there were rock and roll shouters. Perhaps the best example is Little Richard. There is a distinct difference in voice production when one changes from a pure tone to a shout. Try speaking your name loudly. Then really yell it. Feel the difference? The shout has a harder sound, usually with a raspiness to it. Presley approaches the shouting style in "Jailhouse Rock," "Hard-Headed Woman," and "Hound Dog." Not all rock singers shouted their songs; singers such as Chuck Berry and Jerry Lee Lewis simply belted them out without shouting. And not all R&B singers were shouters. Some belted out a song with a strong, hard vocal style that stopped short of shouting.

Elvis Presley

"Hound Dog"
 "Hard-Headed Woman"
 "I Got Stung"
 "Jailhouse Rock"
 "Teddy Bear"

Little Richard

"Lucille"
 "Tutti Frutti"
 "Long Tall Sally"
 "Good Golly Miss Molly"
 "Jenny, Jenny"

Chuck Berry

"School Days"
 "Johnny B. Goode"

Bill Haley

"Rock Around the Clock"
 "Shake, Rattle, and Roll"

Fats Domino

"Ain't That a Shame"

Buddy Holly

"Oh Boy"

Jerry Lee Lewis

"Whole Lot of Shakin' Going On"

Ray Charles

"What'd I Say"

Danny and the Juniors

"At the Hop"

Like R&B, most 1950s mainstream rock was not notated. The lyrics, melody, and chords for one chorus might be sketched. From there the total arrangement was worked out without notation. Also, the instrumentation of the typical rock and roll band was similar to that of the old R&B band: guitars, piano, drums, and saxophone.

Another important characteristic of 1950s rock that was derived from earlier R&B was the bass line. R&B bass lines were more melodic than pop and C&W ones. The purpose of most bass lines is to provide the bottom of the harmony (the root). In much C&W and pop, the required bass note was played on each beat or every other beat. But in R&B, there was typically a more active bass line, similar to the bass lines of boogie-woogie. Thus the bass would provide not only the root of the chord but also devise a short melodic pattern from the notes of the chord, sometimes with a few added pitches:

C & W or pop: R & B and rock and roll: (or)

C C C E G E G C (D#) E G (A) G

Many patterns were devised, adding to the overall rhythmic activity of the song. Listen to the bass part of some 1940s R&B (e.g., Otis Spann's "Bloody Murder") and you can hear the predecessors of the bass lines of much 1950s rock.

Finally, the rhythmic aspect of R&B carried over to the harder styles of early rock and roll. Unlike C&W and pop, rhythm was one of the most prominent elements of R&B. The drummer did not just provide a quiet rhythmic structure or play a simple beat; he was an integral part of the music, equal to the other members of the band. The beats were heavy and strong, and they were also emphasized in the piano and guitar parts. In 1950s mainstream rock, the beat became faster, and the emphasis on the second and fourth beats (the **backbeat**) became stronger (often reinforced by handclaps).

Rockabilly

Although most of the leading performers of early mainstream rock were black, there were a few white mainstream rockers. This was particularly true where the white performer had grown up with a heavy dose of R&B in his or her environment (e.g., Elvis Presley and Jerry Lee Lewis). More often, these white performers, usually Southern, had a C&W background. Their combination of C&W characteristics and R&B-oriented, mainstream rock became known as **rockabilly**. Generally, the effect was to lighten and clean up the hard-driving, more basic mainstream style. To some, rockabilly made rock more acceptable; to others, it seemed to dilute a purer style.

Bill Haley laid the foundation for rockabilly along with rock and roll when he took R&B material and modified it with a C&W sound. Nonetheless, the real center for the early development of the rockabilly style was Sam Phillips's Sun Studios in Memphis. Presley's success encouraged many other southern white musicians to make the trek to Memphis in the hope of finding success with the new rockabilly sound. From approximately 1955 to 1959, Sun released recordings by Carl Perkins, Jerry Lee Lewis, Johnny Cash, and a host of less significant artists. Perkins's 1955 national hit "Blue Suede Shoes" became a Top 10 hit on the C&W, R&B, and pop charts in 1956. Other companies quickly jumped on the rockabilly bandwagon: With Bill Haley already on its roster, Decca added Buddy Holly and the Johnny Burnette Trio; Capitol signed Gene Vincent ("Be-Bop-a-Lula"); Chess released "Susie Q" by Dale Hawkins; and Liberty countered with "Summertime Blues" by Eddie Cochran, a Presley look-alike.

One of the most influential rockabilly acts was the Everly Brothers (Phil and Don). Their parents were C&W musicians; the boys toured with them and appeared on their radio show, thus absorbing a strong C&W background. With Presley as a model, they turned toward the rockabilly sound, creating their own personal mixture of C&W and R&B and becoming immensely popular. Between 1957 and 1960, they placed 11 hits in the Top 10, including four number 1 songs. Their "All I Have to Do Is Dream" (1958) was the only song by someone other than Presley to reach the number 1 position on the pop, R&B, and C&W charts.



The Everly Brothers (Source: Photograph courtesy of the Country Music Foundation Inc.)



Rick Nelson (Source: Michael Ochs Archive Ltd.)

One of the few non-Southerners to be associated with rockabilly was Ricky Nelson. He and his brother appeared on the hit television show *The Adventures of Ozzie and Harriet*, which starred their parents. Nelson developed a softer, more pop-oriented style of rockabilly and had a series of hits beginning in 1957 and continuing through 1972. The TV show provided a showcase for many of his hits and was an early use of this powerful medium to influence a teen record-buying audience. Between 1957 and 1960, he placed 11 songs in the Top 10. Nelson died in a plane crash in 1986.

The musical style of rockabilly is difficult to identify in precise terms. Rockabilly singers stopped short of the shouting style (sometimes approaching a crooning style in slower songs). They usually sang clearly and cleanly on pitch; the lyrics were enunciated distinctly. The instrumentation was close to that of the mainstream style, except there was less emphasis on saxophone, and acoustic guitars were used more often. Drums, not part of the traditional C&W sound, were added, reflecting the R&B influence. Although electric bass was used by later rockabilly groups, the earliest groups used acoustic bass, which was **slapped** to add a percussive beat.

Although some rockabilly songs are based, at least in part, on the 12-bar blues, most follow the 8-bar or 16-bar forms typical of C&W and pop songs. In some cases, the rockabilly rhythm approached that of mainstream rock. Normally, the beat was lighter, with less of the hard-driving, heavy beat of the R&B-influenced mainstream. Even so, to help identify rockabilly as a rock style, the backbeat on the second and fourth beats was often present. The boogie-oriented bass lines of mainstream rock were less frequent in rockabilly, except for the hardest examples.

Rockabilly provided a more acceptable alternative for those who were drawn to the new rock and roll style but were not quite ready to accept the harder mainstream sound. It offered the excitement and appeal of rock, without the raucous, unrefined musical style of the mainstream (and without its racial associations, which some found objectionable).

Soft Rock

From the beginning, there has been a vital market for a softer style of rock that combines elements of rock and pop music. Many rock purists deny that soft rock is a legitimate style of rock. They see it as the illegitimate offspring of an unholy alliance between pop and rock, dismissing it with such derisive phrases as *schlock rock* or *schmaltz*, among other terms. These purists typically dismiss this style with a condescending sniff or an incredulous “You call that rock?!” In spite of this reaction, two facts are incontrovertible: (1) Much soft rock contains clearly identifiable elements of rock and (2) this style has had a broad and consistent appeal (market) from the beginning of rock to the present day.

From the beginning, rock music was dance music. Whether at the high school prom or the Friday afternoon sock hop in the school gym, teens liked to dance to their new music. But dancing for four hours to “Tutti Frutti” and other hard rockers would be monotonous, nerve-wracking, and physically exhausting. Teens in the 1950s liked to slow dance, or

close dance. With sociosexual mores being far more conservative than they later became, close or slow dancing was a vital part of the developing boy-girl relationship. Holding hands and long embraces were socially acceptable, in those days, if done under the guise of dancing. Many a relationship developed during the slow tunes played as the dance evening moved into its final hours.

Soft rock of the 1950s developed two rather distinct styles: (1) white soft rock developed by Elvis, Pat Boone, and the good-looking teen idols modeled after them, and (2) black soft rock developed by the numerous vocal groups referred to now (but not at that time) as **doo-wop** groups. As with so many of the developments of rock, Elvis Presley established a model for the white soft rock style. From the beginning of his RCA output, Elvis recorded soft, slow ballads such as "I Want You, I Need You, I Love You," "Love Me Tender," "Don't," "Loving You," and "Anyway You Want Me" (all 1956 to 1958 releases). The softer pop side of Elvis continued, and even increased, during the balance of his career. Some of these songs are pure pop, bearing no real relationship to rock; others, however, contain clearly identifiable elements of rock.

Perhaps no one better exemplifies the softer pop rock style of the 1950s than Pat Boone. He was a young, handsome, and talented singer whose clean-cut appearance, performance style, and lifestyle provided an alternative to the more menacing styles of rock. Boone's career began with his commercially successful covers of R&B and mainstream rock originals, notably "Ain't That a Shame" (Fats Domino) and "Tutti Frutti" and "Long Tall Sally" (Little Richard). Beyond the covers, Boone also did the original popular versions of some upbeat songs, such as "Why Baby Why" and "Wonderful Time Up There," and some slow- to moderate-tempo songs, such as "Sugar Moon," "April Love," and "Love Letters in the Sand." Many rock historians believe that Boone was not a rock and roll singer; after all, he did not fit the desired image of the rebellious, countercultural rock star. However, if one listens objectively to some of his performances (e.g., a national television performance of "Tutti Frutti"), one must admit that he did sing rock and roll. The vocal style is not as hard and raucous as Little Richard's, of course, but all the same, basic rock elements are there.

It is also true that many of Boone's recordings are in a pure pop ballad style, derived from the Tin Pan Alley and Hollywood traditions, containing no pretense of rock. Boone has been criticized on the grounds that through his cover versions, he capitalized on the original work of many black R&B artists. However, his recordings brought many of these songs to national prominence when, given the society and marketplace of the 1950s, they otherwise would have languished in obscurity.

If Elvis could include soft rock and pure pop ballads in his repertoire, others could legitimately specialize in this field. In the late 1950s and early 1960s, a large list of such performers achieved significance. Most were similar to Pat Boone and the softer side of Elvis: attractive, young, talented, and rather wholesome. This list would include Paul Anka, Frankie Avalon, Bobby Rydell, Bobby Vee, Bobby Darin, Tommy Sands, and female counterparts Connie Francis and Brenda Lee (although the latter tended toward a soft form of rockabilly).



Pat Boone (Source: Michael Ochs Archive Ltd.)

For the predecessors of black soft rock, we look not toward Elvis Presley, but further back, into the 1940s and early 1950s, to groups such as the Mills Brothers and the Ink Spots. Black vocal ensembles of three to six singers were increasingly popular in the early 1950s. They usually included a particularly talented lead singer and a backup vocal ensemble who provided **close harmony**. To add rhythmic activity, the backup vocalists often sang rhythmic patterns using nonsense syllables. Although some were very simple (“doo-wah” and “doo-wop”), some became quite complex (such as the “oodly-pop-a-cow, pop-a-cow, pop-a-cowcow” sung by Frankie Lymon and the Teenagers in 1956 [Miller 1980, 83]). Their acts were tightly choreographed, so that the singers turned sideways, pivoted, kicked one foot, and tugged their shirt cuffs with coordinated precision. Groups such as the Ravens, the Orioles, and the Crows developed the style in the early 1950s. Landmark records were “Cryin’ in the Chapel” (Orioles, 1953) and “Gee” (Crows, 1954).

In 1954, the Chords released “Sh-Boom,” which reached number 5 on the pop charts (number 3 on the R&B charts); a cover version by the Crew Cuts also reached the Top 10 just one week later. Further covers of “Sh-Boom” were recorded by Billy Williams, Sy Oliver, and country artist Bobby Williamson. The song also cracked the Top 20 in England. The popularity of the doo-wop song was established. Also in 1954, the Penguins released “Earth Angel,” which rose to number 8 nationally (number 1 on the R&B charts). The cover version by the Crew Cuts also achieved a number 8 ranking. By 1955, the floodgates were opened, and the bird groups (Crows, Falcons, Penguins, Flamingos, etc.), car groups (Imperials, Impalas, El Dorados, Fleetwoods, Edsels, etc.), and other doo-wop groups poured into the market. Most of these groups achieved one or two successful hits and disappeared. Few rock styles boast such a long list of one- or two-hit artists.



The Crew Cuts (Source: Michael Ochs Archive Ltd.)



The Platters (Source: Michael Ochs Archive Ltd.)

Notable exceptions to the one-shot syndrome were the Platters and the Coasters. Consisting of four men and one woman, the Platters released a formidable string of hits, including the first doo-wop song to achieve number 1 status on the pop charts, “The Great Pretender.” Other Platter hits include “Only You,” “Smoke Gets in Your Eyes,” “My Prayer” (a remake of an earlier hit by the Ink Spots), “Twilight Time,” and “The Magic Touch.” In a very dif-

ferent way, the Coasters also defied the one-hit syndrome. Their hits included “Yakety Yak,” “Charlie Brown,” “Searchin’,” “Poison Ivy,” and “Along Came Jones.” Whereas the Platters sang songs of romantic love in beautiful harmony, with the talented solo voice of Tony Williams soaring over the top, the Coasters took a humorous approach to teen life with a less polished sound and an emphasis on the spoken bass part (e.g., “Why’s everybody always pickin’ on me?” from “Charlie Brown”).

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: RHYTHM IN EARLY ROCK AND ROLL

Rhythm is perhaps the most basic of all of the musical elements because all sound must have a beginning, a duration, and an end—that is, an existence in time. By rhythm, we mean how sound is ordered in time.

Music psychologists believe that human beings respond naturally to the beat or rhythmic aspect of music because our own body is, in fact, a complex of periodic vibrations and **beats** (pulses). Perhaps this is why, when we hear a strongly rhythmic piece of jazz or rock, we cannot resist tapping our feet, clapping our hands, moving our bodies, or dancing.

Although all musical styles have rhythm, in some styles, the rhythm is more strongly perceived than in others. For example, in Debussy’s *Prelude to the Afternoon of a Faun*, the beat is very slow and is purposely deemphasized. The music seems to float through time. In contrast, in Elvis Presley’s “Hound Dog,” the beat and rhythm are right up front.

There are four basic observations that we can make about the rhythm in almost any piece of music. The terms defined here—*tempo*, *meter*, *backbeat*, and *subdivision*—will be extremely useful to us in our discussions of various rock songs and styles:

1. *How fast is the beat?* The musical term for the speed of the beat is *tempo*. Elvis’s “Hard-Headed Woman” has a fast tempo; “Return to Sender” has a moderate tempo; “Love Me Tender” has a slow tempo. Beats per minute can be measured with a device called a *metronome*. Table 3–1 shows some of Elvis’s songs and their tempos.
2. *How are the beats organized?* As we saw in our discussion of the 12-bar blues, pop musicians usually organize beats into groups of four. The technical term for this


TABLE 3-1

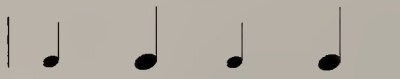
Song Description	Metronome Tempo
"Hard-Headed Woman"	fast 195 beats/minute
"Long Tall Sally"	fast 192 beats/minute
"I Got Stung"	fast 190 beats/minute
"Hound Dog"	fast 180 beats/minute
"Don't Be Cruel"	moderately fast 172 beats/minute
"Jailhouse Rock"	moderately fast 162 beats/minute
"Return to Sender"	moderate 132 beats/minute
"Are You Lonesome Tonight?"	slow 75 beats/minute
"Love Me Tender"	slow 72 beats/minute

organizational grouping of beats is **meter**. Thus quadruple meter is the organization of beats into groups of four; triple meter is the organization of beats into groups of three; duple meter is groups of two, quintuple meter, five, and so on. The vast majority of rock and roll is in quadruple meter; we will make special note of the exceptions. Recall from Chapter 2 that each grouping of beats is called a **measure** or bar. So if we speak of eight bars of quadruple meter, we are referring to a total of 32 beats organized into eight groups of four.

3. *How strong are the beats?* Most people can feel the beat in a rock piece and can demonstrate that beat by tapping their feet, snapping their fingers, or clapping their hands.

All the beats in a measure are not equally strong. Traditionally, the first beat (the downbeat) is the strongest beat; the next strongest is the third beat; the second and fourth beats are relatively weak. However, many rock songs emphasize beats two and four, just the opposite of the traditional approach. When this occurs, the music is said to have a strong backbeat:

traditional beat: |  |
ONE two THREE four


backbeat: |  |
one TWO three FOUR

Again, music psychologists have suggested that the intense rhythmic appeal of rock may be partially due to the backbeat, which sets up a tension against our traditional expectations.

Some rock emphasizes all four beats equally. For example, listen to the opening section of Chicago's "Saturday in the Park." The piano's introductory measures emphasize all four beats equally; however, when the drummer enters, he accents beats two and four. Or listen to the Beatles' "Why Don't We Do It in the Road?"; again, the piano part emphasizes all four beats equally, but the drum part clearly accents beats two and four.

4. *How are the beats subdivided?* Rhythm would be a pretty simple matter if it consisted only of beats, but the real rhythmic interest (and complexity) of most music is determined by what happens inside, or between, the beats. Each beat is usually

subdivided into smaller parts. For our purposes, we shall concentrate on the subdivision of the beat into two, three, and four parts:

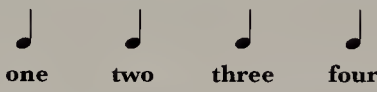
basic beat: 

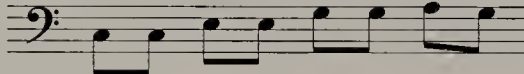
duple (2) subdivision: 

triple (3) subdivision: 

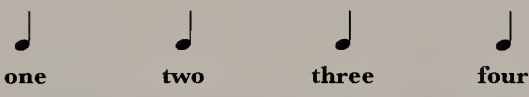
quadruple (4) subdivision: 


Faster rock and roll of the 1950s used a duple subdivision of the beat; the bass line of Elvis's "Jailhouse Rock" has a very clear duple subdivision of the beat.

beat: 


duple subdivision: 


Slower, softer songs were more likely to have a triple subdivision of the beat, for example, the Platters' "The Great Pretender" or the Flamingos' "I Only Have Eyes for You." Notice especially the piano's repeating chords, three per beat:

beat: 

triple subdivision: 

An interesting combination of the backbeat and a duple subdivision is found in some 1950s (and later) rock songs. Try the following exercise to make your own rock beat:

right hand: 

left hand: 

Listen to "Sweet Nothings" by Brenda Lee or "Short Shorts" by the Royal Teens for clear examples of this combination.

We shall frequently refer to the rhythmic characteristics of various rock styles and certain rock pieces. We may speak of the tempo, the meter, the backbeat, or the **subdivision** pattern. It is hoped that this brief introduction will provide a basis for understanding these later comments.

Rock and Roll: 1950s Style

KEY TERMS

boogie
eight-bar blues
trade-offs

glissandi
glottal stop
hook

payola
cadence

Overview: Five Style Setters of the 1950s

In addition to Elvis Presley, there were five other pivotal figures in 1950s rock: Little Richard, Jerry Lee Lewis, Fats Domino, Chuck Berry, and Buddy Holly. Quite different in many ways, each of these musicians broke new ground stylistically, although they were still heavily influenced by their predecessors. Together, they mark a critical era in rock's history; the impact of their musical techniques, vocal stylings, and sheer showmanship has affected the genre ever since.

Little Richard

The purest prototype of hard, mainstream rock was Little Richard. Elvis's multifaceted musical style included not only mainstream rock but also rockabilly and soft rock. Little Richard, in contrast, was, in one self-contained package, the embodiment of the type of mainstream rock that led to the Rolling Stones, Jimi Hendrix, Alice Cooper, James Brown, David Bowie, and Prince, among others.

Although accounts of his birth date vary, his mother reports it as December 5, 1932. Born Richard Wayne Penniman, in Macon, Georgia, he was the third of 12 children. His father worked in the construction industry and "handled" moonshine (White 1984, 3). Although a simple but sincere belief in God was a part of the Penniman household, Richard was a troublemaker. This basic conflict between hell-raising and piety troubled Richard's life, career, and music. In his biography of Little Richard, Charles White notes that Richard (1984, xiii) "twice discarded super-stardom for the church, typifying the conflict between sacred and secular music which is built into the black culture." (Richard's

recognition of his homosexuality was also troubling for the young singer, who knew that his church and family—not to mention society as a whole—would strongly disapprove if they learned of his sexual identity.) After leaving home at the age of 14, he learned a variety of musical styles, including pop, gospel, and R&B; his experiences ran from working in a traveling medicine show to black blues bands. However, several early recordings led nowhere.

After his father was shot and killed outside of a local tavern, Richard became the main breadwinner of the family. He continued to play and sing throughout the South and even released several gospel-oriented R&B recordings. Returning to the Georgia area, Richard started a new band and began listening to the music of Fats Domino, Chuck Berry, and Lloyd Price. At Price's suggestion, he sent an audition tape to Specialty Records in Los Angeles, and after many months, the label gave him a contract.

Specialty Records was a moderately successful gospel and R&B label. Its biggest success had been Lloyd Price's "Lawdy Miss Clawdy" in 1952. Owner Art Rupe wanted "a big band sound expressed in a churchy way," or, as Specialty's producer Robert "Bumps" Blackwell put it, "a gospel singer who could sing the blues" (White 1984, 44, 46). Blackwell had been involved in the early careers of Ray Charles and Quincy Jones and was hired to supervise Little Richard's first Specialty session in New Orleans. After taping four rather uninspired songs by a somewhat intimidated Little Richard, the group broke for lunch. Richard went to a piano and launched into an energetic version of an off-color song called "Tutti Frutti." Blackwell knew it was what he wanted. He quickly got the local songwriter Dorothy La Bostrie to clean up the lyrics; they returned to the studio and in 15 minutes had what was to become a rock and roll classic on tape.

The chorus of "Tutti Frutti" is a 12-bar blues, as are the verses, but with a modification in the third phrase to lead smoothly to the chorus. Added to Richard's pounding boogie-style piano is guitar, bass, tenor sax, baritone sax, and drums. Richard's shouting style and falsetto *woos* set the style for many to follow. The lyrics of the chorus are classics of 1950s nonsense. "Tutti Frutti" is the model for most of Little Richard's hits: "Long Tall Sally," "Slippin' and Slidin'," "Rip It Up," "Ready Teddy," "The Girl Can't Help It," "Lucille," "Jenny, Jenny," and "Good Golly Miss Molly." Although "Tutti Frutti" sold about 500,000 copies and appealed to both black and white teens, for some, Little Richard's style was a bit too raucous and noisy. In spite of its importance in the history of rock, "Tutti Frutti" rose only to number 21 on the pop charts (number 2 on the R&B charts). It was quickly covered by both Elvis Presley and Pat Boone, as was "Long Tall Sally." "Rip It Up," backed with "Ready Teddy," reached number 27 (number 1 on the R & B charts), and again, both were covered by Presley (Buddy Holly also recorded "Rip It Up"). Although some teens preferred the cover versions, it is not true that the Presley, Holly, or Boone recordings overshadowed Little Richard's. In fact, only two of these covers reached the Top 40 (Boone's versions of "Tutti Frutti" and "Long Tall Sally").

Little Richard's performance style was frenetic. He sang, shouted, danced, gyrated, and sweated profusely. He became the symbol for wild, unrestrained rock and roll. The parallel between his performance style and his long-held ambition to be a preacher, exhorting his congregation into frenzied expressions of praise and self-confession, reminds us of the ironic link between the southern black religious experience and the Little Richard style of rock and roll. It is reported that participants in his postconcert orgies sometimes awakened to Richard giving sincere readings of the Bible. This dichotomy ruptured in 1957, when he renounced his show business career and turned toward religion.

In fact, Richard gave Bible college a try and even married a young Washington, D.C. secretary named Ernestine Campbell. But neither the marriage nor the religious education lasted. In 1962, he launched his comeback with a tour of England, where he met two aspiring British rock groups: the Beatles and the Rolling Stones. Mick Jagger

insightfully describes Richard's performance style as "hypnotic, like an evangelistic meeting where, for want of a better phrase, Richard is the disciple and the audience the flock that follows. I couldn't believe the power of Little Richard on stage. He was amazing" (White 1984, 119).

By the late 1960s, Richard had slipped into self-parody. His stage act featured outrageous costumes, homosexual hype, and endless renditions of his old hits. Through the early 1970s, he attempted to make a comeback, but his growing dependence on drugs and alcohol dashed any hopes of a renewed career. As a result of several personal tragedies, he once again abandoned his wild lifestyle, and in the last half of the 1970s, he again turned toward religion. His lifelong internal battle is revealed in Richard's own remarks:

I felt that my singing was like . . . Billy Graham giving a message. I gave a message in song to help people . . . to know the way. There was always that little beam of light, of love. . . . I decided to come back and teach goodness in this business. To teach love, because music is the universal language. . . .

My true belief about Rock 'n' Roll . . . is this: I believe this kind of music is demonic. I have seen the rock groups and the punk-rock people in this country. And some of their lyrics is demonic. They talk against God. . . . I believe that kind of music is driving people from Christ. It is contagious. (White 1984, 165, 197)

Perhaps Little Richard was not the king of rock and roll he claimed to be, but he was one of the most influential figures in rock history. He was dynamic, egotistical, controversial, and utterly original. Although his influence would last as long as there was rock and roll, his own personal musical style went out of date. Still, as he recalls his friends Elvis, Buddy Holly, Jimi Hendrix, Janis Joplin, Sam Cooke, and so many others, he can say, "I have God to thank that I'm a living legend and not a dead one" (White 1984, 196).



Little Richard (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Fats Domino

Antoine “Fats” Domino (born on February 26, 1928, in New Orleans) represents an interesting contrast to Little Richard. Certainly there were similarities: Both were southern blacks who played piano and sang; both came from the R&B tradition; both became very popular rock and roll stars of the 1950s. Beyond that, they were more different than alike.

Fats came from a musical family. He quit school at 14 to go to work as a factory worker by day and a club musician by night. Among his musical jobs, he played with a prominent New Orleans band headed by Dave Bartholomew. Bartholomew, local representative for Imperial Records, arranged for a recording session, which produced Fats’s first hit, “The Fat Man,” released in 1950.

By 1955, Fats had placed 12 hits on the Top 10 of the R&B charts, including a number 1 hit, “Goin’ Home” (1952). Fats kept his R&B style as he was transformed into a rock and roll star of the mid- and late 1950s. This influence is obvious in “The Fat Man,” where his use of the falsetto voice is particularly interesting. Unlike Little Richard’s occasional falsetto *woos*, Fats actually sings an entire 16-bar solo with falsetto *wah-wahs* approximating the sound of a harmonica solo. The form of “The Fat Man” is that of an **eight-bar blues** (a modification of the traditional 12-bar blues). Fats preferred the eight-bar form even in his rock and roll songs. The instrumentation of “The Fat Man” is similar to the R&B-oriented rock band of the 1950s: saxes, guitar, bass, drums, and piano, played in a boogie-woogie style that is less flamboyant and more refined than Little Richard’s style.

Fats’s first hit to cross over to the pop charts was “Ain’t That a Shame.” Released in 1955, it became number 1 on the R&B charts and rose to number 10 on the pop charts. A cover version by Pat Boone reached number 1 in September 1955. “Ain’t That a Shame” is a 12-bar blues, typical of R&B-oriented rock hits of the 1950s, but an exception to Fats’s usual eight-bar blues. Subsequent Domino releases continued to do well on the R&B charts, and he placed more and more hits on the pop charts. The Domino sound was essentially unchanged in “I’m in Love Again” (1956), “Blueberry Hill” (1956), “Blue Monday” (1956), “I’m Walkin’” (1957), “Whole Lotta Lovin’” (1958), and “I Want to Walk You Home” (1959).

Not all 1950s rock hits were newly composed. With hits rising and falling faster than ever before, there was a tremendous demand for material. A common practice was to resurrect old pop favorites from previous decades and recast them in the new rock style, usually by adding a rock bass line and a recognizable rock beat. Fats Domino was particularly successful at this.

“Blueberry Hill,” for example, had been popularized back in the 1940s by white big bands, and “My Blue Heaven” (1956) dates back to 1927. These Tin Pan Alley songs conform to the 32-bar pop song form, with four phrases of eight bars each.

Near the end of the 1950s, performers and record companies alike assumed that rock and roll would not last. Fearing that performers would be narrowly typed as rock and roll performers only, some tried to establish themselves more as so-called legitimate pop artists, capable of continued appeal after rock disappeared. Elvis Presley’s success in a variety of styles seemed to confirm this strategy.



Fats Domino (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. — Los Angeles)

By 1960, the typical mainstream rock and roll style was indeed beginning to fade. Fats's hits were becoming less frequent. The sound of "Walkin' to New Orleans," released in 1960, was pop-oriented. Strings were added; the old boogie-woogie rock piano disappeared, and there were no rocking saxophone solos. "Walkin' to New Orleans" proved to be Fats's last Top 10 hit. Except for a minor hit in 1968 (the Beatles' "Lady Madonna"), Fats's career after the early 1960s revolved around nostalgia tours and Las Vegas appearances.

Fats Domino's style was less flamboyant, hysterical, and threatening than the pounding, raucous style of Little Richard. Fats seemed more refined and controlled. He actually sat on a piano bench, playing and singing his repertoire without the histrionics of Little Richard or Jerry Lee Lewis. As one surveys 1950s rock from the vantage point of history, Fats's music seems uncomplicated and enjoyable and his lifestyle rather free from controversy and trauma. He remains a lovable reminder of less troubled times.

Chuck Berry

Electric guitar has become the central instrumental ingredient in rock and roll. Of the "big six" of 1950s rock, it is surely Chuck Berry who had the greatest influence on rock guitar styles, until the appearance of Jimi Hendrix a decade later.

Charles Edward Anderson Berry was born in St. Louis in 1926. He sang in the Baptist church choir and learned to play guitar while in high school. His roots were squarely in the black R&B tradition, although he was not from the South, as were Little Richard and Fats Domino. After spending three years in reform school for attempted robbery, he worked for a time in local R&B clubs and in the General Motors plant in order to support a wife and two children.

While playing at the local Cosmopolitan Club, the Chuck Berry Trio was heard by famed bluesman Muddy Waters, who suggested that the group audition for Chess Records, an independent company in Chicago. Chess and its subsidiary, Checker, had recorded some of the biggest names in R&B, including Muddy Waters and Howlin' Wolf, as well as the new rock and rollers (Bo Diddley, Dale Hawkins, the Moonglows, the Flamingos). Chess was also well connected to influential disc jockey Alan Freed, who was willing to promote R&B music and black rock and rollers.

Berry's group auditioned with a song named "Ida Red," actually a C&W song made popular by Bob Wills and His Texas Playboys. Leonard Chess renamed the song, modified the lyrics, and issued it as "Maybelline." In return for the consideration of being listed as coauthor, Alan Freed agreed to promote the record. By subsequent Chuck Berry standards, "Maybelline" is rather basic and unimpressive, both from musical and technical production perspectives. Nevertheless, with Freed's help, it hit the charts in 1955, eventually rising to number 5 (number 1 on the R&B charts).

After several intervening hits, Chuck made the pop charts again with "Roll Over Beethoven" (1956). "Too Much Monkey Business" and "Brown-Eyed Handsome Man" achieved R&B success in 1957, before "School Days," "Rock and Roll Music," "Sweet Little Sixteen," and "Johnny B. Goode" all landed in the Top 10 in 1957 and 1958. In late 1959, Berry was arrested for violation of the Mann Act, which made it illegal to take an underage woman across state lines for "immoral purposes." Berry's troubles began when he picked up a 14-year-old girl in El Paso who had previously worked as a waitress and prostitute. She joined his tour, traveling through New Mexico, Arizona, Colorado, and Missouri with him. When the tour ended, Chuck put the girl to work as a hatcheck girl in his club in St. Louis. However, she proved unreliable, and Berry fired her. She subsequently filed a complaint with the police. Berry was convicted in a 1960 trial, but the conviction was overturned on appeal. A second trial resulted in a three-year sentence and a fine. He was eventually released in 1964 (White 1984, 42–44).



Chuck Berry (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./ Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

After his release, Berry managed several hits, including “No Particular Place to Go” (number 10 in 1964). Remarkably, he had his only number 1 pop chart hit (“My Ding-a-Ling”) in 1972, at the age of 46.

Like Domino, Berry stopped short of Little Richard’s shouting style, and his enunciation is generally clearer than most blues-oriented singers. Berry’s friend Johnny Johnson adds an effective piano style to many Berry recordings (listen carefully to “Sweet Little Sixteen,” “Almost Grown,” “Johnny B. Goode,” “Back in the U.S.A.,” “Rock and Roll Music,” and “Reelin’ and Rockin’”). Berry’s lyrics speak to the newly emerging teen society and the everyday concerns of their lives:

cars, girls, school, rock music, and the problems of growing up. Frequently, the songs develop a story or idea (“School Days” and “Johnny B. Goode”), and generally, Berry’s lyrics are far superior to the “walk-talk” and “arms-charms” clichés and nonsense syllables of many 1950s rock songs. Listen to “School Days” for a particularly good example of this characteristic.

But Berry’s biggest contribution was setting the model for the rock and roll guitar style. For him, the guitar was a frontline instrument, often on a par with the lead vocal. Notice the alternation of voice and guitar in the chorus of “Johnny B. Goode” and also in “School Days” and “No Particular Place to Go.” The statement-and-answer technique in which the guitar mimics the just-completed vocal line is related to the two-bar or four-bar **trade-offs** found in jazz. It is as if Berry and his guitar are performing a duet.

Several of Berry’s guitar introductions became famous and were widely imitated. Compare the intros to “Back in the U.S.A.,” “Roll Over Beethoven,” and “Johnny B. Goode.” The double note playing in his solos and the alternating chords of his rhythmic accompaniments (similar to some rock piano styles) set models to be followed for years.

Most of Berry’s rock hits were in the standard 12-bar blues form. His stage act was not as hysterical as Little Richard’s, but it was more animated than Fats Domino’s. Even though he was the oldest of the major rock stars of the 1950s, he developed his famous duck walk: Berry would bend his knees low and lope across the stage while playing the guitar. Unlike some other 1950s rock stars, Berry never modified his style to appeal to a broader, legitimate pop audience. Throughout his career, he stayed with the style that made him one of the biggest stars of rock and roll.

Jerry Lee Lewis

Jerry Lee Lewis is essentially the white counterpart to Little Richard. Like Richard, Jerry Lee was born into a rather poor family in a small southern town (Ferriday, Louisiana), with a dominant mother and largely absent father. Both Jerry Lee and Little Richard endured an ongoing internal battle between their religious faith and their hell-raising rock and roll lifestyles. Like Little Richard, Jerry Lee’s career as a rock and roll hit maker ended prematurely.

Musically, there were also many similarities. Both were pianists and were heavily influenced by gospel music and black R&B. Young Jerry Lee attended evangelist meetings

conducted by musician-preacher Brother Janway, whose piano style included a pounding bass line and simple right-hand melodies (Lewis 1982, 15). But Jerry Lee was also captivated by the R&B musicians, including B. B. King and Muddy Waters, who played at Haney's Big House in Ferriday (Lewis 1982, 15). In their mature rock and roll style, both Lewis and Richard played 12-bar blues with pounding, boogie-derived bass lines and improvised right-hand figures, including **glissandi**, repeating chords, and boogie patterns. They were best in hard, fast, rocking songs; their performance styles were flamboyant, including lots of physical movement while playing the keyboard.

Jerry's marital escapades (which would finally have a major effect on his career) began in 1951, when he married a preacher's daughter. She was 17 and in the 11th grade; Jerry was 16 and in the 8th grade (he had been repeatedly held back in the 7th grade). To assuage her parents' objections, Jerry enrolled in Southwestern Bible Institute (Waxahachie, Texas) with the goal of becoming a preacher. In a matter of months, his young wife filed for divorce, and Jerry Lee was invited to leave the institute. Meanwhile, having found a new love in a high school junior, Jerry remarried before the divorce was finalized. His second marriage was a rough one and deteriorated within several years.

In 1956, Jay Brown (Jerry's older cousin and bass player) persuaded Jerry to come to his home in Memphis and visit Sam Phillips's Sun Records. Jerry Lee had tried Sun Records once before but had left with a "don't-call-us-we'll-call-you" answer. This time, things turned out better. Jerry Lee recorded "Crazy Arms" and several other country songs. Phillips was impressed and signed Jerry Lee to a contract. Late in 1956, Sun released "Crazy Arms," and it became a mild success. Also while visiting Jay, Jerry met Myra Gail, Jay's 12-year-old daughter. Something more than a family relationship developed, and by December 1957, the two were husband and wife.

Sun Records saw Jerry as another rockabilly star, but Jerry had other ideas. A pounding mainstream rock and roll song called "Whole Lot of Shakin' Going On" had been particularly successful on his most recent tour. Jerry's recording of "Whole Lot of Shakin'," a



Sun's Million Dollar Quartet—Jerry Lee Lewis, Carl Perkins, Johnny Cash, and Elvis Presley (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)



Jerry Lee Lewis (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

cover version of a song released two years earlier by the Commodores, became a smash hit in 1957, reaching the top position on both the C&W and R&B charts and number 3 on the pop chart.

In late 1957, Sun Records released “Great Balls of Fire,” written by Jack Hammer and Otis Blackwell. The flip side was Hank Williams’s country tune “You Win Again.” Aided by an appearance on Steve Allen’s show, Jerry Lee reached the number 2 spot on the pop charts with “Great Balls of Fire” (number 3 on the R&B and number 1 on the C&W charts). Blackwell also wrote Jerry Lee’s third major hit, “Breathless,” released in February 1958, shortly after Jerry’s marriage to Myra. His last major hit was “High School Confidential,” the title song from an MGM movie in which the Jerry Lee Lewis Trio made a cameo appearance.

“Whole Lot of Shakin’ Going On” and “Great Balls of Fire” had been Top 10 hits in England, inspiring Jerry Lee to embark on his first overseas tour there, where his arrival was enthusiastically anticipated. Against better advice, he took his new 13-year-old bride (and cousin) along. No sooner had the entourage disembarked than an inquisitive reporter discovered Jerry Lee’s child bride. The British were outraged. Some tour dates were canceled; others were played to half-empty halls and to jeering, taunting audiences.

Staggered by the British reaction, Jerry Lee expected more tolerance on his return to the United States, but “High School Confidential” quickly dropped from the charts, and many concerts were canceled. Jerry Lee’s days as a rock and roll star were over. Repeated “comebacks” failed; he returned to the C&W sound from whence he had come. Between 1961 and 1975, he placed over 20 songs on the country charts, including 11 in the Top 5.

Post-rock and roll life has not been kind to Jerry Lee. His marriage to Myra ended in divorce in 1970 (Jerry has had three more marriages since then). Two of his sons died tragically, as did two of his wives. There have been problems with alcohol, drugs, tax evasion, shootings, fist fights, automobile wrecks, arrests, extramarital affairs, and debilitating physical illness.

Jerry Lee Lewis, in his brief moment of stardom, had a disproportionate impact on rock and roll. His unique blend of C&W and R&B, and his piano style, vocal style, and lifestyle, influenced many of his contemporaries and many who would follow. Although he longed to be known as the king of rock and roll, he must settle for his lifelong nickname: “the Killer.”

Buddy Holly

Charles Hardin (Buddy) Holley did not fit the mold of the other early rock and rollers. Born in Lubbock, Texas, in 1936, his musical background was almost exclusively C&W. Black R&B and gospel were not significant factors in western Texas, so Buddy grew up without the biracial musical influences that characterized Elvis’s and Jerry Lee’s backgrounds.

His country-style band signed a contract with Decca Records and, during 1956, released several straight country songs, including an early version of “That’ll Be the Day.” None was successful, and Decca released Buddy from his contract. (Holley’s Decca contract had inadvertently dropped the *e* from his name; Buddy retained the misspelling as his professional name.)

In early 1957, Buddy and his band (the Crickets) journeyed to the Clovis, New Mexico, recording studio owned by Norman Petty. Among the songs recorded at that session was a punched-up version of “That’ll Be the Day.” Petty took the demo tape to New York, where, after several rejections, it was accepted by the Coral-Brunswick label. Petty became Holly’s manager, and the Crickets’ personnel and instrumentation solidified: Niki Sullivan on guitar, Joe Mauldin on acoustic bass, Jerry Allison on drums, and, of course, Holly on guitar.

By August 1957, “That’ll Be the Day” had risen to number 1. In the next year and a half, Holly and the Crickets released eight more singles, including “Peggy Sue,” “Oh Boy!,” “Maybe Baby,” “Rave On,” and “Heartbeat.” Because separate contracts had been signed, some of these songs were released under the name of Holly on the Coral label, and some were released under the name of the Crickets on Brunswick.

In the summer of 1958, Buddy married Maria Elena Santiago, a Puerto Rican woman from New York. Supposedly at her suggestion, questions arose regarding Norman Petty’s handling of Buddy and the band, especially concerning Petty’s listing as coauthor of several Holly songs. Finally, in late 1958, Holly split from both Petty and the Crickets. He recruited new sidemen, planned a tour, and initiated a recording session, oriented toward a soft rock sound. Before this new Holly sound had a chance to be released, Buddy’s new quartet (including bassist Waylon Jennings) set out on a tour with Dion and the Belmonts, Ritchie Valens, and the Big Bopper (J. P. Richardson). Following a concert at Clear Lake, Iowa, on February 2, 1959, Holly, Valens, and Richardson were killed in a plane crash in the wee hours of the next morning. Coral subsequently released a song from that last pop-oriented recording session—a Paul Anka tune with the ironic title “It Doesn’t Matter Anymore.” It rose to number 13 and was, of course, Holly’s last hit.

Buddy Holly was different from the other 1950s rock pioneers. The R&B influence on his essentially C&W sound apparently came secondhand through his idol, Elvis Presley. Also, Buddy did not look like most 1950s rock stars. He was tall and thin, wore thick horn-rimmed glasses, and typically performed in a dark suit and bow tie. He emanated none of the sexuality of Presley or the flamboyance of Little Richard or Jerry Lee Lewis.

Like Chuck Berry, vocalist-guitarist Holly wrote most of his own material, helping to establish a trend that would characterize the rock of the following decades. His instrumental lineup, consisting of lead guitar, rhythm guitar, bass, and drums, would be a basic rock instrumentation for years to come. Unlike most other early rock and rollers, Holly pursued a more conservative lifestyle. He was not known as a drinker, womanizer, or druggie. In many ways, he was less like the typical rock and roll sex symbol and more like the average middle-American teenager of the 1950s. His lyrics were almost exclusively about uncomplicated boy-girl romance and reflected the rather innocent, fun-loving, teenage lifestyle of the 1950s, instead of the social heaviness and angry rebellion of later rock.

Holly’s serious approach to his music also led him into the world of production and technology, such as it was in 1957 and 1958. He experimented with double tracking his voice and guitar (“Words of Love”) and paid close attention to the technical side of his recordings. His turn toward a softer sound in his last recording sessions has prompted much speculation. Holly’s late 1958 releases had not fared particularly well; thus it is possible that he was attempting to broaden his reputation from that of a rock and roller to a legitimate pop artist (recall Fats Domino’s similar turn about one year later with “Walkin’ to New Orleans”).

No discussion of Buddy Holly would be complete without mentioning his unique vocal characteristics. Holly’s “hiccup” style (technically, the **glottal stop**) is derived most directly



Buddy Holly (Source: AP Wide World Photos)

from Elvis Presley, who frequently transformed one syllable into at least two (e.g., in Presley's "Mystery Train," listen to "comin' rou-ound the li-ine"). Holly carries such divisions to new heights with his treatment of "my Pe-eggy Su-ue-ue-ue-ue-e-ue-ue" and the words "over you-e-ou" in "It Doesn't Matter Anymore." Another Holly trademark is his habit of changing the color (or timbre) of his voice in midphrase. At times, he sings in a dark, husky, Presley-like voice; then, gradually, he changes to a thin, almost effeminate sound. This progression is very noticeable in the lines, "There's no use in me a cryin', I've done everything and now I'm sick of tryin'" in "It Doesn't Matter Anymore." The thin voice

changing to the more normal voice is evident in sections of "Peggy Sue." It is almost as if Holly is running his voice through an electronic filter, without using one.

Perhaps because he was the first rock star to die suddenly and unexpectedly, an almost cultlike following emerged for Buddy Holly. Don McLean's 1971 song "American Pie," with its reference to "the day the music died," enhanced the Buddy Holly mystique. In 1959, rock and roll was a vital, dynamic new force, and its proponents were young, vigorous, and invested with the assumed immortality of youth. A pall was cast over the new rock and roll generation after his death. It was the first rock and roll death; it was far from the last.

Others in the 1950s

Between July 1955 and December 1960, there were 81 number 1 hits. Of these, only 16 were recorded by the major artists discussed thus far in this chapter and in Chapter 3. In fact, 14 of those 16 were by Elvis Presley (the others were by Bill Haley and Buddy Holly). Together, Lewis, Holly, Domino, Berry, and Little Richard placed only 25 hits in the Top 10, from 1955 to 1960, meaning a host of other performers had hits during this time. We will survey some of the more significant of these here.



R&B- and Gospel-Derived Rock

Several artists whose background lay in R&B or gospel found success in the late 1950s. Lloyd Price had enjoyed several R&B hits in the early 1950s, including the crossover hit "Lawdy Miss Clawdy." With relatively little change in style, he moved into the rock market with songs such as "Stagger Lee" (1959) and somewhat softer hits such as "Personality" and "I'm Gonna Get Married." Ray Charles started as a jazz crooner in the style of Nat

Ray Charles (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)



Sam Cooke (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

“King” Cole, but through the early 1950s, his style reflected more R&B influences. In 1955, he added a strong gospel element in “I Got a Woman.” An unrestrained, emotional vocal delivery over a pounding, rocking accompaniment characterized this and later R&B hits. Charles finally crossed over to the national pop charts in 1959 with the classic “What’d I Say,” his first million seller. Between 1959 and 1963, he placed nine more songs in the Top 10, including the C&W-oriented “I Can’t Stop Loving You.” Ray Charles died in 2004 at the age of 73.

The blending of gospel and blues is also evident in the style of Sam Cooke. In the early 1950s, Cooke was the lead singer with the Soul Stirrers, a popular

black gospel group. His crossover to the pop market came in 1957 with “You Send Me” (number 1). The combination of the softer sound with the gospel-flavored vocal had enormous appeal. The extended vocal melismas (extending one syllable over many notes) and the soulful interpolations on “I know, I know, I know” and “whoa-oh-oh-and-whoa-oh-oh” seemed like a whole new world to white fans of soft rock. Cooke’s voice was emotional, but not raspy or raucous. Follow-up hits included “For Sentimental Reasons,” “Only Sixteen,” “Wonderful World,” “Chain Gang,” and “Twistin’ the Night Away.” Sam Cooke died in 1964, when he was shot by a hotel manager.

Rockabilly

Sun Records, influential in developing the rockabilly style, had another hit with singer Johnny Cash. Cash was born in 1932 in Arkansas, and his first release, “Cry, Cry, Cry,”

Rockabilly Hit Makers of the 1950s

Gene Vincent “Be-Bop-a-Lula” (1956)

Guy Mitchell “Singing the Blues” (1956)

“Heartaches by the Number” (1959)

Marty Robbins “A White Sport Coat” (1957)

“El Paso” (1960)

Buddy Knox “Party Doll” (1957)

Eddie Cochran (d. 1960) “Summertime Blues” (1958)

Conway Twitty “It’s Only Make Believe” (1958)

Johnny Horton (d. 1960) “The Battle of New Orleans” (1959)

“Sink the Bismarck” (1960)

“North to Alaska” (1960)

was a moderate country hit. In 1956, "I Walk the Line" rose to number 17 on the national charts. Cash's low voice and decidedly country-style delivery set him apart from the more R&B-influenced rockabillys. Following several more Top 20 hits, Cash moved to Columbia Records, where he continued to score Top 40 hits, including "Ring of Fire" (1963) and "A Boy Named Sue" (1969). He died on September 12, 2003, at the age of 71.

In addition to those already mentioned, many other rockabillys enjoyed brief moments in the limelight (see boxed text).

Soft Rock

One of the most talented young singer-songwriters of the 1950s was Paul Anka, a Canadian who had his first hit, "Diana," in 1957 at the age of 16. From 1958 to 1960, Anka had six more Top 10 songs, including "Lonely Boy" and "Put Your Head on My Shoulder." He continued to produce hits through the 1960s and 1970s, including a number 1 hit in 1974 called "(You're) Having My Baby." He also composed "My Way"—a hit for both Frank Sinatra and Elvis Presley.

Bobby Darin (born Walden Robert Cassotto) produced his first hit "Splish Splash" on Atco Records, a subsidiary of Atlantic Records, in 1958. Starting with this genuine rock sound (Darin, who was white, even affected something of black enunciation), Darin gradually softened his style. "Dream Lover" (1959) and subsequent hits such as "Mack the Knife," "Beyond the Sea," "Clementine," and "Won't You Come Home Bill Bailey" are closer to a swinging pop style. In 1973, he died of a heart condition at the age of 37.

In the late 1950s and early 1960s, Philadelphia became a center for the handsome-male-teen-idol syndrome. With the national publicity afforded by Dick Clark's *American Bandstand* television show, a number of young Philadelphians achieved major success. Typical of

Teen Idol Hitmakers

Tommy Sands (Houston) "Teen-Age Crush" (1957)

Fabian (Philadelphia) "Turn Me Loose" (1959)

"Tiger" (1959)

Neil Sedaka (Brooklyn) "Calendar Girl" (1960/1961)

"Breaking Up Is Hard to Do" (1962)

Bobby Rydell (Philadelphia) "Wild One" (1960)

"Swingin' School" (1960)

"Volare" (1960)

Mark Dinning (Grant County, OK) "Teen Angel" (1960)

Bobby Vee (Fargo, ND) "Devil or Angel" (1960)

"Rubber Ball" (1960/1961)

"Take Good Care of My Baby" (1961)

"Run to Him" (1961)

Bobby Vinton (Canonsburg, PA) "Roses Are Red (My Love)" (1962)

"Blue on Blue" (1963)

"Blue Velvet" (1963)

"There! I've Said It Again" (1963)

"Mr. Lonely" (1964)



Teen idols—Fabian, Tommy Sands, Paul Anka, Bobby Darin, and Frankie Avalon
(Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

these smooth young singers was Frankie Avalon, who had a number 1 hit with “Venus.” Although Avalon’s songs were aimed at a young audience, they were very pop-oriented, bearing little or no relationship to rock and roll. Other teen idols followed Avalon’s success.

White vocal groups ranged from the rock-oriented style of Danny and the Juniors and Dion and the Belmonts to the pop-style sounds of the Teddy Bears (“To Know Him Is to Love Him”), the Fleetwoods (“Come Softly to Me” and “Mr. Blue”), and the Browns (“The

Three Bells”). The Philadelphia group Danny and the Juniors’ song “At the Hop” reached number 1 in early 1958 and has become a rock and roll classic. Their follow-up hit, “Rock and Roll Is Here to Stay,” made the Top 20 and continues to be a rock and roll anthem. Somewhat softer than Danny and the Juniors were Dion and the Belmonts, who came from the Bronx and made several modest hits before releasing “A Teenager in Love” in 1959. The follow-up “Where or When” (1960) moved to a softer pop sound. Dion himself achieved several major hits in the early 1960s, most notably “Runaround Sue,” a number 1 hit in 1961.



Johnny Mathis (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Among the most popular black solo singers were Johnny Mathis and Tommy Edwards. Stylistically a pop crooner, Mathis was recognized for his flawlessly expressive voice and remarkable range. In 1957, Mathis released four ballads that reached the Top 20, including the number 1 hit “Chances Are.” The unprecedented success of his greatest hits album (1958) started a trend for collected hits albums; it remained on the *Billboard* album charts for some 490 weeks (almost 10 years!).

Tommy Edwards was somewhat older than the typical late 1950s pop star. His number 1 hit “It’s All in the Game” reached number 1 in 1958, when Edwards was 36. From 1958 to 1960, Edwards placed five more songs in the Top 40.

Female singers were rather rare in the late 1950s rock scene and mostly sang soft rock. Connie Francis (Concetta Franconero) produced some 35 Top 40 songs from 1958 to 1964. Her style ranged from cute, up-tempo songs (“Stupid Cupid” of 1958 and “Lipstick on Your Collar” of 1959) to soft rock (“Who’s Sorry Now” of 1958) to a pure pop style (“Where the Boys Are” of 1961).

Brenda Lee (Brenda Mae Tarpley) came from a C&W musical background and was only 11 years old when she signed a contract with Decca Records. She gained national attention with “Sweet Nothin’s” (number 4, early 1960) and “I’m Sorry” (number 1). Brenda continued to place occasional songs in the Top 10 through the early 1960s.

Instrumental Groups

Although singers have dominated the rock scene, the instrumental has enjoyed constant, though infrequent, popularity. Typically, a group would achieve major chart success with a particularly catchy instrumental, then fade from view. The public apparently finds it easier to identify and become attached to a vocalist than to recognize the stylings of an instrumentalist. Certainly the verbal appeal of a song lyric is more direct than the more subtle appeal of purely instrumental music.

One of the first successful rock instrumentals was “Honky Tonk” (1956), by Bill Doggett, a jazz and R&B player from the 1930s and 1940s (born in 1916). It had a hard blues and boogie-derived sound that featured a honking saxophone lead; it was an exciting “new” sound to the rock and roll–infatuated teenagers of 1956. A similar sound was produced in 1957 with “Raunchy” by Bill Justis, a studio musician and producer for Sun Records, with a growling saxophone lead that sounded like the title of the song. Another instrumental featuring a dirty saxophone lead hit number 1 in 1958: “Tequila” by the Champs.

Inevitably, the instrumental was bound to focus on the electric guitar. Two such instrumentals achieved major success in 1958: “Rumble” by Link Wray (number 16) and “Rebel-Rouser” by Duane Eddy (number 6). Eddy’s twangy guitar sound was recognizable and widely imitated. Table 4–1 shows other instrumentals that gained popularity in the late 1950s and early 1960s.

Novelties

Throughout the history of popular music, there have appeared musical oddities known as novelty songs. Usually humorous or whimsical songs with a catchy **hook**, these songs are sometimes in the prevailing popular style, but more often they have a sort of camp appeal—meaning that they are so out of the prevailing style that they catch on. Successful novelty songs seem to happen by accident, unpredictably catching the public’s fancy.

Typically, the popularity of such songs is short-lived, and their creators rarely produce subsequent titles. An exception to this rule is David Seville (born Ross Bagdasarian).

TABLE 4-1

Song	Performer	Featured Instrument
"Rawhide"	Link Wray	guitar
"Crossfire"	Johnny and the Hurricanes	guitar
"Red River Rock"	Johnny and the Hurricanes	guitar
"Walk Don't Run"	Ventures	guitar
"Sleep Walk"	Santo and Johnny	guitar
"Topsy II"	Cozy Cole	drums
"White Silver Sands"	Bill Black Combo	piano
"The Happy Organ"	Dave "Baby" Cortez	organ
"Last Date"	Floyd Cramer	piano
"On the Rebound"	Floyd Cramer	piano
"San Antonio Rose"	Floyd Cramer	piano

TABLE 4-2

Song	Chart Position	Comments
"The Purple People Eater" (Sheb Wooley)	number 1, 1958	hook: "a one-eyed, one-horned, flying purple people eater" (using sped-up voice)
"Itsy Bitsy Teenie Weenie Yellow Polka-Dot Bikini" (Brian Hyland)	number 1, 1960	seemingly risqué lyric; hook line reveals girl in bikini is only two years old
"Alley-Oop" (Hollywood Argyles)	number 1, 1960	nasal, off-key vocal tells of comic-strip caveman; "so-bad-it's-good" category
"Ahab the Arab" (Ray Stevens)	number 5, 1962	another "so-bad-it's good" song
"The Monster Mash" (Bobby [Boris] Pickett and the Crypt-Kickers)	number 1, 1962	ditto; a parody of TV monster shows and the dance craze

Seville hit the charts first in April 1958 with "Witch Doctor," a humorous song with a catchy nonsense hook: "oo-ee, oo-ah-ah, ting-tang, walla-walla bing-bang." The novel sound of the human voice sped up on tape (as used in "Witch Doctor") inspired Seville to create "The Chipmunk Song" later that year, a number 1 hit whose popularity continued into the 1980s. Table 4-2 shows some of the successful novelty hits of the 1950s and early 1960s.

The Industry

The rock revolution of the mid-1950s was more than a musical revolution. The popular music industry, which had followed rather well-entrenched, comfortable practices for decades, was literally turned upside down. The Big Five recording companies went from producing 42 of 1954's Top 50 recordings to only 17 of 1956's Top 50, a drop of 60 percent. The other 33 top discs of 1956 were released by 25 different companies. A well-controlled, orderly, and predictable market had become chaotic.

The music publishing industry was also in turmoil. With the coming of rock and roll, sheet music sales dropped dramatically. In the older pop music tradition, published sheet music was an important aspect of any song's popularity. But the rock and rollers of the mid-1950s were teenagers, the vast majority of whom played by ear. They simply listened to the record and imitated it. Rock and roll grew primarily from the aural tradition of R&B and C&W, not from the written tradition of pop and Tin Pan Alley.

Furthermore, sheet music did not accurately reflect the sound of the new songs. The printed page could not begin to approximate the real sounds of Presley, Little Richard, or Jerry Lee Lewis. Finally, there was also the problem of the short-lived rock hit. By the time a song became a hit, it was too late to print, distribute, and sell ample copies before the song faded into oblivion. In 1955 and 1956, most of the popular recordings were not even on *Variety's* sheet music best seller lists.

The effects of the rock revolution were also felt throughout the rest of the music industry. Established singers, instrumentalists, arrangers, orchestrators, copyists, and conductors found themselves out of the mainstream, with reduced demand for their talents. Much is often said about society's protests against early rock and roll on religious, moral, musical, and racial grounds, but it is often overlooked that one of the earliest and strongest reactions against rock and roll came from the established music industry itself. *Variety* magazine, the entertainment world's trade journal, ran frequent antirock articles and editorials throughout 1955 and 1956. Industry representatives, from the president of MGM Records to pop star Frank Sinatra, condemned the new style. Although their remarks were often couched in musical and moralistic terms, one suspects that underlying much of the vehemence was sheer economic distress. The music industry began to realize that the old rules no longer held. The reaction was convulsive.

Radio

Most of the traditional music industry saw rock and roll as a monstrous menace, but one segment of the business viewed the new style as its savior. Television had put a serious dent in the popularity of radio. In the early 1950s, it was reasonable to believe that radio had been superseded by television in much the same way that the automobile had superseded the horse and buggy. After all, why just listen to entertainment when you could listen and watch?

Rock and radio formed an early alliance: The quickest, easiest, and cheapest way for a small independent record company to promote its new rock star was to obtain radio airplay. Rock and roll generally did not have access to the national television networks, which were aligned with the major record companies. *Your Hit Parade* was a popular weekly television show, but it was associated with the pop tradition. Each week, the *Your Hit Parade* staff singers and orchestra performed live covers of the previous week's Top 10 pop songs. But these live cover versions were, at best, pale pop-style imitations of the rock hits that filled the charts in the late 1950s. The show's traditional adult audience gradually lost interest because of the increasing frequency of rock and roll songs, and teenagers were not interested in Snooky Lanson's pop version of "Hound Dog." By 1958, *Your Hit Parade* had disappeared from the air. Except for brief segments on variety shows, such as those hosted by Ed Sullivan and Steve Allen, it was not until the advent of Dick Clark's *American Bandstand* (beginning in the fall of 1957) that television offered a show specifically focused on teen rock and roll.

Not so with radio, however. Although network radio stations tended to stay with pop music broadcasts, dramas, and serials, the smaller independent stations programmed recorded music. Many specialized in the specific styles (like C&W or R&B) that were favored in their particular locale. The announcers who played the records began to develop a personality of their own. Alan Freed, one of the first white disc jockeys to play black music

for a predominantly white audience, began playing black R&B and rock and roll on his radio shows in Cleveland and later in New York City. Similar programs appeared in Los Angeles, New Orleans, Memphis, and Nashville. Many stations were converted into chain ownership—one owner or set of owners controlling stations in a series of cities. The format, known as Top 40 radio, consisted of frequent rotation through the Top 40 lists, fast-talking personalities as disc jockeys, and an hourly newscast. Catering to the teen audience, the stations competed for ratings. Disc jockeys such as Wolfman Jack (Bob Smith), Dick Clark, and (later) Murray the K would establish national reputations. By the late 1950s, radio was the medium for promotion and dissemination of rock. The AM dial was simply a series of competing personalities hyping the same songs in the Top 40 format. Radio was alive and well, thanks to rock and roll.

Payola

There was a problem in the partnership between the record industry and radio. Largely because of rock and roll, record sales exploded from \$213 million in 1954 to \$603 million in 1959 (Gillett 1983, 39). However, the majority of this increase went to small independent companies and subsidiaries, hundreds of which vied for the public attention needed to propel their unknown act to number 1 status. If a record got radio play, it stood a chance; if not, it was dead. Thus the radio stations and the popular disc jockeys found that they had a life-and-death hold on the new rock and roll record industry.

For the most part, stations blindly followed the *Billboard* charts to create their playlists. But major Top 40 stations in large markets could introduce a new record locally and start it on its journey up the charts. For the promotional representatives of the record companies, vying each week with all the other “next Elvises,” it was essential to obtain airplay. One could rely on the quality “in the grooves,” or one could assist the evaluation process by offering certain advantages to disc jockeys, program directors, and station managers. Such inducements, known as **payola**, might include cash, so-called promotional weekends in the Bahamas, or partial ownership in the song, the artist, or even the record company itself.

From 1959 to 1960, the government took action. The Federal Trade Commission charged several record companies and distributors with unfair trade practices. Almost simultaneously, the district attorney of New York initiated grand jury hearings related to charges of commercial bribery against various disc jockeys, including Alan Freed. Freed was eventually convicted in 1962 of two counts of commercial bribery. Finally, in February 1960, the U.S. House of Representatives Legislative Oversight Committee expanded its investigation of rigged television game shows to include payola practices in the music industry. During testimony, a number of disc jockeys admitted to taking cash, gifts, and royalty payments in return for promoting certain records. In September 1960, amendments were made to the Federal Communications Act that would prohibit payments of cash or gifts in exchange for airplay (Miller 1980, 102–3). But reports of varying forms of payola, including drugs, prostitution, and promotional vacations, have intermittently surfaced throughout the history of rock and roll. Perhaps this is because one basic fact has not changed: Radio airplay (and today, television videos) is just as much a factor now as it was in the 1950s. As long as this is true, payola, in one form or another, is likely to persist. For example, in 2007, the Federal Communications Commission settled a lengthy investigation into pay-for-play practices by four of the country’s largest radio broadcasters. Clear Channel Communications Inc., CBS Radio, Citadel Broadcasting Corporation, and Entercom Communications Corporation agreed to pay \$12.5 million and reform their business practices (although they admitted no wrongdoing).

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: IS SOFT ROCK REALLY ROCK?

Do songs like “All I Have to Do Is Dream,” “Only You,” “Love Letters in the Sand,” and “In the Still of the Night” belong on rock and roll record anthologies and in rock history books? Although rock music does include some musically unnotatable nuances and spiritual qualities, many of its musical elements can be quite clearly defined. When these elements are found in a song, the result is a type of rock. We can then go on to describe the specific style of rock, for example, soft rock, rockabilly, or mainstream. In this Musical Close-Up, we shall examine the soft rock style of the 1950s and identify the musical elements that link the style to its pop parentage as well as its sibling rock styles.

Most soft rock songs have a slow to moderate beat. One of the slowest examples is “Daddy’s Home” (Shep and the Limelights), which has about 45 beats per minute. Quicker tempos may be heard in “Little Darling” by the Diamonds (145 beats per minute), “Runaround Sue” by Dion and the Belmonts (155 beats per minute), and “Wonderful Time up There” by Pat Boone (185 beats per minute). These last three songs have fast enough tempos to move from the category of soft rock to mainstream, but tempo is not our only consideration in categorizing a song. Most soft rock songs do not have a strong backbeat (accents on the second and fourth beats of each measure). Boone’s “Wonderful Time up There” has a light backbeat, but again, other factors keep it in the soft rock category.

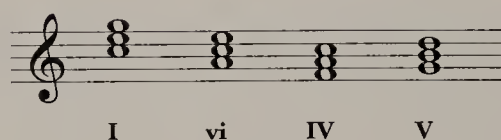
Perhaps the most noticeable rhythmic factor in soft rock is the triple division of the beat. This division is often most clearly heard in the piano part, which consists of repeating right-hand chords in the middle or upper keyboard range. The list of examples of this three-notes-per-beat phenomenon would be a long one indeed. Listen to selections from the following list:

“I Only Have Eyes for You” (The Flamingos)
 “I Want You, I Need You, I Love You” (Elvis Presley)
 “Love Letters in the Sand” (Pat Boone)
 “Earth Angel” (The Penguins)
 “Only You” (The Platters)
 “Sh-Boom” (The Crew-Cuts)

Note: In “Sh-Boom,” listen for a vocal example of the triple subdivision on “ya-da-da, da-da-da, da-da-da, da-da-sh.”

Like its pop music parent, soft rock places considerable emphasis on beautiful melodies. The tunes are often conjunct and have greater range than those found in other rock styles. But like other rock styles, the singers often use blue notes and various vocal interpolations derived from R&B and gospel music. Falsetto is quite common in soft rock (e.g., “In the Still of the Night” by the Five Satins, or “The Duke of Earl” by Gene Chandler). Lyrics are generally love oriented and similar to those of the pop music tradition. However, the nonsense syllables of R&B-derived rock and roll are often included, usually to create a rhythmic vocal background (e.g., “There’s a Moon out Tonight” by the Capris, “Sincerely” by the Moonglows, and “In the Still of the Night” by the Five Satins). The vocal style of the black groups is closer to the old R&B sound, whereas the soft rock of white performers like Boone, Presley, and the Everly Brothers is closer to the pop tradition.

Along with the triple division of the beat, the most recognizable element of many soft rock songs is the harmony. Almost as common as the 12-bar blues progression is the following series of chords:



For want of a better label, we shall call this the I-vi-IV-V progression.¹ This series of chords forms the basis for countless soft rock songs. There are variations on this series, especially where the harmonic rhythm (speed of the chord changes) is concerned. Thus, in some cases, each chord lasts for two beats; in other songs, each chord holds for an entire measure (four beats), and sometimes each chord sustains through two measures (eight beats). Another common variation is to substitute the ii chord for the IV. To hear this progression with each chord strummed and held, listen to the introduction to “Runaround Sue” (Dion and the Belmonts). For other examples of the I-vi-IV-V progression, listen to some of the following songs:

Two Beats per Chord

- “Earth Angel” (Penguins)
- “A Thousand Miles Away” (Heartbeats)
- “Sh-Boom” (Crew Cuts)
- “Silhouettes” (Diamonds)
- “You Send Me” (Sam Cooke)
- “Gee” (Crows)
- “All I Have to Do Is Dream” (Everly Brothers)
- “Daddy’s Home” (Shep and the Limelights)
- “There’s a Moon out Tonight” (Capris)

Four Beats per Chord (One Measure per Chord)

- “In the Still of the Night” (Five Satins)
- “Maybe” (Chantels)

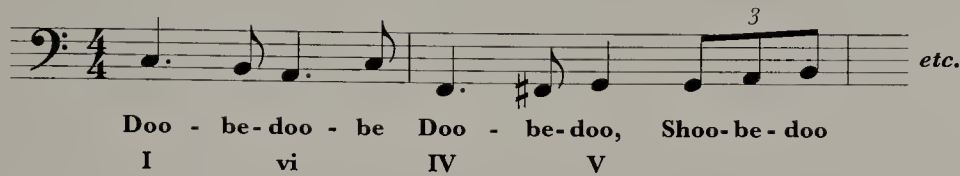
Eight Beats per Chord (Two Measures per Chord)

- “Little Darling” (Diamonds)
- “Runaround Sue” (Dion and the Belmonts)
- “The Duke of Earl” (Gene Chandler)

Note: The verse of “The Duke of Earl” reverts to four beats per chord.

¹In some cases, the middle note of the triad is lowered one-half step; this changes a major triad into a minor triad. Traditionally, we use uppercase Roman numerals for major triads and lowercase Roman numerals for minor triads.

The timbre of soft rock is related to other rock styles. Usually, there is a lead singer with backup vocals (trio or quartet). Instrumental accompaniment includes guitar, piano, drums, and often saxophone. Vocal timbres vary from the black sound of the doo-wop groups to the C&W-oriented sound of the Everly Brothers to the pop-oriented sound of Pat Boone, Paul Anka, and Frankie Avalon. The bass line suggested by the I-vi-IV-V progression may be sung by a bass voice, often to nonsense syllables, for example,



Other songs have bass lines similar to mainstream rock. For example, listen to the bass lines of the following songs:

"Sixteen Candles" (Crests)
 "Only You" (Platters)
 "Sugar Moon" (Pat Boone)
 "Love Letters in the Sand" (Pat Boone)

Pat Boone's "Wonderful Time Up There" makes a melodic line out of a boogie-woogie-derived rock bass line:



The form of most soft rock songs is borrowed from the pop and Tin Pan Alley tradition. A common form in this tradition is a 32-bar chorus divided into four internal sections, each of which is eight bars long. We represent this form with the letters *AABA* because the music of the first eight measures is repeated (sometimes with minimum alteration) for the second eight measures. Then comes a new eight measures (called the *bridge*), followed by a return to the first eight measures. Most of the songs mentioned in this Musical Close-Up follow this formal scheme. A common variation is to add two measures to the eight-measure sections to close out (*cadence*) the harmonic progression. The Listening Guide for "Earth Angel" by the Penguins illustrates a typical 32-bar chorus based on the I-vi-IV-V progression. As frequently happens, after the 32-bar *AABA* is complete, the last 16 measures are repeated (musicians often describe this as "one-and-a-half choruses").

Next to the 12-bar blues progression, the I-vi-IV-V progression cast into the 32-bar *AABA* form is the most commonly encountered formula in 1950s rock.

Listening Guide: Earth Angel (The Penguins)		
0:00-0:12	Introduction (4 measures)	I-vi-IV-V progression (2 beats per chord); two times
0:13-0:38	A (8 measures)	I-vi-IV-V progression; four times
0:39-1:04	A (8 measures)	I-vi-IV-V progression three times; two measure cadence (I-IV-I-I ⁷); slight change in lyrics; same melody
1:05-1:30	B (8 measures)	Bridge; new words, melody, and chord progression; one chord per measure (4 beats per chord): IV-I-IV-I-IV-I-II-V
1:31-1:57	A (8 measures)	I-vi-IV-V progression three times; two measure cadence (I-IV-I); lyrics same as 1st A section (very minor change); same melody as A sections.
1:58-2:23	B (8 measures)	repeat bridge
2:24-2:55	A (8 measures)	repeat last A section; ritard (slow down) in final two measures (cadence).

Summary

Early soft rock included the pop-oriented style of Presley, Boone, Anka, and Avalon; the black-oriented sounds of the Platters and the doo-wop groups; the C&W-oriented styles of the Everly Brothers and Ricky Nelson; and the mainstream-oriented styles of Danny and the Juniors and Dion and the Belmonts. Softer rock was very popular and set a trend that would coexist with the harder rock styles up to the present day. Is soft rock really rock and roll? Well, by elimination, it is not pure pop, nor is it C&W, R&B, gospel, classical, or jazz. Judging by its musical elements, it is a form of rock, albeit a softer style musically and in terms of image. To paraphrase a familiar song title, soft rock and roll is here to stay.

Transition: The Early 1960s

KEY TERMS

folk music
Motown
calypso
LPs
vibrato

symmetrical forms
diatonic
echo effects
overdubbing
theremin

disco
block chords
dissonant
a cappella

Overview: The Fragmentation of the Market

By the early 1960s, much of the power of the first rock and roll shock wave had dissipated. Little Richard had found religion; Jerry Lee Lewis's marital scandals had ended his pop music career; Chuck Berry was in jail; Buddy Holly was dead. There seemed to be declining interest in hearing yet another 12-bar blues or I-vi-IV-V song. The payola hearings had put a serious damper on the promotional activities of many small independent record companies, and interest in traditional rock songs seemed to be waning. The market seemed to fragment into a variety of directions, no one of which could achieve real domination.

An examination of the charts from 1960 to 1963 fails to suggest any dominant trend; it was a period of transition. A review of the seven best-selling records of 1961 gives a hint of the remarkable variation in the market (see Table 5-1). There were vestiges of the old styles as well as undeveloped seeds of new styles. As is typical of a fragmented market, each of these coexisting styles was entirely distinct from all the others. Out of this indistinct collection, we can identify four conflicting trends: (1) vestiges of the 1950s, (2) the emerging **folk music** trend, (3) surf music, and (4) the dance craze.

Vestiges of the 1950s

The early 1960s saw the continuation of rockabilly and soft rock. Instrumentals and novelty hits also appeared intermittently, but one is hard-pressed to find genuine examples of mainstream rock as established by Presley, Little Richard, Lewis, Berry, Domino, and Holly.

TABLE 5-1

Song	Artist	Comments
1. "Exodus"	Ferrante and Teicher	movie theme; instrumental (duo piano); pseudoclassical style
2. "Calcutta"	Lawrence Welk	instrumental; pop style
3. "Will You Still Love Me Tomorrow?"	Shirelles	black female vocal group
4. "Tossin' and Turnin'"	Bobby Lewis	1950s rock style
5. "Wonderland by Night"	Bert Kaempfert	instrumental (trumpet solo); pop style
6. "Are You Lonesome Tonight?"	Elvis Presley	pop-style ballad
7. "Travelin' Man"	Ricky Nelson	soft rockabilly

TABLE 5-2

Group	Description	Sample Hits	Year
Shirelles	female quartet	"Will You Still Love Me Tomorrow?"	1960
		"Dedicated to the One I Love"	1961
		"Soldier Boy"	1962
Drifters	male quintet	"There Goes My Baby"	1959
		"Save the Last Dance for Me"	1960
		"On Broadway"	1963
		"Under the Boardwalk"	1964
Marvelettes	female quartet	"Please Mr. Postman"	1961
		"Playboy"	1962
Crystals	female trio	"He's a Rebel"	1962
		"Da Doo Ron Ron"	1963

Rockabilly singers from the 1950s, including Roy Orbison, Johnny Cash, the Everly Brothers, Brenda Lee, Marty Robbins, and Ricky Nelson, continued to have success in the early 1960s. Even Ray Charles released a successful C&W-oriented album that produced the hit single "I Can't Stop Loving You" (1962). These early 1960s rockabilly songs tended toward the soft side. Indeed, the early 1960s witnessed the triumph of the softer sounds, from the soft rock sounds of the late 1950s to the pure pop style of the early 1960s. In the pure pop category were songs like "Surrender," "Now or Never," and "Are You Lonesome Tonight?" by Elvis Presley, and "Moody River" by Pat Boone. Traditional pop stars returned to favor with vocals such as Steve Lawrence's "Go Away Little Girl" (1963) and pop-style instrumentals by Percy Faith, Acker Bilk, David Rose, Bert Kaempfert, and Lawrence Welk. The only number 1 instrumental reminiscent of the 1950s rock instrumental was "Telstar" by the Tornadoes, the first British group to have a number 1 hit on the U.S. charts. The soft rock of the teen idols continued with hits by Bobby Vee, Bobby Vinton, Bobby Rydell, and Neil Sedaka.

In the early 1960s, the black male vocal groups were joined by a host of black female vocal groups. Continuing a line that began in the 1950s with the doo-wop groups, these groups formed a link to the later **Motown** style. Table 5-2 shows some of the early 1960s black vocal groups with soft rock styles.

One of the most successful vocal groups in the early 1960s was the Four Seasons. Originally called the Variatones, the group and its lead singer, Frankie Valli (born Francis Castelluccio), finally caught the public's attention with "Sherry" in 1962. Their tight vocal harmonies and use of falsetto hinted at the later style of the Beach Boys and other surf groups. The Four Seasons went on to release a series of hits throughout the 1960s, including "Big Girls Don't Cry" (1962), "Walk Like a Man" (1963), and "Dawn (Go Away)" (1964). They scored a number 1 hit as late as 1976 with "December 1963 (Oh, What a Night)."

The early 1960s also found more female solo singers achieving success. Even as Connie Franeis and Brenda Lee continued to have hits, new female singers appeared, such as Lesley Gore ("It's My Party," 1963), Shelley Fabares ("Johnny Angel," 1962), and Little Peggy March ("I Will Follow Him," 1963).

There was also a steady stream of novelty songs. In 1960, there was Johnny Preston's "Running Bear" and Larry Verne's "Mr. Custer." In 1961, the Tokens sang "The Lion Sleeps Tonight," a South African folk song with the repeating African title, "Wimoweh," sounding for all the world like another variation of doo-wop. The year 1963 was even more bizarre, with one hit by a Japanese pop singer singing in Japanese ("Sukiyaki" by Kyu Sakamoto) and one by five Catholic nuns singing about the founder of the Dominican order ("Dominique," by Sister Luc-Gabrielle, known as the Singing Nun).

These vestiges of the late 1950s enjoyed their last big heyday before the social and musical revolutions of the mid- and late 1960s. But even as Percy Faith's "Theme from a Summer Place" was on its way to becoming the second most popular recording of the 1960s (Whitburn 1996, 809), the seeds of new sounds were germinating.

The Beginnings of the Folk Music Trend

Technically, a true folk song is one that has been handed down from generation to generation and the exact origins of which are unknown. It is as impossible for someone today to compose a true folk song as it would be for a carpenter to build an antique. Thus most so-called folk music in the 1960s was not true folk music, but music composed in the *style* of traditional folk music. The model was the Appalachian folk ballad, which used various acoustic guitar or guitarlike instruments to accompany one or more singers singing relatively serious lyrics about real issues: money, jobs, love, death, and social issues like war and injustice.

The roots of the 1960s folk music trend lie in the 1940s. Early in that decade, a quartet was formed called the Almanac Singers, which included Pete Seeger and Woody Guthrie. Guthrie had a long history of writing songs that reflected his experiences during the Great Depression, the dust bowl days, World War II, and the union movement. An outspoken political and social critic, he wrote columns for the *Communist Daily Worker* and *People's World*. Among his 1,000-plus published songs is the anthem "This Land Is Your Land." The Almanac Singers recorded several songs before reorganizing as the Weavers (without Guthrie) in the late 1940s. They hit the pop charts in 1950 with "Goodnight, Irene," composed by black bluesman Huddie Ledbetter (better known as Leadbelly) and their adaptation of an Israeli folksong "Tzena, Tzena." Like the Almanac Singers, they were associated with left-wing causes and organizations, and at the height of the McCarthy era, they were blacklisted as being subversive. The group disbanded in 1963; however, original member Pete Seeger continued his activities as a solo singer. His songs "If I Had a Hammer," "Where Have All the Flowers Gone," and "Turn, Turn, Turn" became important hits in the folk music movement of the 1960s.

Generally, the music industry of the 1950s believed (correctly) that folk music's appeal was to a small subculture. However, in 1957, **calypso**, a style of folk music from the Caribbean area, made a brief but powerful appearance on the charts, due primarily to singer Harry Belafonte. Born in New York City, Belafonte had spent much of his youth in

Kingston, Jamaica. In the early weeks of 1957, Belafonte's "Jamaica Farewell" reached the Top 20, and later that year, "The Banana Boat Song (Day-O)" reached the Top 5. The music featured Belafonte's gentle, lyrical voice and a distinct Jamaican-English lyric. There was a hint of soft Latin bongo drum rhythms and acoustic guitars. Although considered a novelty at the time, calypso, in retrospect, helped lay the groundwork for the folk music trend of the 1960s.

The Kingston Trio

Also in 1957, college students Dave Guard, Bob Shane, and Nick Reynolds formed a vocal trio in Stanford, California, known as the Kingston Trio. Inspired by Belafonte's success, they originally performed calypso material and took their name from the capital of Jamaica. However, their first hit, "Tom Dooley" (number 1, 1958), was an adaptation of a Blue Ridge Mountain folk tune from the Civil War days. It was about a mountaineer named Tom Dula who was hanged for murder in 1868 (Bronson 1988, 45). It was a folk song according to the purest definition and may be considered the first real hit in the folk music trend.

"Tom Dooley" was a serious song compared to other hits of the time. Its spoken introduction sets the story into the historic tradition of the eternal love triangle. The song sings of murder, questionable justice, and hanging. The musical accompaniment consists exclusively of acoustic instruments—string bass, guitar, and banjo. The image of the Kingston Trio was also very different from the popular rock image. They were white, clean-cut college boys with close-cropped hair, button-down shirts, and dress slacks (the so-called Ivy League look). These characteristics set a style that would influence countless other folk groups.

Although the Kingston Trio eventually placed 10 songs in the Top 40, no single after "Tom Dooley" reached higher than number 8. However, their albums sold very well—another harbinger of things to come. Their first seven LPs (long-playing albums), excluding reissues, were certified as gold albums (they eventually released over 30 albums). One of the other Kingston Trio hits—"M.T.A." (1959)—offered another hint of things to come. In its own lighthearted way, it was a protest song, a tongue-in-cheek song about an increase in subway fares in Boston. Like "Tom Dooley," "M.T.A." begins with a spoken introduction (accompanied only by a string bass) about the citizens of Boston rallying to the defense of human rights. The song served as a gentle introduction to the protest lyric so common in earlier folk songs and a central characteristic of the folk songs of the 1960s.



The trend that was launched by the Kingston Trio has been called the *urban folk revival*, music produced by sophisticated, well-educated, urban collegians. For example, the Brothers Four ("Greenfields," number 2 in 1960) were fraternity brothers at the University of Washington. In 1961, the Highwaymen, a group of five Wesleyan University students, had major hits with "Michael" and "Cotton Fields." Other groups to follow the trend included the Rooftop Singers, the New Christy Minstrels, the Chad Mitchell Trio, the Limelites, the Journeymen, and the Whiskey Hill Singers.

The Kingston Trio (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Peter, Paul, and Mary

Representing the next stage in the developing folk music trend was another vocal trio: Peter, Paul, and Mary. Unlike most of their predecessors, they produced an impressive list of hit singles, while maintaining a strong popularity on LPs and in live performance. Seven of their first eight albums were certified gold, and they placed a dozen songs in the Top 40 from 1962 to 1969.

Peter, Paul, and Mary's image was in contrast with the clean-cut Ivy League look of earlier folk groups. Peter Yarrow and Paul Stookey had mustaches and beards; Mary Travers had long, straight hair. There was a gentle hint of the intellectual-revolutionary folknik, a type that already existed at the hard-core center of the folk movement, but in 1962, the country was not quite ready for the harder protests of Joan Baez, Bob Dylan, and others. Peter, Paul, and Mary provided a softer, more commercial version suitable for popular consumption.

The tone of the new folk countermovement was set in Peter, Paul, and Mary's first album. The printed album notes included key words such as *sincerity*, *authenticity*, *Truth*, *Good*, *virtue*, and *honesty*. The listener was promised "no gimmicks" and told that "mediocrity has had it" and "hysteria is on the way out" (Belz 1972, 84). This music was not for the teenybopper, but for the older, more thoughtful college student and young adult, who were part of a vigorous, dynamic, and youthful new generation. At the age of 43, John F. Kennedy had just been elected the youngest president of the United States. It was the time of the New Frontier and the youth-oriented Peace Corps. College students and young adults believed that they could make a difference in the world, and they wanted music with a message. An entire subculture began to grow within and around the college campuses, where students gathered in nearby coffeehouses to listen to campus poets and singers dispense meaningful philosophies to the accompaniment of guitar and bongo drums. This was not music to dance to; it was music to *think* about.

These socially aware young people did more than listen passively to the messages of the new music. They organized to fight for social causes of all kinds, from racial prejudice and war to fraternity hazing and freshman dormitory hours. They organized sit-ins, walk-ins, lay-ins, marches, and freedom bus rides.

Peter, Paul, and Mary's second single (and first Top 10 hit) was "If I Had a Hammer," coauthored by Pete Seeger. It spoke of striking a blow for "justice," "freedom," and "love between the brothers and the sisters all over this land." In this case they were not singing of romantic love, but of a higher order of Love that ideally should exist between all people.



Peter, Paul, and Mary (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Their follow-up hit “Puff, the Magic Dragon” (1963) spoke wistfully of the lost pleasures and innocence of childhood.

Later, in 1963, came two cover versions of songs written by Bob Dylan: “Blowin’ in the Wind” (number 2) and “Don’t Think Twice, It’s All Right” (number 9). Peter, Paul, and Mary’s polished style was more acceptable to a wider audience in 1963 than the rawer Dylan originals. As much as any other song of 1963, “Blowin’ in the Wind” expressed the sentiments of the folk-oriented youth culture:

. . . how many times must the cannon balls fly
before they’re forever banned?

. . . how many years must some people exist
before they’re allowed to be free?

After asking these and other similar questions, the song suggests optimistically that the answers are “blowin’ in the wind.” In other words, the youth knew the questions and had the answers. “Blowin’ in the Wind” and other similar songs not only reflected the attitudes of the youth revolution, they spread these thoughts and attitudes to others. The new Kennedy administration stimulated hope that, indeed, the youth might “change the world.”

Peter, Paul, and Mary’s image was midway between the conventional Ivy League look of their predecessors and the more revolutionary look of the hard-core folkniks who would follow. They were an important link in the evolution of the folk movement of the 1960s. Their hits continued until 1969, when “Leaving on a Jet Plane” (by John Denver) became their only number 1 hit. The group disbanded shortly thereafter, although they have staged several reunions since.

Musical Characteristics

Folk music was quite different than the mainstream rock and rockabilly styles of the 1950s. First, there was none of the shouting style of R&B and mainstream rock. Generally, the vocalists sang perfectly on pitch, with good vocal control. Lyrics were important and clearly enunciated. Soloists sometimes even avoided any **vibrato** (that wiggle in the pitch that classical and pop singers cultivated). The style employed traditional duo, trio, and quartet harmonies. The melodic lines were similar to those of the C&W and pop styles—that is, they had interesting contours, normal to wide ranges, and traditional **symmetrical forms**.

Folk song harmonies were simple and **diatonic** (all within a given key) but avoided the 12-bar blues progression of R&B and mainstream rock and the I-vi-IV-V progression of pop and soft rock. Each song seemed to have originated as a lyric with melody, the harmonies being the result of adding chords to accompany the melody.

With the slower ballads, rhythm was felt, but not emphasized. In the faster tunes, the rhythm was provided by the strummed guitar (or banjo) chords. If a string bass was present, it reinforced the basic beat, but there was none of the forceful rhythm or backbeat of R&B, mainstream rock, or rockabilly.

Summary

With the folk trend of the early 1960s, we see the first of the external influences that would have an impact on the history of rock and reshape its future. As with any dynamic, growing entity, rock was susceptible to such influences as it developed. Let us reiterate some of the main characteristics of the early folk music trend:

1. **Lyrics.** There was a new sense of seriousness in the lyrics. Songs spoke of major issues of social and political importance. The writers and singers sought not only to reflect the thinking within their subculture, but to foster similar attitudes and provoke action in a wider audience. Key issues were peace, racial equality, and love.

2. *Demographics.* Folk music's appeal was principally to the older end of the youth spectrum, which split the listening audience, for the first time, into two markets: the 18- to 24-year-old age group, and the 17 and below age group.
3. *Albums.* Folk groups tended to have more hit albums than hit singles. Since the introduction of the LP in 1948 by Columbia Records, the long-play format had appealed to an older, more conservative audience. Between 1954 and 1957, the exact years of rock's first explosion, the 45-rpm single had replaced the older 78 rpm as the most popular record format. The two-and-a-half-minute single became the primary medium of early rock. But with the popularity of the folk-oriented LP, the 45-rpm single became identified more with the teenage market and the LP with the college-age and young adult market. The seriousness of the lyrics and the greater financial capacity of the 18- to 24-year-old age group made the LP the primary medium of folk music. Increasingly, albums replaced singles as the biggest share of the market.
4. *Acoustic instruments.* The folk musician abhorred electric guitars and elaborate studio production techniques. Remember Peter, Paul, and Mary's 1962 album notes: This was to be the "real thing," real people playing real instruments without artificial assistance.

In late 1963 and early 1964, the initial phase of folk music's popularity absorbed several traumatic blows (see Chapter 8). In the meantime, other changes were occurring in the pop music world.

Surfing Music

We have noted that the fragmentation of the early 1960s market resulted in a variety of trends, some of which were diametrically opposed to one another. If the key words of the folk music trend were *honesty*, *authenticity*, *sincerity*, *freedom*, and *brotherhood*, the key words of surf music were those found in the title of the 1964 Beach Boys hit, "Fun, Fun, Fun." Seemingly almost every characteristic cited earlier for the folk movement is exactly inverted for surf music. The folkies avoided the artificiality of electric instruments; the surfers had no problem with electricity. The folkies disliked the gimmickry of recording studio techniques; the surfers, on the other hand, exploited **echo effects**, **overdubbing**, and extensive editing. The folkies sang of heavy topics—love, peace, racial harmony; the surfers sang of cars, girls, beach parties, and big waves. The folkies were social activists; the surfers appeared to be completely indifferent to such things.

Just as folk music was at the center of a subculture, with its norms of dress, language, and behavior, so surf music was at the heart of its own subculture. The geographic center was Southern California. As the popularity of the music spread across the country, would be surfers (whether in Iowa, Tennessee, or Maine) acquired deep tans, bleached their hair blond, put on their sandals and cutoffs, waxed down their surfboards, and revved up their Impalas, T-birds, or Corvettes. Beach-oriented movies highlighting the carefree Southern California lifestyle began as early as 1959, when *Gidget* initiated a series of "sun-and-surf" movies.

One of the first performers to become associated with the surfing subculture was Dick Dale. Dale pioneered a style of guitar playing that emphasized the instrument's bass notes and featured the use of heavy echo and reverb, launching a craze for guitar-led instrumentals. Enjoying regional (Southern California) popularity, Dale released an album in 1962 called *Surfer's Choice*, but it failed to make any national impact. Far more successful were Jan and Dean. After several earlier hits ("Jennie Lee" in 1958, "Baby Talk" in 1959, and "Heart and Soul" in 1961), Jan Berry and Dean Torrence had a number 1 hit in 1963 with "Surf City," a song by Beach Boy Brian Wilson. They eventually placed 15 songs in the Top 40. Their career ended when Jan was nearly killed in an automobile wreck in 1966.

The Beach Boys

One group defined and dominated the new surf sound: the Beach Boys. The group originated in Hawthorne, California, in 1961 with brothers Brian, Carl, and Dennis Wilson, their cousin Mike Love, and friend Al Jardine. After an early local label hit, “Surfin’,” they signed with Capitol Records, where they eventually logged over 30 Top 40 hits, including eight in the Top 5. The musical style of the Beach Boys will be discussed in some detail in the Musical Close-Up at the end of this chapter; here we shall simply chronicle the history of this trendsetting group and briefly describe two distinct phases of their work.

Their notoriety began with “Surfin’ Safari” (number 14, 1962), the song that initiated their surf music phase, and the follow-up release, “Surfin’ U.S.A.” (number 3, 1963). These first two songs were rockers; with “Surfer Girl,” the Beach Boys showed that their sound could be adapted to the slow ballad. Subsequent hits include “Little Deuce Coupe” (number 15, 1963), “Be True to Your School” (number 6, 1963), “Fun, Fun, Fun” (number 5, 1964), “I Get Around” (number 1, 1964), “Help Me Rhonda” (number 1, 1965), “California Girls” (number 3, 1965), “Barbara Ann” (number 2, 1966), and “Sloop John B” (number 3, 1966).

The surf style of the Beach Boys was largely determined by Brian Wilson, the oldest of the Wilson brothers and the most technically proficient in the studio. Somewhat more serious and introverted than the others, Brian hardly fit the sun-and-fun, carefree Beach Boy image. Nevertheless, his musical and technical leadership of the group was beyond question.

Following a nervous breakdown in 1964, Brian stopped touring with the group and devoted himself to the creation of a new, more serious style. The result was an album released in mid-1966 called *Pet Sounds*. Using up-to-date studio techniques and extra musicians, this Beach Boys’ album, which hinted at a stylistic change, was critically acclaimed but did not sell as well as previous albums.

The real move into their second phase—the post-surf-music phase—came with the release of “Good Vibrations” in late 1966. Had the Beach Boys stopped prior to “Good Vibrations,” they might be remembered only as a good rock and roll band of the early 1960s. Brian Wilson, Mike Love, and the rest of the band worked for over six months on “Good Vibrations.” It was literally pieced together from ideas committed to tape at four different studios. After over 90 hours of studio time, 11 versions, and some \$50,000 in production costs, “Good Vibrations” was released. It not only hit the number 1 position, but became a million seller.



The Beach Boys in the 1960s (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

“Good Vibrations” was a milestone in the development of rock. Musically and technically, it was more sophisticated than any rock hit up until its time. Only the Beatles were experimenting in similar ways. Prior to this, it was assumed that a rock hit should last about 2 minutes and 30 seconds, and once the tempo, beat, key, and texture were established, they should not change. “Good Vibrations” did not follow the formula. As Brian Wilson said, in its “three minutes and thirty-five seconds . . . it had a lot of riff changes. It had a lot of movements . . . changes, changes, changes. Building harmonies here, drop this voice out, this comes in, bring the echo chamber in, do this, put the **theremin** here, bring the cello up a little louder here. I mean it was a real production. The biggest production of our life” (Leaf 1985, 90).

The success of “Good Vibrations” encouraged Brian to pursue further experimentation. He began to plan an album, to be called *Smile*, that would expand on many of the ideas in *Pet Sounds* and “Good Vibrations.” He was moving away not only from the old surf music, but from the rest of the Beach Boys as well. His new friends, such as Van Dyke Parks, were more associated with the new free-thinking and drug-oriented culture. Brian poured his heart and soul into *Smile*, but when the rest of the Beach Boys came off tour to record the new material, some of the group feared that Brian’s new creativity was commercially risky. Hurt and confused, Brian dropped the *Smile* project.

Eight of the 20 songs were eventually released, including a Van Dyke Parks–Brian Wilson collaboration called “Heroes and Villains” (1967). Like “Good Vibrations,” “Heroes and Villains” avoided rock formulas and involved frequent changes in texture, rhythm, and timbre. The album that was released in place of the aborted *Smile* album was called *Smiley Smile*. Sales were poor, and *Smiley Smile* marked the beginning of the decline of the Beach Boys’ popularity. In 2004, Brian Wilson, with the help of Van Dyke Parks, officially released *Smile* and promoted the release with a national tour, bringing his “teenage symphony to God” (Wilson’s description) back from extinction.

After the release of the Beatles’ *Sgt. Pepper* album in 1967, a new world of rock exploded. Although the Beach Boys were closely paralleling the creative growth of the Beatles, they were still associated with the old surf sound, hopelessly naive and innocent sounding by 1967 standards. In spite of continued efforts by Brian, Carl, and the others, their greatest successes in the 1970s and early 1980s would lie in the realm of nostalgia. In 1988, they hit the charts again with “Kokomo.” One can only speculate that had *Smile* been released at or about the same time as *Sgt. Pepper*, the story of the Beach Boys might have been very different.



The Beach Boys (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)



Chubby Checker (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

The Dance Craze

From its beginnings, rock and roll has been associated with dancing. Teen dances in the 1950s usually fell into two categories: slow, in which couples held each other close and moved slowly around the dance floor, and fast, usually the jitterbug, a holdover from the big band swing of the 1930s and 1940s.

In 1959, Hank Ballard and the Midnighters recorded a song called “Teardrops on Your Letter.” The flip side of the single was a song called “The Twist.” When it began to catch on, a cover version was released on Cameo-Parkway Records (Philadelphia) by Ernest Evans, who went by the name Chubby Checker (compare with Fats Domino). “The Twist” initiated an explosion of dance-oriented records. The song reached number 1 on two separate occasions (September 1960 and January 1962)—a record in rock history—and it stayed on the Top 100 charts for a total of over 38 weeks, a record that still stands.

Checker and “The Twist” were popularized on *American Bandstand*. The song and the dance became a national fad, spinning off countless twist records for Checker and others. For examples, listen to the following songs:

“Let’s Twist Again,” Chubby Checker
 “Slow Twistin’,” Chubby Checker
 “Twist It Up,” Chubby Checker
 “Twist and Shout,” Isley Brothers; Beatles
 “The Peppermint Twist,” Joey Dee and the Starlighters
 “Twistin’ the Night Away,” Sam Cooke
 “Twistin’ U.S.A.,” Danny and the Juniors
 “Twist, Twist Senora,” Gary “U.S.” Bonds
 “Twistin’ Mathilda,” Jimmy Soul

The dance craze spread to the adult crowd. New dances followed: Chubby Checker had hits with “Pony Time” (1961), “The Fly” (1961), the “Limbo Rock” (1962), “Popeye the Hitchhiker” (1962), “Let’s Limbo Some More” (1963), and “Let’s Do the Freddie” (1965). Other artists, led by black artists from Philadelphia, often on the Cameo-Parkway label, invented a seemingly endless string of new dances (see Table 5–3).

TABLE 5-3

Song	Artist	Year	Label
"Continental Walk"	Hank Ballard and the Midnighters	1961	King
"The Fish"	Bobby Rydell	1961	Cameo
"Bristol Stomp"	Dovells	1961	Parkway
"Wah Watusi"	Orlons	1962	Cameo
"Mashed Potato Time"	Dee Dee Sharp	1962	Cameo
"Loco Motion"	Little Eva	1962	Dimension
"Hully Gully Baby"	Dovells	1962	Parkway
"Do the Bird"	Dee Dee Sharp	1963	Cameo
"The Hitch Hike"	Marvin Gaye	1963	Tamla
"Monkey Time"	Major Lance	1963	Okeh
"Do the Freddie"	Freddie and the Dreamers	1965	Mercury
"The Jerk"	Larks	1965	Money
"The Shake"	Sam Cooke	1965	RCA
"The Cool Jerk"	Capitols	1966	Karen

Most often relying on the 12-bar blues structure, the songs usually contained lyrics that provided instructions on how to do the given dance. Sometimes the teens invented their own variations without aid of any such instruction song. Dancers faced each other without actually touching, sometimes drifting several feet apart, perhaps a harbinger of the era's new emphasis on individualism. Certainly these dance records kept black music on the charts in the face of the folk trend, the surf trend, and the coming British invasion. The dance craze of the early 1960s also served as a precursor of **disco** (1970s) and break dancing (1980s).

Summary

The 1960s rock scene splintered into many directions. There were pop-oriented teen idols, female groups in the doo-wop tradition, novelty songs, folk singers, surfers, and twisters. No one style predominated. Rock seemed to be losing its direction in a hopeless fragmentation of the market. Was it possible to pull this diverse musical universe together and send rock into a new direction? The answer was yes. In Chapter 6, "The Beatles," we shall discuss the far-reaching revolution that was about to take place.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP:

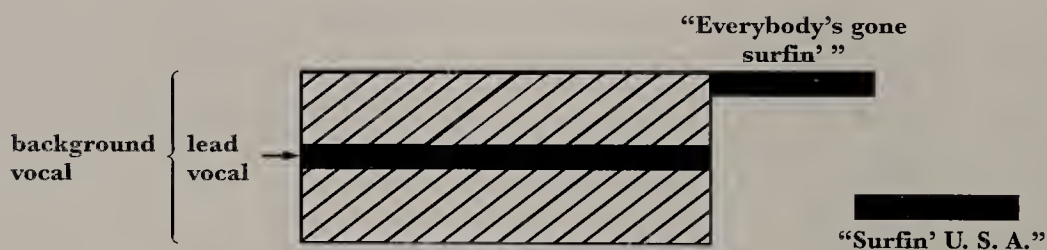
MUSICAL TEXTURE AND THE BEACH BOYS

Musical texture has to do with how the various layers of musical sounds relate to each other. If we imagine a kind of musical space, from the very lowest pitch to the very highest, how do we fill that space? We can use one note or musical line, or many. If there is more than one, how do they interact? Because the Beach Boys were one of the first rock groups to explore a variety of textures, we will take a closer look at their style, with a particular emphasis on texture. First, we will discuss their surf style, then we will examine their more mature style, particularly the songs "Good Vibrations" and "Heroes and Villains."

The Surf Style

The surf style of the Beach Boys shows two particular influences. Brian Wilson was particularly fond of the Four Freshmen, a white pop group of the early 1950s. Their clean, sophisticated, jazz-influenced harmonies became an early model for Brian, who would spend hours singing along with their records. He especially liked the high tenor voices of the Freshmen and the Hi-Los, another 1950s male vocal group. Brian learned to sing in a high male voice as well as in a true falsetto. Brian's younger brother Carl also absorbed these influences, but he preferred the new sounds of 1950s rock and roll—especially Chuck Berry. It should not be surprising, then, that even in their early surf hits, these two influences—the quartet harmonies of the Four Freshmen and the rock and roll style of Chuck Berry—would manifest themselves.

Listen first to “Surfin’ U.S.A.” The most obvious influence, of course, is Chuck Berry. The music is that of Berry’s “Sweet Little Sixteen,” with lyrics rewritten by Brian to fit the surfing theme. After a short Berry-like guitar introduction, Mike Love’s lead vocal is sung in multitracked unison. The vocal harmonies (on the words “ooh” and “inside, outside, U.S.A.”) are placed both above and below the midrange lead line. At the words “everybody’s gone surfin’,” the lead changes to high voice, and the background vocal stops. The title line (“Surfin’ U.S.A.”) is sung in low unison (again, no background vocal). If we were to draw a picture of this general scheme (an approximation at best), it would look like the following:



With “Surfer Girl,” the texture is slightly different. In the introduction, there are background vocal harmonies under a high lead line. In the first section of the song (A), all voices move together on **block chords**; the top voice is the lead, and the others are harmonizing. All are singing the same words and rhythms; there is no independence for any one voice. The harmony is spread widely over the available musical space—from the high lead to the bass—and is filled in nicely in the middle. This sound shows a reference back to the Four Freshmen and the Hi-Los. At the end of this section the voices split, with the high voice moving independently, while the lower vocal harmony sings “surfer girl, my little surfer girl.” After repeating the A section, the bridge (B) features a midrange lead voice accompanied by background vocals (“aah”); at the words “everywhere I go,” the voices join again in block chords, with the highest voice predominating.

With “Fun, Fun, Fun,” the Berry influence is particularly obvious, especially in the guitar introduction (compare with Berry’s intro to “Johnny B. Goode”). The A section begins with midrange voices in unison. This monophonic texture is sustained until the title words “fun, fun, fun,” when a full homophonic texture develops, covering a very full pitch spectrum from high voice to bass. On the word “away,” the high voice is sustained, while the other voices harmonize a rhythmic pattern on “fun, fun, fun till her daddy takes the T-bird away.” For the repeat of the A section (new words), the midrange unison returns to take the lead but is accompanied by background vocals sustained from the end of the previous section. In subsequent sections of the repeated A section, the midrange voice sings the lead, accompanied by background vocals on “ooh” and “you walk (look/drive) like an ace now.” Skip to the end of the song (the fade section). Here, a new texture develops; the

high falsetto pattern zooms off on its own, while the accompanying voices sing a repeating pattern on “fun, fun, fun now that daddy took the T-bird away.”

Listen to other Beach Boys surf hits and you can find examples of monophony (unison line), homophony (all voices moving together), and polyphony (several independent lines). With five voices, the Beach Boys can have one solo line (often multitracked) and still have full four-voice harmony for accompaniment. Sometimes the lead is high, accompanied by voices below; at other times the lead is midrange, with accompanying voices surrounding it above and below. The frequency of change in these textures, sometimes within one phrase, adds variety and interest to the music. But compared with later Beach Boys’ works, these early surf sounds seem like elementary exercises. Let us look at two later works.

“Good Vibrations”

“Good Vibrations” (fall 1966) was the most creative and innovative single to be released in rock music up until that time. As the Listening Guide shows, there are five contrasting sections arranged into a unique overall form. In several sections, there are multiple layers of voices, including an example of pure polyphony (Section E). There are also some unusual timbres (for rock), including cellos, flutes, and theremin (Section B). This electronic instrument was invented in 1924 by Leon Theremin. It consists of a small box with a metallic rod protruding. As the player moves his hand around the rod, a continuous tone is emitted that follows the up-and-down hand movements, thus producing higher and lower pitches.

Listening Guide: “Good Vibrations” (The Beach Boys)

0:00–0:12	Section A (eight bars)	Begins with high voice (multitracked unison and heavy echo). Accompanied by organ chords (one per beat) and two-bar bass pattern that repeats four times.
0:13–0:24	Section A' (eight bars)	Add percussion. Snare drum reinforces the first three notes of each bass pattern; tambourine shakes on beat 4 of odd-numbered measures; snare drum plays on beat 4 of even-numbered measures. New lyrics. Triple subdivision (snare drum) leads to next section.
0:25–0:49	Section B (16 bars)	Vocal shifts to low range (“I’m pickin’ up good vibrations”). Quadruple meter with triple subdivisions in cellos; tambourine on backbeat. Theremin introduced. Background vocals (“ooh, bop, bop, good vibrations”) added in fifth bar (second phrase). Third vocal layer (“good, good, good, good vibrations”) added in ninth bar (third phrase).
0:50–1:15	Section A and A' (16 bars)	Repeat first 16 bars with new lyrics.
1:16–1:40	Section B	Repeat second 16 bars.
1:41–2:13	Section C (20 bars)	Contrasting section. Piano chords alternate with bass. Drums and tambourine add color. Voices enter humming. New melody and lyrics begin in measure 9. Texture changes after first 12 bars (multiple vocal layers).

(continued)

2:14–2:56	Section D (24 bars)	Sustained organ chords and percussion color. Midrange vocal line (“gotta keep those good vibrations a-happenin’ with her”) enters in fifth bar (second phrase). Voices shift to high range and bass added in ninth bar (third phrase). Fourth phrase adds high organ line and voices fade out. Texture continues until broken by jazzy vocal chord in 23rd bar, followed by one bar of silence (24th bar).
2:57–3:12	Section B (10 bars)	Repeat last eight measures of section B (plus two bars of cello/percussion accompaniment).
3:13–3:25	Section E (eight bars)	Polyphonic section. Accompaniment limited to bass and tambourine. First voice (falsetto) enters on rising line; second voice (third bar) enters on descending line; other voices enter (fifth bar) to create full polyphonic texture.
3:26–3:34	Coda (about five bars)	Accompaniment (cello, percussion, theremin) for section B returns and fades out.

“Good Vibrations” goes well beyond the Beach Boys’ earlier surf style, yet, in spite of its complexity, preserves the basic Beach Boys sound. It is one of the milestones in the history of rock.

“Heroes and Villains”

Listen to “Heroes and Villains” and see whether you can discern the many sectional changes and multiple layers of instrumental and vocal sounds within each section. We will note a few of these here.

As the first section closes, the rhythm stops, and there is a pause while the voices slide into a chord that is **dissonant** (does not harmonize traditionally) with the instrumental chord. Both the break in the rhythm and the dissonance were no-no’s in rock music prior to this. The following section has at least two vocal layers. One sings the line “heroes and villains,” while another sings a “bomp-bomp-bomp” accompaniment over sustained organ bass notes. The voices fade, and only the organ remains.

After the “la-la” section, another complex, multilayered vocal (“doo, doo, doo”) takes place; it pulls together just at the end of the section. This section (and several subsequent sections) is a **cappella**, that is, without instrumental accompaniment. In the “my children were raised . . .” section, note the method of producing the vocal accompaniment tones: a hard glottal attack, followed by a decay. The subsequent section removes all accompaniment and echo, resulting in an old barbershop quartet sound.

Do not be discouraged if you are unable to separate all of the various sound layers in “Heroes and Villains.” Get what you can and try to appreciate the complexity involved in conceptualizing and producing this song. Although the Beatles had a greater impact on rock history, Brian Wilson and the postsurf Beach Boys were doing work just as creative, if not more so, at about the same time (1966 to 1967). To a large extent, Brian did it himself: He had no George Martin, who produced the Beatles’ work—but then, that story awaits us in Chapter 6.

The Beatles

KEY TERMS

skiffle	tonic note	feedback
psychedelic	tonic chord	microform
double entendre	chromatic	macroform
concept album	major triad	countermelody
backmasking	key signature	
compound meter	modes	

Overview: Revolution within a Revolution

The coming of rock and roll turned both music and the music industry upside down. The pop sounds of Perry Como, Eddie Fisher, and Doris Day yielded to the rocking sounds of Elvis Presley, Little Richard, and Jerry Lee Lewis. An industry dominated by five major record companies was now populated with hundreds of successful, small, independent companies. A well-ordered succession of predictable hit records, each sustaining its popularity for months at a time, was replaced by a dizzying sequence of hits and artists, many of whom zoomed to popularity only to fade to obscurity within a few weeks. Even the general society felt the changes. A white, adult-oriented society was transformed into a youth-oriented society with a growing acceptance of, and even fascination with, the black culture—and all of this took place in the space of about three years. Rock and roll was a revolution.

Rock Enters Its Second Decade

By the beginning of 1964, rock was ready to enter its second decade. Much of the power of its original thrust had dissipated. Music was in a state of confusion. Fans listened alternately to Elvis, teen idols of soft rock, silly novelty tunes, female (and male) doo-wop groups, increasingly serious folk groups, equally unserious surfers, and a plethora of twists and other dance records. What was rock and roll in the early 1960s? One could give half a dozen equally valid answers.

Rapid Social Change

Society, too, was in a state of disarray. The 1960s had begun as the Kennedy years, as America entered a New Frontier (John F. Kennedy's name for his overall political program). The folk singers sang of peace, racial justice, and the "love between the brothers and the sisters all over this land." There was a new kind of optimism "blowin' in the wind." But as the shots echoed through Dealey Plaza in Dallas on November 22, 1963, the dream shattered. America's youngest president, the symbol of this new hope for a utopian future and the youth culture's philosophical leader, was killed by an assassin's bullet. The hope, optimism, and faith of the youth movement was simultaneously staggered by that same bullet.

The nation's emotional reaction is difficult for us to understand. Since 1963, many prominent political and social figures have been the targets of violence; our society has become accustomed (and comparatively desensitized) to it. But in November 1963, the shock of Kennedy's assassination sent the nation into a prolonged period of depression and self-doubt. The United States was a civilized nation; things like that just did not happen here! But no matter how hard we tried to deny it, we could not. Were we a sick society? How could American culture allow such an assassin to emerge? And then, to our horror, there was even an assassin of the assassin! Even today, many people can tell you exactly where they were and what they were doing on November 22, 1963, when they first heard that shocking news: Kennedy's been shot!

America's Cultural Inferiority Complex

The United States has always been a nation with a cultural inferiority complex. So-called real culture came from Europe. Americans considered their native cultural products to be unsophisticated at best, and downright embarrassing at worst. Not until the early years of the 20th century did classical composers begin to create a uniquely American style; previously, they had merely based their work on European models. When classical performers aspired to the concert stage, it was obligatory that they journey to Paris, Rome, Vienna, or London for study. Similarly, many music scholars enthusiastically studied and wrote about the folk music of Europe or the Far East, but rarely considered American folk music worthy of serious academic pursuit. Jazz was perhaps the most embarrassing of all (until rock and roll, of course). Although Americans viewed jazz as just fun music (or worse), many important European composers included elements of jazz in their so-called serious compositions. It was only after the European music community took jazz seriously that Americans decided that it must be OK.

Rock and roll was an even bigger embarrassment than concert music, jazz, or folk music. No one could take *that* seriously! It was just noisy American teenage music (heavily black-oriented besides). To be legitimized, it would need to receive the European seal of approval.

With the Kennedy assassination generating national self-doubt, our cultural inferiority complex reached an all-time low; we were vulnerable to a cultural invasion. The Beatles would lead that invasion, bringing a new level of sophistication to rock music, while at the same time reintroducing America to what was most important about the music of Chuck Berry, Buddy Holly, Elvis Presley, and the other 1950s innovators, much of which had been lost during the early 1960s. With that invasion, rock and roll, itself an American revolution, would experience its own revolution. The rules were about to be rewritten. Things would never be the same again.

The Early Beatles

John Winston Lennon was born in Liverpool, England, on October 9, 1940. His mother, Julia, was a fun-loving and carefree soul who, within a year of John's birth, left her husband to live with another man. John's father was a ship's steward and rarely home. John

was left in the care of his Aunt Mimi (Julia's sister) and Uncle George, who became his substitute parents. From his earliest days in primary school, it was obvious that John was bright. He loved to read and frequently created poems, short stories, and drawings. Equally obvious was a streak of impishness that gradually progressed through mischievousness into a mild form of delinquency. After Uncle George's sudden death in 1955, John became a burden to Aunt Mimi; his grades dropped, and his rebellion became more troublesome.

In 1956, John first heard Elvis Presley's recordings; he was mesmerized. Julia shared her minimal knowledge of banjo with John, who had obtained an inexpensive guitar. Although the BBC declined to play rock and roll, the independent station Radio Luxembourg did, and John listened constantly. He adopted the rebellious teddy-boy image: greasy hair, ducktail in back, a pointed slide of hair in front, and tight "drainpipe" pants. Then, John heard Lonnie Donegan's smash hit "Rock Island Line." It was in the **skiffle** style—a simple, three-chord style featuring an instrumental lineup of guitar and/or banjo, and home-made instruments such as a washboard (played with thimble-capped fingers) and bass made from a broom handle, wooden chest, and a tightly strung wire. John organized his own skiffle group, named the Quarry Men after Quarry Bank High School, which John attended. Working wherever they could find jobs, the Quarry Men played both skiffle and rock and roll. In July 1957, they were playing a garden party when band member Ivan Vaughan introduced to John his friend from Liverpool Institute, Paul McCartney; after several days, John invited Paul to join the group.

James Paul McCartney was born on June 18, 1942. Like John, Paul was naturally bright, excelling in English composition and art, but unlike John, Paul enjoyed his success at school. When Paul was 14, his family was staggered by the death of Mary McCartney, Paul's mother. Paul's father, Jim, had run a successful society band in the 1920s, and his musical background was an influence in the McCartney home. When the skiffle rage hit Britain, Jim bought a guitar for Paul. Paul imitated the vocal and guitar styles of Presley, Little Richard, Carl Perkins, and the Everly Brothers. At the Woolton garden party—when he first heard the Quarry Men—he amazed John Lennon and the others with his skillful performance of Little Richard songs.

In the Quarry Men, Paul and John became close friends. They shared a passion for guitars and rock and roll; both were quick-witted and fascinated with language and art. But in many ways, they were vastly different. John was rebellious and iconoclastic; he fought any form of authority or inhibition. He could be rude and callous, reveling in "cruelty jokes" and deprecatory remarks; nevertheless, he was generous to a fault. Paul, on the



The Quarry Men (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

other hand, was practical to the point of being downright stingy. He strove for the approval of authority figures and consciously fostered an image of the good boy. In their commonalities lay the foundation of one of the most successful songwriting teams and entertainment acts in music history. In their differences lay the seeds of the eventual disintegration of the act and also, in some ways, the dual directions British rock would take from the mid-1960s to the present day.

By 1957, John had flunked out of Quarry Bank School. Yielding to pressure from Aunt Mimi, he enrolled in art college in Liverpool. The skiffle style had run its course, and now the Liverpool groups, including the Quarry Men, concentrated solely on rock and roll. In late 1957, a young (14-year-old) friend of Paul's started hanging around the Quarry Men; his name was George Harrison.

George (born February 25, 1943) met Paul at the Liverpool Institute in 1954. Like John, George resented formal education and did not do well in school. He also adopted the rebellious teddy-boy look and was easily hooked by Lonnie Donegan's skiffle sound. George's mother bought him a guitar, and he began to teach himself to play, copying the chords and bass lines from American rock and roll records, especially Buddy Holly's hits. When Paul finally introduced him to the Quarry Men, he demonstrated a few of the patterns he had learned and sat in with the group whenever possible. John looked condescendingly on this quiet 14-year-old, who was, even then, rather somber and introverted; nevertheless, he was tolerated as a friend of Paul's.

In July 1958, John's mother, Julia, was struck and killed by a car near Aunt Mimi's house. John continued his studies at art college, where he met Cynthia Powell—his future wife. Meanwhile, the Quarry Men continued playing odd jobs here and there.

One of the most talented students at art college was Stu Sutcliffe. Gifted but antisocial, he looked, dressed, and acted the part of the countercultural brooding artist. It was only natural that he and John would become friends. Although he had no idea how to play, Stu bought a bass guitar, determined to join John's group. Through local club owner Alan Williams, the group was booked on shows and even a Scottish tour. Tour promoter Larry Parnes suggested a name change. Stu suggested the name "Beatles," in homage to Buddy Holly's Crickets. The group extended it to Silver Beatles and, for a while, Long John and the Silver Beatles. John, who had a never-ending fascination with spelling and language, suggested the misspelling that was to become a legend—Beatles, punning on the word *beat*.

The Scottish tour was a low-budget, second-rate affair that found them backing up some of Parnes's less impressive acts. But the Silver Beatles were hardly a sophisticated musical act themselves: Paul was clearly the most competent; John was playing well enough; George was barely more than a beginner. Stu could hardly play at all, and he knew it; he frequently played with his back to the audience. The group had no coordinated stage costumes, no image, and no set act. In May 1960, the Silver Beatles were not very good.

Back in Liverpool, Alan Williams contacted a club owner from Hamburg, Germany, named Bruno Koschmider, who had successfully featured British groups in the past. Koschmider wanted to book another Liverpool group, and Williams recommended the ill-prepared, drummerless Beatles. Paul McCartney approached local drummer Pete Best about joining the group for the two-month booking, and Pete promptly agreed.

Hamburg in 1960 was an attractive city, having been largely rebuilt after the destruction of World War II. Its entertainment district, known as the Reeperbahn (somewhat comparable to "the strip" in Las Vegas) was well known throughout northern Europe for its free, hedonistic lifestyle, which offered alcohol, drugs, and sex to its fun-seeking patrons. However, the Indra, the club where the Beatles were booked, was at the wrong end of the strip; it was a dive. Faced with the necessity of performing four and a half hours per night, night after night, week after week, the group began to forge a set repertoire and the beginnings of a stage act. Through fellow musicians, they were introduced to the Reeperbahn's



The Silver Beatles—Pete Best, George Harrison, Paul McCartney, and John Lennon (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

after-hours nightlife—including large quantities of beer, free and easy sex, and “prellys” (Preludin, a German diet pill that, in effect, was an upper). Good news came when Koschmider decided to move the Beatles to the Kaiserkeller, his more prominent club.

Although his drumming was certainly adequate for the Beatles, Pete Best was otherwise rather distinct from the other four. The girls stared past John, George, and even Paul and made eyes at Pete, whose athletic good looks upstaged the others. Furthermore, he did not join in the increasingly outrageous stage antics of John and Paul, nor in the off-hours revelries. Meanwhile, Stu Sutcliffe began dating Astrid Kirchherr, a beautiful blond, who was a talented artist and photographer. She convinced Stu to let her cut his hair in a “French cut”—short, with hair down on his forehead. One by one, George, Paul, and John converted to the new hairstyle; only Pete retained his greased pompadour.

The Beatles’ first German trip ended after they abandoned Koschmider’s club for a competitor. Possibly through Koschmider, the German police discovered that George was underage to work in the clubs, and he was deported back to Liverpool. Shortly thereafter, Paul inadvertently set some curtains on fire and found himself in trouble with the German police. Soon, all of the Beatles decided to follow George home.

The Cavern Club

The Cavern Club, literally a cellar below a warehouse near the Liverpool docks, had been a jazz club since opening in 1957. Realizing the growing popularity of the new “beat” sound, owner Ray McFall gradually presented some local rock groups. He hired the Beatles for his noontime shows, and they were soon attracting a large clientele of (mostly female) office and shop workers. The club consisted of a small, crowded room with a small bandstand against one wall. The acoustics were poor, and the atmosphere was stifling, but the Beatles began to create a loyal Liverpool following.

In mid-1961, they returned to Hamburg to play at the Top Ten Club, alternating sets with singer Tony Sheridan. Trouble emerged as Paul became increasingly critical of Stu’s lack

of musical ability. Meanwhile, Stu was becoming increasingly serious about his painting and about Astrid, gradually losing his interest in rock and roll. He was also suffering from severe headaches, and his moods fluctuated wildly. Except for occasional performances, he dropped out of the Beatles, allowing an eager Paul to move over to bass guitar.

On this second trip to Hamburg, the Beatles made their first commercial recording, backing Tony Sheridan on the standards “My Bonnie Lies over the Ocean” and “When the Saints Go Marching In.” Under the name the “Beat Brothers,” the group recorded “Ain’t She Sweet” and an instrumental called “Cry for a Shadow.” The Sheridan recording was released in Germany and was a fair success; the Beat Brothers’ record remained in the vaults. John, Paul, George, and Pete headed back to Liverpool and the Cavern Club.

Brian Epstein

Disc jockey Bob Wooler was an early fan of the Beatles and encouraged his listeners to ask their favorite record shop for the group’s recording of “My Bonnie.” In October 1961, several teens went to one of the largest and most successful Liverpool record stores and asked the manager, Brian Epstein, for the new Beatles record. Epstein knew nothing of the Beatles, the Cavern Club, or rock and roll. The son of an upper-middle-class family, Brian was a sophisticated businessman whose passions were clothing design, theater, and classical music. A meticulous and organized man, he had taken over the record department of his family’s large store. Brian took pride in being able to fulfill any customer’s request, no matter how obscure. Nevertheless, he searched unsuccessfully for “My Bonnie” by the Beatles. Since the teenage customers had said that the group was playing at the Cavern Club just a few hundred yards from his store, Brian decided the easiest way to locate the record was to visit with the group itself.

The Cavern Club was hardly Brian’s cup of tea; however, he was fascinated with the four rough boys who nonchalantly tossed off song after song with a defiant disregard for their audience or the accepted standards of good taste. For the next month or so, Brian continued to visit the club and even had several formal meetings with the Beatles. He had been quietly learning from his friends in the industry what it was like to manage a rock band. Against all advice, he finally proposed to the Beatles that he become their manager. To his surprise and delight, they accepted.

Although 1962 was to be a big year for the Beatles, it did not begin well. Brian’s first priority was to obtain a recording contract. He started at the top with Decca, EMI, Philips, and Pye Records. In early January, the Beatles recorded some 15 songs (including three originals) in Decca’s London studios. Their nerves got the best of them, and their performance was not impressive. Decca passed, and Epstein stomped out of their offices, warning them that one day, his group would be bigger than Elvis Presley. More bad news came in April. As the Beatles landed in Germany for a booking at Hamburg’s Star-Club, they learned that Stu Sutcliffe had died that very day (the cause was subsequently diagnosed as a brain tumor).

George Martin and Parlophone

In early June 1962, the Beatles returned to London to audition for Parlophone Records. Among the large British label EMI’s various subsidiaries, Parlophone was at the bottom of the totem pole. Its normal fare included spoken comedy and some light-music groups. The head of Parlophone was a knowledgeable, sophisticated musician named George Martin. He had ambitions to bring Parlophone to a more competitive and respectable status. The new beat sound seemed to be one way to boost the label’s sales, so he listened with interest to the demo tape Brian Epstein sent him. In June he listened to John, Paul, George, and Pete in person as they played through their repertoire. Martin liked the Beatles both personally and musically, sensing the hidden potential for a new and fresh sound. In July he

offered Brian the minimum EMI contract for one year and four songs, at a royalty of one penny per double-sided record.

Things started moving fast. In August it was agreed that Pete Best was not fitting in personally or musically with the rest of the group. The boys gave Brian the job of informing Pete that he was being dropped. It was a crushing blow for Pete, a two-year Beatle veteran, coming just as they had finally secured a recording contract. His replacement would be one of Liverpool's best-known drummers, Richard Starkey, aka Ringo Starr.

Richard Starkey was born on July 7, 1940, in Liverpool. In spite of a broken home and poor economic resources, Ritchie (as he was called) was a cheerful child. A series of illnesses took their toll on his education and his physical health. After a brief experience in a skiffle band, Ritchie joined Rory Storm and the Hurricanes. Because he wore so many rings, he earned the nickname "Ringo," and Starkey was shortened to "Starr." The band established a strong reputation around Liverpool and Hamburg. They were certainly well ahead of the rough-edged Beatles. In Hamburg, Ringo hung around the Beatles during their off-hours binges. In August 1962, the Beatles invited Ringo to join them. He acquired a Beatle haircut, shaved his beard, and said good-bye to Rory Storm. The last of the six major pieces of what would become the Beatle legend—John, Paul, George, Ringo, Brian Epstein, and George Martin—was finally in place.

In September 1962, the Beatles recorded "Love Me Do" and "P.S. I Love You." Ringo was replaced by a session drummer on their first recording. The record was released on October 4 but was given minimal publicity by EMI. "Love Me Do" eventually climbed to number 17 by December 1962. In late November, George Martin set up another recording session. On hearing the final version of "Please, Please Me," he assured the Beatles that it was destined to be number 1. Television appearances on *Thank Your Lucky Stars* and a radio appearance on the BBC's *Saturday Club* helped George's prediction come true. On March 2, 1963, the *Melody Maker* charts showed the Beatles' second release as number 1. They were the heroes of Liverpool.

George Martin wisely followed immediately with a full album of newly recorded songs from the Beatles' live repertoire. It was a mix of Lennon-McCartney songs (e.g., "I Saw Her Standing There" and "Do You Want to Know a Secret?") and cover versions (most notably the Isley Brothers' "Twist and Shout"). Brian busily arranged radio, television, and tour appearances, not only to publicize the group and its record releases, but also to ensure adequate revenue should the record successes prove to be short-lived.

The Beatles' third release, "From Me to You," hit number 1 in late April 1963. By then, Gerry and the Pacemakers, old friends from Liverpool, had joined the Beatles on the charts. People began to speak of the Liverpool or the Mersey sound (the Mersey River runs through Liverpool). Brian added several more groups to his agency, and promoters and record companies flocked to Liverpool to sign any group that combed their hair forward, wore high-buttoned coats, and could hold a guitar. By midsummer, Brian was managing the number 1, 2, and 3 acts on the British charts: the Beatles, Gerry and the Pacemakers, and Billy J. Kramer and the Dakotas.

The Beatles' fourth big hit, "She Loves You," fared even better than its predecessors, zooming to number 1 on the basis of advance orders and holding that position for two months. In September, the *Melody Maker* poll showed the Beatles as the top British pop group. Their most notable television appearance of the year came in October on *Sunday Night at the London Palladium*, before a viewing audience estimated at 15 million. In late October came a successful tour of Sweden, and in November came an appearance as a part of the 1963 Royal Command Performance for an exclusive audience that included the Queen Mother and Princess Margaret. At this show, John made his famous quip: "Will the people in the cheaper seats clap your hands? All the rest of you, if you'll just rattle your jewelry. . . ."



The Beatles with George Martin (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Late 1963 saw the British version of Beatlemania in full swing. Newspapers overflowed with Beatle interviews and articles portraying them as lovable, innocent, charming, witty lads; Beatles products were rampant. Their second LP, *With the Beatles*, was successful, as was their fifth single, “I Want to Hold Your Hand.” Parlophone, EMI’s poor relation just a year earlier, had held the number 1 position for 37 out of the past 52 weeks. And the



The Beatles at the peak of British Beatlemania (Source: Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Beatles, who just 18 months earlier had been thrilled to see the inside of a real recording studio, now held seven out of the Top 20 positions on the British charts. But if British Beatlemania surpassed their wildest dreams, the reaction in America would be even more breathtaking.

Beatlemania—American Style

In 1963, everyone knew that real rock and roll was exclusively American music. Any other country's "rock" was merely a pale imitation. So when George Martin approached EMI-owned Capitol Records in the United States about releasing a Beatles record, he was virtually ignored. The fact that "Please, Please Me" was number 1 in Britain did not impress Capitol's American executives. After all, other British acts, such as Cliff Richard, had bombed miserably in the United States. Instead, Martin turned to two small American independent labels (Vee Jay and Swan) to release the Beatles' first three singles in the United States, but none made the Top 100.

In November 1963, Brian Epstein flew to New York to try to break down the barriers. After much hesitation, Capitol agreed to release "I Want to Hold Your Hand" in January 1964. Brian convinced promoter Sid Bernstein to present the Beatles in concert at Carnegie Hall. Finally, he contacted Ed Sullivan, host of a CBS television variety show that had aired for some 20 years. Sullivan, on a recent trip to England, had seen Beatlemania first-hand; he booked the group for two shows in February—as a novelty act. (It was estimated that the Beatles' first Ed Sullivan appearance was seen by some 70 million people—approximately 60 percent of the viewing audience.) The Beatles hoped to do what no previous British group had done: crack the American pop rock scene. There was no way anyone could have foreseen that they would not only crack it, but blow it wide open.

When several U.S. disc jockeys began playing "I Want to Hold Your Hand," Capitol moved its release date up to December 26, 1963. By the time the Beatles stepped off the



The Beatles with Ed Sullivan (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./
Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

airplane in New York, their song had been number 1 for one week. Beatlemania—American style—had begun. A crowd estimated at 5,000 awaited the Beatles at the airport. There were 50,000 applications for seats at the Ed Sullivan show; the auditorium seated 700. The nation's disc jockeys played Beatle records nonstop, pausing only to announce "Beatle time" and "Beatle temperature." All America watched the press conference to see what these strange, mop-haired people were like. Their quick-witted charm came through strongly:

Reporter: Was your family in show business?

John: Well, me Dad used to say me Mother was a great performer.

Reporter: What do you think of the campaign in Detroit to stamp out the Beatles?

Paul: We've got a campaign of our own to stamp out Detroit. (Norman 1982, 279)

The lines were delivered with good humor, posing no threats to anyone; the Beatles were intelligent, yet fun: They were talented rock and rollers, yet nonthreatening. America went wild.

The Beatles returned to Britain having accomplished more than they ever expected with their American "invasion." By April 1964, they dominated the American pop charts. With Capitol, Vee Jay, Swan, and three other labels issuing Beatles songs, the market was glutted. "I Want to Hold Your Hand" hit number 1 on February 1 and stayed there for seven weeks. On March 21, it yielded the number 1 position to "She Loves You." Two weeks later, "She Loves You" gave way to "Can't Buy Me Love." In December 1956, Elvis Presley had placed nine singles in the Top 100 in one week. That incredible feat was surpassed on March 28, 1964, when the Beatles placed 10 singles in the Top 100. By mid-April, there were 14 Beatle singles in the Top 100 (Bronson 1988, 145). For the week of April 4, 1964, the top five pop hits were all Beatles' songs. It is estimated that 60 percent of the singles sold in the first quarter of 1964 were Beatles recordings (Belz 1972, 145).

The Beatles' first movie, *A Hard Day's Night* (released in the summer of 1964), was a huge commercial success. The Beatles toured Scandinavia, Holland, Australia, and the Far East. In August they returned to the United States, where they found Beatlemania to be even greater than before. They performed in 23 cities, and the mobs at airports, hotels, and concerts engulfed them. Girls hid in hotel air-conditioning shafts; fans were injured in the mad rush of the crowds; kids fell from overhead beams, balcony rails, and elevated walkways; they climbed onto the wings of the Beatles' airplane; often, the Beatles escaped concerts in armored trucks.

By early 1965, the multi-million-dollar rock lifestyle was in full swing for the Beatles. There were elaborate new cars, new homes for themselves and their families, and steady girlfriends, along with the dizzying array of one-nighters. Marijuana became a regular habit in 1964; by 1965, their pill popping had spread to a regular rainbow: French blues, purple hearts, black bombers, and yellow submarines. Finally, George and John were introduced to LSD—one of the most mind-altering of drugs. Meanwhile, the new government of Britain, headed by Prime Minister Harold Wilson, awarded the Beatles the Membership of the Most Excellent Order of the British Empire—an honor previously reserved for war heroes (which they were not), members of titled families (which they were not), and the very wealthy (which they were).

Their second movie, 1965's *Help!*, was as successful as *A Hard Day's Night*. A third tour to the United States began in August 1965 with a concert at Shea Stadium. Some 55,000 screaming fans nearly drowned out the sound of the music. By now, the Beatles had placed 23 songs in the American Top 100 in 18 months. Most of the songs were Lennon-McCartney creations and were relatively consistent in musical style. They tended to be pleasant, upbeat rock and roll tunes, easy to listen and dance to. These were good, solid rock and roll songs, but not revolutionary, and certainly not profound. In September 1965,



The Beatles at Shea Stadium (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

it was reasonable to believe that the Beatles were nothing more than a delightful and incredibly successful rock and roll band with a distinctive but not shockingly creative sound.

The Middle Period: Experimentation

By late 1965, the Beatles were in a position enjoyed by few stars in any field: They could do no wrong. Usually, once pop artists establish a successful style, they cling to it desperately because to experiment with new sounds is to risk loss of aural identity and fans. But the Beatles were in the unique position of being able to do whatever struck their fancy. Such freedom can be bewildering, but the creative mind strikes out into the new and uncharted territory, always with the burning question, What if I try this? The Beatles had that spark of creativity.

At this time, the basic differences between Paul McCartney and John Lennon began to emerge in serious ways, as their muses led them in different directions. Paul was rather conservative, sentimental, anxious to please, willing to conform, and extremely talented in a musically traditional way. John was rebellious, aggressive, bitterly cynical, linguistically adept, and less musically talented. Both, within the constraints of their very different personalities, possessed creative minds.

"Yesterday"

In the spring of 1965, Paul approached George Martin with a song called "Yesterday." He intended to sing it himself, accompanied by his acoustic guitar. It had a beautifully flowing melody, an unusually sophisticated chord pattern (for pop rock music), and sensitive lyrics. Martin suggested that this refined song be set to strings—possibly a string quartet. At first, Paul reacted negatively. After all, what would people think of the world's most successful rock band singing to the accompaniment of a string quartet—the medium used by Mozart, Haydn, and Beethoven for their most eloquent musical statements? Nevertheless, Paul and George worked out an arrangement and recorded it. "Yesterday" was released on the *Help!*

album in Britain and as a single in the United States. It not only climbed to number 1 in the United States but eventually became the Beatles' most recorded song, with over 2,500 cover versions (Bronson 1988, 185). Predictably, John hated the song. A soft love ballad with sentimental lyrics was not his style.

"Yesterday" is not a rock song; it is pure pop music and thus did not initiate a new style of rock. However, it did serve notice that the Beatles were no longer a predictable rock band content to grind out hits according to a proven formula. If "Yesterday" had not been followed by more surprises, it would simply be another example of a rock group occasionally straying into the legitimate pop field (remember Presley, Domino, and Holly). But in light of what followed over the next five or six years, "Yesterday" takes its place as the first hint of what was to come.

Rubber Soul

In late 1965, the first of two important Beatles albums appeared: *Rubber Soul*, followed in August 1966 by *Revolver*. These albums would show a gradual increase in experimentation, providing a transition from the Beatles' early period to their mature style. *Rubber Soul* even *looked* different: The front cover showed the slightly distorted faces of the four Beatles, and the magical words *The Beatles* were purposely left off. It was an arty cover; somewhat surreal, and gave a hint of what would later be called **psychedelic**. Gone, too, were the "yeah, yeah, yeah" songs. John had discovered the lyrics of Bob Dylan; George Harrison had discovered the sitar. All four had heard the new American folk rock. Four-track recording replaced the older two-track technology. As a result, rhythm, voices, and instruments could be recorded, erased, rerecorded, and mixed separately. Putting together a song became a constructive process, not unlike creating a fine painting, layer by layer. New ideas for sounds were contributed by Paul, John, and George, and then refined by George Martin. Sometimes Martin would propose new ideas or changes himself. It was a dynamic creative process.

During a tour to India, George Harrison had been introduced to the sitar. Anxious to integrate the unique sound of this instrument into rock, Harrison found the perfect opportunity in John's new song "Norwegian Wood." Thus the experimentation with timbres new to rock (string quartet, and now sitar) continued. In "The Word," John's lyrics take a turn from the usual boy-girl Beatle songs toward his emerging philosophy of love as the answer to world

problems. Again, this is a hint of things to come ("All You Need Is Love"). Paul's song "Michelle" is more traditional in its lyrics, but its harmonies are more interesting. As with "Yesterday," Paul creates a fascinating melody and a sophisticated sequence of chords. The bilingual lyrics (English and French) were not without precedent in pop music but were unusual for a rock group.



The Beatles on the *Rubber Soul* album cover (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

“In My Life” is a good song, but what is particularly interesting is the instrumental break. According to the formula, somewhere in the middle of the song, there should be a brief break that features an instrumental lead—usually a guitar. But the Beatles do not do the usual. Instead, there is what sounds like a harpsichord solo in a polyphonic texture more closely associated with Bach than the Beatles. To create this peculiar sound, George Martin played the solo on piano, recorded at half speed and an octave lower than desired; when mixed back in at double speed, the tempo and pitch are corrected, but the timbre is altered to approximate that of a harpsichord. This extra touch of creativity is what increasingly set the Beatles apart from other rock bands.

Because of the growing complexity of their recordings, it was taking the Beatles longer to create new albums than in their first years. Anxious for product, the group’s American label assembled an album to fill the gap between *Rubber Soul* and *Revolver*. *Yesterday and Today* was assembled from singles and extra U.K. album tracks to cash in on the Beatles’ popularity. The album nonetheless contains some important songs in the Beatles’ catalog.

“Nowhere Man’s” lyric is a social commentary, showing an awareness of the more serious, relevant lyrics of the folk and folk rock movement. The song describes the sort of person who refuses to get involved, who wanders down the middle of life’s road, voicing no opinions, supporting no vital causes, and never speaking his mind. A heavier, socially oriented lyric was to become more common in subsequent Beatle songs.

“I’m Only Sleeping” includes a unique feature: Its guitar sounds are mixed in backward (a device to be called on many times later). Yet another hint of things to come is the song “And Your Bird Can Sing,” with its obtuse, surrealistic lyrics. Beatles fans quickly came to recognize these kinds of songs as the work of John Lennon.

Revolver

The second album in this transitional period was *Revolver*. Its release in August 1966 was coordinated with yet another tour to the United States. The Beatles arrived to find themselves in the midst of the biggest controversy yet. Back in February, John had given an interview to an English reporter, in which he said, in part,

Christianity will go. It will vanish and shrink. I needn’t argue with that; I’m right and I will be proved right. We’re more popular than Jesus now: I don’t know which will go first—rock ‘n’ roll or Christianity. (Coleman 1984, 312)

The British public, accustomed to John’s iconoclastic remarks, took the comments in stride. However, when *Datebook*, an American teen magazine, quoted the interview, there was a burst of outrage. Over 30 radio stations banned Beatles records; there were protest marches and record-burning sessions. Brian Epstein offered the press “clarifications” and “explanations” aimed at taking the sting out of John’s remarks. Epstein asserted that John was bemoaning the apparent decline of Christianity’s influence, as illustrated by the regrettable fact that the Beatles were more popular than Jesus. But the pressure still mounted for an apology from John himself. Yielding to the pressure, the usually articulate John stumbled through a so-called apology at a press conference in Chicago. Gradually, the furor died away. Seemingly anxious to avoid a similar controversy, the media and the public ignored several potentially inflammatory remarks made by John during the American tour about the Vietnam War.

The tour was a success, but the Beatles were tiring of the drudgery of live performance. Though no one knew it at the time, the Beatles’ appearance on August 29, 1966, at San Francisco’s Candlestick Park would be the group’s last live concert ever. One of the problems was that the increasingly experimental nature of their recorded music made its replication in live concert virtually impossible.



The Beatles on the *Revolver* album cover (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. — Los Angeles)

The new album, *Revolver*, continued the trend of experimentation. The cover took the *Rubber Soul* design one step further. Again, the group's name appeared nowhere on the front. The black-and-white cover showed sketches of the four famous faces; flowing up to the top of the cover was a montage of photos of the individual Beatles. The album itself contained more Indian-influenced sounds ("Love You Too"). There was a mainstream

rock ("Got to Get You into My Life") with added trumpets and saxes. And there was "Tomorrow Never Knows," with its tape sounds mixed in backward and at varying speeds, along with John's continuing love theme ("love is all and love is everyone").

Two songs stand out as further indicators of what would become the Beatles' mature style. Paul's "Eleanor Rigby" carries the string quartet of "Yesterday" a step further by using a string octet. The song's lyrics focus on two lonely persons—Eleanor Rigby and Father McKenzie—who find themselves out of life's mainstream. In many ways, this song seems to be a precursor of the subsequent *Sgt. Pepper* album. The nihilism of "Nowhere Man" ("making all his nowhere plans for nobody") is carried forward in "Eleanor Rigby" ("writing the words of a sermon that no one will hear" and similar lines). And lines like "Eleanor Rigby puts on a face that she keeps in a jar by the door" shows that Paul is not far behind John in his ability to turn the English language to his needs.

The other interesting song is "Yellow Submarine." Drug-oriented lyrics were creating controversies throughout the music industry. These songs were usually written with liberal use of **double entendre**: lines that had two possible interpretations, one drug oriented and the other more innocent. When challenged, the performers could provide the straight interpretation, but to the initiated, the drug-oriented message was understood. The Beatles, though by this time into marijuana, pills, and LSD, had previously avoided this particular controversy. Yellow subs were a type of pill, and the lyrics described a dreamlike fantasyland. The sounds included bubbling sounds, gushing water, tinkling ice, and a military band. Heard at one level, it was what would later be called psychedelic. However, on another level, it could be heard as an amusing childlike cartoon, much like the Beatles themselves: innocent, lovable, and cute. Double entendres and eventually overt drug references would also become a factor in the later Beatles style.

"Penny Lane" and "Strawberry Fields Forever"

In late 1966, the Beatles drifted in different directions. When they regrouped in December, they began work on what would be a double-sided single: "Penny Lane" and "Strawberry Fields Forever." "Penny Lane" is a nostalgic look back to Liverpool, specifically the area where the Quarry Men had begun. Paul had heard a piccolo trumpet (a small trumpet often

used in baroque music) and asked George Martin to use it in his song. Together, they worked out the familiar trumpet countermelody.

John's "Strawberry Fields Forever" was also a nostalgic look back to Liverpool—and much more. Strawberry Field was a Salvation Army home not far away from Aunt Mimi's house. But the lyrics convey more of an impression of nostalgia than anything specific. The words continue the surrealistic trend evident earlier in "And Your Bird Can Sing." Two versions of "Strawberry Fields Forever" were recorded in different tempos and different keys: one with a heavy guitar sound, and a second with the softer sound of cellos and brass. When John heard them, he liked the beginning of one and the ending of the other. A simple splice would not work because of the different tempos and keys. With considerable technical skill and almost unbelievable good luck, George Martin managed to modify the tape speeds enough to bring the two versions together. The result is a very eerie sound that, with John's stream-of-consciousness lyrics, creates a purely psychedelic impression. Further coloration was added by mixing in (backward and at varying speeds) pieces of tape with the sounds of piano runs and arpeggios. John, who was sinking more and more into an LSD-oriented lifestyle, had created (with George Martin's help) a real musical drug trip.

Released in February 1967, "Penny Lane" and "Strawberry Fields Forever" both reached the Top 10 ("Penny Lane" hit number 1). The year 1967 would be pivotal not only for the Beatles but for the history of rock music. The Fab Four were to experience several life-altering changes, and they would produce an album in which they would put it all together, launching them into their most impressive period of musical productivity, while simultaneously revolutionizing popular music.

The Later Beatles: Revolution

Beginning with *Rubber Soul* and culminating with "Penny Lane" and "Strawberry Fields Forever," the Beatles (with the essential participation of George Martin) had pushed, pulled, poked, and tugged at the outer walls of rock and roll. In 1967, they would gather all their creative forces, synthesize all the experimental bits and pieces from their middle period, and produce a classic rock album: *Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band*.

Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band

If the decade of the 1960s was the century's most interesting decade (as many would argue), 1967 was that decade's most interesting year. For the Beatles, the winds of change had begun shortly before the new year. On November 9, John had attended a preview of an art exhibit opening at the Indica Gallery. Both puzzled and fascinated by the avant-garde exhibition, he was approached by a small woman dressed in black. She silently handed him a card that contained one word: *Breathe*. It was Yoko Ono, whose work was being displayed.

Early in 1967, Brian Epstein attempted suicide. When the Beatles decided to stop touring, Brian felt that he was no longer needed. His personal life was in turmoil, owing to his homosexuality and formidable drug habit. On August 27, 1967, he finally succumbed to an apparently accidental drug overdose. Brian Epstein ironically was Beatlemania's creator and, at the age of 32, its first victim. But Brian had underestimated his importance to the Beatles. Without his sometimes unwanted and certainly unappreciated guidance, the Beatles' personal and corporate lives began to come unglued.

On August 4, 1967, the Beatles attended a lecture on spiritual regeneration given by an Indian guru, the Maharishi Mahesh Yogi. Fascinated by his words, they accompanied him to Bangor, North Wales, for further study. They were there when the telephone call about Brian's death reached them.



The Beatles and their manager Brian Epstein (Source: Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

Meanwhile, the *Sgt. Pepper* album had been released on June 1, 1967, and had begun its 168-week stay on the charts. It had begun as a whimsical song (by Paul) called “Sgt. Pepper’s Lonely Hearts Club Band.” The idea grew to become a unifying theme for the album. The Beatles would actually become Sgt. Pepper’s band, presenting a series of “acts” in a psychedelic concert atmosphere. As work progressed, George Martin and the Beatles were energized by the gradual awareness that they were creating something truly innovative and unique—a revolutionary masterpiece.

The album begins with crowd noises; the music enters, and Sgt. Pepper’s band is introduced. The sound mix includes brass band music and crowd reactions. Next we are introduced to Billy Shears (Ringo), who moves directly into “A Little Help from My Friends.” A simple and catchy song, it contains drug-oriented double entendres (“I get high with a little help from my friends”) and the dialogue between Billy and a Greek-like chorus.

“Lucy in the Sky with Diamonds” is one of the album’s most interesting songs. The initials, *L*, *S*, and *D*, send a fairly clear signal that the song is drug-related, but, as usual, an alternative explanation was offered: John said that the song was inspired by a drawing by his four-year-old son Julian. Certainly the lyrics evoke an LSD trip through fantasylike images (e.g., “tangerine trees and marmalade skies,” “newspaper taxis,” “Plasticine porters with looking-glass ties”). Musically, there is a shift of meter from the triple meter of each verse to the quadruple meter of the choruses. This is a first for rock and roll; such meter changes almost destroy the song’s danceability. Experimentation with timbre also contributes to the overall effect (e.g., the modified organ sounds near the beginning; the echoless voice at the beginning, which is then doubled only to return to solo voice, but with heavy echo).

Paul’s song “She’s Leaving Home” draws on several earlier experiments. As with “Yesterday” and “Eleanor Rigby,” the accompaniment is provided by a string ensemble with harp added. The triple meter negates any rock feeling. Paul begins the story as a narrator: In the first chorus, falsetto voices comment as outsiders, while regular voices play the role of the parents. This pattern continues throughout the song. Internal ironies abound in lines like “she’s leaving home after living alone for so many years.” Overall, the story allows a sympathetic insight into both the girl’s problems and the parents’ perspective. It

was a common story in 1967, when thousands of teenagers ran away from home to live in communes.

The lyrics of John's "Being for the Benefit of Mr. Kite!" came almost directly from an old theater bill he had purchased in an antique shop. The interest here lies in the instrumental sections at the words "Henry the Horse dances the waltz!" and "Mr. Kite is topping the bill"; both are accompanied by a dazzling blend of steam organ sound effects that were cut into irregular lengths and then mixed in at different speeds, sometimes backward, sometimes distorted—all over a steady, simple waltz beat.

Side two opens with a sitar and other Indian instruments, announcing George Harrison's song "Within You Without You." The trancelike effect couches a philosophic discourse drawn from George's readings in Eastern theology. One hardly perceives a regular meter in this song, partially because of changes from quadruple to quintuple to triple meter, but also because of the irregular phrase lengths, which tend to obscure any strong metrical effect. Seemingly incongruous crowd noises yank us out of this otherworldly experience into the totally different sound world of "When I'm Sixty-Four." Paul has traveled back in time to evoke a musical style of the 1930s. In tribute to his dad, who had recently turned 64, Paul may have been imagining what his dad's jazz band might have sounded like. The square beat and symmetrical form are throwbacks to the older pop style; the bridge sections (e.g., at "you'll be older too") break the symmetry and otherwise antique sound of this song.

A crowing cock signals the beginning of "Good Morning, Good Morning." The lyrics comment on the emptiness of the average person's life. Unlike the old-fashioned clarinet sounds of Paul's "When I'm Sixty-Four," the heavier sound of saxes is used for John's accompaniment. The bridge section includes saxes playing a bass line drawn from earlier R&B-inspired rock and roll. The song ends with more barnyard noises.

Finally, the musical potpourri ends with a reprise of the *Sgt. Pepper* theme, thanking us for our attention and closing out the album's story line. But we are not really finished. With no break, we are pulled into "A Day in the Life." John begins with a tale gleaned from his habitual newspaper reading. As the lyrics become more disjointed, John delivers the line, "I'd love to turn you on." This line (referring to drugs, music, sex, or spirituality?) is followed by a building wall of sound made by some 40 musicians hired for this session. Their starting and ending points were established, and in between, they improvised. As instruments are added and the notes climb in range, a seething yet stationary musical wall is erected. Suddenly near its peak, it is cut off, and Paul enters with a new section ("Woke up, fell out of bed," etc.). As he describes going to the upper deck (smoking section) of a double-decker bus, he goes into a (marijuana-induced?) dream. As his voice floats rather aimlessly on the syllable "aah," heavy echo is added, and the voice fades behind a steadily louder unison line, which finally takes over and moves with a transitional cadence into the next section. John returns to the same music with which the song began. Again, he ends with the line, "I'd love to turn you on," followed by the building wall of sound. This time, however, the wall is not curtailed until it reaches its peak. A dramatic silence follows, and then a huge chord is struck; the chord is allowed to decay (diminish in volume), until it disappears into silence after some 45 seconds.

What is the purpose of this chord? Although we are unable to say for sure, it is fun to speculate. There is no doubt that the Beatles knew they had produced a monument in rock and roll. It would have been discouraging for them to have invested over four months (and some 700 hours) of creativity into an album only to have their listeners pay casual attention to the record and, the second it ends, give it no further thought, moving right on to another record or to other activities. The ending chord of *Sgt. Pepper* does hold us up for what seems to be an interminable 45 seconds. It almost forces us to reflect. Perhaps that is the point.



Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band album cover (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Sgt. Pepper was a success both commercially and critically. Virtually every phase of the pop industry recognized it immediately as being revolutionary. Almost as important as the music itself was the album cover. Folding like a book, it was more elaborate than any previous pop or rock album. On the front cover, in addition to the Beatles in their Sgt. Pepper costumes, there are some 60 other familiar faces (including Stu Sutcliffe's). On the back cover are the complete lyrics (another new idea for rock albums) and the four Beatles, with Paul's back to the camera (more about that later). Along with the record came a cutout sheet. After *Sgt. Pepper*, elaborate album packaging became the norm.

The idea of unifying the entire album with one thematic concept also became widely imitated. The term **concept album** became a chic catchword in the industry. It suddenly seemed that every group was producing them (sometimes the concept was more imagined than real). Frequently, a specific theme song opened and closed these albums, as was suggested by the "Sgt. Pepper" theme and its reprise.

The year 1967 was not yet over. Later, in June, the Beatles appeared as British representatives on an international television special beamed to millions of viewers via satellite. They sang "All You Need Is Love." These huge successes were followed by their first flop. Paul's idea for a film called *Magical Mystery Tour* featured the Beatles and a weird entourage of "friends" touring the British countryside in a psychedelically painted bus. Everything possible went wrong. Their fans and the media surrounded them at every stop. Without a script, the film failed to develop, and the enthusiasm of the Beatles waned—but Paul persisted. After its television premiere on December 26, the film was massacred by the critics, and for once, the public agreed. The days of "the Beatles can do no wrong" were over. Insiders agreed that if Brian had still been around to shepherd his headstrong foursome, this disaster might have been averted.



The Beatles, with friends, visit Maharishi Mahesh Yogi (Source: Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

Fortunately, the *Magical Mystery Tour* album was a successful follow-up to *Sgt. Pepper*. The American release contained the six songs from the movie plus other collected singles. Of particular note are “The Fool on the Hill,” a simple yet beautiful ballad by Paul, and “I Am the Walrus,” an eccentric song by John. In the latter, John creates more word-plays and surrealistic combinations, based loosely on Lewis Carroll’s *Through the Looking Glass*. There are orchestral instruments playing traditional sections and then sliding from one pitch to another, adding the psychedelic touch. There is a chanting chorus mixed in, various verbal interpolations, and even a reading of Shakespeare’s *King Lear*.

In February 1968, the Beatles announced that they were giving up drugs now that they had discovered a better way to obtain their spiritual goals. They followed the Maharishi to Rishikesh, India, for a full-fledged immersion into the guru’s theology. There was fasting, chanting, mass prayer, and meditation. Slowly, the individual members grew disillusioned with the guru’s teachings and left, with Ringo leaving first and John and George hanging on the longest.

During his two months in India, John had been corresponding with Yoko Ono. He was intrigued by her iconoclasm and the apparent profundity of her artworks and writings. At times he made fun of her artsy eccentricity, but he also felt that she could lead him into intellectual and philosophical realms he had only imagined. John had previously confessed to Cynthia his innumerable infidelities. Now he began to flaunt his developing relationship with Yoko Ono. The other Beatles became increasingly aware of Yoko during mid-1968. She sat beside John in the recording studio during sessions; she attended their business lunches and meetings; she seemed omnipresent and intrusive. Their resentment grew as they realized that Yoko was not simply John’s latest fling but a permanent addition to the Beatle family.

The public became aware of Yoko Ono’s relationship with John in June 1968 and was even less amused than the other Beatles. Wherever they went, John and Yoko were greeted with catcalls and racial slurs; hate mail arrived regularly. For years Cynthia had endured John’s sharp tongue, endless touring, inability to handle liquor, LSD trips, and persistent infidelity. To the utter amazement of all, John sued Cynthia for divorce on grounds of adultery. Flabbergasted and hurt, Cynthia countersued on the same grounds. John and his

lawyers righteously denied the charges, until it became obvious that Yoko was pregnant, weakening their argument considerably. Cynthia was granted a divorce in November 1968 and retained custody of Julian.

***The Beatles* (the "White Album")**

The most important Beatle album to come out in 1968 was simply titled *The Beatles*. It has become known as the "White Album" because its cover is completely white and devoid of any print or graphics, except on the spine, and a number on the front cover representing the order of production. Having launched an explosion of garish, elaborate album art with *Sgt. Pepper*, the Beatles went to the opposite extreme with the ultimate in plain simplicity.

The White Album was a double album (previously rare in pop music, except for special collections) and contained 30 songs. Beatles fans consider it either the group's best or worst album. The controversy arises from the extreme eclecticism of the music: Although the reason was not apparent at the time, it has since become obvious that the White Album was not so much the work of one group but of four individuals, each of whom was heading in a different direction. The album seems to telegraph the message that the breakup of the Beatles was imminent. The sessions that produced *The Beatles* were characterized by tension, bickering, resentment, and egocentricity. John's songs were harsh, eccentric, avant-garde, and purposely uncommercial. Paul's contributions seemed (at least to John) sentimental, bland, and overly commercial. George added four songs to the White Album but tried to stay out of the escalating Lennon-McCartney tug-of-war. Ringo, musically the most conservative of the group, seemed beaten down by the battles; he even resigned, leaving the sessions for several weeks before being talked into returning. These problems would have been enough to doom the average rock group's album. But the White Album somehow managed to emerge as a success musically and commercially. It reached number 1 on the album charts and held that position for nine weeks (144 weeks in the Top 200).

There may be a secondary, more subtle reason for the extreme variety of style on the White Album. Jan Wenner, in *Rolling Stone* magazine, said, "*The Beatles* is the history and synthesis of Western music" (Schaffner 1977, 113). Although that might be an overstatement, it nonetheless contains an element of truth. Throughout the White Album, there are musical and verbal references to a wide variety of preexisting musicians and styles, each of



The Beatles in the late 1960s (Source: Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

which had contributed to the musical fabric from which the Beatles had grown. Whether it was consciously done or not, the White Album seems to pay tribute to the Beatles' musical predecessors: to the many influences that had to have been there first for there to have been the Beatles. Their tributes are genuine and authentic. However, it is hard to imagine that the White Album's songs were performed by the same group, much less included on the same album. This is the exact opposite of the concept album trend they themselves had begun with *Sgt. Pepper*.

"Back in the U.S.S.R." is a straight-ahead rock song. The overall concept derives from Chuck Berry's "Back in the U.S.A." At the bridge the Beatles play musical and verbal tribute to the Beach Boys. The historic connection of Berry and the Beach Boys is particularly appropriate (recall "Surfin' U.S.A.").

While some British bands were basing their entire approach on the 12-bar blues form, the Beatles rarely featured it. Nonetheless, the White Album contains three 12-bar blues: "Yer Blues," "Birthday," and "Why Don't We Do It in the Road?" This last song is just about as basic as a 12-bar blues can be. The harmonies are pounded out on the piano, and the lyrics are shouted in true R&B tradition. Whereas we might have expected the Beatles to produce a sophisticated, modified interpretation of the blues, instead we get the raw, authentically performed genuine article.

Picking up where he left off with "When I'm Sixty-Four," Paul creates a replica of the old pop song style of the 1920s in "Honey Pie." Imitating the sound of a scratchy 78-rpm record, Paul begins with a verse section without a regular beat. The verse sets the scene for the chorus, which is accompanied by a regular quadruple beat. The instrumental backing is a perfect representation of pre-swing-era bands, with their emphasis on the clarinet ensemble. Again, the form, melody, harmony, and timbre combine to recreate the earlier style with perfect authenticity.

"Rocky Raccoon" is a humorous narrative that seems to poke gentle fun at the folk ballad style. Paul is accompanied by acoustic guitar and harmonica, bringing to mind the pre-1965 Bob Dylan. Paul even allows his voice to slump off pitch, especially at the end of phrases, just like Dylan (e.g., listen to the phrase "booked himself a room in the local saloon"). "Rocky" pays good-natured tribute to Dylan, albeit with tongue planted firmly in cheek.

John's "Happiness Is a Warm Gun" begins with typical Lennon-style surrealistic lyrics, but midway, the music turns to a late 1950s doo-wop style, complete with I-vi-IV-V progression, doo-wop backup on the words "bang-bang-shoot-shoot," and vocal falsetto. In "Julia," John writes a beautiful, sentimental song in loving memory of his mother. He refers to the Maharishi in "Sexy Sadie," with lyrics directly critical of the guru, although John thought better of specifically naming him and substituted the new title. Paul's "Blackbird" gives hints of his views of the shaky status of the group and suggests his own ambitions ("take these broken wings and learn to fly; all your life you were only waiting for this moment to arise").

If the varying styles of other White Album cuts seem surprising, John's "Revolution 9" provides a real shock. It offers over eight minutes of miscellaneous sounds welded into a musical montage. There are bits and pieces of various conversations, musical segments backward and forward, and sound effects at various speeds. Intermittently, a voice clearly enunciates "number 9, number 9." There is hysterical laughter, radio distortion, and some moaning and heavy breathing, sped up to sound like the gurgling sounds of a baby. The other Beatles and George Martin pleaded with John not to include the song on the album, but his determination was unswerving. Although the piece may have mystified Beatles fans, it was nothing new to the classical avant-garde. Composer John Cage had worked for years with musical montages of this type. His *Variations IV* is actually quite similar to "Revolution 9," except that Lennon added the rather attractive unifying device of the

recurring “number 9.” John and Yoko both knew and admired Cage’s work, so in that sense, “Revolution 9” fits in nicely with the other works on the album, which authentically reflect the work of other musical predecessors and contemporaries. John’s obsession with the number 9, by the way, derived from the fact that the number had been an uncanny part of almost every significant aspect of his life.

After the seemingly mindless cacophony of “Revolution 9,” we are dumped into the pop world of the early 1950s with John’s “Good Night” (sung by Ringo). It is a perfectly authentic representation of this pop style, including the lush orchestral accompaniment, the background choir, the lyrical melody, the beautiful harmonies, and the subdued rhythms. Yet the performance does not seem to be a parody, but an authentic rendering of another musical predecessor of the Beatles.

The White Album was released on the new Apple Records label, part of the Beatles’ new company, Apple Corps. Ltd., designed to allow them to dabble in music, film, and other artistic ventures. Not the least of the new organization’s components was the Apple Foundation for the Arts, an agency that would provide money and other resources for struggling, unknown artists in all fields, but the Apple Foundation was soon submerged in a sea of tapes, musical manuscripts, novels, paintings, plays, and so on. It was a nice idea but also a highly impractical one.

That music can have a remarkable effect on human behavior is a fact that has been known for centuries. A regrettable example arose in mid-1969, when Charles Manson led his communal family on a bloody spree that resulted in the gruesome murder of actress Sharon Tate and others. Manson viewed the Beatles as prophets, and his interpretation of “Helter Skelter,” “Blackbird,” “Revolution 9,” and “Piggies” convinced him that his heroes were instructing him to commit bloody atrocities on wealthy white society. The scenes of his crimes were adorned with titles of Beatles songs written in the blood of his victims. As Brian Epstein had learned earlier, and John Lennon would experience later, Beatlemania had its darker side.

Apple Records’ first single release proved to be the Beatles’ biggest seller of all time: “Hey Jude” backed with “Revolution” (not the same as “Revolution 9”). “Hey Jude” (number 1 for nine weeks) was slightly over seven minutes long—nearly three times the length of the normal Top 40 song. Beginning only with Paul’s piano and vocal, the song builds steadily by adding vocal and instrumental accompaniment. Once the peak level is reached, it builds even more impact by constant repetition; the fade-out lasts some four minutes. With “Revolution,” John attempted to clarify his role within the youth revolution: He agreed that the world needed change, but he felt that a line should be drawn short of destructive revolution. The song naturally created controversy. To the more radical youth, it sounded like a sellout—a namby-pamby revolutionist who espoused the cause only to the extent that it remained comfortable. However, to most, it seemed a responsible statement of the ideal of constructive change. John and Yoko’s philosophy of nonviolence would become their main theme in the years to come.

Several other Beatles productions occurred in 1968, including a cartoon feature film (*Yellow Submarine*) and albums by George (*Wonderwall Music*) and John and Yoko (*Two Virgins*). There were few bright spots for the Beatles in 1969. A single, “Get Back,” proved successful, rising to number 1 in the spring, but tensions had developed over the management problem. After Brian’s death, the Beatles had tried to manage their empire on their own, but it had become a chaotic disaster. John wanted New Yorker Alien Klein to become the Beatles’ new manager. Klein had managed numerous rock acts, including the Rolling Stones. Paul advocated hiring Lee Eastman, father of his new bride, Linda Eastman McCartney. George and Ringo lined up with John, possibly fearing the consequences of a McCartney-Eastman arrangement. Klein became the new manager and began to put Apple’s house in order, but the inherent problems were overwhelming, and the inevitable end was not far off.

After Paul and Linda's high-society wedding and John and Yoko's marriage, both in March, fans were beginning to wonder if there would ever be another Beatles album. John and Yoko seemed to be drifting further into eccentricity. They spent their honeymoon in the Amsterdam Hilton with some 50 reporters in attendance. They stayed in bed for a week, growing their hair for peace. In April, the Lennons held another "happening." This time, they concealed themselves under a bag on top of a table. This posture, said John, promoted honest communication and would encourage world peace.

Abbey Road

In the beginning of 1969, recognizing the fragmenting priorities of the group's members, Paul began urging them to return to their roots by performing live. Various ideas were bandied about, including making a live appearance in India. Paul also was anxious to have the Beatles create a new film. It was finally decided to attempt to film the process of making an album, and sessions were begun in a large studio in London. However, the early morning hours and the cold space—plus the growing animosity between the Beatles themselves—led to hours of tape with little finished music. Discouraged, the group decided to shelve this project, temporarily at least. (Later, this material would form the basis for the film and record *Let It Be*, as we shall see.)

The best thing to come from the Beatles in 1969 was the *Abbey Road* album. This album continued the level of excellence achieved by *Sgt. Pepper* and *The Beatles*. The album title refers to EMI's Abbey Road studios, where the Beatles had been recording throughout most of their career. Even as the group was disintegrating, they managed to "Come Together" (the album's opening song) one more time, literally and musically. Even though each Beatle contributed individual songs, the entire group played and sang on almost every track.

Perhaps the most interesting feature is George's emergence as a first-rate songwriter. His contributions to the White Album had shown considerable promise, but with "Something" and "Here Comes the Sun," Harrison achieved qualitative, if not quantitative, equality with Lennon and McCartney. "Something," with its clever harmonic progressions (especially its instantly recognizable cadence) and double time shifts, has become a standard. Similarly, "Here Comes the Sun" contains effective shifting accents in the chorus and changing meters in the instrumental break. These two are among *Abbey Road's* most attractive songs.

John was going in two opposite musical directions at the same time. There were the avant-garde experiments with Yoko Ono, but there were also genuine rock songs, in which he seemed to be going back to basics. "Come Together," for example, is a throwback to basic rock and roll (although the lyrics are typical Lennon). "I Want You (She's So Heavy)" is a more modern example of the harder mainstream rock of the late 1960s. Almost eight minutes long, "I Want You" builds up to a powerful ending, with a unison instrumental riff in the midst of electronic distortion.

Paul's "Oh! Darling" is a slow rock song, in which the lyrics are screamed by the usually more lyrical Paul. It is also a throwback to earlier rock, complete with 1950s bass lines and chord progressions. "Because" is an effective song, using jazzlike vocal harmonies in which the Beatles' voices unite in a surprisingly sophisticated blend. Harpsichord adds color to the accompaniment to create a beautifully delicate texture.

The album concludes with a series of songs unified into a set. Lyrics and instrumental fragments unite the songs, which otherwise display considerable variety. Beginning with Paul's "You Never Give Me Your Money," the set moves to "Sun King" by John. Almost a variation of George's "Here Comes the Sun," the song recalls the sophisticated harmonies and textures of "Because." "Golden Slumbers" alternates with "Carry That Weight," a rock riff that leads to a strong example of the Beatles' guitar work. The beautiful and majestic "The End" closes the album on the recurring Beatles theme of love.



The Beatles *Abbey Road* album cover (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Abbey Road was the Beatles' biggest-selling album, holding the number 1 position for 11 weeks. Subsequent albums consist of reissues, unreleased songs, or specially recorded single tracks. Never again would the Beatles gather for the purpose of recording an entire album.

The "Death" of Paul and the Breakup of the Beatles

Near the end of 1969, the famous Paul-is-dead hoax became an international rage. Charles Manson was not the only person who carefully studied Beatles lyrics, music, and album covers for hidden meanings. Especially with Lennon's enigmatic lyrics, it became a challenge to analyze every line for the so-called real message. Fans found hidden messages in "Strawberry Fields Forever" ("I buried Paul") and backward messages in "Revolution 9" ("turn me on, dead man"), and between "I'm So Tired" and "Blackbird" ("Paul is dead; miss him; miss him"; Schaffner 1977, 127). The inclusion of backward messages (**backmasking**) on records was not a hoax, and indeed, if one listens to these spots, the suspected messages do seem to be there.

The Paul-is-dead hoax spread like wildfire. Assiduous Beatles fans discovered numerous clues to confirm their suspicions. The theory developed that Paul had been killed in an automobile accident in 1966 (when the Beatles stopped touring) and that the first hints had appeared in *Sgt. Pepper* (e.g., Paul's armband on the inside cover reads "O.P.D.": "Officially Pronounced Dead"). Reinforcing clues were found on *Magical Mystery Tour*, the White Album, and *Abbey Road*. The personal appearances of Paul McCartney did little to lessen the convictions of the believers. They were convinced that an impostor had taken his place. As of this writing, it appears to be a safe conclusion that the rumors of Paul's death were greatly exaggerated. (In 1993, he released an album titled *Paul Is Live*.)

The death of the Beatles as a group was no hoax, however. In the summer of 1969, John and Yoko released a single called "Give Peace a Chance." The record was credited to the Plastic Ono Band, which was simply a group gathered hastily for this recording. In September, John and Yoko traveled to Toronto for a rock revival concert. John's real musical and spiritual life was now outside the Beatles. By 1970, it was clear that the Beatles were each going separate ways. In January, John and Yoko released an album from their Toronto concert. In May, Ringo released a solo album (*Sentimental Journey*), as did Paul (McCartney). George quietly joined Eric Clapton's band on tour and prepared his own solo album, *All Things Must Pass*, to be released in December.

Paul's album included a "press interview" that, in effect, indicated that Paul was withdrawing from the Beatles. John, having agreed months earlier to keep his own plans to resign private, was furious with Paul for making such a public declaration. In April 1970, the Beatles' film *Let It Be* was released, along with an accompanying album. It consisted of tracks recorded a year earlier. The four Beatles were no longer interested in the *Let It Be* album project, so producer Phil Spector was hired to sift through the various tracks and edit and remix them. Spector added strings, chorus, and layers of sound to the basic Beatles songs. His production work seems overdone when compared to the more refined and understated previous Beatles albums. The album does contain an earlier Beatles single "Get Back," which is a good basic Beatles rock tune, and, of course, there is the title song, which in many ways sums up the Fab Four's attitude, not only toward the album, but also toward the group's ending. Perhaps it was also their best advice to their many distraught fans: Let it be.

After the Beatles

The four Beatles continued to produce individually after the group ended in 1970. George Harrison's *All Things Must Pass* was a boxed triple album and contained the single hit "My Sweet Lord," a song whose similarities to "He's So Fine" by the Chiffons (1963) earned George a lawsuit. In 1971, he sponsored a benefit concert to raise money for victims of the Pakistani civil war; appearing with him were Ringo, Eric Clapton, Bob Dylan, and others. George continued to produce albums reflecting his Indian theology and musical style. In the late 1980s, he also performed as part of the supergroup of Jeff Lynne, Tom Petty, Roy Orbison, and Bob Dylan playfully called the Traveling Willburys. Harrison died of cancer in 2001.

Ringo followed his *Sentimental Journey* with a country-oriented album called *Beaucoup of Blues*. He stayed with a gentle, uncomplicated style of rock in subsequent albums and, in the early 1970s, had several hit singles ("Photograph" and "You're Sixteen"). Unlike John, Ringo strove for commercial success and uncontroversial popularity; unlike George, he was not selling any heavy theological messages or trying to save the world; unlike Paul, he preferred simple, uncomplicated music to sophisticated experimentation.

Paul McCartney emerged as the most successful ex-Beatle. With Linda McCartney, he formed Wings and produced several albums that were musical and commercial successes (e.g., *Ram* in 1971 and *Band on the Run* in 1973). Beginning with *Red Rose Speedway* (1973), he produced five consecutive number 1 albums. His *Tug of War* album (1982) included a hit single "Ebony and Ivory," sung with Stevie Wonder, and his next album, *Pipes of Peace* (1983), included "Say, Say, Say," sung with Michael Jackson. His movie *Give My Regards to Broad Street* was a reasonable success. By the 1970s, Sir Paul McCartney had become an elder statesman of music. Among other things, he turned his energies to large-scale pop-rock-classical efforts such as *Standing Stone* (1991).

For John Lennon, the 1970s were difficult times. He and Yoko moved to the United States in 1971. For a while they involved themselves in politics and various social causes. When their visas expired, they began a four-year battle to avoid deportation. Although prior drug arrests were cited as the cause for deportation, there is reason to suspect that the



John Lennon and Yoko Ono
(Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

couple's outspoken support of unpopular causes angered the authorities. From 1973 to 1975, they were separated, with John moving to Los Angeles. Life began to clear up after his return to New York. In late 1975, John and Yoko's first child was born—on John's birthday.

In spite of all the personal difficulties, John had

some success in his career. His *Imagine* album (1971) was a huge success, as was the hit single of the same name. Subsequent albums in the early 1970s also reached the Top 10, but in 1976, he retired from the music business to become a full-time husband and father. It was not until the autumn of 1980 that he and Yoko returned to the studio to cut an album of songs that would reflect the new John Lennon. There were no drugs and no alcohol at the sessions. The songs spoke of family relationships, clean living, and a very simple kind of love. The resulting album, *Double Fantasy*, pointed toward a new direction in rock music. But events were to leave that new direction undeveloped. In December 1980, John was shot by Mark David Chapman, a Beatles fan since the early days. He murdered John not long after obtaining his autograph.

Over a quarter of a century after the Beatles disbanded, their recordings continued to sell. *Live at the BBC*, featuring 56 performances from the early 1960s, reached number 3 on the album charts in 1994. *Anthology 1*, *Anthology 2*, and *Anthology 3* were released from 1995 to 1996, and all reached the number 1 position. "Free as a Bird" and "Real Love" were new songs based on two John Lennon demos from the late 1970s. "Real Love" reached number 11 and became the Beatles' 23rd gold single (the most of any group thus far). In 2000, the Beatles had sold over 113 million albums, more than any previous recording artists. An anthology of the band's number 1 hits (appropriately entitled *I*) became their 19th number 1 album; by 2001, this album had sold over 20 million copies. One can only wonder if and when Beatlemania will ever end.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP:

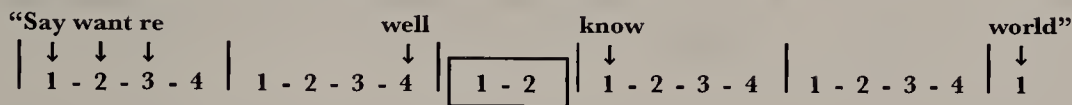
THE TECHNICAL SIDE OF THE BEATLES' MUSIC

Before 1966, everyone knew what rock and roll was: simple, enjoyable music that was loud and usually fast, with a strong 4/4 beat (and backbeat); it had silly words, simple melodies, and three-chord harmonies; the songs lasted for about two and a half minutes, and the song forms contained lots of repetition. Many songs still fit the old model, but by the last half of 1967, the boundaries had been pushed back. By the end of the 1960s, there were basically no limits to what a rock band could do, assuming that they were creative and talented enough. Although others contributed to this revolution, the real impetus came from the Beatles. Certainly their early songs revealed moments of creativity, but it was 1965's "Yesterday" that began a revolution within rock and roll that would leave no parameter of rock music untouched.

Rhythm and Meter

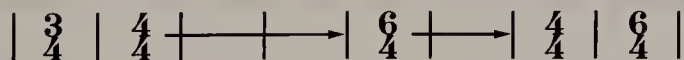
If there were one fundamental given of early rock and roll (other than the 12-bar blues form), it was the beat. Rock's rhythmic underpinnings were its insistent 4/4 meter, the moderate to fast tempos, the heavy backbeat, and the duple division of each beat. Slower tempos and triple division of the beat were reserved for soft rock styles. The Beatles challenged these givens and freed rock and roll from the tyranny of 4/4 meter.

One of the least disruptive metric changes in a 4/4 song is adding a single measure of 2/4. A quadruple measure is basically a combination of two duple measures; adding an extra pair of beats does not disrupt the alternating flow of strong and weak beats. Listen to "Revolution" from the White Album. The song is basically in 4/4 meter, but there is a 2/4 measure inserted in the first two phrases. You can count along by counting two measures of 4/4 (eight beats), then two extra beats, and then resume counting two measures of 4/4. You should land on beat 1 on the word "world."



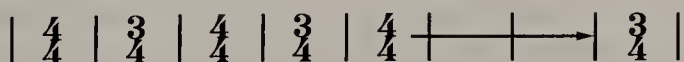
Another example of the 2/4 measure inserted into a 4/4 song is "Golden Slumbers" (*Abbey Road*). After counting seven measures of 4/4 (beginning on the words "Once, there was a way"), insert one 2/4 measure, and everything works out fine.

Triple meter (e.g., 3/4 time) is more typically associated with the waltz than with rock and roll. But in "Lucy in the Sky with Diamonds," each verse is in 3/4. One measure before the entrance of each chorus, there are four strong beats played by Ringo, signaling the change to 4/4 meter. As the song alternates verse and chorus, the meter changes from triple to quadruple. "She's Leaving Home" is in triple meter throughout. In some songs, the Beatles toss in one or more measures of triple meter. In "Back in the U.S.S.R.," on the second time through the opening section (beginning with "been away so long . . ."), the meter shifts to 3/4 for two measures at the words "back in the U.S., back in the U.S." (Alternately, one could hear these measures as continuing in quadruple meter, with an extra duple measure added on the words "U.S.S.R.") "Blackbird" begins with a guitar introduction of seven beats (a measure of triple and a measure of quadruple). The verse follows the following metric system:



The chorus also moves between measures of three, four, and six beats.

In the "love, love, love" opening of "All You Need Is Love," quadruple and triple meters are alternated. The verse follows the following metric scheme:




The Beatles occasionally experimented with five beats per measure. The introduction to "Good Morning, Good Morning" is in 4/4, but as the verse begins ("nothing to do to save his life"), the meter switches to quintuple. After three measures of 5/4, there is a measure of 3/4 and a measure of 4/4. The verse continues to shift between triple, quadruple, and quintuple meters, before the chorus settles into a more normal 4/4.

"Strawberry Fields Forever" introduces still another metrical shift. In simple meters (e.g., 4/4 and 2/4), there are two eighth notes per beat. But there is another metrical structure called **compound meter**, in which there are three eighth notes per beat. If the eighth

notes are of equal duration in both cases, the beat in compound meter is slower because each beat must accommodate three eighth notes instead of two. Study the diagram of the rhythmic structure of five measures from “Strawberry Fields Forever”:

simple
meters


beat: $\frac{4}{4}$ $\frac{2}{4}$

division: 

“noth- ing to get hung a- bout”

compound
meters simple
meter

$\frac{6}{8}$ $\frac{9}{8}$ $\frac{4}{4}$




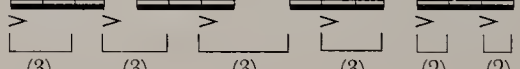
“Straw- ber- ry Fields for - ev- er”

Notice that if the eighth note divisions move at a steady pace, the beat gets further apart (slower). In the section where John sings “living is easy with eyes closed,” there are three notes put into the space (two beats) where four eighth notes normally go, confusing the metrical feeling even more.

Accenting notes irregularly also confuses the perception of meter. In “A Day in the Life’s” middle section, listen to the piano after Paul sings “dragged a comb across my head.” Each beat is divided neatly into four equal parts (called 16th notes). But the accents fall off the beat:

beat: $\frac{2}{4}$

subdivision: 

accents: 

When songs have three or five beats per measure, accents are irregular, and the speed of the beat is shifting—the rock and roll backbeat is nullified. Although most Beatles tunes retain the rock backbeat, some do not. In John’s “Give Peace a Chance,” not only is the backbeat not present, but the first and third beats are heavily accented—just the opposite of the rock backbeat.

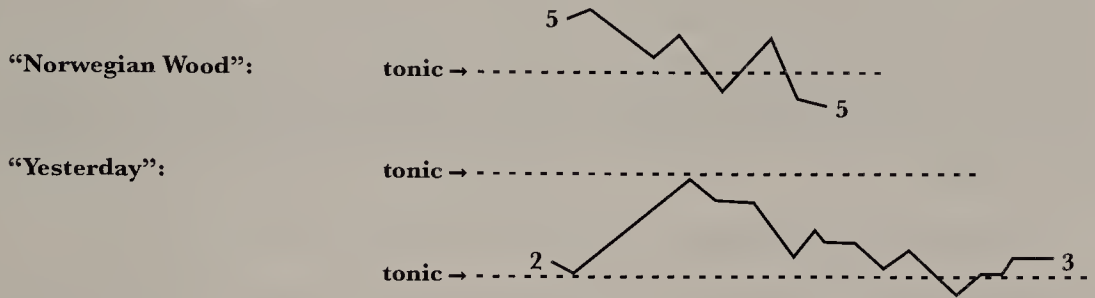
Finally, the Beatles even challenged the concepts that so-called real rock and roll should have a moderate to fast tempo and that soft rock should have a slower tempo. “Come Together” moves at about 80 beats per minute (bpm), that is, just slightly faster than Presley’s “Are You Lonesome Tonight” (75 bpm), yet it is hardly a soft rock ballad. Paul begins “Golden Slumbers” in a soft rock style, with the tempo about 80 bpm. Gradually, Paul’s voice hardens, and we move imperceptibly into “Carry That Weight”—certainly not a soft rock song, but still at the same tempo. For the best example, consider the coda of “I Want You (She’s So Heavy).” Using compound meter, the beat slows to about 45 bpm, much slower than Elvis’s “Love Me Tender” (72 bpm), but no one has ever called “I Want You” soft rock. In fact, one author suggests that it is an early example of heavy metal (Schaffner 1977, 125).

Melody

Prior to the Beatles, mainstream rock melodies were generally repetitive and rather unimaginative. Melody had not been an important aspect of the R&B songs that served as models for early rock. However, even in the early Beatles songs, melodies were unique

and showed hints of real melodic flair (e.g., “And I Love Her”), but by the time their talents had matured, Lennon and McCartney (and later, Harrison) were composing melodies that exploited a large range, combined stepwise movement with melodic leaps effectively, and were designed to fit a particular song.

Sometimes Beatles tunes move steadily up or down an entire scale. For example, “Norwegian Wood” begins on the fifth scale degree (above the key center, or **tonic note**) and gradually moves down the scale to the fifth degree below tonic. Conversely, “Yesterday” begins on the first and second scale degrees and then moves up the scale to the tonic note an octave higher, before beginning a gradual descent back down the scale:



Other tunes are less scalar; they move by small leaps to outline chords. For example, “Got to Get You into My Life” begins by outlining the notes of the **tonic chord** (scale degrees 1, 3, and 5). The melody moves through scale degrees 5–3–3–3–1–5–5–5–3–3–(4)–3–(2)–1, before ending with a large leap from 2 to 8.

The appeal of many Beatles tunes cannot be fully explained through technical analysis. Some writers simply have an instinctive feel for creating catchy melodies that stay in our mind. The melodies for “Hey Jude” and “Yellow Submarine” are not particularly sophisticated; they are simple enough to be remembered and sung by the average listener, but different enough to be distinguishable from other songs. The same can be said for the beautifully lyrical melodies of “Yesterday,” “Michelle,” and “Something.” The association of words, rhythms, and melody makes a very powerful impression on us.

The Beatles were skillful at creating melodic lines, the rhythm of which successfully reflects the rhythm of the text. Their lyrics often did not have the singsong regularity that allows for simple melodic writing. Consider the words from “Being for the Benefit of Mr. Kite!” The rhythm in the melody of this song fits this text perfectly, and the melodic line is varied and interesting enough to carry us smoothly from beginning to end.

The adaptability of Beatles tunes is exemplified by the number of cover versions of their songs. Indeed, one can hardly go through a day of hearing piped-in music in grocery stores, doctor’s offices, shopping malls, and elevators without hearing “Eleanor Rigby,” “Let It Be,” “Hey Jude,” and all the others being played by a million and one strings.

Harmony and Tonality

With the possible exception of the Beach Boys, there had been little real creativity in harmonic or tonal aspects of rock music prior to the Beatles. There had been hundreds of 12-bar blues and an almost equal number of I-vi-IV-V progressions. Melodies and chords were drawn almost exclusively from the major or blues scales. Once a song was determined to be in a certain scale, the chords stayed close to just those notes. The technical term for this practice is *diatonic*—that is, adhering to the notes of a given scale. The opposite of diatonic is **chromatic**—using notes outside of the prevailing scale. For rock’s first 10 years, diatonic harmonies prevailed, but the Beatles did not want to sound like everyone else. With very few exceptions, they avoided the 12-bar blues and the I-vi-IV-V formulas. Their refusal to fall into the easy acceptance of rock clichés led them into some interesting harmonic territory.

Even early Beatles songs feature chord progressions that are surprises. “I Saw Her Standing There” begins normally enough, but after the words “so how could I dance with another,” there are falsetto voices on “oh.” The chord at this moment is a **major triad**, the root of which is the lowered sixth scale degree. This chord is found in neither the major nor blues scales. It is a flat sixth chord (notated as $\flat VI$) and is a chromatic harmony—meaning a chord outside the normal scale.

“Penny Lane” uses this same chord set in a sophisticated harmonic progression. The song begins as if it will be a I-vi-IV-V progression. In “Penny Lane,” there is a barber showing photographs: I-vi-IV-V. Then it goes in a different direction. The second phrase begins with I and vi and then moves to a minor chord on tonic (the song is in a major key, so the I chord *should* be major). The bass line then moves to the sixth scale degree, but instead of the diatonic vi chord, we get a chromatic chord on vi (technically, it is called a half-diminished seventh chord). Next, the bass line descends one half step to $\flat VI$. Finally, the bass line moves down to the fifth scale degree, harmonized diatonically as V, and the verse is repeated:

Of every head he's had the pleasure to know.
 I vi i
 And all the people that come and go
 vi($\flat 5$) $\flat VI$
 Stop and say hello.
 V

The middle section of “Penny Lane” moves to a new tonal center on $\flat VII$. This is rather adventuresome for a pop rock song.

The use of chromatic chords is one reason the Beatles' music sounded different. In “Back in the U.S.S.R.,” the verse moves from the tonic chord (I) to the IV chord, but then, to harmonize a *blue third* (flattened third scale degree), the Beatles build a major triad, using the blue note as the root of the chord. This same chord ($\flat III$) is used in the middle section of “Birthday.” Here the chord alternates with $\flat VII$ so persistently that the song seems to change keys.

Over the centuries, a tradition of normal chord progressions has evolved. Many Beatles songs depart from these traditions. The following examples show three Beatles songs that include nontraditional progressions (indicated by a bracket) and chromatic chords (indicated by a bracket). Also, when you see a Roman numeral with a flat or a sharp (\flat or \sharp) in front of it, the chord is a chromatic chord:

“Help!”—published key: G major

| ii | ii | $\flat VII^*$ | $\flat VII^*$ | $\flat VII^7$ | $\flat VII^7$ | I | I ||
 | I | I | iii | iii | vi | vi | IV $\flat VII^*$ | I ||

“In My Life”—Published Key: G major

| I | vi I^7 | IV iv^* | I | (repeat 4 measures) |
 | vi^7 | IV | $\flat VII^*$ | I | vi^7 | II^7 | iv^* | I |

Note: With chords such as I^7 , iv , and II^7 , the root of the chord is diatonic, but at least one of the upper notes of the chord is chromatic.

“Michelle”—published key: D minor

[*] I	$\overline{\text{iv}^7 \text{ VI}}$	[*] bVII	[*] #VI	[*] VI ⁷	V	VI	V
-------------------	-------------------------------------	----------------------	---------------------	---------------------------------	---	----	---

“Being for the Benefit of Mr. Kite!”—published key: D minor

$\left| \begin{array}{c} * \\ \text{vii} \end{array} \right| \overline{\begin{array}{c} * \\ \text{iv}^+ (\text{augmented}) \end{array}} \left| \text{VI} \right| \text{i} \left| \begin{array}{c} * \\ \text{IV}^7 \end{array} \right| \begin{array}{c} * \\ \text{IV}^7 \end{array} \left| \right.$
 $\left| \begin{array}{c} * \\ \text{vii} \end{array} \right| \overline{\begin{array}{c} * \\ \text{iv}^+ \end{array}} \left| \text{VI} \right| \text{i} \left| \text{v}^7 \right| \text{i} \begin{array}{c} * \\ \text{i}^7 \end{array} \left| \right.$
 $\left| \text{VI} \text{v}^7 \right| \text{i} \text{VI} \text{i} \left| \overline{\text{VI} \text{v}} \right| \text{i} \left| \right.$

Note: This song begins with so many chromatic chords that the actual key is ambiguous. Even though it settles in D minor, the opening measures emphasize C minor.

“Strawberry Fields Forever”—published key: A major

$$\left| \begin{array}{c} \text{I} \\ \text{I} \\ \text{v}^{\text{*min}7} \\ \text{v}^{\text{*min}7} \\ \text{VI}^7 \\ \text{VI}^7 \\ \text{IV} \text{ v} \text{ VI}^* \\ \text{VI}^* \\ \text{IV}^{\text{*maj}7} \text{ v} \\ \text{I} \end{array} \right|$$

Sometimes it is difficult to determine the key in a Beatles song (see “Being for the Benefit of Mr. Kite!”). Even in an early song like “Can’t Buy Me Love,” the introduction and choruses are in major, but the verses, which are really 12-bar blues, lie in minor. Similarly, “Come Together,” which is basically in minor throughout, turns to major on the words “come together.” Another song that contains some tonal ambiguity is “She Loves You.” Although this song is basically in E-flat major (published key), there is considerable emphasis on C minor, a closely related key because it shares the same **key signature**. The song begins on a C minor chord, and there is an important cadence on C minor at the words “and you know that can’t be bad.” The final cadence of each verse is also interesting because it moves from a minor iv chord (a chromatic chord) to the diatonic V chord.

The Beatles rarely resorted to the old 12-bar blues form, but with “Yer Blues,” the Beatles modify the form to suit their needs. For every 4/4 measure of the standard blues form, the Beatles substitute two measures of 3/4:

$\frac{3}{4}$ | I - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | (8 bars)

| IV - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | I - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | (8 bars)

| bIII - - - | $\frac{4}{4}$ V - - - | $\frac{3}{4}$ I | IV | I - - - | - - - | - - - | - - - | (8 bars)

considerations: using the raised sixth in association with the diatonic i chord and the lowered sixth as the root of the diatonic VI chord.

Much more could be said about the Beatles' use of harmony and tonality. Later songs, such as "Because" and "Sun King" (with its surprising 11th chord initiating a new key), show creative musical minds at work. To keep these harmonic practices in perspective, however, what seemed fresh and innovative in rock was well known in classical music, jazz, and even in more sophisticated types of pop music (e.g., in Broadway show tunes). Nevertheless, if rock was ever to move beyond the mundane simplicity of three or four chords, simple rhythms, and unimaginative melodies, someone had to lead the way.

Timbre

Although the Beatles' experiments with rhythm, melody, and harmony were important, perhaps their most obvious innovations were in timbre—the new sound colors they brought to the world of rock and roll. The Beatles consisted of voices accompanied by three guitars and drums. But as any Beatle fan can tell you, that was only the beginning. Where sound color was concerned, George Martin truly became the fifth Beatle. Sometimes the ideas were his; at other times he refined the ideas proposed by the group.

The voice is the most basic instrument at any group's disposal. As with Presley and Holly, Paul McCartney was especially capable of a variety of vocal timbres. At times he could project a soft, lyrical voice, as in "Yesterday" or "The Long and Winding Road." At other times he could use the shouting style of the old R&B tradition, as in "Why Don't We Do It in the Road?" and "Oh! Darling." In "Golden Slumbers," Paul begins as a crooning ballad singer, but as the song progresses, his voice becomes more harsh and distorted. Finally, he reverts to the softer sound, before moving into "Carry That Weight." These changes in vocal timbre are accomplished naturally by the singer. However, there are also instances where the Beatles use electronics to modify the voice; for example, listen to the electronically modified vocal effects in "Honey Pie."

The guitar was also subjected to timbral modification in some Beatles recordings. The opening of "I Feel Fine" (1964) uses intentional electronic **feedback**. In "I'm Only Sleeping," the guitars are overdubbed (one ordinary and one with fuzz); some parts are also mixed in backward.

Beyond these timbral experiments within their own instrumentation, the Beatles added a variety of other instruments and ensembles to their recordings. We have already mentioned several innovations (e.g., the string ensembles in "Yesterday," "Eleanor Rigby," and "She's Leaving Home"). In various songs, we hear flutes ("You've Got to Hide Your Love Away"), harpsichord ("Because"), piccolo trumpet ("Penny Lane"), brass and saxes ("Got to Get You into My Life"), sitar ("Norwegian Wood"), brass band ("Yellow Submarine"), organ and bass harmonica ("Being for the Benefit of Mr. Kite!"), clarinets ("Honey Pie"), full orchestra ("A Day in the Life"), and a little bit of everything in "Strawberry Fields Forever." In "Within You Without You," we hear tabla (drums) and dilruba (a long-necked Indian lute). The addition of sound effects, although not new in pop and rock (e.g., "409" by the Beach Boys), is a technique commonly found in Beatles recordings. Examples include the airplane sounds in "Back in the U.S.S.R.," the various sound effects in "Yellow Submarine," animal sounds in "Good Morning, Good Morning," and the alarm clock in "A Day in the Life."

Still another category of timbral experimentation is that of tape effects. This would include the sped-up piano solo in "In My Life," the remarkable mixing of two versions of "Strawberry Fields Forever," the spliced-together and overdubbed fragments that conclude "Being for the Benefit of Mr. Kite!," and the tape-generated and manipulated sounds of "Tomorrow Never Knows." The end of the middle section of "A Day in the Life" (the dream section), with its heavily echoed and fading vocal line against the increasingly

predominant unison string and brass line, is a particularly effective manipulation of sound. There are examples of backward instrumental segments ("Tomorrow Never Knows") and backward verbal messages. Of course, there is the tape montage of "Revolution 9."

These examples are only a small sample of the timbral experiments made on various Beatles records. Choose almost any song from the *Revolver* album on and you will hear (1) an uncommon use of a common instrument, (2) the addition of an uncommon instrument, (3) the addition of external sound effects, and/or (4) the electronic manipulation or modification of sounds. Imagine the purchaser's excitement as he or she placed each new Beatles album on the turntable to discover what new rainbow of sound had been cooked up *this time*.

Form

The Beatles led the way in rock music toward expanded and irregular forms. Most pop and rock songs from the 1950s and early 1960s conformed to one of several patterns:

Typical twelve-bar blues pattern:

Intro	12-bar chorus	12-bar chorus	(etc.)	Instrumental break	12-bar chorus	(etc.)	Fade- out
-------	------------------	------------------	--------	-----------------------	------------------	--------	--------------

Typical AABA pattern:

Intro	A	A	B (bridge)	A	Instrumental break	B	A	Fade- out
-------	---	---	---------------	---	-----------------------	---	---	--------------

Internal phrases were typically four measures long; total song length was around 2 minutes and 30 seconds. Although exceptions may be found, these were the generally accepted norms for successful pop and rock hits.

Although many of their songs conform to the Top 40 two-and-a-half-minute rule, a significant number of Beatles songs go well over that time frame. Examples include "Yer Blues" (four minutes), "Helter Skelter" (four and a half minutes), "While My Guitar Gently Weeps" (four minutes), "A Day in the Life" (five minutes), "Hey Jude" (seven minutes), "I Want You (She's So Heavy)" (over seven and a half minutes), and "Revolution 9" (eight minutes). Of course, anyone can make a long song simply by repeating a short song ad nauseam. In fact, "Hey Jude" and "I Want You (She's So Heavy)" use considerable repetition to create length. But some songs achieve their length by comprising a variety of sections that gradually build to the total length. "A Day in the Life" is just one example.

The form of "A Day in the Life" is unique. There probably is not another song in the world with exactly the same structure. The closest precedent is called *ternary form* (three parts: ABA). The uniqueness is compounded by the use of some overlapping sections, where one section begins before the preceding one has ended (e.g., the third chorus of section A and the transition). Except for the introduction and some internal phrases, none of the sections are the usual four- or eight-bar lengths. Irregular phrase lengths abound in Beatles songs. Examples include early songs such as "Love Me Do" (13-measure sections) and "Do You Want to Know a Secret" (14-measure section created by two six-measure phrases plus a two-measure extension); middle period songs such as "Michelle" (six-measure phrases and a bridge of 10 measures) and "Yesterday" (seven-measure phrases); and later songs such as "I Am the Walrus" (three-measure phrases) and "Hello Goodbye" (a 15-and-a-half-measure section, divided into phrases of four, four and a half, three, and four measures each).

Beyond matters of **microform** (phrase lengths, internal sections, etc.) are considerations of **macroform** (the structure of groups of songs and entire albums). The innovativeness of the concept album (e.g., *Sgt. Pepper*) has already been mentioned. Even the eclectic White Album has some interesting balances between songs. There is "Revolution 1" and

Listening Guide: "A Day in the Life" (The Beatles)

0:00–0:12	Introduction (4 bars)	Sets the basic accompaniment.
0:13–0:43	Section A; first chorus (10 measures)	"I read the news today." Two four-bar phrases with a two-bar extension ("I saw the photograph").
0:44–1:10	Section A; second chorus (nine measures)	"He blew his mind out." Four-bar phrase followed by a five-bar phrase.
1:11–1:44	Section A; third chorus (11 measures?)	"I saw a film today." Four-bar phrase followed by a five-bar phrase, then a two-bar (?) third phrase ("I'd love to turn you on") that dovetails with the next section (<i>transition</i>).
1:45–2:15	Transition (10 measures?)	Orchestral buildup provides transition to section B.
2:16–2:48	Section B; part 1 (13 measures)	Two-bar intro. First phrase ("woke up") is six bars (includes two duple measures); second phrase ("found my coat") is five bars (includes one duple measure).
2:49–3:17	Section B, part 2 (10 measures)	Dream sequence. Heavy echo; voice fades, leaving prominent string and brass line.
3:18–3:49	Section A; fourth chorus (11 measures)	"I heard the news today." Similar to third chorus. Four-bar phrase followed by a five-bar phrase, then a two-bar phrase that overlaps with the coda.
3:50–5:03	Coda (11 measures)	Repeat of transition, with the addition of one final bar. Last bar has a brief break, then a major triad that is allowed to decay for almost 45 seconds.

"Revolution 9"; there is "Honey Pie" and "Wild Honey Pie"; there is a song about a weeping guitar followed by a song referring to the happiness of a warm gun; there is a sequence of "Blackbird," "Piggies," and "Rocky Raccoon" (and later, a song referring to a monkey); after the harsh avant-gardism of "Revolution 9," the album ends with the soft nostalgia of "Good Night." The *Abbey Road* album ends with a series of songs and fragments woven together into a kind of multimovement suite. The Beatles were obviously thinking of larger structures.

Texture

The Beatles' contributions in the area of texture were less impressive. The overwhelming majority of Beatles songs are homophonic, with the emphasis on the melody-and-accompaniment format. Where vocal polyphony exists, it is rather simple. For example, in the chorus of "She's Leaving Home," the lead vocal sings a slow-moving upper line ("she is leaving home"), while a lower line moves in faster note values ("we gave her most of our lives," etc.). Sometimes a **countermelody** is devised to operate against the lead vocal. For example, in "Help!," there is a slow-moving countermelody below the melody; this counterline follows the harmonic progression and is more a part of the accompaniment than a true polyphonic line. A brief example of vocal polyphony is found in the a cappella (without accompaniment) sections of "Paperback Writer." A

vocal falsetto above the lead line adds to the texture, but again, this line seems more an extension of the harmonic accompaniment. A cappella sections are rather rare in Beatles songs (as they are in most rock and pop styles); examples include "Nowhere Man" and "Paperback Writer."

Of course, with the added instrumental components in so many songs (e.g., strings and brass), a thicker and more interesting texture is a natural result. In the quasiclassical moments (e.g., the instrumental break of "In My Life" and the string accompaniments of "Yesterday," "Eleanor Rigby," and "She's Leaving Home"), there are varying amounts of polyphony (often the contribution of George Martin). The piccolo trumpet line in "Penny Lane" adds a refreshing touch of polyphony to its texture.

Lyrics

Beatles lyrics have been analyzed, reanalyzed, and probably overanalyzed. Hidden messages, backward messages, social profundities, and global prophecies have been found in their words. Although we should not downplay the Beatles' skills in lyric writing, we cannot claim for them the role of innovators of the meaningful rock lyric. That award lies in the area of the folk music trend, and with Bob Dylan, in particular.

Early Beatles lyrics, although well written, were fairly typical of most pop rock texts. Most were boy-girl love songs, complete with hand-holding, letter writing, and lots of "yeah, yeah, yeah"s. However, in 1964, the Beatles met Bob Dylan and became acquainted with his songs. Within the next year, subtle differences became apparent in Beatles lyrics. For example, Dylan's 1964 song "My Back Pages" speaks of the black-and-white false self-assuredness of youth compared to the greater willingness to consider the gray aspects of issues that comes with maturity. A similar theme is addressed by John Lennon in his 1965 song "Help!"

From mid-1965, Beatles lyrics became increasingly thoughtful and thought provoking. The sensitive lyrics of "Yesterday," the social commentary of "Nowhere Man," and the poetic images and turns of phrase in "Eleanor Rigby" showed that the Beatles were capable of growing beyond the simple lyrics of romance to concerns about major social issues, the socially disaffected individual, the more sensitive aspects of mature relationships, and, of course, drugs. In the 1967 to 1970 albums and singles, there is considerable variety in lyrics, but there is more emphasis on nostalgia ("Penny Lane" and "Get Back"), personal criticism ("Sexy Sadie"), surrealism and nonsensical stream-of-consciousness texts ("I Am the Walrus"), and love and peace ("All You Need Is Love" and "Give Peace a Chance").

Dylan used imagery, metaphor, and symbolism throughout his lyrics. From 1965 on, so did the Beatles. Much of this symbolism is obvious; some is obscure and subject to interpretation. It is a short step from obscure symbolism to meaningless surrealism. But accustomed to finding the meaning of the obscure symbol, fans were determined to find specific meaning in the surreal. This led to the fascination with detecting the hidden meanings in meaningless lyrics and the questionable individual interpretations of Charles Manson and the Paul-is-dead hoax. As we have already noted, fans also enjoyed deciphering the Beatles' deliberate drug references and sometimes carried this practice forward into songs that happened to make innocent or meaningless use of words that, if the context were sufficiently contorted, could be construed as drug related.

Certainly the Beatles' lyrics were extensive in their subject matter, and they were skillfully written. Because of their position as trendsetters and spokesmen for a generation, their influence on subsequent pop and rock lyrics was great. However, in this aspect of their music, they themselves had been significantly inspired by an earlier revolutionary: Bob Dylan.

Summary

Many of the Beatles' experiments in rhythm, melody, harmony, timbre, and form led to copious imitations and established new norms. In a broader sense, they created an environment of creativity, experimentation, and innovation. No longer did rock need to be subject to proven formulas and strict norms. Even though an artist or group might not directly imitate a specific Beatles innovation, they could discover their own unique sound. No longer bound to traditional instrumentation, established forms, or trite lyrics, truly creative artists could give their musical minds a freer rein. This establishment of a climate of freer musical creativity is of greater importance than any single Beatles innovation or experiment.

The average Beatles fan was not attracted to the music as a result of a conscious appreciation of their technical innovations. It is highly doubtful that on hearing a new Beatles song, teenager A telephoned teenager B to report with excitement the Beatles' use of the Dorian mode in a five-measure phrase accompanied by a *b* III chord. However, it is likely that many fans sensed that there was something different about the Beatles' music. It simply did not sound like other rock and roll. The technical devices are the reasons why the music sounded different, but it should not be concluded that the fans' conscious awareness of these devices was the reason for their fascination with the music.

Finally, the Beatles' innovations were not really firsts in the truest sense of the word. Precedence for almost every device can be found in classical music, jazz, and even Broadway tunes. However, they do seem innovative within the world of rock music. Even there, though, it is possible to cite some prior examples. However, to have a truly innovative influence, one must be in a position to have an impact on a general society. Although arguments over the Beatles' innovativeness have raged for years (and will continue to do so), it seems fair to conclude that because of their very visible position as trendsetters, they brought to the world of rock many new ideas (whether they were literally their own original ideas or not) and had a major influence on the direction of rock and roll for years to come.

It is common to divide the history of rock into two periods: pre- and post-Beatles. They were the watershed. Their influence on the music is undeniable. But there were other influences: on clothing, hairstyles, lifestyles, and philosophies. As with Presley, they covered the entire spectrum of pop and rock. Within their work, there are examples of hard mainstream rock, avant-garde rock, psychedelic rock, symphonic rock, and lighthearted rock ditties. They had gathered together the first 10 years of rock's development, molded it to their concept, added their own creative innovations, and then slung it into the future. Rock would fragment into a bewildering variety of styles and trends, as others would pick up and develop one or another of the stylistic fragments. No longer was rock simply fun music; it was serious. Scholars would analyze the music and lyrics: There would be university courses in rock music (unthinkable in 1962). The Beatles' legacy, some of it good and some of it dubious, would influence rock for decades to come.

The British Invasion

KEY TERMS

EP (extended play)
LSD

Hell's Angels

Overview: The British Are Coming!

The Beatles were responsible for many new ideas and trends in rock and roll, but perhaps none was more significant than the British invasion. Prior to 1964, rock and roll was an American product, exported to other parts of the globe to varying degrees. The British, especially, loved American stars like Buddy Holly, Little Richard, Gene Vincent, Eddie Cochran, and Jerry Lee Lewis. Imitating these stars, many British rock stars attained popularity in their own country, but they were unable to export their success to the United States. Only the Tornadoes, Lonnie Donegan, and Cliff Richard had made brief appearances on the U.S. charts.

But in 1964, beginning with the Beatles, British rock groups became the rage in rock and roll's homeland. Of the 23 number 1 hits in 1964, nine were by British artists (six by the Beatles). By 1965, 13 out of 26 number 1 songs were of British origin (five by the Beatles). Although the trend abated slightly after 1967, a new premise had been established: Rock and roll was no longer an exclusive American product. From 1964 on, British and American rock artists competed more or less equally in the market. As we shall see, several important trends were initiated or cofounded by British rock artists. However, it is not true that the British exclusively dominated the charts, as is sometimes thought. In fact, of the 124 number 1 hits from 1964 to 1969, only 35 were by British artists—a dramatic change from the pre-1964 charts (two British number 1 hits in the 10 years from 1954 to 1963), but not a complete takeover.

With the British invasion came a split in rock's mainstream—a duality that would weigh heavily on subsequent decades of rock and roll. The Beatles' Paul McCartney and John Lennon embodied this duality. Although history may view them as a songwriting team, they were, in fact, two opposite individuals who cooperated (sort of) in a highly

successful corporate venture. Paul was more refined, more traditionally talented musically, and more compliant to societal norms. John was iconoclastic, rebellious, and inclined to nonconformity. Paul tended toward the elegant, the nostalgic, and the sentimental. John leaned toward the raw, the raucous, and the shocking. This tension is reflected in albums like the *White Album* and in double-sided hits like “Penny Lane” and “Strawberry Fields Forever.”

This dichotomy is the prototype for an even larger division within the British invasion as a whole. The British groups that constitute that so-called invasion seem to split into two camps: the softer, more refined, less rebellious bands on one hand, and the raw, basic, R&B-oriented mainstream rock bands on the other. In spite of their own internal duality, the Beatles became the representatives of the former trend (probably because of their early image as being cute and lovable, and their later reputation as being eclectic experimenters); the Rolling Stones personified the latter. Most rock fans of the later 1960s could identify themselves as either Beatles fans or Rolling Stones fans. Rarely was anyone an equal fan of both. The difference was musical, but also involved image, lifestyle, and personality type. One could quickly assess a new acquaintance with one basic question: “Are you a Beatle or a Stone?”

At the risk of oversimplification, this basic split in British rock is a useful model for post-1964 rock. Many of the trends we observe in rock after 1964 seem to fall in line behind the Beatles or the Stones. The softer British groups discussed later in this chapter, the jazz rock groups of Chapter 11, the art rock of Chapter 12, and several of the other trends of the 1970s and 1980s owed much, directly or indirectly, to the Beatles. The harder British groups; many San Francisco groups; and later, the hard rock, punk, and heavy metal groups owed much (again, directly or indirectly) to the Rolling Stones. There are still other influences to be considered, of course, as well as individual innovations and stylistic variations, and the basic trends discussed in previous chapters: mainstream, rockabilly, soft rock, and folk.

Having discussed the initiators of the British invasion in some detail in Chapter 6, let us cross to the other side of the street and meet the Rolling Stones.

The Rolling Stones

The Years Before “Satisfaction”

The Beatles’ formative years were influenced by American rock and roll of the 1950s: Presley, Holly, and Little Richard. But the Rolling Stones’ earliest influences went back to the roots of rock and roll: black R&B. Young Michael Jagger (b. July 26, 1943) and several friends formed what can loosely be called a band (they had no equipment and never performed in public), just for the fun of playing and singing their favorite R&B songs as well as some 1950s rock tunes (especially those by Chuck Berry). To make their R&B roots clear, they called themselves Little Boy Blue and the Blue Boys. Jagger lived in Dartford, Kent, in a middle-class home and attended the respectable London School of Economics (LSE). Living several blocks away was Keith Richards (b. on December 18, 1943), a guitarist who sometimes sat in on rehearsals with the Blue Boys.

There was an active subculture of R&B aficionados in London. One of the most ardent was Alexis Korner, who led his own R&B-oriented band called Blues Incorporated and eventually opened his own club, the Ealing Club. On occasion, Korner used a drummer named Charlie Watts (b. June 2, 1941), who was a fairly accomplished jazz drummer but also enjoyed playing R&B. Also hanging around Korner and his club was a young blues enthusiast named Brian Jones (b. February 28, 1942), who had dropped out of school

at the age of 14 and begun playing sax in jazz and R&B bands. At Korner's Ealing Club, Brian tried to establish himself as a guitarist, calling himself "Elmo Lewis."

The Blue Boys often attended the sessions at the Ealing Club, hoping for a chance to perform. Jagger was given an occasional opportunity to sing with Korner's band but did not make a positive impression. Nevertheless, the Blue Boys and Elmo Lewis became acquainted and decided to join forces. Their debut was as an intermission band at the Marquee Club (another R&B and jazz club) on July 12, 1962. The group consisted of Jagger, Richards, Jones, pianist Ian Stewart, bass player Dick Taylor, and drummer Mike Avory. Taking their name from a song by blues singer Muddy Waters, they called themselves the Rolling Stones.

The jazz-oriented audience at the Marquee Club thought the Stones were too close to rock and roll. Brian Jones was sufficiently irritated by the criticism to write a letter to *Jazz News* that revealed a rather thoughtful assessment of the situation:

A pseudo-intellectual snobbery . . . unfortunately contaminates the jazz scene. . . . It must be apparent that Rock 'n' Roll has a far greater affinity for R&B than the latter has for Jazz, insofar that Rock is a direct corruption of Rhythm and Blues whereas Jazz is Negro music on a different plane, intellectually higher but emotionally less intense. (Norman 1984, 70)

For the balance of 1962, the Rolling Stones played wherever work could be found. When Taylor quit the group, he was replaced by Bill Wyman (b. William Perks, October 24, 1936), an "older" man of 26 years. By 1963, Charlie Watts had become their regular drummer, although he continued to prefer his first musical love, jazz. In 1963, a public relations agent named Andrew Loog Oldham approached the Rolling Stones about becoming their manager. Brian Jones signed a management contract with Oldham and a more established agent named Eric Easton. Jones also saw to it that he was given a larger salary as leader of the Rolling Stones.

Decca Records' Dick Rowe had become known as the man who turned down the Beatles in favor of Brian Poole and the Tremeloes. Needless to say, when George Harrison recommended to Rowe that he sign a new group called the Rolling Stones, he jumped at the chance. In May 1963, the Rolling Stones made their first recording. "Come On," a Chuck Berry song, was the A side; the flip side was an R&B song called "I Want to Be Loved." To promote their new record, the group appeared on the television show *Thank Your Lucky Stars*, uncharacteristically dressed in coordinated suits, Beatles style. "Come On" reached number 26 on the British charts. The Stones began the arduous grind of performing and touring in hopes of building a following. Everywhere they went, they were confronted with British Beatlemania; irked and resentful, they dropped the Beatlelike coordinated suits, electing to appear in street clothes. Their second release, "I Want to Be Your Man" (ironically, a Lennon-McCartney song), rose to number 3 in late 1963.

Through 1964, the Stones gradually formed their counterimage to the Beatles. Their stage act became more sexually suggestive; they allowed their hair to grow longer and to attain a scruffy, unkempt look. Oldham purposely built the image of "surliness, squalor, rebellion, and menace" (Norman 1984, 113). Brian continued to think of himself as the group's leader, taking his extra salary and claiming the better hotel rooms. Meanwhile, Oldham was insisting that Jagger and Richard (Keith had dropped the s from his name) become a songwriting team like Lennon and McCartney. Their early attempts were unsuccessful, except for one song called "Tell Me (You're Coming Back)"—a Beatlelike tune complete with some *whoa, yeahs*, included on their first LP, released in April 1964. The album's other cuts are either R&B-oriented mainstream rock (e.g., covers of songs by



The early Rolling Stones (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Bo Diddley and Chuck Berry) or actual R&B songs by older black artists like Jimmy Reed and Willie Dixon. The sexually oriented “I’m a King Bee” suggests the Jagger image that would be so successfully exploited over the next three decades.

The time had come for the Stones to join the British invasion of America. Their first U.S. and Canadian tour was launched in June 1964. “Not Fade Away,” backed with “I Wanna Be Your Man,” had barely made the U.S. charts. Their arrival at Kennedy Airport drew hundreds instead of the thousands the Beatles had drawn. Unlike the Beatles’ Ed Sullivan television appearance, the Stones were hosted by Les Crane on an obscure late-night talk show and on Dean Martin’s *Hollywood Palace*, where their host paid them little attention, except to make fun of them. In Omaha, 600 fans “jammed” an auditorium seating 15,000; in San Antonio, they performed in a 20,000-seat arena to a few hundred listeners. The Stones’ first attack on American Beatlemania was largely unsuccessful, except for their final concerts at a sold-out Carnegie Hall in New York City. While in the United States, the Stones stopped by the Chess studios in Chicago, where so much early R&B had been recorded. There they met Muddy Waters, Chuck Berry, and Willie Dixon and recorded “It’s All Over Now.”

The balance of 1964 was spent on a European tour and a second more successful American tour (this time, they appeared on the *Ed Sullivan Show*). It was on this second U.S. tour that Jagger saw James Brown perform. Fascinated and impressed, Jagger set out to imitate Brown’s dancing and incorporate his moves into the Rolling Stones’ act.

“Satisfaction”

In January 1965, the Stones’ second album, *12 X 5*, was released. Again, it leaned heavily on the R&B sound that was the foundation of the group’s sound. “Time Is on My Side” reached number 6 in the United States, and “The Last Time” reached number 1 in England and number 9 in the United States. By spring of 1965, the Rolling Stones had the top single, the top EP (**extended play**: a 33 1/3-rpm album, usually containing four songs on a 7-inch disc), and the top LP in Britain—and they were only months away from finally topping the U.S. charts.



The Rolling Stones (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

During their third U.S. tour (spring 1965), the Stones made a return appearance on the *Ed Sullivan Show* and appeared on the youth-music-oriented *Shindig*. While resting in a motel room, Keith began playing a guitar pattern that he thought sounded catchy. Mick improvised some words, and the result was “(I Can’t Get No) Satisfaction.” It zoomed to number 1 in the United States that summer. Controversy surrounded the song: Some argued that it referred to masturbation; others thought it was about sex in general. Jagger, following the old double entendre script we discussed previously, said that it referred to the general lack of any kind of satisfaction (sexual, artistic, spiritual, etc.) obtainable when a rock group was touring in a foreign country.

We first mentioned Allen Klein when he became the Beatles’ manager in 1969. Klein was known for his ability to find the soft spots in his clients’ recording contracts, thus getting them more money. His client list was impressive, including Steve Lawrence, Eydie Gorme, Bobby Darin, Sam Cooke, Buddy Knox, the Dave Clark Five, the Animals, Donovan, and Herman’s Hermits. However, Klein was also known for his cut-throat business sense; the Rolling Stones’ biographer, Philip Norman, said that (1984, 155) “a piranha might conceivably have the edge in politeness” in describing Klein. Klein offered to become Andrew Oldham’s so-called business manager, thus leaving Oldham free to pursue the purely creative aspects of the Stones’ career. Oldham accepted. His partner, Eric Easton, who objected, was edged out (amid lawsuits, of course).

The Stones rushed out a new album called *December’s Children (and Everybody’s)* just in time for Christmas 1965. It contained another number 1 hit, “Get Off My Cloud.” On tour, in Los Angeles, Brian Jones met and began dating Anita Pallenberg; he and Keith also tried a new drug: **LSD**. In fact, Brian’s alcohol and drug intake was becoming quite a problem. He had missed the “Satisfaction” recording session because he was wasted on booze and pills. He had hash and marijuana lying all over his house. His drug-induced paranoia led him to think that the other Stones were “out to get him.” When LSD was added to this picture, matters got worse. Once he refused to enter a recording studio because he was convinced that the studio was crawling with black beetles.

The year 1966 began with yet another successful single, “19th Nervous Breakdown,” an unsympathetic portrait of upper-class party girls. The flip side contained “As Tears Go By,” accompanied by a string ensemble and acoustic guitars. It sounded like a rather blatant imitation of McCartney’s “Yesterday.” The Stones’ fourth album, *Aftermath* (April 1966), was their first to feature only Jagger and Richards songs. The song “Paint It Black” hit number 1 in the United States. Meanwhile, the Stones’ touring schedule was fierce: Australia, New Zealand, and Europe in the first half of 1966, and Great Britain in the fall. Their live performances were met with increasingly wild behavior and outright violence on the part of their fans.

The year 1967 was a year of scandal and increased controversy about the Rolling Stones. The album *Between the Buttons* contained two hit singles: “Ruby Tuesday” (number 1 in the United States) and “Let’s Spend the Night Together.” The latter, especially, seemed to be another blatant step into overtly sexual lyrics. The press began digging out all sorts of drug and sex stories about the Stones. Although Mick Jagger denied LSD use, by the end of the year, he, too, was using the drug. During the year, Jagger, Richards, and Jones were arrested on drug charges.

The release of the Beatles’ *Sgt. Pepper* was a shock. Ever competitive with the only other British group to attain comparable popularity, the Stones promptly went into the studio to record what they hoped would be an appropriate response. Brian Jones slept through recording sessions; when he played, he played so badly that the others quietly disconnected his guitar from the amplifier. When it was finally released in December, *Their Satanic Majesties Request* was a gross disappointment. Even the Stones themselves realized that they had failed to “out-Beatle” the Beatles. They had tried earlier in 1967 with “We Love You,” an attempt to answer the Beatles’ “All You Need Is Love.” The Stones’ song was even accompanied by a promotional film, similar to the pioneering film produced for the Beatles’ monster hit.



The Rolling Stones' *Their Satanic Majesties Request* album cover
(Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

In spite of the competition between the two groups, they were actually rather good friends. In fact, when the Beatles traveled to Bangor, North Wales, in August 1967 to absorb the Maharishi's wisdom, they were accompanied by Mick Jagger and Marianne Faithfull, who had begun living together in late 1966.

As though they had learned their lesson, the Stones' next single, "Jumpin' Jack Flash," was a basic R&B-oriented mainstream rock and roll song, unclouded by efforts at Beatle-like sophistication or chic psychedelia. It was the kind of basic, raw rock and roll the Stones did best. It was followed by the more lyrically sophisticated "Sympathy for the Devil." Jagger and Richard were inspired to write it when Marianne Faithfull told them about Mikhail Bulgakov's *The Master and Margarita*, a book about a smooth-talking Satan who visits Russia to assess the effects of the revolution. It was included on their late 1968 album *Beggar's Banquet*. The album also contained the single "Street Fighting Man," which was suppressed in the United States because it was already a powder keg of street violence, from race riots to the havoc at the Democratic National Convention.

Meanwhile, Brian Jones had been arrested again on drug charges. The time had come for the Stones to be rid of him. They were preparing for another U.S. tour, and there was no chance of Brian's obtaining a U.S. work permit with two drug convictions. Furthermore, his mental and physical condition had deteriorated badly. He was no longer an asset and would have to be fired. Mick, Keith, and Charlie Watts let him go, softening the blow by hinting that the separation was temporary. Brian, in turn, pretended to be elated at the prospect of solo work or work with other British groups.

As a replacement, they hired Mick Taylor, who had played in John Mayall's Bluesbreakers. His public debut was planned for July 5 at a free concert to be given by the Stones at Hyde Park in London. On July 2, Brian Jones, drunk and high, drowned in a swimming pool; the official explanation of the death was "death by misadventure" (Norman 1984, 301–2). The Hyde Park concert went on as planned. Some 250,000 fans attended. Films of the occasion reveal that the Stones played very badly, possibly as a result of Brian's death, their lack of recent public performances, or the presence of a new guitarist.

Altamont

In mid-1969, the Rolling Stones were at the peak of their career, yet they were almost flat broke. With a new manager, Ronnie Schneider, they promptly released two albums, a greatest hits album called *Through the Past Darkly*, and *Let It Bleed*. Designed to highlight the group's R&B roots, the American tour to accompany the album was to feature artists such as B. B. King and Ike and Tina Turner as warm-up acts. However, as the tour progressed, it attracted more and more negative publicity. Ticket prices were unusually high, and the Stones' habit of showing up hours late compounded the problems. The tour was being filmed in hopes of creating a full-length documentary.

Jagger decided that what was needed to turn things around was a big finish. Woodstock, a free outdoor concert in upstate New York earlier that year, was being described as the biggest and most positive event in rock's tumultuous decade of the 1960s. Jagger decided that the big finish for their American tour would be a free outdoor concert on the West Coast—Woodstock West. After several other sites were considered and dropped, an offer to use the Altamont Raceway near Livermore, California (about 40 miles southeast of San Francisco), was accepted one day before the concert's scheduled date of December 4. For a security force, Jagger invited various California chapters of **Hell's Angels**, motorcycle gangs known for their violence and disruption of similar events, perhaps with the intention of avoiding such violence.

By Saturday morning, the crowd had already reached 100,000. The Angels appeared, armed with their lead-weighted pool cues and other more conventional weapons. By early



Violence at Altamont (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

afternoon, fights were breaking out all over the grounds. There were beatings, and many members of the crowd were already high on cheap drugs. As Santana began to play, violence erupted around the stage. The Angels punched, kicked, and bludgeoned everyone, from cameramen to stoned nudists. As Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young performed, the violence approached riot proportions.

Finally, the Rolling Stones took the stage. Mayhem abounded. As Jagger began “Sympathy for the Devil,” all hell broke loose. Twice, the Stones stopped the music and pleaded for people to “cool out.” Keith Richards threatened to enter the melee personally. Jagger pathetically pleaded for sanity. They finished “Sympathy for the Devil” and began the calmer “Under My Thumb.” Suddenly, a fight erupted between the Angels and an 18-year-old black youth named Meredith Hunter. The Angels grabbed him and plunged a knife into his neck and back and then stomped him in the face. Unaware that a murder was taking place right before his eyes, Jagger called for a doctor, saying, “Someone’s been hurt.” The concert continued, largely because the Stones were afraid of what might happen if they cut their set short. Finally, Jagger thanked everyone for a wonderful time and, astoundingly, expressed appreciation to the Angels for helping out. The Stones made a rapid getaway in their helicopter.

Hunter was not the only casualty at Altamont. Two other youths were killed when a car ran over them while they lay sleeping on the ground; another youth drowned in an irrigation ditch; yet another jumped from a traffic overpass and sustained multiple injuries. The documentary film of the tour was more than anyone could have expected. *Gimme Shelter*, with its climactic footage of a silver blade descending on Hunter’s back, is a sobering film. The rock community was disheartened by the violence at Altamont. Even *Rolling Stone* magazine, in a major article published some six weeks later, suggested that the real blame for Altamont lay with the Stones.

The Stones did not perform “Sympathy for the Devil” for some six years after Altamont. As Mick Jagger said onstage that night, “We always have something funny happen when we start that number.”

After Altamont

Altamont created considerable resentment toward the group for their apparently callous attitude toward the tragedies that had occurred there. But it also seemed to spur on even

more violence in subsequent concerts. Meanwhile, Mick, Keith, and Bill Wyman were in deep tax trouble. To escape payment, they moved to France. In April 1971, *Sticky Fingers* was released. It contained “Brown Sugar,” a song whose lyrics were widely condemned as being both sexist and racist; it became the Stones’ sixth number 1 hit in the United States.

The year 1972 found the Stones returning to America for another tour. Their album *Exile on Main Street* was number 1 in the United States. Mick hoped for smaller concert sites and tightly controlled circumstances, to avoid another Altamont. But the Stones were victims of their own creation. As biographer Philip Norman puts it (1984, 360), “It was too late for the Stones to beat the economics they themselves had largely invented. [They were doomed to] performing in vast spaces like the one they had barely escaped from with their lives, to audiences among whom it was now commonplace to snort cocaine and throw bottles at the band.”

For an opening act, the Stones used Stevie Wonder, again presumably to emphasize their black musical roots. Jagger’s act became even more sexually provocative. Violence and arrests abounded.

Recorded in Jamaica, *Goat’s Head Soup* was released in 1973. It contained another number 1 single, “Angie.” Around this time, Anita and Keith were arrested several times for possession of everything from marijuana to heroin to unlicensed weapons. Meanwhile, Mick and his new wife, Bianca, lived the high life, bouncing between the United States, France, and England—largely to avoid paying taxes.

In 1974, Mick Taylor, now a heroin addict, quit the Rolling Stones and was replaced by Ronnie Wood. The following albums were disappointing, and the Stones had no Top 10 hits in 1974 and no Top 40 hits in 1975. In August 1976, the Stones were to be a part of a rock festival in England. Some 200,000 fans showed up, and so did the Stones—four hours late. They were not well received; the end seemed near.

Keith and Anita finally separated, and Keith began to pull out of his heroin habit. *Some Girls* was released in 1978 and contained the Stones’ first number 1 hit (“Miss You”) in five years. The album seemed to announce the return of the typical Rolling Stones music. The albums *Tattoo You* (1981) and *Undercover* (1983) continued in the vein of *Some Girls*. In 1983, the Stones separated from Atlantic and signed with CBS. The first album on their new label was released in 1985, and ironically, it was a solo album by Mick Jagger. Keith bitterly resented Mick’s solo venture. Nevertheless, they subsequently released a group album called *Dirty Work*, which contained a hit called “Harlem Shuffle.”

The Stones toured the United States in 1981 and 1982. Throughout the next two decades, as Mick Jagger did solo work and Keith Richards (he added the s back to his name) played with other bands, rumors spread that the Rolling Stones were finally breaking up. To be sure, their real heyday had been the 1960s and 1970s. After all, by 2000, Jagger, Richards, and Watts were nearing 60 years old (Bill Wyman left the band in 1993). Nevertheless, the Rolling Stones were still performing to huge sellout audiences, and albums continued to sell very well. *Voodoo Lounge* (1994) reached number 2 and won a Grammy. *Bridges to Babylon* (1997) reached number 3 and was the band’s 19th platinum album. A live album, *Live Licks*, was released in 2004 and added a few guest artists plus bassist Daryl Jones (replacing Bill Wyman). The band’s A Bigger Bang Tour in 2005 (supporting the CD of the same name) was a huge success, as was the release of their first DVD set, *The Biggest Bang* (a seven-hour documentary) in summer 2007. It appears that the Stones will keep rolling for a long time to come.

The Bad Boys of Rock

An analysis of the Rolling Stones’ music will be reserved for the Musical Close-Up at the end of this chapter. Of equal or greater importance to the history of rock and roll is



The Rolling Stones in the 1970s (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

the band's image. There can be no doubt that Presley, Berry, Lewis, Little Richard, and even the lovable Beatles were less than cherubic choirboys, but many of the less socially acceptable escapades of these and other rock stars were kept deliberately quiet. Certainly none of them had consciously provoked public displeasure and condemnation (except possibly John Lennon, who sometimes enjoyed controversy for controversy's sake).

The Rolling Stones, however, were the first significant rock group to foster an overtly negative image. Although Oldham consciously hyped their bad-boy image, they projected the image quite naturally by just being themselves. This image was fostered in two ways: (1) through their personal lives (specifically, Brian Jones, Mick Jagger, and Keith Richard) and (2) through the outrageous antics of their fans.

Brian Jones had encountered trouble as early as 1958, when, at the age of 14, he was named as the responsible party by a female classmate who was pregnant. By the age of 20, he had fathered two sons by two different girlfriends; he provided no support for either son—both of whom he had named Julian. By 1965, Brian had taken up with Anita Pallenberg. Their relationship was characterized by drugs and alcohol. Anita soon moved on to Keith Richard.

In May 1967, Brian was arrested on a drug charge. He eventually received a sentence of three years' probation and a small fine, plus psychiatric treatment. Brian celebrated his victory with an orgy of drinks and pills that put him into a hospital two days later.

In May 1968, Brian was arrested for drugs again. Among his escapades around this time were a suicide attempt and a fight with Mick that ended when Brian threatened Jagger with a knife. Brian's death in 1969 was hardly a shock to those who knew him well.

Keith Richard had started using drugs while a student at Sidcup Art College. A raid on his home in 1967 uncovered drugs and paraphernalia. At a trial in June, Keith was found guilty and sentenced to one year in prison and a £500 fine, later overturned. By 1971, Keith and Anita were buying heroin in consignments that cost £4,000 and using it up in



The Rolling Stones (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

about a month. Keith experienced three more drug arrests in 1976 and 1977. Mick Jagger was also arrested in the 1967 raid and ultimately sentenced to a one-year conditional discharge. The judge lectured Mick on his role as a celebrity:

You are, whether you like it or not, the idol of a large number of the young in this country. Being in that position, you have very grave responsibilities. If you do come to be punished, it is only natural that those responsibilities should carry higher penalties. (Norman 1984, 236)

The other factor in the bad-boy image was the fans' behavior at Rolling Stones concerts. Granted, fans had rushed the stage at Elvis's performances, and Beatles fans were capable of all sorts of silliness, but Stones concerts brought fan misbehavior to a whole

new level. In 1966, Paris police used clubs and tear gas to subdue 3,000 rioters. In Marseilles, a chair was thrown at Jagger, opening a 2-inch cut above his eye. A concert in Lynn, Massachusetts, was stopped by police after only a few minutes. In Vancouver, there were 36 injuries, ranging from minor wounds to broken bones and concussions. In London, a concert was stopped after three minutes when Jagger was attacked by three girls, thus starting a tidal wave toward the stage.

By the late 1960s, the love-and-peace generation had been transformed into the drug-and-violence generation. The decade's political events—the assassination of the president, then Robert Kennedy,



Mick Jagger (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

then Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. as well as violence at the National Democratic Convention and rioting in cities—were changing the tenor of the times.

More than any other rock group, the Rolling Stones, with their bad-boy image, became the musical rallying point for antisocial violence. Stones' biographer Philip Norman refers to the *Let It Bleed* album of 1969 as a (1984, 321) "sound track to the new barbarism." He notes further that (1984, 321–22) "the Stones had made destruction cool and the Devil a rock star; they had sold a million copies of an exhortation to slaughter. They were the household gods of every spaced-out, subterranean screwball in America."

Between the well-publicized personal lifestyle of the individual Stones and the outrageous behavior of their fans, the group became the personification of the most rebellious, most antisocial, most hedonistic side of rock. More than any other rock group, they initiated a path within rock that would lead through the hard rock of the 1970s, the punk rock of the late 1970s and early 1980s, the heavy metal of the 1980s, and the gangsta rap of the 1990s.

Are You a Stone or a Beatle?

There can be little doubt that the Beatles and the Stones were the leaders of the British invasion. They both sprang from the same musical soil: a fascination with 1950s rock and roll and its R&B roots. But the Stones were more interested in basic R&B for its own sake. They were the most prominent among the bands referred to as the British blues bands. With only a few side excursions along the way, they continued to develop their R&B-influenced mainstream rock style. The Beatles, on the other hand, struck out into new territory, developing precedents for new variants of rock and roll and pushing back the boundaries of the style.

Yet the two groups were not on an exactly equal footing. The Beatles were considered *the* group, and the Stones their challengers. It is not surprising that although the Stones were, at times, resentful of the Beatles' success, they sometimes expressed the sincerest form of flattery: imitation.

However, the eventual success of the Rolling Stones did not lie with their Beatles simulations. Their reputation and successes were based on their contrasts with the Beatles. Perhaps it finally took the disappointment of *Their Satanic Majesties Request* to show them that they would need to let the Beatles be the Beatles and allow themselves to be the Rolling Stones.

Summary

The Rolling Stones hold an important position in the history of rock and roll. To be sure, they were not musical creators and innovators like the Beach Boys and the Beatles. Nor were they talented musicians in the traditional sense. When Andrew Oldham approached Eric Easton about comanaging the Stones, Easton's only reservation was that they needed to replace Mick Jagger with someone who could sing! So why are they important? Consider the following:

1. Since the end of the 1950s, rock had gradually moved away from its R&B roots. Indeed, mainstream rock had seemed on the verge of extinction in the early 1960s. There was soft rock, folk music, surf music, and dance songs, but very little real, raw, basic rock and roll. The British invasion brought with it the return of mainstream rock. As the Beatles generally veered toward a more sophisticated style, the Stones stimulated a rebirth of more basic R&B-derived mainstream rock.
2. This fundamental split within the ranks of the British invasion is central to the history of rock since the mid-1960s. The Rolling Stones and the Beatles eventually

veered off from each other, in close proximity at first, but with widening separation as their styles developed. This fork in rock's mainstream not only determined much about subsequent British rock, but also much about rock and roll in general.

3. Since its beginnings, rock had always had a seamier underside. But the Rolling Stones were the first to blatantly shove the darker side of rock into the open, capitalizing on, and reveling in, their reputations as bad boys. Drugs, sex, violence, the occult—the whole range of the Stones' antisocial behavior—was flaunted as part of their image, and their fans responded in kind, bringing new levels of violence and misbehavior to the rock scene. This trend persists today, as some rock groups fall all over themselves trying to out-shock and out-repulsify their predecessors.
4. Finally, the Stones deserve an important place in rock history simply because of their longevity. Since 1962, they have persevered through changing styles and all manners of personal adversity. No other group in history has held a comparable position of importance for so long a time.

All the Others

In the wake of the Beatles and the Rolling Stones came a tidal wave of English rock groups. They achieved considerable success from 1964 to 1966, before the first wave dissipated, leaving only the Beatles and Stones as consistent hit makers. In the late 1960s, there was a second wave that would have its primary effect in the early 1970s and beyond (see Chapter 13).

The first-wave British groups often were identified by their geographic origin, but for our purposes, it is more useful to think of them as they line up stylistically behind the Beatles or the Stones. The most numerous and commercially successful were the Beatlelike groups. Table 7-1 summarizes some of the more successful of these groups.

When discussing the Rolling Stones, we noted that they were a blues-based band. Their general sound, basic harmonic vocabulary, shouting vocal style, and use of the blues scale suggest their derivation from the older R&B style. A significant number of first-wave

British invasion groups followed the lead of the Stones as they moved away from the Beatles' image and musical style. Actually, the real initiator of the British blues trend was John Mayall, whose group, the Bluesbreakers, never enjoyed a Top 40 hit in the United States and remains relatively unknown. Mayall's Bluesbreakers, formed in 1962, really were a blues band (as opposed to a blues-based rock and roll band). Mayall used a number of young musicians who would go on to play in other significant British rock bands (e.g., Mick Taylor of the Rolling Stones, John McVie and Mick Fleetwood of Fleetwood Mac, and Eric Clapton of the Yardbirds and Cream). The Bluesbreakers played an authentic style of basic R&B, using the old 12-bar blues progression, the blues scale, and the shouting vocal style.

John Mayall (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)



TABLE 7-1

Group	Geographic Origin	Top Hits	Comments
Dave Clark Five	London	"Glad All Over" (number 6, 1964); "Bits and Pieces" (number 4, 1964); "Over and Over" (number 1, 1965)	Clark was drummer and manager; group used guitars, drums, and tenor sax; "Bits and Pieces" was slightly harder than most of their songs
Searchers	Liverpool	"Needles and Pins" (number 13, 1964); "Love Potion No. Nine" (number 3, 1965)	Sang many covers of American hits; a softer style; sophisticated and pleasant
Peter and Gordon	London	"A World Without Love" (number 1, 1964)	Peter Asher and Gordon Waller had hits with several McCartney songs; Asher became a producer for Apple Records, and later, an important U.S. producer (for James Taylor and Linda Ronstadt, among others)
Billy J. Kramer and the Dakotas	Manchester	"Little Children" (number 7, 1965); "Bad to Me" (number 9, 1964)	Followed Beatles pattern (managed by Epstein, Hamburg appearances, Parlophone recordings produced by Martin); recorded many Beatles songs; more popular in England than in the United States
Gerry and the Pacemakers	Liverpool	"Don't Let the Sun Catch You Crying" (number 4, 1964); "Ferry Across the Mersey" (number 6, 1965)	Popular in England, along with the Beatles, in 1963; followed the Epstein-Hamburg-Martin pattern; soft, sophisticated style
Freddie and the Dreamers	Manchester	"I'm Telling You Now" (number 1, 1965); "Do the Freddie" (number 18, 1965)	Successful in England prior to American hits; the "Freddie" capitalized on the U.S. dance craze; lovable and humorous
Wayne Fontana and the Mind-Benders	Manchester	"Game of Love" (number 1, 1965); "A Groovy Kind of Love" (number 2, 1966)	Slightly harder sound
Herman's Hermits	Manchester	"I'm into Something Good" (number 13, 1964); "Can't You Hear My Heartbeat" (number 2, 1965); "Mrs. Brown You've Got a Lovely Daughter" (number 1, 1965); "I'm Henry VIII, I Am" (number 1, 1965); "There's a Kind of Hush" (number 4, 1967)	The most popular of these groups; lead singer was Peter Noone; if the Beatles were lovable, Herman's Hermits were downright squeezable
Hollies	Lancashire (debut in Manchester)	"Bus Stop" (number 5, 1966); "Stop Stop Stop" (number 7, 1966)	Group's name derived from Buddy Holly; numerous personnel changes; they continued through the 1970s and into the 1980s

TABLE 7-2

Group	Geographic Origin	Top Hits	Comments
Animals	Newcastle upon Tyne	"House of the Rising Sun" (number 1, 1964); "We Gotta Get Out of This Place" (number 13 1965); "Don't Let Me Be Misunderstood" (number 15, 1965)	Lead singer: Eric Burdon; occasionally used a shouting vocal style
Manfred Mann	Johannesburg, South Africa	"Do Wah Diddy Diddy" (number 1, 1964); "Sha La La" (number 12, 1965); "Pretty Flamingo" (number 29, 1966); "Mighty Quinn (Quinn the Eskimo)" (number 10, 1968)	Mann (Michael Lubowitz) attended the Juilliard School of Music; originally a blues-based band (listen to "Why Should We Not," "Got My Mojo Working," and "Hoochie Coochie"); drifted toward folk-oriented style ("With God on Our Side") and soft rock ("Sha La La")
Kinks	London	"You Really Got Me" (number 7, 1964); "All Day and All of the Night" (number 7, 1965); "Tired of Waiting for You" (number 6, 1965)	Organized by Ray and David Davies; built an image not unlike the Rolling Stones, both onstage and offstage
Zombies	St. Albans	"She's Not There" (number 2, 1964); "Tell Her No" (number 6, 1965); "Time of the Season" (number 3, 1969)	Like Manfred Mann, their style varies; "She's Not There" and "I Want You Back" have the harder blues-based sound; "Tell Her No" moves closer to the Beatles
Troggs	Wiltshire	"Wild Thing" (number 1, 1966); "Love Is All Around" (number 7, 1968)	Began by trying to out-Stone the Stones, but their third U.S. hit ("Love Is All Around") was a softer ballad

The blues purity of Alexis Korner's Blues Incorporated and Mayall's Bluesbreakers was converted into a blues-based rock style by the Rolling Stones and their followers in the first wave of British invasion groups. Table 7-2 summarizes some of these bands.

If one is looking for a direct line from these blues-based bands to the hard rock and heavy metal bands of the 1970s and 1980s, one can look to the Yardbirds. The Yardbirds found their initial success with a song called "For Your Love" (number 6 in the United States in 1965). A quintet, the Yardbirds claimed a series of lead guitarists who would have a significant impact on later rock: Eric Clapton (earlier a member of the Bluesbreakers and later a founder of Cream), Jimmy Page (Led Zeppelin), and Jeff Beck.

Prior to their first hit, the Yardbirds played straight R&B but moved to the newer blues-based rock sound being popularized by the Stones and the Animals. Their third hit, "I'm a Man," recorded earlier by Muddy Waters and Bo Diddley, is closer to the traditional blues style. The next hit, "Shapes of Things," contains a guitar instrumental break that sounds way ahead of its time—closer to the sounds of the hard rock groups of the 1970s. Clapton, when he was with the Yardbirds in the early days, had initiated such improvisatory breaks, calling them *rave-ups*; they could go on for as long as 30 minutes and were the forerunners of the lengthy instrumental solos that typified the San Francisco bands in the later 1960s.

The Yardbirds' last U.S. Top 40 hit, "Happenings Ten Years' Time Ago," presages the hard rock and heavy metal sounds of the 1970s and 1980s. In 1968, the Yardbirds disbanded; Jimmy Page tried at first to organize a group known as the New Yardbirds but finally changed the name to Led Zeppelin.

In his article on the British invasion in *The Rolling Stone Illustrated History of Rock and Roll*, Leslie Bangs poses a reasonable question: "It might legitimately be asked whether more than a handful of British invasion bands would have made the States, and rock history, if they hadn't ridden in on the Beatles' coattails" (Miller 1980, 176). Probably true, but the fact remains that all the bands discussed here (and more) did cross the Atlantic in the Beatles' and Stones' wake. In doing so, they reinforced the directions indicated by the Beatles and the Stones and thus laid the groundwork for many more British rock groups throughout the 1970s.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP:

THE MUSICAL STYLE OF THE ROLLING STONES

The key words in considering the musical style of the Rolling Stones are *simplicity* and *repetition*. In this Musical Close-Up, we will briefly examine a dozen or so Stones songs and then take a more detailed look at two of their most famous songs: "Satisfaction" and "Sympathy for the Devil."

In their many hits of the mid- and late 1960s, the Stones preserved the general feeling of the blues, the shouting vocal style, and the blues scale. But they rarely adhered to the traditional 12-bar blues form and its prescribed chord pattern. An exception is "19th Nervous Breakdown." It begins with what sounds like a traditional 12-bar blues. However, it is extended by two extra measures of the IV chord and two extra measures of I (plus one connecting measure of I). This extended 16-bar blues chorus plus an eight-measure bridge forms the basis of the song.

Introduction (two measures)
 A (12-bar blues plus four-bar extension and one-bar connection)
 A (12-bar blues plus four-bar extension)
 B (eight-bar bridge)
 A (12-bar blues plus four-bar extension)
 Instrumental Break (three bars)
 B (eight-bar bridge)
 A (12-bar blues)
 Fade-out on repeated I-chord riff

"Heart of Stone" is actually based on a 12-bar form, but the chords do not follow the traditional blues progression:

	I		IV		* II		V	
	vi		vi		vi		vi	
	IV		V		vi		I	V

(Note that throughout these examples, an asterisk indicates a chromatic chord, i.e., one that is outside the prevailing key.) This chorus is repeated three times, followed by a fade-out that repeats the last two measures. Remember the key words: *simplicity* and *repetition*.

“Paint It Black” uses only two progressions, each four bars long, that alternate until near the end of the song:

i	i	V	V	(repeat 4 bars)
i VII	III iv	V	V	(repeat 4 bars)

For the fade-out, the first four bars (i and V) are repeated over and over.

“Under My Thumb” is a 16-bar cycle, as follows:

vi	V	IV	IV	(repeat 4 bars)
I	I	IV	*II	vi V I I

This 16-bar cycle is repeated until the fade-out, which consists of a repeating I chord.

“Get Off My Cloud” uses only two simple harmonic patterns that are used throughout the song:

I IV	V IV	(repeated 7 more times = 16 bars)
I iii	IV V	(repeat 2 more times) bVII V (= 8 bars)

As these analyses suggest, the Stones tended to favor diatonic chords (i.e., chords within the prevailing scale), set into traditional formal units of four, eight, 12, and 16 measures.

The chord progressions are simple and repetitive. Chromatic chords are used infrequently, the major chord on the second scale degree (II) being the most common. Also encountered are the bVII and bIII, both of which are not uncommon in blues-related styles inasmuch as they are simply major triads built on the “blue” seventh and “blue” third scale degrees. The four-bar, eight-bar, and 16-bar units are simply repeated to create the total song length.

Similarly, there is little rhythmic variance from the norms established by earlier rock styles. The Stones adhere to quadruple meter; the backbeat on the second and fourth beats is usually present. Most Stones songs divide each beat into duple divisions; a few slower songs (e.g., “Time Is on My Side” and “Heart of Stone”) use a triple division of the beat.

The normal timbre of the Stones is modified occasionally by the use of additional instruments: There is marimba on “Under My Thumb,” some fine saxophone work on “Brown Sugar,” and a variety of instruments on “Ruby Tuesday” (recorder, cello, and piano) and “You Can’t Always Get What You Want” (French horn, organ, piano, and chorus).

The vocal timbre of Mick Jagger is derived from the old shouting blues style (listen to “Get Off My Cloud” for a good illustration). Jagger lacks a rich vocal quality and is often slightly off pitch. He frequently adds spoken improvisations and interpolations like “oh, my, my, my,” “easy, baby,” and “yes, it is.” Listen to “Time Is on My Side” for a good example of Jagger’s spoken interpolations. There is occasional use of vocal falsetto.

The Stones’ melodies are not as sophisticated as those by Lennon and McCartney (or Harrison). Melody was not a particularly important parameter in R&B, nor is it with the

Thus the basic harmonic vocabulary is limited to four chords: I, IV, V, and \flat VII. Each chorus consists of six phrases: four repetitions of pattern A and two repetitions of pattern B. On the fourth occurrence of pattern A, the last measure is repeated, creating a five-bar phrase. The entire formal structure is shown in the Listening Guide.

Listening Guide: "Sympathy for the Devil" (the Rolling Stones)

0:00–0:20	Introduction (10 bars)	Sets a samba-like accompaniment; maracas added in 4th bar
0:21–0:56	Chorus I: first section (17 measures)	Lead vocal ("Please allow me . . .") and full accompaniment enter. Four repetitions of chord pattern A; three four-bar phrases and a five-bar phrase (last measure is extended).
0:57–1:13	Chorus I: second section (eight measures)	"Pleased to meet you." Two repetitions of chord pattern B; two four-bar phrases.
1:14–1:57	Chorus II (25 measures)	Same as Chorus I (with new lyrics in first section).
1:58–2:50	Chorus III (25 measures)	Same as Chorus I (with new lyrics in first section). Add background vocals ("ooh-ooh").
2:51–3:42	Chorus IV (25 measures)	Same as Chorus III. Guitar lead replaces vocal in first section; vocal returns for second section.
3:43–4:35	Chorus V (25 measures)	Same as Chorus III (new lyrics in first section).
4:36–6:24	Closing Section	Chord pattern A (four-bar phrases) repeated to fade-out (about 1 minute, 48 seconds). Lead vocal and guitar improvise interjections.

Judging by the musical parameters (harmony, rhythm, melody, form, texture, and timbre), "Sympathy for the Devil" is really rather simple, basic, and repetitive. Its appeal, via its insistent rhythm and repetitive melodic and formal units, is visceral, rather than to the musical mind. For example, compare the last analysis to the one of Blood, Sweat, and Tears' version of the same song (Musical Close-Up, Chapter 11). The greater sophistication of that arrangement is reflected in the more complex analysis required. However, it is the Stones' simplicity and repetitiveness that are at the heart of their appeal to so many listeners—fans who do not wish to be bothered by innovation and complexity. Certainly the Stones represent a marked contrast to the Beatles, with all the latter's creativity and musical experimentation. Starting from similar positions, these two British groups diverged onto different paths, each leading the way to very different styles of rock and roll.

Folk Music and Folk Rock

KEY TERMS

talking blues
folk rock

phasing
through-composed form

strophic form
verse-and-chorus form

Overview: The Youth Generation of the 1960s

The early phases of the folk music movement were characterized by a new sense of optimism under the Kennedy administration, but Kennedy's assassination on November 22, 1963, burst that optimism; by the end of the decade, disillusionment, violence, drugs, and generally antisocial behavior (as at Altamont) seemed to prevail. So what were the youth of the 1960s really like?

The 1950s were dominated by a Republican administration and tended to be years of political and social conservatism. The 1960s, in contrast, were liberal years dominated by Democratic administrations and were a time of social change. One of the first issues to be taken up by the youth was that of racial integration—the civil rights movement. Young people participated in a variety of demonstrations intended to focus attention on racial segregation and discrimination. The movement achieved an important milestone in 1965 with the passage of major civil rights legislation. Impressed with their ability to have a measurable impact and to effect change, the youth tackled another major problem: the Vietnam War. This one proved to be an even bigger challenge. As American involvement grew and more youth were drafted into participation in a war of which they disapproved, the protests grew more adamant, but the youth were less successful in this campaign than they had been in the civil rights campaign. The war escalated throughout the 1960s and did not end until the early 1970s; the frustration caused by the unending war may be a partial explanation for the city riots and other violence that erupted in the late 1960s.

There was also a growing concern about the environment: air and water were being polluted, oil and gas resources were dwindling, and forests were being used up at an alarming rate. These concerns led to a new consciousness of the value of natural products. Natural foods became an important trend. Along with this awareness came a deep suspicion

of technology, from the automobile to the newly evolving computer industry. Interestingly, the concern for the rights and well-being of others was counterbalanced by a growing concern for the self. Spiritual vehicles—such as Zen Buddhism, transcendental meditation, and various gurus—along with more mundane substances, such as marijuana and LSD, were touted as ways to achieve greater self-knowledge. The coexistence of the interest in drug use and a new emphasis on natural health foods was one of the odd contradictions of this period.

Ironically, the peace-conscious youth ultimately resorted to violence. Peaceful demonstrations often got out of hand when protesters were confronted by police who were dispatched to exercise crowd control. Political violence flared at universities across the nation, culminating in 1968 with riots at the Democratic National Convention and at Kent State University (1970). Undoubtedly, such violence was related to the frustration caused by the assassination of such youth heroes as Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King Jr.

In response, many youth just “dropped out.” They grew their hair longer and longer, dressed in ever more outlandish styles, and ran away to communes in San Francisco and other points west. Increasingly, cultural heroes were not good-looking, righteous knights on white horses, but antiheroes. Movie heroes were often bums, prostitutes, and general ne’er-do-wells, and popular rock and roll groups made up of physically unattractive, drug-abusing, womanizing bad boys (see Chapter 7) were admiringly accepted. Cultural icons like Timothy Leary—an ex-Harvard professor who became a proponent of LSD use—urged young people to “turn on, tune in, and drop out.” The original idealistic goals of transforming mainstream society were abandoned for a life of self-exploration (some would say self-indulgence).

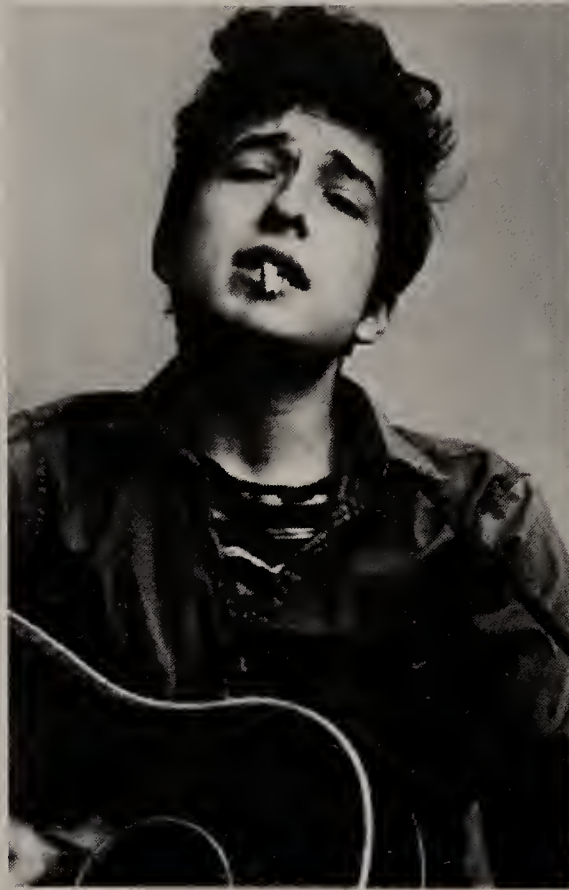
Finally, there was the sexual revolution. Women began to be seen as sexual equals, and youth began to abandon the sexual stereotypes of the past. Skirts were shortened to well above the knee. Cohabitation and communal living became more common. The slogan “Freedom Now” referred not only to the end of racial discrimination, but also to the loosening of sexual mores.

The 1960s were turbulent, troublesome, exciting, tragic, and revolutionary, and historians have yet to write the book on the era’s ultimate effects on American society. What we do know is that music was an essential part of it. The music of the 1960s reflected much of society’s concerns and feelings, but it also reinforced attitudes and beliefs and helped modify value systems, spreading the changes to an ever-widening segment of the population. Many were motivated by music to act, and music became the sound track for national tragedies, upheaval, and unrest. The Beatles, Bob Dylan, the Rolling Stones, soul music, and acid rock—for those who lived through those times, it is impossible to separate the music from the experience itself.

Bob Dylan

The youth movement of the early 1960s was closely identified with the folk music styles of the Kingston Trio and Peter, Paul, and Mary. These serious, socially conscious youth shunned rock and roll as commercial junk. The result seemed to be an irreparable split between the “folkies” and the “rockers.” But from within the folk movement came a singer who would bring together the two factions and have a revolutionary impact on the nature of rock and roll. His name was Bob Dylan.

Robert Zimmerman (Bob Dylan) was born in Duluth, Minnesota, on May 24, 1941. Six years later, he and his family moved to the small town of Hibbing. He attended the University of Minnesota for several months but dropped out late in 1960. He hung around the university town’s coffeehouses and small clubs, singing and playing guitar whenever he could. In this atmosphere, he absorbed a good dose of folk music, especially songs by



The young Bob Dylan (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

his hero Woody Guthrie. Hearing that Guthrie was dying of Huntington's disease in a New York City hospital, Dylan (his newly adopted professional name) decided to leave Minnesota, seek fame and fortune in the big city, and meet Guthrie.

After moving to New York City in 1961, Dylan visited with Guthrie on numerous occasions and, through Guthrie, was welcomed into the city's folk scene, centered to a large degree in the Greenwich Village area. Accompanied only by his own acoustic guitar and harmonica, Dylan auditioned for Columbia Records' John Hammond. Among the songs Dylan sang at that audition was "You're No Good," an old folk song by Jesse Fuller. If you can, listen to that song (on the *Bob Dylan* album) and honestly decide whether you would have recommended Mr. Dylan for a major label recording contract.

For whatever reasons, John Hammond foresaw a future for this scruffy, raw, and untrained singer. Dylan's first album (*Bob Dylan*) was released in March 1962. It contained traditional folk songs and blues plus two original songs by Dylan: "Song to Woody," a tribute to his hero, and "Talkin' New York," sung in the **talking blues** style developed by blues singer Huddie Ledbetter (Leadbelly) and popularized by Woody Guthrie. In this type of song, a story is half spoken, half sung (or intoned) to a simple chordal accompaniment. Dylan's "Talkin' New York" is autobiographical as it tells of his leaving the "Wild West" to settle in New York City. Even in this early song, there are hints of Dylan's primary talent: the ability to write lyrics with artistic skill. The song also reveals the dry wit and sarcasm that would be heard in many other Dylan songs.

The follow-up album, *The Freewheelin' Bob Dylan* (1963), contained all original material and caught the attention of the folk community. It contained one of Dylan's most important songs, "Blowin' in the Wind." This song was covered by Peter, Paul, and Mary, who made it a number 2 hit. It became an anthem of the youth movement and was a strong indication of the greatness that resided in this young artist and expressed the optimism and confidence inherent in the youth movement prior to the gunshots in Dallas. But the album also contained one of Dylan's most bitter songs, "Masters of War," as well as the typically wry love song, "Don't Think Twice, It's All Right," also covered successfully by Peter, Paul, and Mary. Finally, there is the sheer poetic beauty of "A Hard Rain's a-Gonna Fall," which refers to the whole spectrum of humanity's self-destructive tendencies.

With *The Times They Are a-Changin'* (1964), Dylan emerged as a major star of the folk movement. Still accompanied only by his acoustic guitar and harmonica, he sang songs about war (the sarcastic "With God on Our Side") and racial prejudice ("The Lonesome Death of Hattie Carroll"). The title song, "The Times They Are a-Changin'," is another youth anthem in the vein of "Blowin' in the Wind." Compared to the earlier anthem, however, this song has a rougher edge to it. Dylan warns the establishment that there is a new force in the nation and that they had better adapt to it, or they'll "sink like a stone" in the floods of change.

In the summer of 1963, Dylan appeared at the Newport Folk Festival, a major annual gathering for fans of folk music. Introduced by Joan Baez, he brought the concert to an emotional climax with “Blowin’ in the Wind.” Joining Baez; Peter, Paul, and Mary; Pete Seeger; Theodore Bikel; and other folk stars, he sang the civil rights anthem “We Shall Overcome.” He was firmly fixed as the messiah of the youth folk movement.

Dylan’s next album, *Another Side of Bob Dylan*, was a bit of a surprise. He seemed to pull back from the leading edge of protest and appeared to be more mellow and contemplative. Throughout his career, Dylan seemed to dislike being stereotyped; as soon as he felt his image was becoming too stabilized, he shifted to a new direction. If *Another Side* was a mild surprise to Dylan’s following, the single that hit the charts in May 1965 was even more unsettling. “Subterranean Homesick Blues” only rose to number 39 but started a ripple that would become a tidal wave. The problem was the music. It used a drum set and electric guitars; in fact, it sounded suspiciously like rock. Dylan’s next album, *Bringing It All Back Home*, used electric instruments on half of its songs. The folkies’ worst fears were confirmed in July at the 1965 Newport Folk Festival, when Dylan’s much-anticipated appearance created a near-riot as he strolled onto the stage with an electric guitar and proceeded to perform to the accompaniment of the Paul Butterfield Blues Band. Amid the booing and hissing, few realized that a new style had been born: **folk rock**. To Dylan’s horrified followers, it seemed that he had “sold out” and “gone commercial.”

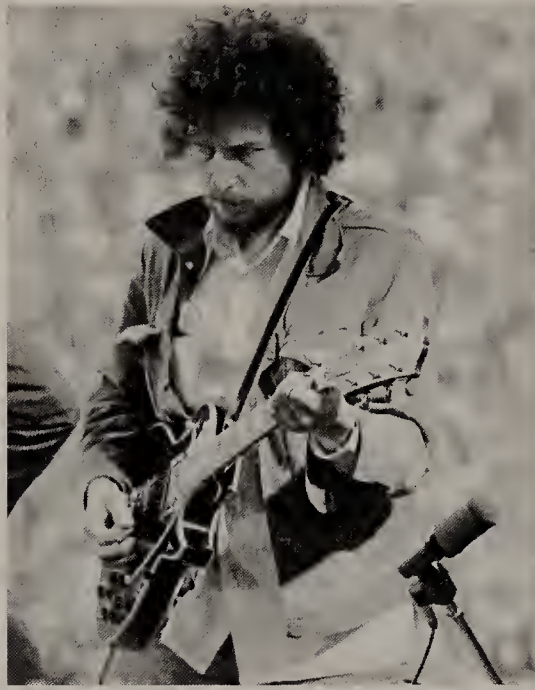
Actually, the Byrds had adapted Dylan’s “Mr. Tambourine Man” to their rock style and released it as a single back in March 1965, but it did not reach number 1 until June 26. So who invented folk rock, the Byrds or Dylan? Dylan’s “Subterranean Homesick Blues” hit the charts first, but the Byrds’ single hit number 1, whereas Dylan’s barely cracked the Top 40 (and then only for one week). Let us just say that the Byrds and Dylan hit on the folk rock style at about the same time and can share the credit (or blame).

As if to further confound his fans, Dylan released another electrified single called “Like a Rolling Stone” (August 1965). This 6-minute song (included on the *Highway 61 Revisited* album) became his first major hit, rising to the number 2 position and breaking the radio industry’s 2.5-minute norms. “Like a Rolling Stone” was rock music with folk-like (or at least Dylanlike) lyrics. Therein lay the basis of the new folk rock style. Dylan’s next album, *Blonde on Blonde* (1966), continued the new combination style. It was rock’s first double album, preceding *The Beatles* by about two and a half years.

Of particular note is “Rainy Day Women #12 and 35,” a number 2 hit (Dylan himself has never had a number 1 hit). The song seems to be an answer to his critics—those hardcore folkies who saw him as a traitor to the cause. He nonchalantly notes that people will criticize you (“stone you”) no matter what you do. He tosses off the criticism with a double entendre: “Everybody must get stoned.” This hook line can mean that everybody must endure criticism (getting stoned in the biblical sense) or that one is best advised to shrug off criticism and simply get stoned (i.e., with drugs or alcohol). Either way, Dylan seems generally unimpressed by his critics’ disapproval.

In the summer of 1966, Bob Dylan, at the height of his career, virtually disappeared for a year and a half, following a serious motorcycle accident in late July 1966. During much of 1967, Dylan recuperated in Woodstock, New York, a small town that had attracted artists for many decades. There, he and a Canadian group known as The Band rehearsed and recorded a series of new songs (eventually released as *The Basement Tapes* in 1975).

In January 1968, Dylan released his first album since the accident. *John Wesley Harding* reflected yet another change in direction. The voice was more mellow and pleasing; there was little of the old anger and protest against world problems, nor was there the heavy folk rock of *Highway 61 Revisited* or *Blonde on Blonde*. True to Dylan’s enigmatic style, though, the jacket notes are surrealistic and almost impossible to decipher logically. Dylan’s lyrics followed this same pattern. For example, “All Along the Watchtower” seems to be an interesting story, but we are never exactly sure what it is about.



Bob Dylan (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./ Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Dylan's last album of the 1960s was *Nashville Skyline* (1969). Once again, he surprised fans with an unexpected turn, this time toward a country sound. Among the musicians on the album were Charlie Daniels, Johnny Cash, and Chet Atkins. The presence of steel guitar made the country sound obvious. A number 7 hit, "Lay Lady Lay," came from this album.

Although our main concern here is the Dylan of the 1960s, we can briefly survey Dylan's later career. He became a model for the singer-songwriter trend of the 1970s. Perhaps his most interesting album of the 1970s was *Blood on the Tracks*, a number 1 album in 1975. The album includes "Tangled Up in Blue," an insightful song about the dis-

solution of a relationship; at the time of the album, Dylan was recovering from the end of his marriage. There are other fine songs on this album such as "Simple Twist of Fate" and the long western ballad "Lily, Rosemary, and the Jack of Hearts."

In a series of San Francisco concerts in 1979, Dylan again shocked his fans by turning to a Christian message. A subsequent album, *Slow Train Coming*, contained a collection of born-again songs. Two more Christian-oriented albums, *Saved* and *Shot of Love*, were released in the early 1980s. His 1983 album, *Infidels*, seemed to withdraw back into Dylanesque vagueness; some felt it was a move away from his born-again message, but others argued that it was simply a more subtle statement of that same philosophy. It seems that Dylan and his obtuse lyrics are always at the center of controversy.

After a period of lackluster work, Dylan returned in the late 1990s with a series of albums, beginning with 1997's *Time Out of Mind*, that announced a renewed vigor in his songwriting and performing. Turning to his original inspirations in folk, blues, and other roots musics, Dylan's work found new recognition among several generations of fans.

Before leaving Dylan, we must underscore his most significant contribution to the history of rock. His lyrics, with their symbolism, internal ironies, sarcasm, thought-provoking messages, dry wit, surrealism, and graceful flow, were the most influential and sophisticated since the beginning of rock and roll. Through his influence on the Beatles, especially on John Lennon, the Dylanesque lyric found its way into the very heart of 1960s rock, and rock lyrics have not been the same since.

The Byrds

The story of the Byrds is one of remarkable and unfulfilled potential. With creativity and musicianship that rivaled that of the Beach Boys, Dylan, and maybe even the Beatles, the Byrds were nonetheless undone by constant personnel changes, which undermined their popularity and changed the chemistry between the members. Even so, they managed to have a significant, though brief, impact on the history of rock.

The central figure in the Byrds was Jim McGuinn. Born in Chicago, McGuinn had a background in folk music. In 1964, McGuinn met Gene Clark of Missouri and David Crosby, from Los Angeles, both folk singers. Chris Hillman, also from Los Angeles, played

bluegrass-style mandolin in his own group, the Hillmen. Crosby introduced the group to a drummer from New York named Mike Clarke. By 1964, the quintet was formed.

Their first Columbia album contained four songs by Bob Dylan, including “Mr. Tambourine Man,” which became a hit, and which, as we mentioned, helped establish the new folk rock style. Using some original material and two more Dylan songs, the Byrds recorded their second album, *Turn, Turn, Turn*. Folk singer Pete Seeger had created the title song by adapting the words from the book of Ecclesiastes in the Bible and setting them to music. “Turn, Turn, Turn” reached number 1 by December 1965.

In early 1966, Gene Clark left the group. Deciding to remain a quartet, the Byrds prepared their third album, *Fifth Dimension*. This album produced their third (and most controversial) hit, “Eight Miles High” (number 14). Musically, the song is quite adventure-some for mid-1966, paralleling some of the things the Beatles were doing about this time. There are unusual chord progressions and use of the Dorian mode (like a minor scale but with its sixth note raised one half step). It was widely believed that the lyrics referred to the effects of LSD, but the Byrds claimed the song was about flying in an airplane (remember the pre-1967 double entendre syndrome).

The Byrds’ became even more musically sophisticated in their next album, *Younger Than Yesterday*. However, before 1967 was over, Crosby left (later to form Crosby, Stills, and Nash). The remaining trio (McGuinn, Hillman, and Clarke), plus various outside musicians, created *The Notorious Byrd Brothers*, possibly the most interesting album of the Byrds’ career. Certainly it is an eclectic album. There is “Artificial Energy,” with its amphetamine references and electronically modified brass sounds; there are the folk rock sounds of “Goin’ Back,” with its reminiscences of childhood, and “Draft Morning,” an effective protest song. The latter contains some particularly effective lyrics (“no hurry to learn to kill and take the will from unknown faces”). Note also the mixed-in sound effects (war sounds) and a militarylike trumpet call. The trumpet call is an effective touch per se, but its effect is enhanced because its notes are dissonant against the prevailing harmonies, nicely reinforcing the message that the military concept is in conflict with the Byrds’ anti-draft sentiments. There are several songs on *The Notorious Byrd Brothers* that have a country sound (e.g., “Change Is Now,” “Wasn’t Born to Follow,” and “Old John Robertson”). The result began to be called country rock, a style that the Byrds would develop further on their next album.

The Notorious Byrd Brothers also contains experiments in meter, such as “Get to You,” which alternates sections with five beats per measure and sections with six beats per measure. Similarly, “Tribal Gathering” moves from a very jazzlike quintuple meter to a more normal quadruple meter. Strings are used in various spots throughout the album, often subjected to electronic modification such as filtering (e.g., “Natural Harmony”) and phase shifting (e.g., “Old John Robertson”; note also the polyphonic texture in this section). Phase shifting, or **phasing**, is an electronic manipulation that modifies the timbre of the original sound.

After more personnel changes, including the addition of country rock musician Gram Parsons, the Byrds released *Sweetheart of the Rodeo*. Here the country rock style dominated and became a prototype for later country-oriented rock groups. The personnel problem hit dead bottom in mid-1968, when Parsons and Hillman left to form the Flying Burrito Brothers. This left McGuinn as the only remaining member of the original Byrds. He continued to release Byrds albums using a variety of players, but these simply did not measure up to the 1965 to 1968 Byrds. In 1973, McGuinn finally disbanded the Byrds. Ironically, the five original members got together one last time that same year to record a reunion album.

There is little doubt that the 1965 to 1968 Byrds were one of rock’s most talented and creative bands. They were cofounders of folk rock (with Dylan); they led the way to the



The Byrds (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

country rock sound that became popular in the 1970s; “Eight Miles High” has the questionable distinction of being one of the first drug songs in rock; and they were certainly one of the most innovative groups of their time in the use of electronic sound manipulation. One wonders what their position in rock history would have been had the original five members stayed together for 8–10 years.

The Mamas and the Papas

Following the example set by the Byrds and Dylan, scads of folk rock groups suddenly appeared. For the most part, these groups were formed by the folkies of the early 1960s; now they added drums and converted to electric guitars and called themselves folk rockers. One of the most successful was the Mamas and the Papas. Whereas the Byrds had blended the folk style with a harder rock sound, the Mamas and the Papas tended toward a softer rock style. In the two-year period from early 1966 through late 1967, they placed nine singles in the Top 40, including six Top 10 hits.

John Phillips was from South Carolina; he had followed a fairly typical folk music path, having performed in Greenwich Village with several groups. Cass Elliot (her real name was Ellen Cohen) was from Baltimore, Maryland. In 1965, Elliot, Phillips, Phillips’s wife, Michelle, and a musician named Denny Doherty moved to Los Angeles and obtained a contract with Dunhill Records. Calling themselves the Mamas and the Papas, they adopted the popular new folk rock sound, releasing their first album, *If You Can Believe Your Eyes and Ears*, in early 1966.

The album zoomed to number 1, and two singles, “California Dreamin’” and “Monday, Monday,” hit the Top 10 (the latter song became their first and only number 1 song). Some of their success was probably due to the general rage for the new folk rock style, but beyond that, the Mamas and the Papas had an appealing sound. John Phillips was a talented writer and arranger; the four-part vocal harmonies were absolutely solid and musical. The technical production and instrumental backup were first rate. A second album, *The Mamas*



The Mamas and the Papas

(Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

and the Papas (issued in late 1966), was another success, yielding two Top 10 singles: “I Saw Her Again” and “Words of Love.”

The successes continued in 1967 with two more albums and three singles: “Dedicated to the One I Love” (a cover of a 1961 hit by the Shirelles), “Creeque Alley” (a clever autobiography of the

group), and “Twelve-Thirty (Young Girls Are Coming to the Canyon).” Also in 1967, John Phillips and Lou Adler organized the Monterey International Pop Festival, an early example of the type of rock festival that would become so popular in the later 1960s (and beyond). Among the future stars presented there were Jimi Hendrix, Janis Joplin, and the Who.

The year 1968 was the beginning of the end for the Mamas and the Papas. “Glad to Be Happy” went only as high as number 26 and became the group’s last Top 40 hit. By mid-1968, the Mamas and the Papas had disbanded.

Cass Elliot went on to moderate success as a solo act and television performer. She died in 1974. John and Michelle Phillips divorced in 1970. John briefly tried a solo career but succumbed to an increasingly serious drug habit. Recovered from his addiction, he and his daughter from a previous marriage, Mackenzie Phillips, toured the country in the mid-1980s, promoting the antidrug message. John died in 2001. Michelle Phillips turned to a moderately successful acting career.

The strength of the band’s music was their solid and effective vocal harmonies. With echo and some overdubbing, the quartet could sound like a full chorus. The folk aspect of their folk rock blend was derived more from their image than from anything else. They rarely engaged in protest songs, but they dressed and looked like soft-core folkniks (hippies). The rock side of their folk rock blend was a softer style of rock. Lacking the harshness of Dylan or the hard beat and electric guitar work of McGuinn and the Byrds, the Mamas and the Papas created a pleasing commercial version of folk rock.

Simon and Garfunkel

In 1957, two 15-year-old school chums, modeling themselves after the Everly Brothers, recorded a song called “Hey Schoolgirl.” The song peaked at number 49 and secured them an appearance on *American Bandstand*. Using the pseudonyms Tom and Jerry, they released several more singles (that flopped) before giving up on show business and returning to school. The boys’ real names were Paul Simon and Art Garfunkel, and they had met at age 11 in school in Forest Hills, New York. After college, they pursued separate careers in the music business, then joined forces again and auditioned for Columbia Records as a folk singing duo. In late 1964 they released their first album, *Wednesday Morning 3 A.M.* The album contained some Dylan songs, a few traditional folk songs, and some original Paul



Simon and Garfunkel (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Simon songs, including an acoustic version of “The Sounds of Silence.” The album went nowhere, and so the discouraged duo went their separate ways again.

Meanwhile, the folk rock revolution of mid-1965 had happened. Tom Wilson, the Columbia producer of *Wednesday Morning*, went back to “The Sounds of Silence” tape and remixed it with electric bass, electric guitars, and drums. The result: folk rock. In this new version, “The Sounds of Silence” skyrocketed to number 1 on New Year’s Day, 1966. There is no clearer demonstration of the shift from folk to folk rock than to compare the two versions of the song. The voice tracks are the same; the difference lies in the

rhythm tracks: the bass line and the electric guitar accompaniment.

Quickly, a new folk rock album was recorded and released. *Sounds of Silence* included the title hit plus another Top 10 hit, “I Am a Rock.” The latter song has a typical folk rock sound; the lyrics are about a loner who refuses to risk contact with others. It was a logical follow-up to “The Sounds of Silence,” also a song about loneliness. Simon’s ability to write lyrics appropriate to the Dylan-inspired folk rock movement is evident in lines like “people talking without speaking; people hearing without listening; people writing songs that voices never share.”

In late 1966, *Parsley, Sage, Rosemary and Thyme* was released and contained yet another Top 10 hit, “Homeward Bound.” A series of singles in 1966 and 1967 seemed to indicate a slight erosion in Simon and Garfunkel’s popularity, but the tremendously successful film *The Graduate*, with a sound track featuring both their earlier hits and new songs, propelled the duo back into the limelight. The sound track album held the number 1 position for nine weeks. It contained the folklike “Scarborough Fair/Canticle,” “The Sounds of Silence,” and “Mrs. Robinson.” This last song, with its sarcastic portrait of the movie’s Mrs. Robinson, became the duo’s first number 1 single since “The Sounds of Silence.”

The 1968 album *Bookends* shows the effects of *Sgt. Pepper*. Like *Sgt. Pepper*, *Bookends* includes the complete lyrics on the outside back cover and is, in part, a concept album. It opens with an instrumental song that is heard again at the end of the first side, with vocals added. The concept deals with time and the various stages in human lives. Thus the opening song refers to a child who is threatening to commit suicide by jumping from a building’s ledge. “America” seems to be about a young couple who set out together to see America. “Overs” seems to be about a married couple for whom life together has become dull and routine.

A particularly remarkable track is “Voices of Old People.” Garfunkel had visited several homes for the elderly and recorded segments of conversation. These are combined into a montage that provides effective insights into the problems and loneliness of old age. This montage is followed by “Old Friends,” a song that reflects on the desperately solitary existence of many senior citizens. Lines like “old friends sat on their park bench like bookends” and “can you imagine us years from today, sharing a park bench quietly? How terribly strange to be 70” were sobering reminders to the “don’t trust anyone over 30” generation.

Side 1 ends with the “Bookends Theme,” a wistful commentary on the inevitable passage of time. The symbolism of bookends is effectively carried out by the theme, which is at both “ends” of side 1, by the image of the old people on opposite ends of the park bench and by the allusion to our life cycle, with its remarkable similarities between infancy and old age.

The album’s second side includes “Mrs. Robinson” and a strong folk rock tune, “A Hazy Shade of Winter.” Overall, the album shows the new freedom creative artists were experiencing in the post-*Sgt. Pepper* days. For example, neither “Voices of Old People” nor “Old Friends” shows any relation to rock. (The latter is accompanied by a large orchestra that builds to a climax near the end—reminiscent in concept to “A Day in the Life” from *Sgt. Pepper*.) The old rules were gone; the more creative artists were free to ignore the old formulas and express themselves with whatever means seemed most effective.

Simon and Garfunkel lost none of their appeal as the decade of the 1970s dawned. *Bridge over Troubled Water* (1970) yielded three Top 10 singles. Rather surprisingly, the duo then decided to go their separate ways. Paul Simon, who had done most of the songwriting for the team, had continued success through the 1970s, with albums and singles consistently hitting the Top 10, but then his career faded. In the mid-1980s, he made a comeback to the pop charts by recording an album of songs with musicians primarily from South Africa (*Graceland*).

Art Garfunkel’s solo career has been less illustrious. Several early albums and one single fared well, but subsequent albums were less successful. The duo reunited for a highly successful concert in Central Park in September 1981. The resulting album reached number 6 in 1982 and contained a moderate hit, “Wake Up Little Susie,” originally recorded by Tom and Jerry’s role models, the Everly Brothers.

Simon and Garfunkel’s success stemmed largely from Paul Simon’s undeniable skills at lyric writing and tune writing. Just for fun, listen to “A Simple Desultory Philippic” from *Parsley, Sage, Rosemary and Thyme*. It pokes gentle fun at Dylan, folk rock, and even Simon and Garfunkel themselves. If you can identify every name and reference contained in this song, you score an A+ for your knowledge of the 1960s. One tip: The pathetic “I’ve lost my harmonica, Albert” at the end of the song refers to Dylan’s manager, Albert Grossman.

Other Folk Rockers

To accommodate the wide variety of post-1965 folk rockers, the definition of the term *folk rock* must be very generalized indeed. After all, the Mamas and the Papas, Dylan, and Simon and Garfunkel do not sound alike. Each artist who melded the lyrical profundities and tunefulness of folk music with the electrification, bass line, and hard beat of rock found a unique recipe to achieve the combination. As always, the purists on both sides were righteously indignant. The pure folkies felt that their music had been corrupted by the crass commercialization and mindless noise of rock; the pure rockers resented the invasion of their basic good-time music by the self-conscious lyrics of the folkies. In between, a vast new audience relished the opportunity to have more thought-provoking and intelligent lyrics served up to them in a musical context they enjoyed.

Joan Baez and Judy Collins

Joan Baez held out against folk rock as long as possible. She appeared at the 1959 Newport Folk Festival and soon became a well-known figure in the early 1960s folk scene. Her first album, *Joan Baez* (1960), set a pattern that would hold for over a decade. The album contained traditional American and English folk songs sung in a clear voice with perfect pitch and excellent enunciation. It sold well but contained no hit singles. Such was to be her fate

throughout the 1960s. When Dylan turned to folk rock in mid-1965, Baez, a close friend of Dylan's, refused to go along. Instead, she stayed with her pure acoustic, socially oriented style. Her social involvement was not only musical; she often marched and sang at civil rights demonstrations and student protest meetings.

It was not until the 1970s that Baez finally relented to the pressures of musical style by softening her approach and adding the electrification of folk rock. She found considerable success writing her own songs. *Diamonds and Rust* (1975) was a huge album commercially and musically. The title song—only her second single hit—is a rather bitter complaint about a certain “legend” who is “so good with words and with making things vague.” She takes another shot at Dylan in her version of his “Simple Twist of Fate,” in which she does a perfect imitation of his unique, off-pitch vocal style.

The central position of Joan Baez in the 1960s folk music scene inspired other female vocalists to follow. Judy Collins's first two albums contained standard folk material, but beginning with her third album, she joined the Baez-Dylan trend of contemporary protest songs. Like Baez, her albums sold well enough, but there were few hit singles. Her most enduring hit was Stephen Sondheim's “Send in the Clowns,” which was number 36 in 1975 and returned to the charts in 1977 (number 19). Yet another female singer to follow the Baez-Collins lead was Joni Mitchell. Because Mitchell's primary impact was in the 1970s, we will discuss her career in more detail in Chapter 14.

Sonny and Cher

Sonny and Cher began their career associated with the folk rock trend of the late 1960s. Indeed, Cher's first hit, “All I Really Want to Do” (number 15 in 1965), was a Dylan song. Salvatore “Sonny” Bono and Cherilyn Sarkisian were married in 1963 and began recording as Caesar and Cleo, and finally as Sonny and Cher. They produced a number of hits as a duo from 1965 through 1972 but also released solo recordings. Cher, whose solo success was considerably greater, eventually charted some 12 Top 40 hits, including three number 1 songs. In the early 1970s, the duo became major television personalities thanks to their own CBS series. In spite (or because) of Cher's risqué clothing styles, the pair found a wider pop audience and gradually lost their folk rock identification. Sonny Bono died in 1998. He had served as a member of the U.S. House of Representatives from California.

Buffalo Springfield

Stylistic labels such as “folk rock” are often inadequate indicators of a group's real style. Such is the case with the Buffalo Springfield, a quintet consisting of Stephen Stills, Neil Young, Richard Furay, Dewey Martin, and Bruce Palmer. They first gained national attention in early 1967 with a song that was in the folk protest vein, “For What It's Worth” (number 7 in 1967), and were immediately typed as another folk rock group. In fact, the Buffalo Springfield covered a wide stylistic range. Most of the members had experience in folk-oriented groups. Their first album, *Buffalo Springfield* (early 1967), revealed the versatility and solid musicianship of the quintet. Using material written by Stills and Young, the album contained strong rock songs like “Sit Down, I Think I Love You” and a prototype of the country rock style developed later by the Byrds, Dylan, and others, “Go and Say Goodbye.”

Released in late 1967, *Buffalo Springfield Again* revealed a somewhat harder sound in songs such as the psychedelic “Mr. Soul” (note the “Satisfaction”-like guitar riff), “Bluebird” (complete with shouting vocal style and hard guitar solos), and “Hung Upside Down” (listen to the guitar solo in the middle). There is still a touch of country in Richie Furay's “A Child's Claim to Fame,” and there is a more elaborate experimental song called “Broken Arrow,” which alternates between triple and quadruple meters, adds external

sound effects, and ends with a very convincing jazz piano solo. The folk rock style was virtually gone by the time of the second album.

The third and last album (excluding compilations) was *Last Time Around* (1968). The country sound continued with “Kind Woman”; a light Latin influence can be felt on “Pretty Girl Why” and “Uno Mundo”; and straight-ahead rock is heard in “Special Care” and “Questions.”

In 1968, Messina and Furay left to form a country rock band named Poco. Stills joined with David Crosby (the Byrds) and Graham Nash (the Hollies) to form Crosby, Stills, and Nash. They were soon joined by Neil Young, thus reuniting two members of the defunct Buffalo Springfield. Several ex-Springfield members eventually found their way into later groups such as the Southern-Hillman-Furay Band and Loggins and Messina.

Donovan

Another artist whose original identification was with the folk style but who moved on to other things is Donovan Leitch. Born in Glasgow, Scotland, Donovan seemed like a British Bob Dylan. Indeed, he wore a denim cap, played harmonica and acoustic guitar, and sang folklike songs. His first single, “Catch the Wind,” managed to achieve the number 23 position on the U.S. charts. However, his early 1966 tour to America was not successful.

Returning to England, Donovan underwent a dramatic change of image and sound. His next single, “Sunshine Superman,” was a smash hit, rising to the number 1 position. Following quickly with the number 2 hit “Mellow Yellow,” Donovan returned to the United States as a flower-bedecked hippie. The new psychedelic image sold well; his *Sunshine Superman* album (number 11) contained the hard-rocking “Season of the Witch.” After a series of moderate hits, Donovan made the Top 5 again in 1968 with “Hurdy Gurdy Man,” a good example of late-1960s psychedelia, with its electronically modified vocal track and its heavily distorted guitar solo.

The End of the Folk Rock Era

By 1968, the folk rock explosion had fizzled. Dylan was recuperating from his motorcycle accident; the Byrds were turning toward country rock; the Mamas and the Papas were disbanding; Buffalo Springfield had moved away from folk rock before disbanding; Donovan had gone psychedelic; and Sonny and Cher had turned more toward commercial pop rock. Only the sounds of Simon and Garfunkel lingered on, but in its two- to three-year heyday, folk rock had brought together two important and seemingly antithetical styles of music. Some excellent new music had been produced, and from these beginnings would grow some important trends in the subsequent decade, namely, the singer-songwriter and country rock trends (see Chapter 14).

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP:

THE SONG STYLE OF BOB DYLAN

Thus far, we have mentioned three basic types of organizational structure for songs: the 12-bar blues, the AABA form, and a unique approach to song form in which a new and different form is created for each song. This last is sometimes called the **through-composed form**; that is, for each new section of text, new music may be composed. This form has had considerable appeal for classical composers because it means that the music can respond to variations in mood, images, and situations in the lyrics as one proceeds through the total length of the text. This is a very different approach from one that sets each and every verse to the same music, regardless of the verbal contents of each verse. That approach is called the **strophic form** and is very typical of folk music—which brings us to Bob Dylan.

If you sing hymns in church, you are familiar with strophic song form. Recall that the music is printed just one time through, but below the music are the words to verses 1, 2, 3, 4, and so on. So it is with most early folk songs. Bob Dylan grew up admiring this folk song tradition, and his basic approach to song form reflects this influence. Many old folk ballads consist of four lines of text, each one of which is set to a four-measure phrase, thus creating a 16-measure strophe. This 16-measure strophe is simply repeated for each new stanza of text.

As we have seen, a large percentage of early rock followed either the 12-bar blues form (in its own way a very specific kind of strophic form) or the AABA pattern. With the Beatles, a new freedom emerged regarding form, and often, each song would have its own unique form (e.g., “A Day in the Life”), somewhat like the concept of the through-composed song. With Dylan and the other folk-oriented singers, the strophic form typically prevailed. Sometimes Dylan adhered rather closely to the old folk pattern; other times, he used the strophic form as a general organizing structure but took considerable liberties within each strophe. In this Musical Close-Up, we shall examine a few representative examples of Dylan’s songs to see how they illustrate the strophic principle. We can begin by finding a sort of norm and then going from there.

Let us start with “Blowin’ in the Wind.” Each of the three stanzas of this song contains four lines. The first stanza can serve as a model:

How many roads must a man walk down before you call him a man?
 Yes, ’n’ how many seas must a white dove sail before she sleeps in the sand?
 Yes, ’n’ how many times must the cannon balls fly before they’re forever banned?
 The answer, my friend, is blowin’ in the wind, the answer is blowin’ in the wind. (Dylan 1973, 33)

Each of these lines is given a four-measure melody, resulting in a 16-measure strophe. The first three melodic phrases are very similar, and the fourth is contrasting. Thus the musical form inside each strophe is AAAB. The same music is then used for the second and third strophes. This is a good example of the strophic song form.

“Don’t Think Twice, It’s All Right” is quite similar, except that the first two musical phrases are parallel, with the third and fourth phrases having new melodies. Thus the internal pattern would be AABC. As you are listening to this song, note that each four-measure phrase breaks into two half phrases, or subphrases (e.g., “It ain’t no use to sit and wonder why, babe/It don’t matter, anyhow”). This is fairly common even in the four-measure phrases of classical music. “Don’t Think Twice” has four strophes, each 16 measures long.

“My Back Pages” follows a similar pattern. Its six stanzas are all set to the same music; each strophe is 16 measures long, consisting of four four-measure phrases. The internal melodic scheme is like that of “Blowin’ in the Wind” (AAAB).

Using these three songs as our basis, we can find some interesting variations. For example, “Positively 4th Street” consists of 12 short stanzas, each of which is set to the same two four-measure phrases (AB). This is unusually short for Dylan, who generally prefers the 16-measure length. What is more, each eight-measure strophe ends up in the air, rather than on a solid I chord. This is what theorists call a *half cadence* (ending on the V chord); it propels us forward from one stanza into the next, rather than solidly closing off each one.

“The Times They Are a-Changin’” is another strophic song, this time with five stanzas, but these do not follow the traditional 4 + 4 + 4 + 4 form. Instead, there are basically six lines per stanza; for example:

Come senators, congressmen/Please heed the call
 Don’t stand in the doorway/Don’t block up the hall
 For he that gets hurt/Will be he who has stalled
 There’s a battle outside/And it is ragin’

It'll soon shake your windows/And rattle your walls
For the times they are a'changin'. (Dylan 1973, 85)

The first and third lines are set to a five-measure melody; the other lines are set to four-measure melodies. Thus we have a 26-measure strophe. Granted, it is irregular, but Dylan makes it work.

Rather unusually, Dylan sets each of the five stanzas of "Rainy Day Women #12 and 35" to the traditional 12-bar blues form. Moreover, "Subterranean Homesick Blues" is based loosely on the 16-bar blues (like 12-bar blues, except there are eight measures of I instead of four at the beginning of each verse; see Table 8-1).

TABLE 8-1

	16-Bar Blues	Subterranean Homesick Blues
Phrase 1	4 bars of I	4 bars of I
Phrase 2	4 bars of I	4 bars of I
Phrase 3	2 bars of IV; 2 bars of I	2 bars of IV; 4 bars of I
Phrase 4	2 bars of V; 2 bars of I	2 bars of V; 2 bars of I

As you can see, there is a two-measure extension of the third phrase (two extra bars of the I chord). Thus we have an 18-bar form. Furthermore, strophes 3 and 4 are varied slightly.

Finally, we should look at two songs that use the **verse-and-chorus form**. In this approach, there is a chorus, the words and music of which are always the same; this chorus alternates with a series of verses, each of which has the same music but different words. The verse for "Like a Rolling Stone" contains five musical phrases, each four measures long, thus creating a 20-bar form. The chorus ("how does it feel," etc.) is normally 12 measures long (three four-bar phrases). This chorus alternates with the four verses as follows:

Verse 1: 20 measures ("Once upon a time")
Chorus: 10 measures ("How does it feel")
Verse 2: 20 measures ("You've gone to the finest school")
Chorus: 12 measures ("How does it feel")
Verse 3: 20 measures ("You never turned around to see")
Chorus: 12 measures ("How does it feel")
Verse 4: 20 measures ("Princess in the steeple")
Chorus: 12 measures ("How does it feel")

Note that the first chorus is shortened by two measures (one subphrase of music is skipped over). This verse-and-chorus form is related to the strophic concept, inasmuch as the same musical sequence is repeated four times, with new words for each verse.

"Mr. Tambourine Man" also follows the verse-and-chorus approach. Here the song opens and closes with the chorus. Each verse begins with a four-measure phrase that divides into two two-measure subphrases. The music of the second subphrase (e.g., "has returned into sand") can be repeated to new words, thereby internally extending the basic length of the verse. Thus the first verse is essentially a 16-bar form with four four-measure phrases, but the second subphrase of the first and third phrases is repeated (with new words) to produce a 20-bar verse.

Phrase 1:	<div> <div>4 measures</div> <div>Though I know that evening's empire has returned into sand,</div> <div>+ 2 measures</div> <div>Vanished from my hand,</div> </div>	6
Phrase 2:	<div> <div>4 measures</div> <div>Left me blindly here to stand but still not sleeping.</div> </div>	4
Phrase 3:	<div> <div>4 measures</div> <div>My weariness amazes me, I'm branded on my feet.</div> <div>+ 2 measures</div> <div>I have no one to meet</div> </div>	6
Phrase 4:	<div> <div>4 measures</div> <div>And the ancient empty street's too dead for dreaming.</div> </div>	4
		20

Using similar two-measure extensions, Dylan gradually lengthens each verse (see the Listening Guide below). The relatively simple chorus (four four-bar phrases) is the same each time.

Listening Guide: "Mr. Tambourine Man" (Bob Dylan)

0:00–0:05	Introduction (4 bars)	Sets the accompaniment.
0:06–0:30	Chorus 1 (16 + 2 bars)	Four four-bar phrases plus two-bar fill between chorus and verse 1.
0:31–0:59	Verse 1 (20 bars)	Four phrases. First and third phrases are extended by two bars each. Second and fourth phrases are the normal four-bar length.
1:00–1:26	Chorus 2 (16 + 3 bars)	Same as chorus 1 (except for three-bar fill).
1:27–1:59	Verse 2 (24 bars)	Four phrases. First phrase extended by six bars. Third phrase extended by four bars. Second phrase is the normal four bars. Fourth phrase shortened to two bars.
2:00–2:26	Chorus 3 (16 + 3 bars)	Same as chorus 2.
2:27–3:02	Verse 3 (26 bars)	Four phrases. First phrase extended by four bars. Third phrase extended by six bars. Second and fourth phrases are the normal four-bar length.
3:03–3:24	Chorus 4 (16 + 1 bar)	Same as previous choruses (one-bar fill).
3:25–4:08	Instrumental Break (32 bars)	Harmonica lead. Accompaniment similar to verse progressions.
4:09–4:50	Verse 4 (32 bars)	Four phrases. First phrase extended by 10 bars. Second phrase shortened to two bars. Third phrase extended by eight bars. Fourth phrase is the normal four-bar length.
4:51–5:12	Chorus 5 (16 bars)	Same as chorus 4.
5:13–5:28	Coda	Fade out with harmonica lead.

Dylan tends to adhere to the relatively simple concept of strophic form, but his creativity with lyrics leads to some complex variations within the form. As a result of the influence of the folk movement, the strophic song form joined the 12-bar blues form of R&B and the AABA form of Tin Pan Alley and soft rock as relatively standardized forms used by rock musicians. The through-composed song, as exemplified by some Beatles songs, is much less common than these other three forms.

Soul and Motown

KEY TERMS

funk
chitlin circuit

Motortown Reviews

melisma

Overview: Soul Music: Its Definition and History

Soul in music is like love: You know when it is there, and when it is not; but soul, as a musical genre, defies accurate definition. As Arnold Shaw has written (1982, 365), “Soul has almost as many strains in it as there are artists.” Some of the biggest names in soul music have tried to define it, but their definitions do not provide much clarification (Hirshey 1984, 51, 339, 77, 228):

Soul ain’t nothin’ but a feelin’.

—Wilson Pickett

For a singer, soul is total vocal freedom.

—Don Covay

I am not a blues singer or an R&B singer, I’m a soul singer. We go into the studio without anything prepared, just record what come out. That’s soul—the way you feel.

—Otis Redding

(Soul) is what comes from within; it’s what happens when the inner part of you comes out. It’s the part of playing you can’t get out of the books and studies. In my case, I believe that what I heard and felt in the music of my church . . . was the most powerful influence on my musical career. Everyone wants to know where I got that funky style. Well, it comes from the church. The music I heard was open, relaxed, impromptu—soul music.

—Milt Jackson

Soul to me is a feeling, a lot of depth and being able to bring to the surface that which is happening inside. . . . It’s just the emotion, the way it affects other people.

—Aretha Franklin

The first three definitions imply that soul has something to do with the free expression of feelings, but that could apply to a number of musical styles. Milt Jackson's comments provide a useful hint: that there is a relationship between soul music and black church music. As Aretha Franklin said, "Soul came up from gospel and blues. That much you can write down" (Hirshey 1984, xiii). We know that the blues has some very definite musical characteristics, and we can identify some specific characteristics of gospel music (especially its vocal style). So if a performer combines the characteristics of R&B and gospel, and uses these elements freely and expressively, he or she could be called a soul singer. In this chapter's Musical Close-Up, we will look more closely at how the vocal style of gospel music is carried over into the soul singer's style.

Blues, gospel, jazz, R&B, and rock and roll all have their roots in the South. To understand where soul music came from, we must start in the black southern church. Around the same time that the sacred and the secular were pulling in opposite directions in black music, they were blending together. A gospel song and a shouting blues may be musically identical, except that in one case, the lyrics say "love my Jesus!," and in the other, "love that woman!" These musical styles both expanded northward, blues from the Mississippi Delta area and gospel from the black, southern, usually Baptist church. For blues, this started in the 1920s, with the widespread migration of southern blacks northward to look for jobs in the industrial Northeast and Midwest. Various substyles of black music developed such as electric blues, urban blues, and of course, rhythm and blues. In the 1940s, the new sound of blues was almost a happy sound; it was up-tempo, aggressive, and electrified. Performers like B. B. King, Muddy Waters, and Howlin' Wolf represented this new *urban or electric blues*.

Gospel music also moved northward during this time. Gospel singers like Sister Rosetta Tharpe came from Arkansas to Chicago and eventually to Harlem, in New York City. Mahalia Jackson, born in New Orleans but transplanted to Chicago, popularized gospel among blacks and whites alike. Thomas Dorsey was one of the biggest names in gospel. A composer and performer, his gospel work dates back to the 1920s. When the word *soul* was appropriated by the 1960s black generation, Dorsey noted that it was really nothing new:

It was first in the Negro church. When I was a little boy, the churches couldn't afford an organ and the sisters sat in the amen corner and kept rhythm by clapping their hands. There is no need for some fellow born yesterday to come up and tell me now that soul is something new. (Hirshey 1984, 27)

In the 1940s, a number of independent record companies were formed to popularize black blues and gospel, including Savoy and Apollo (both formed about 1942), Specialty (1945), Chess (1947), Atlantic (1948), Peacock (1949), and Vee Jay (1953).

The expansion of black music into the white market began in the 1950s. Cleveland-based deejay/concert promoter Alan Freed was an influential champion of black music. By 1951, Freed was playing R&B in a white radio market. He sponsored citywide dances in Cleveland that featured an all-black roster of entertainers. Meanwhile, youngsters formed singing groups in the black areas of Detroit, Cincinnati, Chicago, Cleveland, Philadelphia, and New York City (Harlem). Gospel coaches like Billy Ward in New York City worked with them, teaching them the finest nuances of gospel and R&B singing. From his knowledge of these young singers, Ward pulled the cream of the crop together into a group called the Dominoes (about 1950). For a lead singer he tapped a 17-year-old named Clyde McPhatter (originally from Durham, North Carolina). After McPhatter left the group in 1953, he went on to a recording contract with Atlantic Records and formed his own group, the Drifters. In 1959, after McPhatter left, the Drifters reorganized with a new lead singer,

Ben E. King. They scored a number 2 hit in 1959 with a Leiber and Stoller song, “There Goes My Baby.” In 1960, they had hits with “This Magic Moment” and “Save the Last Dance for Me” (their only number 1 hit). The Drifters continued to have hits through the early 1960s.

Groups like the Dominoes and Drifters gathered, rehearsed, and performed in the streets. Often, they started as church groups and could be found singing in front of stores or local Baptist churches. Their vocal roots were with the close harmony gospel quartets of the 1930s and 1940s, possibly with the additional influence of pop groups such as the Ink Spots and the Mills Brothers. Certainly one of the most influential groups was the Soul Stirrers. Formed in Texas in the 1930s by R. H. Harris, the Soul Stirrers were a traveling quartet, appearing all over the country. When Harris retired in 1950, 19-year-old Sam Cooke became the lead singer. As author Gerri Hirshey wrote (1984, 47), “His voice transfigured the sound of quartet gospel and, as early as 1950, in his gospel work, heralded the sound of soul.” Cooke’s move to the pop side with “You Send Me” in 1957 became a model for other gospel singers to cross over to the white market. After all, R&B, through its offspring rock and roll, had proven successful with whites. By the late 1950s, other gospel artists rushed to copy Cooke’s crossover success.

Another model was Ray Charles. Charles said of his early years in Florida, “You went to church every Sunday. So naturally I was around church music. The preacher would say a couple of lines and then the church would sing what he said. It was very ad-lib” (Hirshey 1984, 49). In Charles’s early recording sessions, he simply ad-libbed secular words to familiar gospel songs; often a bit of jazz and blues got mixed in as well. “I Got a Woman,” his 1954 hit for Atlantic, combines the heavy chords of church piano, a strong R&B-oriented band, and, as Hirshey so aptly says (1984, 50), “a vocal that bounced between the bedroom and the blessed.” That blues and gospel mix, the secular-sacred dichotomy, was evident in the no-holds-barred falsetto shrieks and vocal groans. When “What’d I Say” hit the Top 10 in 1959, with Charles’s call-and-response moans and verbal interactions with the Raelettes (his backup vocal group), he successfully brought the fiery combination of gospel and R&B to the national market. It was soul music.

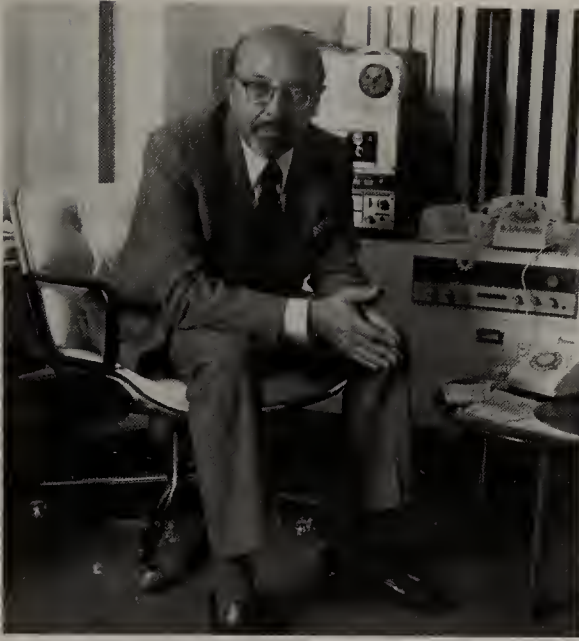
This new success for black music led to a new kind of black pride and an interest in black roots. At first, the elusive quality of this music was called **funk**. But the term *soul* also began to be applied to much the same quality. Thus there was “A Bit of Soul” in 1955 and “Hornful of Soul” in 1957, both by Ray Charles. Milt Jackson recorded “Plenty, Plenty Soul” in 1957, and Charles and Jackson combined on a 1957 album called *Soul Brothers*.

As the 1960s dawned, the southern-rooted suffering and pain of the blues had joined with the joyful and unrestrained celebration of gospel, but soul music would probably be merely a footnote to rock history if it had not been for one record company, which, by the end of the decade, would be almost synonymous with the style. We need to discuss Atlantic Records and meet two men: Ahmet Ertegun and Jerry Wexler.

Atlantic and Stax

Ahmet Ertegun, the son of a Turkish ambassador to the United States, was enthralled with the music of black America. In 1947, he and Herb Abramson formed a small company dedicated to black music—primarily R&B—called Atlantic Records. In the beginning, Ertegun wrote most of the performers’ songs. The first hit for the fledgling company came in 1948 with “Drinking Wine, Spo-Dee-O-Dee” by Stick McGhee.

By 1950, Atlantic had placed only three songs in the R&B Top 10, but thanks to hits by Clyde McPhatter, Ray Charles, La Vern Baker, and Chuck Willis, by 1956, Atlantic claimed 17 out of that year’s 81 Top 10 hits. Some of these hits (e.g., La Vern Baker’s “Tweedle Dee”) were finding success in the pop market via cover versions. Atlantic’s



Ahmet Ertegun (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

growing success was partially due to the addition of a talented producer named Jerry Wexler, who had joined Atlantic in 1953.

The crossover phenomenon of the mid-1950s began to benefit little Atlantic Records and its hopeful young stars. La Vern Baker's "Tweedle Dee" hit number 14 on the pop charts in 1955; by 1959, she hit the Top 10 with "I Cried a Tear." McPhatter had three moderate pop chart hits before "A Lover's Question" made the Top 10 in 1958 to 1959. Chuck Willis's "C. C. Rider" rose to number 12 in 1957, and his "What Am I Living For"

made the Top 10 in 1958. Ertegun also signed Bobby Darin, who was white, to a contract and was rewarded with a long string of major hits through 1962 on the subsidiary Atco label. Further success came through the popularity of the Coasters and the songwriting talents of Jerry Leiber and Mike Stoller. By the end of the 1950s, Atlantic had moved from a small indie with moderate R&B success to a very successful independent in the pop market. In the 1960s, Jerry Wexler steered it in the direction of soul music, resulting in even greater success. Thanks to the soul movement, Atlantic would become a major label by the late 1960s.

Soul singer Wilson Pickett had his own description of how he achieved his sound:

You harmonize; then you customize. . . . You look around for a good, solid used chassis. This be your 12-bar blues. R&B ain't nothin' if it ain't the 12-bar blues. Then you look around for what else you got. And if you come up like most of us, that would be gospel. (Hirshey 1984, 46)

Pickett combined his blues and gospel into an R&B hit in 1962, "I Found a Love." But his greatest success came a few years later, when Jerry Wexler took him back down south to record in Memphis and Muscle Shoals, Alabama. In 1966, Pickett had his biggest hit, "Land of 1,000 Dances," with its listing of previous songs and dances and its "na-na-na-na-na" chorus. The idea of recording down south proved successful in more ways than one. Wexler discovered that by returning to southern recording studios, he found an unusual blend of blues, gospel, and C&W in the racially mixed studio bands. Some of Atlantic's finest recordings, with artists like Pickett and Aretha Franklin, were made in these southern studios.

A fortuitous outcome of Wexler's travels to the South was the relationship established with a Memphis recording company called Stax Records. If Motown called itself "Hitsville, U.S.A.," Stax could legitimately claim the name "Soulsville, U.S.A."

Back in 1959, Jim Stewart and Estelle Axton started a small record company named Satellite Records. By 1961, they had changed the company's name to Stax and signed a distribution agreement with Atlantic Records. For the next few years, the Atlantic-Stax partnership flourished. Between Stax's own artists and the Atlantic artists who recorded there, a strong sound of southern soul emerged. In addition to the Atlantic artists mentioned earlier, there were Stax (and its subsidiary, Volt) artists like Otis Redding, Sam and Dave, and Isaac Hayes.

Redding was born in Little Richard's hometown of Macon, Georgia, in 1941. He absorbed many musical influences, from the country sounds of his favorites Eddy Arnold and Hank Williams to the R&B-oriented rock and roll of hometown hero Little Richard. Otis sang in the choir at the Mount Ivy Baptist Church, where his father led the congregation. So all of the pieces of the musical puzzle were in place. Like so many gospel and soul singers, he particularly admired Sam Cooke. In 1965, he hit the pop charts with "I've Been Loving You Too Long (to Stop Now)." He followed up with his own composition, "Respect," which did very well on the R&B charts but was only a mild success on the pop charts (number 35). Redding's unique blend of blues, gospel, rock, country, and pop made a tremendous impact at the 1967 Monterey International Pop Festival. Unfortunately, Redding was killed on December 10, 1967, in an airplane crash. The posthumously released single "(Sittin' on) The Dock of the Bay" became his only number 1 pop chart hit (early 1968).

Sam Moore and Dave Prater recorded one of the soul anthems of the 1960s, "Soul Man" (number 2 in 1967), composed by Isaac Hayes. Moore was a gospel-trained deacon's son and the grandson of a Baptist preacher; Prater was from Ocilla, Georgia. After signing with Atlantic, Moore and Prater were sent by Jerry Wexler to Memphis to record for Stax. "Soul Man" was followed by another Top 10 hit, "I Thank You."

Isaac Hayes represents Stax's final years of success. After several moderate hits, he released the "Theme from *Shaft*" (number 1, 1971), which also won an Oscar. However, after the success of "*Shaft*," things changed. As Hayes says, "Life got beautiful. And then it got weird" (Hirshey 1984, 355). Somewhere the soul sound was lost. The catchy wah-wah guitar effects in "*Shaft*" and the simple, repetitive, insistent dance beat evolved into disco (Isaac is sometimes called the father of disco). He left Stax in 1974; his first post-Stax album was called *Disco Connection* (1976).

The early 1970s were tough times for Stax. The same year that Otis Redding died, Stax's agreement with Atlantic ended. The cooperation had already soured by 1966; Stax had closed its doors to outside producers like Atlantic. Finally, in 1975, Stax filed for bankruptcy.

By the mid-1970s, soul music had run its course. Stax was gone, the old R&B label, Chess, had folded in 1968; Motown moved to Los Angeles in 1971; Otis Redding was dead, and most of the other big soul stars had lost their status. Jerry Wexler left Atlantic in 1975 to become a vice president of Warner Brothers; Ahmet Ertegun retreated to Atlantic's administrative boardroom. But before we leave the story of soul, we must take a close look at two of its most dominant personalities: Aretha Franklin and James Brown.

Aretha Franklin

Aretha Franklin was born in Memphis in 1942; her father, the Reverend C. L. Franklin, moved his family to Detroit soon afterward to become pastor of a church there. Franklin frequently heard gospel singers like Clara Ward and Mahalia Jackson perform at her father's church. Noting Sam Cooke's success in crossing from the gospel style to the national pop market, the 17-year-old Franklin recorded some demo records.

Columbia Records' John Hammond heard Franklin sing and decided that she could follow Cooke's path into the pop market. Hammond had a knack for spotting raw talent and for converting it into a commercially successful product. He had been instrumental in the recording careers of blues singers Bessie Smith and Billie Holiday and would discover Bob Dylan. For six years in the early 1960s, Franklin recorded with Columbia Records, who saw her as a pop singer. She sang show tunes and jazz-flavored commercial pop, but her four Columbia albums fared poorly.



Aretha Franklin

(Source: Walter Iooss, Jr./Globe Photos, Inc.)

Atlantic's Jerry Wexler had long wanted to develop Franklin into a soul singer, so when her Columbia contract expired, Wexler signed her to Atlantic Records (1967) and took her to Muscle Shoals, Alabama, to record. The result was dynamite. The first Atlantic album, *I Never Loved a Man the*

Way I Love You, went to number 2 on the album charts. The title song became a Top 10 hit, and "Respect," an Otis Redding song, became Franklin's first (and only) number 1 song. Lady Soul was finally on her way. Franklin placed seven out of her next eight singles in the Top 10, all before the end of 1968, and went on to win Grammy awards for best R&B performance by a female artist eight years in a row. If Atlantic was the soul label, Franklin was surely that label's top artist, finding consistent success with both black and white audiences, while retaining her gospel/soul sound. Franklin did songs by some of the finest songwriters, soul and otherwise: "Respect" (Otis Redding), "Spanish Harlem" (Jerry Leiber and Phil Spector), "Eleanor Rigby" (Lennon/McCartney), "Bridge over Troubled Water" (Paul Simon), "Say a Little Prayer" (Burt Bacharach and Hal David), "Chain of Fools" (Don Covay), and "A Natural Woman" (Carole King and Gerry Goffin).

In 1972, Aretha released a fascinating album, *Amazing Grace*, which returned to her pure gospel roots. Atlantic set up their recording equipment in the New Temple Missionary Baptist Church in Los Angeles. Joined by Reverend James Cleveland and his Southern California Community Choir, plus a "live" congregation on two successive nights, Franklin sang traditional songs like "What a Friend We Have in Jesus" and the title song (a truly remarkable version extending to almost 11 minutes). Particularly interesting is the combination of two songs into one arrangement: Thomas Dorsey's "Precious Lord, Take My Hand" and Carole King's "You've Got a Friend" (providing a whole new interpretation of the latter).

As is often the case with superior musical talents, Franklin was anxious to adapt her abilities to a variety of musical styles. Often, such artists are accused of "selling out," of being inconsistent or uncommitted, or going "commercial." But it seems only natural that talented musicians should be interested in applying their talents to a variety of good songs, no matter what the stylistic point of origin. When Franklin sings a song, whether a traditional gospel song or a tune by Broadway's Rodgers and Hammerstein, the song becomes Franklin's. This practice reveals not a weak musical identity but, quite the contrary, a strong identity that can be applied to almost any song with no loss of individuality.

With Jerry Wexler gone and disco and harder rock styles predominating in the last half of the 1970s, Franklin left Atlantic Records, signing with Arista Records in 1979. She continued to be regarded as one of the most important artists on the music scene.

James Brown

As noted earlier, the term *soul music* includes a wide variety of styles. This becomes particularly evident when one considers that the two most prominent representatives of soul music were as different as day and night. Aretha Franklin was known as Lady Soul; she

was the model for the female soul singer. James Brown was called the Godfather of Soul and Soul Brother Number 1 (also Mr. Dynamite, the Hardest-Working Man in Show Business, and Mr. Sex Machine); he was the model for the male soul singer. Yet these two leading soul singers seem to be almost exact opposites. Franklin has total vocal control, allowing her to execute intricate melodic and rhythmic nuances with precise control of pitch and timbre. Her voice is clear and strong; she has a remarkable range and uses it to express a wide range of emotions. Brown's voice was raspy; he typically shouted a raw and basic vocal line devoid of any hint of sophistication. Franklin's arrangements are often quite complex and sophisticated; Brown's songs are among the simplest and most basic in all of popular music. Franklin is rather shy and introverted; Brown was flamboyant, egotistical, and aggressive.

Brown's style has been called southern soul. Many soul singers, although their roots may have been in the South, developed in the major cities of the Midwest and Northeast, but James Brown remained deeply, and loyally, southern. Among the record companies identified with soul music, possibly the most strongly connected with pure southern soul was King Records in Cincinnati. In Gerri Hirshey's words (1984, 260), "From 1956 to 1971, King served as a pipeline for the loudest, the rawest, the most fundamental in-your-face soul ever pumped up from the green hills of Georgia." And that describes James Brown.

Brown was born on May 3, 1933, in Augusta, Georgia. He was naturally musical from an early age, teaching himself keyboards, drums, and bass. He got into trouble—in 1949, he was arrested and sent to jail for three and a half years for breaking into automobiles—but by the early 1950s, he had also realized his interest in music. He formed a small gospel group; with R&B sounds beginning to cross over to national popularity, the group moved toward R&B and called themselves the Famous Flames. They recorded a demo record called "Please, Please, Please." King Records liked the sound and signed them to a contract. The song was rerecorded and released on King's subsidiary label, Federal, in 1956 and became a regional R&B hit (number 6). A 1958 follow-up hit, "Try Me (I Need You)," actually went to number 48 on the national charts and hit the top of the R&B charts. These songs were not far from the doo-wop sound; the newly popular rock and roll sound is more evident in 1959's "Good Good Lovin'" and 1960's "Think" (Brown's first Top 40 hit).

During the early 1960s, Brown toured the country with his James Brown Revue, including 40 singers, dancers, and musicians. It was during this period that Brown developed his incredible stage act. His dancing became the model for performers from Mick Jagger to Michael Jackson, and he became known as the "Hardest-Working Man in Show Business." At the end of the show, with sweat pouring off his face, he would launch into "Please, Please, Please," collapsing prostrate on the stage. Several of the Famous Flames would help him off the stage, draped in a colorful cape, but he would always return for another round of "Please, Please, Please," followed by more collapses and capes. As his boyhood friend Leon Austin tells it,

He's not gonna come out there and be cool, and he ain't gonna have on this pretty suit that ain't gonna get dusty. He gonna wallow. He's gonna just be splittin', dancin', fallin'; he'd jump outta a air-o-plane, I swear. Mess up his knees so he can't work the next job. Or he may scream so hard he can't sing the next night. But he ain't gonna worry about that. (Hirshey 1984, 283)

In the mid-1960s, Brown's voice became even rawer, with a more raspy shouting style. There were hints of the new style in his versions of "Night Train" (1962) and "Out of Sight" (1964). In 1965, the new sound took shape in two 12-bar blues, "Papa's Got a Brand New Bag" and his biggest hit of all, "I Got You (I Feel Good)." There is a choppy feeling

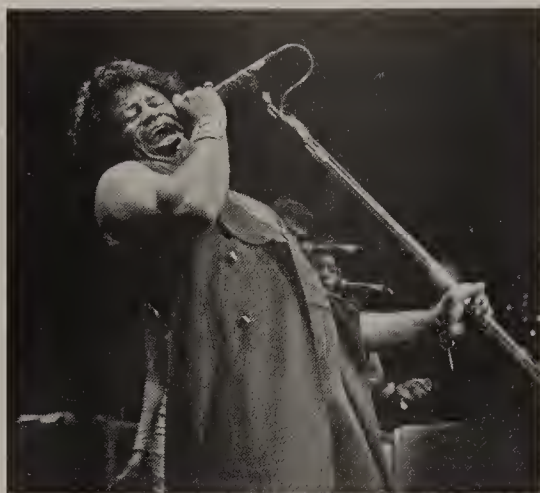


James Brown (at the drums) and the Original Flames (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

to these songs; the horns punctuate Brown's phrases with short bursts; bass and drums play short, tightly coordinated accompanying patterns called *riffs*. In some cases, there are only two or three chords in the entire song. The band *vamps* (repeats the accompanying riff) on one chord, while Brown seemingly improvises his declamatory phrases. At a certain moment, all move to a second chord, establishing a new riff. Finally, the song returns to the original chord and riff. Listen to "There Was a Time" (1967), "Sex Machine" (1970), or "Make It Funky" (1971) for good examples of this style. This is almost as simple and repetitive as music can get. The music is more of a social experience. Brown's live performance antics and dancing were the main points. As Hirshey writes (1984, 289), "James Brown's funk works its best mojo from the neck down. You love it or hate it; it's magic or it's just screams." Certainly it is very different from the sophisticated soul of Aretha Franklin or the commercialized black sound of Motown.

By 1967, Brown was at the height of his career. That year, he performed before about 3 million concertgoers and sold some 50 million records. Between 1967 and 1972, he placed 30 songs in the Top 40. Most were number 1 hits on the R&B charts but typically placed well below the Top 10 on the pop charts.

Brown's close identification with the black cause led him to the edge of politics at times. His song "Say It Loud—I'm Black and I'm Proud" was interpreted by some as a call to black militancy, but most heard it as Brown apparently intended it—as an encouragement of black pride. In his concerts, Brown advocated a positive, nonviolent approach to racial change, with slogans like "Don't terrorize, organize!" and "Don't burn, learn!" He became renowned for this worldwide. Leon Austin says that in Africa, Brown and his entourage were greeted by people who emerged from their mud shacks carrying James Brown albums, even though they had no electricity and no phonograph—but they knew James Brown. We have repeatedly remarked that music affects behavior. One related phenomenon is the effect that entertainers have as role models. A close friend of Brown's, Reverend Al Sharpton, has remarked that "black entertainers . . . become substitute fathers. We learn how to dress from watchin' a star; we learn how to walk. We look at James Brown and we say, 'Hey, that's how I'm gonna be a man'" (Hirshey 1984, 277).



James Brown (Source: Corbis/Bettmann)

By the mid-1970s, changing styles had begun to push Brown to one side. Blacks were dancing to disco beats. These were tough years for Brown, filled with severe financial and personal problems, including the death of his son Teddy. He was also upset by the death of his friend of some 20 years, Elvis Presley. At the funeral, a teary-eyed James Brown stared into the coffin, stroked Elvis's arm, and was heard to say, "Elvis, how you let this happen? How you let it go?" (Hirshey 1984, 278). By 1978, Brown had hit bottom.

From 1977 to 1985, there were no Top 40 hits; his albums, including a disco album and several live albums, did not fare well. Then, in 1980, his appearance in the popular movie *The Blues Brothers* sparked the younger generation's interest and suggested the historically accurate connection between black R&B, gospel and soul, and the black church experience.

Throughout his career, Brown stayed with the simplified, repetitive, and percussively rhythmic style he developed in the mid-1960s. As he told *Downbeat* magazine in 1968,

I tried the heavy approach two or three times, and every time I tried, I got stopped. Just have to keep coming back and simplifying it. It's a funny thing. You make a little three-finger chord on the guitar and they'll sell a million copies, and the minute the cat spreads his hand out across the neck, you can't give the record away. (Hirshey 1984, 289)

Other Soul Singers

There were many soul singers in the 1960s, each with a slightly different approach to the music. Other than Franklin and Brown, who predominated in the genre, and the Atlantic-Stax artists already discussed, we should mention several other important soul performers. Jackie Wilson was from Detroit and was the replacement for Clyde McPhatter after the latter left the Dominoes. After singing lead with the Dominoes for three years, he moved to a successful solo career. Finding himself hounded by a young songwriter named Berry Gordy Jr., Wilson agreed to record his songs. "To Be Loved" became Wilson's first Top 40 hit (1958), and the follow-up, "Lonely Teardrops," hit the Top 10. By the end of 1961, Wilson could claim 17 Top 40 hits. His career slowed dramatically after he was shot in a hotel room that same year. He managed to place seven more hits in the Top 40 between 1962 and 1968, before dying in 1984 at the age of 49.

Somewhere between the pop commercial sound of Motown and the true soul sound was a group known as the Impressions. Formed in the late 1950s, they had their first hit in 1958 with "For Your Precious Love" (number 11). Attributed to Jerry Butler, a member of the group, the song was the work of fellow Impression Curtis Mayfield. Mayfield stayed with the Impressions throughout the 1960s and did most of the songwriting for the group. They eventually placed 14 songs in the Top 40. In the late 1960s, Mayfield's songs became increasingly identified with black pride and social consciousness.

Ike Turner had played piano and guitar for Sam Phillips's Sun Records. He also recorded with his own group, the Kings of Rhythm, who scored an early R&B success on Chess Records with "Rocket 88" (1951). By 1957, Ike had decided to add his girlfriend to the band as lead singer. Her name was Annie Mae Bullock, later known as Tina Turner. Ike was from Clarksdale, Mississippi; Tina was from Brownsville, Tennessee. They married in

1958 and first hit the Top 40 with “A Fool in Love” in 1960. They developed a blatantly suggestive stage act; her miniskirts were as mini as they could get. Restricted to black audiences and R&B stations and charts, they finally broke onto the national pop scene after their appearance at Altamont with the Rolling Stones in late 1969. Their first Top 5 hit was “Proud Mary” (early 1971). The duo recorded for several labels through the 1960s and 1970s. After their divorce in 1977, Tina went on to a successful career in the 1980s, including the number 1 hit, “What’s Love Got to Do with It?” While Tina became one of the hottest acts of the 1980s, Ike faded from public attention. He died in 2007.

Soul Summary

Soul music became popular in large part because it tapped the expressiveness and creative freedom of gospel for a secular market. Yet despite its popularity, most true soul music flourished within an all-black market. Many soul artists toured the so-called **chitlin circuit** of southern black concert sites and inner cities, and their greatest chart successes were on the R&B charts. There were occasional breakthroughs by Brown, Redding, Sam and Dave, Pickett, and, most notably, Franklin. But the most overwhelming success on the pop charts was reserved for a small company that grew into a monster. That brings us to the story of Motown.

Motown

Ahmet Ertegun, founder of Atlantic Records and son of a Turkish ambassador to the United States, was enthralled by the black musical tradition of R&B and gospel. Berry Gordy Jr., a native-born American black man, was rather embarrassed by it. Gordy’s preference was for jazz, a far more sophisticated style of popular music, the roots of which were also black. In 1960, after his jazz-oriented record store failed, the 31-year-old Gordy borrowed \$700 and started his own record company, Tammie Records (soon changed to Tamla Records). At



first, Tamla simply distributed records such as Barrett Strong’s “Money” for Gordy’s sister’s label, Anna. But in late 1960, Tamla released its own record, “Shop Around,” by the Miracles, a group led by singer-songwriter William “Smokey” Robinson. Against all odds, the record went to number 2 on the pop charts. What followed is an amazing story; the tiny independent label became a major power in the music industry in an incredibly short period of time. Just seven years later, Gordy’s record empire, including Motown Records and subsidiary labels Tamla, Gordy, and Soul, sold more singles than any other company, independent or major. Not bad on \$700 of borrowed money.

Motown began in a blue-trimmed white frame house at 2648 West Grand Avenue in Gordy’s hometown, Detroit.

Berry Gordy Jr. (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Gordy's entire family pitched in to make it as professional a facility as possible. The recording studio itself was no larger than a suburban living room. In 1960, Detroit had the fourth largest black population in the United States—over half a million. Within that population was a gold mine of talent, but if they wished to record, they had to go to Chicago, Philadelphia, or New York. With a combination of reliable musical instincts and a strong business sense, Gordy managed to obtain some of that talent for his new company.

The rock and roll explosion of the mid-1950s had integrated music at a time when the rest of society was largely segregated, but in the 1960s, even as society moved closer to real integration, the music industry moved back toward segregation. The early 1960 teen idols, the surfers, the folkies, and the British invasion groups were all white. Only the dance craze of the early 1960s kept black music on the pop charts. The soul trend found its primary acceptance in a purely black market. Typically, soul records climbed to the top of the R&B charts but wallowed in the bottom half of the pop charts. Berry Gordy wanted to bring a style of black music to prominence in both the black and white markets. To do this, he knew he had to have talented black musicians whose roots were in gospel, R&B, or doo-wop, but who understood that those styles had to be stylized to become more commercially successful with a wider audience. Finally, Gordy felt that to make the formula work consistently, there had to be absolute control, allowing for little or no variation from the established patterns.

Smokey Robinson

One of Gordy's first real finds was Smokey Robinson, a talented songwriter who had started a group called the Matadors. Changing their name to the Miracles, they auditioned for Berry Gordy in the pre-Motown days. Gordy used his connections to get the Miracles a release on End Records in New York. When Gordy started Tamla, he signed the Miracles and released "Shop Around," which hit the Top 5 in early 1961 and put Tamla-Motown on the map.

Smokey Robinson became one of the important parts of the new record company. The Miracles were a consistent success throughout the 1960s, registering over two dozen Top 40 hits (including five in the Top 10). Their last Top 40 hit was "Love Machine (Part I)" in late 1975 and early 1976; it was a disco-flavored song and was made by the new Miracles, without Robinson, who had left the group in 1971. Robinson's strong falsetto voice, with a smoothness and expressiveness reminiscent of Sam Cooke, was a major asset to Motown throughout the 1960s, but of equal importance was his songwriting ability. In 1962, he wrote three Top 10 songs for Motown's first female star, 19-year-old Mary Wells. Later, Robinson wrote Wells's only number 1 hit, "My Guy" (1964); Robinson also wrote major hits for other Motown stars, including the Temptations and Marvin Gaye.

Female Groups

The prototype for the Motown female groups of the 1960s was the Marvelettes. Their song "Please Mr. Postman" became Tamla's first number 1 song, confirming that Gordy's formula could work. "Please Mr. Postman" was later recorded by the Beatles and the Carpenters, the latter version also hitting number 1 in 1975. The Marvelettes had nine more Top 10 hits for Tamla through 1968.

Another big Motown female group was Martha and the Vandellas. Martha Reeves and her group, the Delphis, auditioned for Gordy's new record company but were not accepted immediately. In fact, Martha was hired as a secretary at Motown and sang various parts in recording sessions as needed. Finally, in 1962, Berry Gordy signed Martha's vocal trio (now called the Vandellas) to a recording contract; their second song, "Heat Wave," moved to the number 4 position, and the Vandellas were a success. Recording on the Gordy label, the group (with numerous personnel changes) eventually placed a dozen hits in the Top 40

before disbanding in 1971. Their biggest hit came in 1964 with “Dancing in the Street.” As happened with a number of young Motown stars, Reeves eventually began to question the exact distribution of money from the company to the performers. Gordy perceived such questioning as disloyalty, and Reeves left Motown in 1972, recording for several other labels through the 1970s with no real success.

Marvin Gaye

Another success story in Motown’s early days was Marvin Gaye. Unlike the other Motown stars, Gaye was not from Detroit but Washington, D.C. At first, Gaye was used as a session drummer and on tour with the Miracles. His first solo release came in late 1962 with “Stubborn Kind of Fellow.” Through the 1960s, Gaye placed 17 songs in the Top 40 and joined with four of Motown’s female singers (Diana Ross, Mary Wells, Kim Weston, and Tammi Terrell) for a dozen more Top 40 hit duets. Gaye’s biggest solo hit was “I Heard It Through the Grapevine” (number 1 in 1968 to 1969). Gaye’s 1971 album *What’s Going On?* showed him to be a talented songwriter as well as performer. The record combined concerns about the unrest in U.S. inner cities and the war in Vietnam at a time when few pop artists were addressing these issues.

In the late 1970s, troubled times began for Gaye. A bitter divorce from Anna Gordy Gaye (Berry’s sister and 17 years older than Gaye) resulted in a strange double album called *Here, My Dear*, with songs full of irony, contradictions, and sarcasm. Following the divorce, there were problems with the IRS, involvement with drugs, and a bankruptcy action. Changing to Columbia Records, he managed a Top 5 hit in early 1983 called “Sexual Healing,” but in 1984, he was shot and killed at the age of 44 by his own father.

Like so many others, Gaye’s career illustrates the continuing tension between the secular and the sacred in the life of black musicians. His father was a Pentecostal preacher, and Gaye’s early vocals have a distinct gospel sound. But like Sam Cooke, he wished to show that the black gospel sound could be transferred to the pop style. From the heavier sentiments of *What’s Going On?* (about ecology, nuclear war, and inner-city poverty), he moved to one of Motown’s most blatantly sexual albums, *Let’s Get It On*. An embittered man, several of his last recordings for Columbia were quite explicit in their violent references to sex (e.g., “Masochistic Beauty”).

H-D-H and the Formula for Success

Gordy struck another gold mine when he hired Eddie Holland as a songwriter and producer. Soon Gordy added Eddie’s brother Brian and singer-songwriter Lamont Dozier to the Motown staff. Between 1963 and 1967, Holland, Dozier, and Holland (H-D-H) teamed up to provide songs and production for the majority of Motown’s hit singles. They were the musical creators behind numerous hits by Martha and the Vandellas, the Miracles, Marvin Gaye, the Four Tops, and the Supremes. After logging nearly 30 Top 20 hits, H-D-H demanded an accounting of their royalties. A series of lawsuits ensued; the end came in 1972 in an out-of-court settlement. Together and separately, the songwriting team scored moderate hits throughout the 1970s for themselves and other artists.

When H-D-H stopped creating hits for Motown in 1968, morale dropped perceptibly. Most of the Motown artists were not songwriters or producers (Robinson, Gaye, and Stevie Wonder were exceptions). Without the help of Holland, Dozier, and Holland, many were left high and dry. Typically, Eddie Holland had worked with the vocal leads in the various groups; Lamont Dozier had helped with vocal backgrounds and instrumental tracks; Brian Holland handled overall composition and assisted with backup tracks. Without this musical foundation, sales dropped right along with morale.

In a way, Berry Gordy’s secret of success was also nearly his undoing. He insisted on total control; he established a pattern or formula, saw that it worked, and then allowed little or no



Lamont Dozier, Eddie Holland, and Brian Holland

(Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

deviation. By sticking with a few songwriter-producers (namely, Robinson and H-D-H), he guaranteed a consistency of musical style. Although that worked beautifully, when H-D-H left, that consistency was threatened.

Gordy's rigid control was evident throughout the Motown operation. For example, he hired Cholly Atkins as choreographer. Cholly's routine was similar with all of the groups. He started rehearsals with 45 minutes of floor exercises, then he taught the

physical routines to go with each song. Once learned, the routine was never to vary. The emphasis was on synchronized precision. Contrast this with the freely exuberant boogying of a soul artist like James Brown. Gordy also employed an etiquette coach to teach the female performers how to get in and out of a car, how to apply makeup and style their hair, and how to walk, talk, and behave in public. There was also a vocal coach descended from the old gospel coach tradition in Harlem. The choreographer, the piano accompanists, the etiquette, makeup, and wardrobe people, and a vocal coach were all parts of the Artist Development Department. There was not to be the slightest change in any act without Gordy's approval. He even oversaw the individual performers' finances and laid down strict rules of conduct while on tour. There would be no fraternizing with fans. The concept was that of a family: one for all and all for one. Thus Marvin Gaye played on the Vandellas' recordings; Martha Reeves sang and clapped on Gaye's recordings; Robinson wrote songs for almost everyone; and personal relationships developed within the family: Smokey Robinson married Claudette Rogers of the Miracles; Marvelette Wanda Young married Miracle Bobby Rogers; Marvelette Katherine Anderson married the Temptations' road manager Joe Schaffner; and Marvin Gaye married Anna Gordy.

Gordy liked the business concept of quality control. As the decade of the 1960s progressed, his standards became more rigid. He tightened up the funkier leanings of some groups, almost purging any vestiges of gospel or true soul sound; there were no raw R&B edges left. Nothing was left to chance. His use of the same basic backup band—the so-called Funk Brothers—on hundreds of recordings helped provide a consistency of sound. Note how many Motown recordings emphasize baritone sax, vibes, organ, and hand claps.

Through the uproarious 1960s, Motown's lyrics studiously avoided controversy and any heaviness beyond boy-girl romance. Only after about 1968 did songs like "Love Child" and "I'm Livin' in Shame" (Supremes), "War," "Ball of Confusion," and "Don't Let the Joneses Get You Down" (Temptations), or "Livin' in the City" (Wonder) begin to come from Motown. Some of Marvin Gaye's work in the 1970s carried Motown far beyond its previous boundaries with respect to lyrics.

The Four Tops and the Temptations

A second wave of major stars hit Motown in the mid-1960s. The Four Tops had sung together since the mid-1950s, recording briefly on Chess, Columbia, and Riverside Records. Gordy discovered the four Detroit natives singing in a black resort area in Michigan. Starting as a backup group, they had their first release (“Baby I Need Your Loving”) in late 1964. Their third release, “I Can’t Help Myself,” hit number 1 in mid-1965. Before moving to ABC-Dunhill Records in 1972, the Tops placed 17 hits in the Top 40 for Motown. Most of these were Holland-Dozier-Holland songs, featuring the distinctive and polished sound of lead vocalist Levi Stubbs.

Certainly the most popular Motown male group of the 1960s was the Temptations. They sang well, dressed well, and danced. The dual lead singer format (Eddie Kendricks and David Ruffin) was straight out of the earlier black groups like the Soul Stirrers and the Ravens. Kendricks had a strong falsetto voice, whereas Ruffin was a smooth baritone. Various members came from Alabama, Texas, and Mississippi, and they had strong gospel roots. As Ruffin said, “I heard gospel before I could think” (Hirshey 1984, 204). Their first hit was “The Way You Do the Things You Do,” coauthored by Smokey Robinson. After several moderate hits, they hit number 1 in 1965 with “My Girl” (again coauthored by Robinson). Thereafter, the Temptations poured out a steady stream of hits through the late 1960s and early 1970s (35 Top 40 hits, including four number 1s). Changes began in 1968 when David Ruffin left the group; he was replaced by Dennis Edwards (who had sung with another group, the Contours), whose less refined lead vocals fit well with the group’s new direction, moving from the typical Motown style to a more modern sound set by Sly and the Family Stone; the Temptations’ first hits in the new style, sometimes called psychedelic soul, were “Cloud Nine” and “Run Away Child, Running Wild” in 1969. Some of their early 1970s hits led toward the disco style of that decade.

Gladys Knight and the Pips

Continuing in the more traditional Motown style was Gladys Knight and the Pips. Gladys (born in Atlanta in 1944) was singing gospel music as early as 1952 with a family singing group. In 1965, Gladys Knight and the Pips signed with Motown’s Soul label, and in late 1967, they hit the number 2 position with “I Heard It Through the Grapevine” (Marvin Gaye’s recording went to number 1 a year later). Through 1973, the group scored a dozen more hits, including two more Top 10 songs. In spite of their success, Knight and the Pips felt they were not being treated as a priority Motown act; they switched to Buddah Records in 1973. The debut Buddah album, *Imagination* (number 9 in 1973), included their first number 1 song, “Midnight Train to Georgia.” After the mid-1970s, album sales declined and single hits stopped.

Stevie Wonder

Back in 1960, when it became known that a local man was starting a record company, Detroit parents flocked to West Grand Avenue with their young geniuses in tow, sure that theirs would be the next Sam Cooke or Chuck Berry. Most were far from it. However, 10-year-old Steveland Morris was different. He amazed Berry Gordy by playing the piano, the organ, the drums, and anything else he could find in the small Motown studio. Young Mr. Morris was promptly signed to the Tamla label and given a new professional name: Little Stevie Wonder. His fourth release, “Fingertips—Part 2,” went to the number 1 position in 1963. It was the young company’s second number 1 hit. His live performances on the **Motortown Reviews** were so successful that Gordy decided to release a live recording. The live 7-minute version of “Fingertips” was too long for a single, so it was divided into two parts and released as part 1 and part 2. The first live single to hit number 1, “Fingertips” is a mainstream, rocking song, with Wonder playing solo on the first instrument he had learned as a young boy: the harmonica. Combining Wonder’s 12-year-old voice and harmonica with



Little Stevie Wonder (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

a strong instrumental backup, the song generated real excitement. It launched the career of an artist whose singles charts accomplishments would be among the most impressive in the history of rock music.

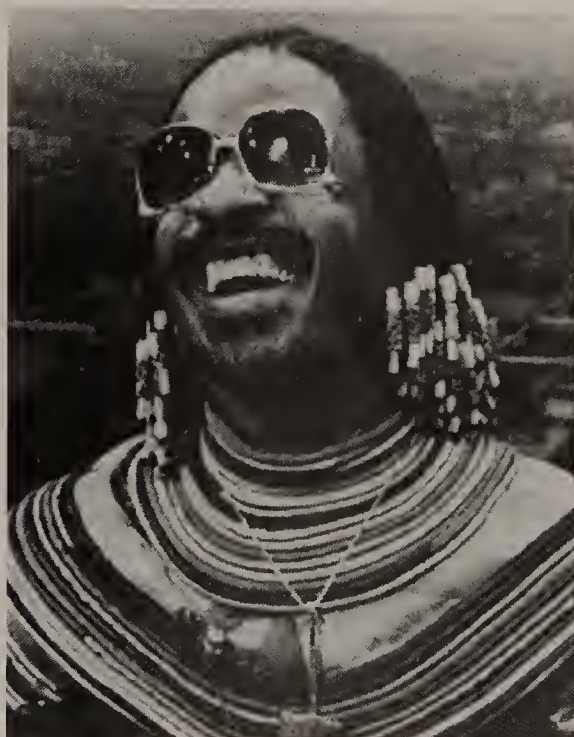
Although Wonder had a string of 16 Top 40 hits in the 1960s, it was not until the beginning of the 1970s that his full potential began to be realized. In 1970, he released his first self-produced album, *Signed, Sealed, and Delivered*. It was his highest-ranking album (number 25) since his very first release. Next, he turned to synthesizer and other electronic keyboards in *Where I'm Coming From*. In

1971, he turned 21 and demanded an accounting of his royalties. Wonder took \$250,000 of his \$1 million trust and set up his own 40-track studio. He began production of his own album, refusing to submit to Motown's control. Finally, Berry Gordy made him an unprecedented offer (for Motown): The company would distribute his album and split songwriting royalties 50-50; Wonder would do his own production and have his own publishing company. In effect, he had full artistic control.

The first album under this new contract was *Music of My Mind* (1972). It did well, but Stevie's next album, *Talking Book*, was a smash-hit album, peaking at number 3 and remaining on the charts for 109 weeks. *Talking Book* contained two number 1 hits: "Superstition" and "You Are the Sunshine of My Life." "Superstition" reflected his admiration of the psychedelic soul sound of Sly and the Family Stone, tempered by the more sophisticated style of Earth, Wind, and Fire. "You Are the Sunshine of My Life" suggested jazz-rock fusion in its harmonies and horn line.

Innervisions (1973) moved to more socially conscious lyrics than had previously come from Motown (e.g., "Higher Ground" and the Top 10 hit "Living in the City"). In mid-

decade, Wonder negotiated a new contract with Motown; guaranteeing him \$13 million over seven years, the contract was the biggest single artist contract in rock's first 20 years. The 1976 album *Songs in the Key of Life* became the first American album to enter the album charts at number 1. Years in preparation, *Journey Through the Secret Life of Plants* (1979) was more sophisticated than any previous Wonder album. "Send One Your Love" revealed a definite drift toward jazz-oriented harmonies and melodic concepts. The line of development that began in 1963 with "Fingertips" and culminated with the 1979 *Plants* album is one of the most impressive in the history of rock music.



Stevie Wonder (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

However, as Wonder moved into his third decade in the music industry, he appeared to lose no momentum. His last major hits came with the number 1 songs “I Just Called to Say I Love You” (1984) and, a year later, “Part Time Lover.” Nonetheless, there can be no doubt that Little Stevie is one of the giants.

Diana Ross and the Supremes

Motown’s greatest success came with the vocal trio Diana Ross and the Supremes. In terms of chart performance in the decade of the 1960s, this group ranks third behind the Beatles and Elvis Presley. From 1964 to 1969, they rolled up 12 number 1 hits plus 11 Top 40 hits.

While in high school, Diana Ross joined a female vocal group that would be a sister group to the Primes. As the Primes evolved into the Temptations, the Primettes evolved into the Supremes. While still the Primettes, Diana Ross, along with singers Florence Ballard and Mary Wilson (originally from Mississippi), won a high school talent contest and began pestering Berry Gordy Jr. for an audition with his new record company. Finally, a former neighbor of Ross’s, Smokey Robinson, arranged for their audition. They signed with Motown in 1962 and began recording as the Supremes. They endured several flops before Gordy put H-D-H on their case.

“When the Lovelight Starts Shining Through His Eyes” rose to number 23 in early 1964. They started the Dick Clark Cavalcade of Stars tour as the opening act, but during the tour, “Where Did Our Love Go” was released and moved up the charts to number 1. By the end of the tour, they had the prestigious closing spot on the show. Before 1965 was over, the Supremes had registered six number 1 songs (“Where Did Our Love Go,” “Baby Love,” “Come See About Me,” “Stop! In the Name of Love,” “Back in My Arms Again,” and “I Hear a Symphony”) and one number 11 hit. All were H-D-H compositions.

By the mid-1960s, the Supremes were Motown’s biggest act. Naturally, they got the whole quality control treatment. Compared to some of the male groups, the Supremes’ stage act was less athletic; for them, choreographer Cholly Atkins designed graceful and (of course) precisely synchronized hand movements.

The series of hits continued unabated in 1966. But problems began to arise. Some say the problems began when Diana Ross started showing up at social functions arm in arm with Berry Gordy. Gradually, she was becoming “the act,” with Ballard and Wilson serving as backup vocalists. After 1967 began with another number 1 hit (“Love Is Here and Now You’re Gone”), things changed. The next release, “The Happening” (also number 1), was credited to “Diana Ross and the Supremes.” Ballard began missing performances because of so-called illness. Although the exact circumstances have never been clarified, she either left the group or was expelled in 1967 (replaced by Cindy Birdsong). Ballard tried to make it as a solo act on ABC Records but had no luck. She endured a bewildering series of personal and professional disasters through the 1970s and died of cardiac arrest in 1976 at the age of 32.

The Supremes’ hits kept coming in through 1969. Finally, Diana Ross, with Gordy’s encouragement, left the group to begin her career as a solo performer. “Someday We’ll Be Together” was ironically Ross’s last recording with the Supremes; it became the group’s last number 1 hit. Ross was replaced by Jean Terrell, and the group endured numerous personnel changes throughout the 1970s.

Mary Wilson was the only constant member of the Supremes from the beginning until they faded from sight in the late 1970s. As Ballard had done earlier, Wilson sued Motown in 1977 for money she felt she was owed from the early days. Eventually, she received 50 percent usage and interest in the name “Supremes.” Wilson eventually published a biography of her life with Motown.

Diana Ross went on to become a major figure in the music industry. She became a successful star on television, in Las Vegas, and in films such as *Lady Sings the Blues*, *Mahogany*, and *The Wiz*. She left Motown in 1981 for what was reported to be a \$20 million



The Supremes (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)



Diana Ross (Source: Corbis/Bettmann)

contract with RCA. In 1983, she reunited with ex-Supremes Mary Wilson and Cindy Birdsong for the finale of a two-hour television special saluting Motown's 25th anniversary.

The music of the 1960s Supremes typifies the Motown sound. There is the lead singer with vocal backup; there is the strong, professional orchestration, using strings, brass, sax, keyboards, and percussion. Note especially the frequent reliance on baritone saxophone (doubling the bass line and providing solo breaks) and vibraphone (listen to "My World Is Empty Without You Babe"). The beat is always strong, with a heavy backbeat often reinforced by hand claps. A trademark is the rather predictable modulation (change of key) that occurs about two thirds to three quarters of the way through the song. The music abruptly shifts from one key (e.g., C major) to a key one half step higher (e.g., D-flat major); for an obvious example,

listen to "Baby Love" (the modulation occurs about 1 minute and 35 seconds into the song). These were all elements in the formula; millions of record sales proved it worked.

Motown Summary

The meteoric trajectory of Motown's success is truly remarkable. Berry Gordy's ability to spot and make use of talents explains a large measure of his success. Remember how the

word *freedom* came up in almost every definition of soul? Motown's 1960s style was anything but free. It was slick, professional, polished, and precisely coordinated. The sound was popular with blacks and whites, but it should not be confused with real soul music.

Gordy's absolute control led to both success and problems. Although many Motown artists were grateful for Gordy's formula, they also bucked against it at various points. As we mentioned, among those who left the Motown family were some big names: Holland, Dozier, and Holland; the Miracles; the Contours; the Spinners; Diana Ross; the Isley Brothers; Martha Reeves; Gladys Knight and the Pips; and the Four Tops. (In some cases, Motown owned the group names, so when the individuals left, Gordy simply trotted out some new members under the old name.)

Motown Records left Detroit in 1971 for a high-rise building on Sunset Avenue in Los Angeles. Motown's success continued with names like the Jackson Five, the Commodores, Stevie Wonder, and Diana Ross. Berry Gordy Jr. was still the kingpin, and millionaire vice president Smokey Robinson divided his time between the company and his family, consisting of former Miracle Claudette and their two children, Tamla and Gordy. In June 1988, Motown was purchased by MCA Records, bringing to an end its distinction as the largest black owned and operated company in America.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: MELODY AND THE SOUL SINGER

Most descriptions of soul singing use subjective terms: *freedom*, *feelings*, *emotion*. But if we are really to understand the style, we must consider the objective elements of music such as rhythm, timbre, melody, harmony, and form. Even though the art of soul singing would seem to be a very elusive phenomenon, we must at least attempt to analyze, in objective musical terms, what there is about the finest soul singers that makes their style what it is.

As noted earlier, soul singing is derived primarily from the gospel-singing tradition of the southern black church. The previous discussion has indicated that many soul singers (1) were originally from the South and (2) had their earliest musical experiences as singers in the church. Quite a few (e.g., Cooke, Gaye, and Franklin) were offspring of clergymen.

Perhaps, then, it would be instructive to listen to a bona fide soul singer singing gospel. That should give us some real insights. We can find just what we are looking for in Aretha Franklin's *Amazing Grace* album. To simplify our task, let us take an uncomplicated and well-known tune: the hymn "What a Friend We Have in Jesus." Franklin turns this straightforward hymn into a gospel song. The basic hymn tune follows:

The musical notation is presented in four staves, each with a vocal part label (A or B) and the corresponding lyrics. The key signature has one flat (B-flat), and the time signature is 4/4.

Staff 1 (Vocal A):
What a friend we have in Je - sus; all our sins and griefs to share.

Staff 2 (Vocal A):
What a priv - i - lege to car - ry Ev - 'ry - thing to God in prayer.

Staff 3 (Vocal B):
Oh, what peace we of - ten for - feit, and what need - less pain we bear;

Staff 4 (Vocal A):
All be - cause we do not car - ry Ev - 'ry - thing to God in prayer.

This tune has a familiar form: 16 measures, divided into four equal phrases, each four measures long. Furthermore, note that the first, second, and fourth phrases are almost alike (the familiar AABA pattern). The rhythm is quite uncomplicated. Every note is within the scale of F major, except the F \sharp in the ninth measure. Now let us see what Franklin does to this simple little hymn.

First, there is the matter of form. Franklin turns this tune into a 6-minute piece. To do this, she subdivides each of the four-measure phrases into two halves and then elongates each half into a full four-measure phrase of its own:

original: 

Franklin: 

Thus she has turned a 16-bar song into a 32-bar song. Then she repeats the first half of the song before going on to the second half, which she also repeats. So now the 16-bar tune has become 64 bars long. But on the final occurrence of the original 15th measure, she improvises on the word “everything,” repeating that measure over and over, before finally resolving on a cadence. After a short pause, Franklin hums and sings through the last half of the tune one more time, complete with the repetitive extension on the final “everything.” The 6-minute result begins to suggest what is meant by the word *freedom* when it is applied to the musical element of form.

Listening Guide: “What a Friend We Have in Jesus” (Aretha Franklin)

0:05–0:17	Introduction (4 bars)	Piano lead
0:18–0:44	A (8 bars)	Vocal enters (“What a friend”).
0:45–1:10	A (8 bars)	Second phrase of hymn (“What a privilege”).
1:11–1:37	A (8 bars)	Repeats first phrase (“What a friend”) with melodic variation.
1:38–2:03	A (8 bars)	Repeats second phrase of hymn (“What a privilege”) with melodic variation.
2:04–2:30	B (8 bars)	The bridge of the original hymn (“Oh, what peace”).
2:31–2:56	A (8 bars)	Final phrase of the original hymn (“All because we do not carry”).
2:57–3:23	B (8 bars)	Repeats the bridge (“Oh, what peace”).
3:24–4:35	A (20 bars)	Repeats final phrase of original hymn (“All because we do not carry”). Extended improvisation on “everything” adds 12 bars to the original 8 bars. Beat slows to a stop at the end of this section.
4:36–5:03	B (8 bars)	Back to the bridge. Franklin hums quietly over the instrumental and choral accompaniment.

5:04–5:55

A (14 bars)

Final phrase of original hymn. Again, she adds an improvised extension (six bars) on “everything.” Builds excitement by increasing volume and adding hand claps. Beat slows to a final stop.

But what is even more important is how Franklin fills that elongated form with a combination of pitches and rhythms, that is, with melody. Compare the first two measures of the original tune with Franklin’s first phrase:

What [a] friend we have in Je - sus.

The basic pitches of the tune are there, but there are notes added, and the rhythms are significantly modified, with some notes falling behind where they should be and others coming ahead. Even the notation in the previous example does not exactly replicate the fine pitch variations of Franklin’s voice (e.g., the extra pitch inflections on “have” in the second measure). The gospel/soul singer’s vocal freedom is further illustrated the next time she sings these same measures:

What, what a friend we have we have in Je - sus

This is still more different from (and more complex than) the earlier example. Again, standard notation cannot effectively capture every nuance of pitch and rhythm she sings. Note the arrow in the second measure of the foregoing example; this is a good example of a *blue note*—a pitch that is unstable, vacillating between A and A \flat (what the blues singers called “worrying” the pitch).

Although we cannot compare every measure of the original tune with Franklin’s version, we can point out a few other places to notice. Frequently, the gospel/soul singer adds short vocal phrases (*interpolations*) as a sort of emotive commentary on the text. For example, note such phrases as “oh, yes we do,” “oh-oh,” “oh, ycah,” and “let’s do that one more time”—sung in the same style as the main melody. Also, there is the freedom to add words like “what a privilege (it is) to carry” or repeat words like “we often, we often, forfeit.” The best examples in “What a Friend” are the extensions on “everything”—repeated for nearly 1 full minute, with a different melodic phrase each time. If you can listen to the entire performance while following the original tune, you will be able to see what freedom of pitch and rhythm means to the soul singer.

One of the most pronounced characteristics of the gospel/soul singer is the **melisma**: a technique in which one syllable is extended over two or more pitches. As Wilson Pickett

said, soul singers “put ten, maybe twenty notes to one word” (Hirshey 1984, 51). Look back at the first example and the one that follows it and notice where words like “have” and “friend” are extended over three or four notes each. If you have access to the *Amazing Grace* album, listen to the title song (extended to almost 11 minutes); it contains many examples of extended melismas (e.g., Franklin’s repetitive melismas on the word “through,” about 4 minutes and 10 seconds into the song).

Finally, there is the matter of vocal timbre. The soul singer employs a wide variety of vocal timbres. These range from the shout (in “What a Friend,” listen to Franklin on the words “and what needless pain,” or you can hear many shouts in “Amazing Grace”) to a very breathy tone (listen to the second occurrence of the title line from Franklin’s “I Never Loved a Man”). Other vocal timbres used in soul music include the raspiness of James Brown and the male falsetto voice so often used by male backup groups. The soul singer moves with dizzying speed through a full range of such timbres.

Soul’s roots in the black southern church are clear. In that sacred experience, there was freedom to react vocally to the preacher’s message or to an inner stirring of the spirit. Impromptu phrases were shouted out or moaned. So it is with the gospel singer. As gospel merged with R&B (similar roots) and the new kid on the block—rock and roll—soul music was born. Although the beat got harder, the instrumentation became more electric, and the overall forms grew more patterned, the soul singer still retained that freedom of expression—freedom of form, timbre, pitch, and rhythm—learned so long ago in a little, white, wood-framed church somewhere in the heart of the South.

San Francisco

KEY TERMS

album-oriented rock
(AOR)

San Francisco sound

acid rock

fuzz tone
tremolo bar

free jazz

rave-ups

vertical organization
horizontal organization

Overview: America Counters the British Invasion

New York City has been described as America's great melting pot, but for the last half of the 1960s, this epithet seemed to better describe San Francisco. A bewildering kaleidoscope of styles, musical and cultural, blended together into an almost indescribable mixture. In the words of Jefferson Airplane member Paul Kantner,

There was an interweaving of the rock and roll world and the political world, the world of labor unions and the armed forces and kids and hippies and yippies and weathermen and democrats, mods and rockers, policemen worlds and the drug world, artists, craftsmen, Sierra Clubs and Hell's Angels, women's movements and Black Panthers, gurus, Jesus freaks, punks, lawyers, doctors, and Indians—you get the picture, I hope. (McDonough 1985, vii)

How had such an unlikely mixture come together in San Francisco at just this time? The disillusionment of the youth movement, which we touched on in Chapter 8, was only deepening. Kids began “dropping out and turning on.” Where does one go when one drops out of society? The West Coast was “new America”: new thought, new ways, and alternative lifestyles. The University of California at Berkeley, San Francisco State University, Stanford University, Mills College, and numerous small colleges in the area were centers of countercultural thought. Almost any other geographic area of the country seemed to represent the “establishment.”

Youth from all over the nation hitchhiked their way to San Francisco, with many making it to the exact epicenter of the psychedelic-flower power world, the Haight-Ashbury neighborhood. Central to this scene were drugs, free sex, the love-peace philosophy, and music. By 1967, that scene had reached its zenith. It has been estimated that there were as many as 1,500 local bands in the Bay Area at that time. By 1970, the wave had begun to lose its power, but until then, the most influential of these bands would leave their mark on the history of rock.

To coalesce the disparate fragments of this eclectic society, several catalysts were necessary. One was rock concert halls. The history of several of these ballroom music halls reached back to the swing era of the 1930s and early 1940s. In late 1965, concert promoter Bill Graham began presenting concerts at the Fillmore Auditorium. Graham booked hundreds of rock acts into his various sites over the next five years, both big-name acts and unknowns. By the turn of the decade, the rock festival phenomenon (such as Woodstock and Altamont) had created audiences too large and unruly for these small venues, which only seated a few thousand. But for a time, Graham's concert halls in San Francisco as well as others like the Avalon and the Longshoremen's Hall pulled the new San Francisco youth society together to share a common musical experience.

A second coalescing factor was radio. For years, FM had been the home of classical music and easy listening styles. Prohibited from merely replicating AM programming, stations such as New York's WOR-FM began a so-called contemporary music format that featured album tracks, lengthy sets, and a calmer, more sophisticated style of disc jockey chatter. The format was called progressive rock, and later, **album-oriented rock (AOR)**. In 1967, a man named Tom Donahue was hired by an almost down-and-out San Francisco FM station, KMPX. He tried the new "progressive" format, and soon KMPX's advertising revenues quintupled. In 1968, Donahue moved to a station that had been broadcasting classical music, KSFR; changing its call letters to KSAN and its format to progressive rock, the station soon became the mainstay of the new San Francisco rock scene.

If the new youth culture of San Francisco was a bewildering mixture, so was the music. Although one occasionally hears about the **San Francisco sound**, in fact, it is almost as vague a term as *folk rock* or *soul*. Many of the San Francisco musicians cut their musical teeth in folk groups, and quite a few of them also admired the old R&B style. So when the British blues-based bands, such as the Stones, hit this country with their harder mainstream rock, many of the San Francisco bands blended elements of the folk style with the R&B-derived rock style of their British counterparts. The result was a hard-driving style of rock that was really the only American style of the time that could counter the harder styles of the British bands.

A few characteristics typify most of the San Francisco bands:

1. **Drugs.** Sometimes this music is called *psychedelic rock* or **acid rock**. Certainly there had been drug references before (e.g., "Eight Miles High" and "Lucy in the Sky with Diamonds"). But with the San Francisco bands, drugs became a dominant theme. By 1967, the old double entendre trick was discarded, and the lyrics became blatantly and explicitly drug oriented. Beyond the lyrics, certain aspects of the music itself were identified with drugs. The long instrumental improvisations and the electronic experimentation became associated with acid rock. San Francisco was considered the psychedelic capital of the nation. The bands and their fans were assumed to be stoned, freaked-out acid eaters. The whole scene was psychedelic, from the music to the clothing to the brightly painted Volkswagen minibuses. Hair was long, stringy, and greasy. Clothing ranged from Jesus look-alikes to Superman outfits—the freakier the better. Psychedelic posters advertised upcoming concerts at the Fillmore and other concert halls.

2. *Sound.* Volume levels at live concerts reached a new high. Rock and roll had never been quiet music, but most groups had managed to get by with tinny-sounding public address systems. But an explosion of sound technology through the 1960s now permitted groups to amplify their sound with tremendous power. The sound at these concerts was riveting, even overwhelming. The vibrations literally could be felt in the rib cage; the ringing in the ears lasted for hours after the concert had ended.
3. *Instrumentals.* Up until this point, the singer had dominated the rock scene, but the San Francisco groups often placed considerable emphasis on the instrumentalists, especially the guitarists. Long improvisations, often lasting 20–30 minutes, were common at live concerts. Such improvisations were old hat in the jazz scene but were new to rock (except for some British blues-based bands, such as the Yardbirds). To the psychedelically oriented rock fans, such long-winded flights of fancy seemed to be musical “trips,” possibly inspired by drugs.
4. *Electronic technology.* Musicians soon learned that electricity could generate sound; especially fascinating was the phenomenon of electronic feedback. Electronically produced music had been around for several decades in the classical field, but to the acid rockers, these sounds were “far out.” Again, there was the association of these freaky sounds with the drug experience.

The Jefferson Airplane

The first San Francisco band to get a recording contract with a major label (RCA) was the Jefferson Airplane. The group had been formed in 1965 by male lead singer Marty Balin, who took over a small club on upper Fillmore Street and recruited guitarists Paul Kantner and Jorma Kaukonen and vocalist Signe Toly to join him as the house band. Their first album, *Jefferson Airplane Takes Off*, did not fare well. Following the release of that album, female lead singer Signe Toly Anderson left the band. For a new female lead singer, the band chose Grace Slick, a member of another local band called the Great Society. With a new lineup—Grace Slick, Jaek Casady, and Spencer Dryden—as well as Balin, Kantner, and Kaukonen, the band recorded a second album, *Surrealistic Pillow* (1967). It placed number 3 on the album charts and yielded two hit singles (the Airplane’s only Top 40 singles), “Somebody to Love” (number 5) and “White Rabbit” (number 8). The lyrics of “White Rabbit,” appearing in the same powerful summer as *Sgt. Pepper*, evoke images of a psychedelic Alice in Wonderland, including the hook line “go ask Alice,” which would become the title of an antidrug book and movie years later. Previously, female singers had been associated either with soft rock, including the doo-wop style, or the Motown female group image, but with this album, Grace Slick became the first real female rock star.

In late 1967, the Airplane issued *After Bathing at Baxter’s*. Although the album reached the Top 20, there were no single hits. This was not unusual for the San Francisco groups. In fact, many of these groups were actually quite disdainful of Top 40 hits and considered chart success a rather unbecoming embarrassment.

Gradually, Slick and Kantner took greater control of the Airplane, reducing Balin’s role. *Crown of Creation* (1968) contained an interesting variety of styles. The title song, by Kantner, was a mainstream rock song; Slick’s “Lather” sounds like a latter-day folk rock song, complete with externally mixed sound effects and obscure lyrics. Of particular interest is “Chushingura,” a haunting and tasteful example of electronic experimentation. In addition to the natural sounds of piano and acoustic guitar, there is electronic feedback and other electronically generated sounds; the asymmetric clicking sounds were reportedly made by a row of suspended steel balls such as those that may be found in shopping mall gift shops.



The Jefferson Airplane (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

After touring Europe in 1968, the group released a live album, *Bless Its Pointed Little Head*. A strong cut on this album is the live version of “Plastic Fantastic Lover,” first issued on *Surrealistic Pillow*. It features a shouting lyric and good instrumental improvisation. The Airplane’s last 1960s album was *Volunteers*, released in 1969. It contained songs with sociopolitical messages (“We Can Be Together” and “Volunteers”) and strong vocal and instrumental work.

Personnel problems began to plague the Airplane in the early 1970s, and the band released only a few more albums before disbanding. However, from the ruins of the Jefferson Airplane arose a new band. Back in 1970, *Blows Against the Empire* had been released under the name of Jefferson Starship. That album was recorded by Kantner, Slick, Casady, and others (including Jerry Garcia, David Crosby, and Graham Nash). One of the more interesting additions was that of “Papa” John Creach, born in Beaver Falls, Pennsylvania, in 1917, who was a member of the band through the 1970s. Papa John, a black violinist, had been involved in the blues scene for decades; he had amplified his violin back in the mid-1940s.

Marty Balin rejoined the group in 1975, helping them attain their first number 1 album, *Red Octopus*, and a number 3 single, “Miracles.” Thereafter, Slick and Balin dropped out of the group, leaving Kantner as the only remaining original member, but by 1982, Slick had rejoined the Starship. Several moderately successful albums emerged in 1982 and 1984. In the latter year, Paul Kantner left the Starship; as a result of his lawsuit, the band was required to drop the name Jefferson, thus becoming simply the Starship. As the Starship, the band enjoyed continued success into the late 1980s (including three number 1 hits). After that, there were various reunions and reformings of the group, but none had lasting commercial or artistic impact.

The Grateful Dead

Elvis’s fans tore at his clothes, screamed and cried, and, years later, fainted as he lay in state at Graceland. Beatlemania was a kind of cultural hysteria that sociologists have yet to explain fully, and there are Stones fans who refuse to hear even the slightest criticism of their

heroes. Few fans are as devoted, persevering, and tolerant, though, as the *Deadheads*—the unswervingly loyal following of the Grateful Dead. The Dead are the archetypal San Francisco band of the late 1960s, combining all of the major characteristics of that style. Like so many others, their roots were in the folk era of the early 1960s.

Jerry Garcia was born in San Francisco in 1942. His family moved around the Bay Area a great deal, and Jerry, although unquestionably bright, never settled into a successful school routine. By 15, he was in constant trouble for fighting, drinking, and smoking marijuana. He finally dropped out of school at 17 and joined the army. Following several courts-martial and a series of AWOLs, he was discharged. Returning to civilian life, he found that folk music was the rage in the San Francisco of the early 1960s. He became fascinated with bluegrass music, learned to play the five-string banjo, and began appearing in San Francisco coffeehouses. Along with several others, Garcia, Ron "Pigpen" McKernan, and Bob Weir formed Mother McCree's Uptown Jug Champions. Thanks to the Beatlemania of 1964, the jug band decided to go electric and play rock and roll. McKernan switched from harmonica to organ; they added drummer Bill Kreutzmann and changed their name to the Warlocks. Soon, Phil Lesh, a classically trained violinist and serious avant-garde composer, was invited to join the Warlocks.

One of the more colorful characters in mid-1960s San Francisco was author Ken Kesey (*One Flew over the Cuckoo's Nest*) and his free-thinking band of cohorts, the Merry Pranksters. Kesey was known for throwing wild and weird parties, which included Kesey's intellectually liberated friends, the less intellectual but equally countercultural Hell's Angels, and the Warlocks. Anything and everything went on at these freely structured party-happenings (called *Acid Tests*). The only predictable constants were drugs (especially LSD), weird costumes, and loud rock music by the Warlocks. As Garcia later said, "The Acid Tests were thousands of people, all hopelessly stoned, all finding themselves in a roomful of other thousands of people, none of whom any of them were afraid of" (Jackson 1983, 55). In this atmosphere, the Warlocks' music got louder, harder, more improvisatory, and longer. Playing with all sorts of electronically generated sounds, from distortion to feedback, they were met with enthusiastic approval by the partygoers, but by mid-1966, the Acid Tests had ended. Kesey had been charged with drug possession and fled to Mexico.

Changing their name to the Grateful Dead, the band moved into an old Victorian building in the Haight-Ashbury neighborhood. Their music at this time consisted of blues material, Motown and soul songs, and Dylan songs. There were extended improvisations worked into these songs and continuing experimentation with sound alterations, such as **fuzz tone**, feedback, and use of the **tremolo bar**. In late 1966, the Dead signed a record contract with Warner Brothers. Unfamiliar with the structured environment of the recording studio, the band turned out a rather unimpressive first album, *The Grateful Dead*, in 1967.

Many groups say they are not seeking commercial success but then sign lucrative record contracts and do everything possible to achieve top-of-the-chart success. But the Dead seemed to practice what they preached. Even during the peak of their popularity (late 1960s), they did not have a Top 40 hit. Their albums sold well but not spectacularly. Their real emphasis was on live performance. They were a concert, not a studio, band. They played five-hour concerts, free concerts, and even hauled their equipment to Egypt at a cost (to them) of \$500,000 to play a benefit concert at the foot of the Great Pyramids in 1978. They considered themselves and their Deadhead followers to be an extended family.

After the release of that first album, the band added drummer Mickey Hart and lyricist Robert Hunter. The next two albums, *Anthem of the Sun* (1968) and *Aoxomoxoa* (1969), fared only moderately. Finally, they released a live double album, *Live/Dead*, in late 1969. Most Deadheads consider this to be the group's best album of the 1960s.



The Grateful Dead (Photograph by Herb Greene) (Source: Courtesy Robert Koch Gallery, San Francisco.)

There are several standout performances on *Live/Dead*. The 21-minute version of “Dark Star” illustrates the lengthy instrumental improvisation that typifies the Dead and other San Francisco groups. The Dead were known for taking half an hour to tune up, and indeed, the opening of “Dark Star” seems to grow from out of nowhere, as if the band were simply trying to get into a groove. However, the playing is technically proficient and musically inventive. For an example of typical San Francisco electronic experimentation, listen to “Feedback,” which is exactly what the title suggests. “Saint Stephen” is a fun-loving rock song; “Turn On Your Lovelight” is a good illustration of both the blues-based rock style and some very fine instrumental improvisation. To get the full late-1960s San Francisco effect of this album, be sure to turn up your stereo just short of blowing out the speakers.

In the early 1970s, the Dead moved in the direction of a simplified, country-oriented sound on two outstanding albums: *Workingman’s Dead* and *American Beauty* (both released in 1970). These were the Dead’s first albums to reach the Top 30. Garcia had picked up the pedal steel guitar, lending a real country flavor to these albums. A reliance on acoustic instruments suggested their dramatic shift away from the psychedelic rock of the late 1960s.

Blues for Allah (1975), the Dead’s most successful album commercially, has a touch of jazz influence. There were several personnel changes during the 1970s, but Garcia, Lesh, Weir, and Kreutzmann all remained. (McKernan died in 1973 at the age of 27.) Later albums revealed a variety of approaches, including the horns, strings, and vocal choruses of *Terrapin Station* (1977), the all-acoustic double album *Reckoning* (1981), and its companion electric double album *Dead Set* (1981).

The Dead’s fans were a flexible and tolerant bunch, as their heroes moved through psychedelia, country rock, blues, folk, jazz, acoustic rock, electric rock, and even horns,

strings, and choruses. In their free-spirited, idealistically anticommercial way, the Dead embody the spirit of late-1960s San Francisco. The band enjoyed something of a renaissance in the late 1980s with a number 6 album (*In the Dark*) and a Top 10 single ("Touch of Grey"). The death of Jerry Garcia in August 1995 was a traumatic moment for the band and its devoted followers. The band was revived in 2003 (called the Dead) and continued to tour.

Janis Joplin

San Francisco in the late 1960s was full of transplants and honest-to-goodness characters; Janis Joplin was both. Born in Port Arthur, Texas (1943), she grew up amid blues, gospel, and country styles. A natural free spirit, Joplin left Port Arthur and headed for San Francisco to sing in a few folk clubs and bars, but then returned to Texas to attend the University of Texas at Austin. Though she stayed there only one year, she did get some more experience singing in local bars. In 1966, Chet Helms, who managed a San Francisco band called Big Brother and the Holding Company, convinced Joplin to return to San Francisco to be the band's female lead singer. The band got its big break in 1967 at the Monterey International Pop Festival. Joplin's natural voice was already raw and strong, but faced with the necessity of overcoming the powerful rock band, she truly began to scream and shout her lyrics. The performance was greeted with praise. Dylan's manager, Albert Grossman, became Joplin's manager, and Columbia Records offered a recording contract.

In 1968, Big Brother's first Columbia album, *Cheap Thrills*, rose to number 1 and stayed there for eight weeks. "Piece of My Heart" hit the singles charts, eventually peaking at number 12. Other songs of interest on this album are Joplin's version of Big Mama Thornton's "Ball and Chain" and George Gershwin's "Summertime."

At the beginning of 1969, Joplin went solo. She felt that she was the real star and that Big Brother was holding her back (an idea not without some truth). Joplin's *I Got Dem Ol' Kozmic Blues Again* was released in mid-1969 and moved to number 5 on the album charts. The album's title song, "Kozmic Blues," is a good example of Joplin's powerful, sandpaper-raw voice; her soulful vocal style is also evident on "Try (Just a Little Bit Harder)."

By the beginning of 1970, Joplin was busy creating a truly top-notch band, which she called Full-Tilt Boogie. Since Big Brother, each of her bands seemed better than the previous one.

Full-Tilt Boogie's performance on Joplin's last album, *Pearl*, is very strong indeed. *Pearl* was recorded mostly during the late summer of 1970, but before it could be released, Joplin was found dead in her Hollywood hotel. The victim of a heroin overdose, she was only 27 at the time of her death on October 4, 1970. *Pearl* was released after her death; it hit number 1 and stayed there for nine weeks. "Me and Bobby McGee" was released as a single, and it became Joplin's only Top 40 hit, holding the number 1 position for two weeks.

Janis Joplin's musical style places her squarely in mainstream rock, but her roots in R&B and gospel are evident in almost every song. Recall what you read in the Musical



Janis Joplin (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. — Los Angeles)

Close-Up in Chapter 9, “Soul and Motown,” about the gospel-oriented soul singer; then listen to Joplin’s version of “Summertime” on *Cheap Thrills*. Granted, Joplin is white, but her vocal style has virtually every characteristic of the soul singer. Sometimes she sings straight-ahead, blues-derived mainstream rock (“Move Over,” from *Pearl*, is a strong example), but from that same album, “My Baby” clearly shows gospel roots: the triple meter; the chord movement from I up to IV and on to V; the cadence on the title, which moves from IV back to I; the gospel-style acoustic piano and organ are all elements that create a gospel feeling. If Joplin had replaced the words “My Baby” with “My Sweet Lord,” the latter would fit quite naturally. For a monumental example of the blues influence, listen to the live version of “Ball and Chain” on *Janis Joplin’s Greatest Hits*; it is a truly remarkable performance that, in a way, tells you everything there is to know about Joplin.

Joplin was unique. She was a white soul singer, and she was a female mainstream rock singer (along with Grace Slick, a model for those who followed). Her sandpaper voice was like no other. Although the official medical reason for her death was a heroin overdose, one almost feels that she died of old age, having crammed at least one lifetime into her 27 years. In the words of her own song, she was determined to “Get It While You Can” (*Pearl*).

Joplin left one remarkable song that may become a classic. “Mercedes Benz” (*Pearl*) is an a cappella vocal solo in which Joplin puts her tongue squarely in her cheek and does a song of “great social and political import.” She takes potshots at upper-class values, from color televisions to Porsches. Her cackling laughter at the end reminds us that she was truly one of a kind. In a business where everybody copies everybody, Joplin was a true original.

Other San Francisco Groups

The Airplane, the Dead, and Joplin—these were the most prominent artists from the late-1960s San Francisco scene, but there were many others (see Table 10–1). Several bands formed in the late 1960s in San Francisco would have their biggest impact in the early 1970s, including the Steve Miller Band, Santana, Tower of Power, Creedence Clearwater Revival, and Sly and the Family Stone; they will be discussed in subsequent chapters.

TABLE 10–1

Band	Comments
Charlatans	1965 to 1968; a prototype for later San Francisco bands; repertoire of folk songs and blues; concept was more visual than musical; no hit singles, but in many ways “got the ball rolling”
Quicksilver Messenger Service	1965 to 1975; talented lead guitarist John Cipollina played lengthy improvisations, rivaling those of the Grateful Dead; series of moderately successful albums from 1968 to 1970—good example: “The Fool”
Country Joe McDonald and the Fish	Began in 1965 as a folk duo; overtly political protest songs; grew to a quintet and went electric; crazy costumes and humorous stage act; became known for prodrug songs and Vietnam protest songs; major appearance at Woodstock; since 1970, Country Joe has had little impact as a soloist
Moby Grape	Premiered at Fillmore in 1966; triple guitar front line; first album and five singles released in 1967; second album, <i>Wow</i> , included second disc with lengthy instrumental improvisation (with “guests” Al Kooper and Mike Bloomfield); continued into 1970s (with changing personnel), but peak of popularity was over

Acid Rock Outside San Francisco

San Francisco was the psychedelic center, to be sure, but there were also bands in other parts of the country that shared the characteristics of San Francisco acid rock such as the Fugs, the Blues Magoos, and the Vanilla Fudge. The style was also developed by second-wave British invasion groups such as Small Faces, Traffic, and Pink Floyd.

After the Summer of Love

After the Summer of Love in 1967, when the San Francisco scene hit its apex, the scene began to unravel. Crime, drugs, and racial tensions took their toll. The city government banned live performances in the Panhandle, a strip of grass and trees adjacent to Haight-Ashbury where many concerts had been held, but the most disintegrating effect came from the new “dropouts” who flowed into the city. As *BAM* writer Blair Jackson describes it,

Somewhere along the line . . . the Haight started to lure droves of young people who were less interested in the utopian ideals that had originally been the source of the neighborhood's strength, and more focused on the idea of being able to take drugs, eat for free, listen to rock and roll, and further the sexual revolution. The Haight-Ashbury culture had encouraged young people to “drop out” of conformist society, and a regrettable by-product of that battle cry was that some people took it as their cue to drop out altogether, ceasing to offer their energy toward the furtherance of the new order. (1983, 77)

What had begun in San Francisco would have its effect elsewhere. Two of the more important non-San Francisco bands of the late 1960s were Jim Morrison and the Doors and the Jimi Hendrix Experience.

Jim Morrison and the Doors

Jim Morrison was born in Melbourne, Florida, in 1943. At the age of 20, he enrolled in the film department at the University of California, Los Angeles, where he met keyboard player Ray Manzarek (born in Chicago in 1943). The two formed a band, with Morrison as lead singer and Manzarek playing piano, organ, marimba, and sometimes bass. They recruited two Los Angeles musicians, jazz drummer John Densmore and guitarist Robbie Krieger.

Soon the Doors, as they called themselves, were hired as the house band at the famous Whisky a Go-Go club. Signing with Elektra Records in 1966, they released their first album, *The Doors*, in early 1967. Played primarily on the new “progressive FM” stations, the album was a success, rising to number 2. The album contained a long (nearly 7 minutes) version of a song by Krieger called “Light My Fire.” A shorter single version was released and became a number 1 hit by mid-1967.

The Doors' musical style was blues-based mainstream rock. Morrison's flat baritone voice had a dark quality; his vocal lines were usually in a very narrow range and were quite repetitive, frequently emphasizing the interval between the tonic scale degree and the minor third degree. (Note the similarity between the basic melodic lines of “Light My Fire,” “Love Her Madly,” “Riders on the Storm,” “Moonlight Drive,” “Hello, I Love You,” and others.) The minor keys used in many Doors tunes also result in a darker sound. Add to this the lyrics, which are often centered around death, violence, darkness, and a menacing sexuality. Musically, Manzarek's keyboard solos are the Doors' strongest point.

Their second album, *Strange Days*, was another success (a number 3 album) and contained two hit singles, “People Are Strange” (number 12 in 1967) and “Love Me Two Times” (number 25 in early 1968). It also contained the 11-minute “When the Music's Over.” *Waiting for the Sun* (1968) became the Doors' only number 1 album and contained



Jim Morrison (Photograph by Michael Montfort) (Source: Corbis/Bettmann)

the number 1 single “Hello, I Love You.” However, by 1969, Morrison was an alcoholic and a drug addict. His stage performances were erratic; at a concert in Miami in 1969, he even exposed himself, drunkenly, to the crowd, and was arrested for indecent exposure and public drunkenness.

The next Doors album, *The Soft Parade*, was an oddity, an acid rock group doing soft rock, complete with brass, strings, and backup vocals. The album made the Top 10, and “Touch Me” rose to number 3 as a single. With *Morrison Hotel* (1970), the band returned to its mainstream rock sound, but there were no hit singles. Morrison’s last album, *L.A. Woman* (1971), hit the Top 10 and yielded two Top 20 singles, “Love Her Madly” and “Riders on the Storm.”

Beset by legal and physical problems, Morrison moved to Paris to recuperate; he died there on July 3, 1971, from a heart attack. He was 27 years old. The Doors issued several more albums before disbanding in 1973.

The Jimi Hendrix Experience

There are some interesting parallels between Jimi Hendrix and Bob Dylan. First, neither will be remembered primarily as a great vocalist. In fact, Hendrix had not done much singing until he heard Dylan; then he decided that if Dylan could get away with singing, so could he. Hendrix’s only Top 40 hit single came in 1968 with “All Along the Watchtower” (number 20), a Dylan song. Also, just as Dylan almost single-handedly transformed the lyrics of rock music, so Hendrix exerted a tremendous influence on post-1968 rock guitar styles.

Jimi Hendrix was born in Seattle on November 27, 1942, into a middle-class family. He began his musical career playing backup guitar for various black artists such as Little Richard, Ike and Tina Turner, Wilson Pickett, and Jackie Wilson, on the chitlin circuit. He arrived in New York in 1964 and formed his own band in 1965, calling it Jimmy James and the Blue Flames.

Hendrix went to England in September 1966; there he recruited British musicians Noel Redding (bass) and Mitch Mitchell (drums), forming a rock trio known as the Jimi Hendrix Experience. The group was an immediate success, scoring several major hits on the British

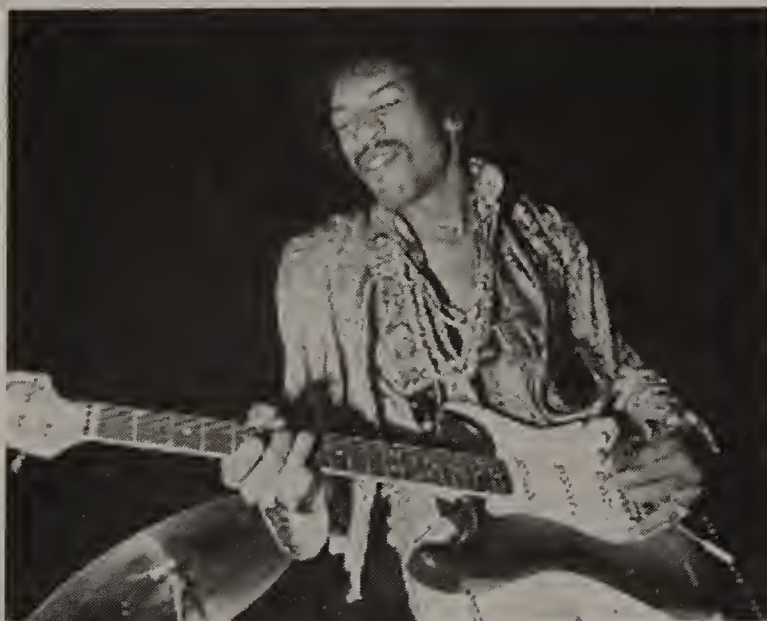
charts ("Hey Joe," "Purple Haze," and "The Wind Cries Mary"). In those early days, Hendrix played a heavy dose of blues, some soul songs, and a few originals. He had begun to experiment with feedback, fuzz tone, and other electronically generated or modified sounds.

The Experience frizzed their hair, adopted psychedelically appropriate costumes, and prepared to invade America. Their debut was at the Monterey Pop Festival of June 1967. Hendrix played his guitar with his teeth and behind his back; he caressed his guitar and attacked it in a sexually suggestive way. After a rocking version of Dylan's "Like a Rolling Stone" and a driving version of the Troggs' "Wild Thing," he drenched his guitar in lighter fluid and set it on fire (shades of Jerry Lee Lewis). To put it mildly, he succeeded in getting America's attention.

Are You Experienced? had already been released in this country that summer and had risen to number 5. The hard, raw, blues-based mainstream rock contained on this album was unlike almost anything else on the market at this time, except possibly for a few of the harder San Francisco bands and some of the second-wave British invasion bands. The guitar sounds were utterly unique. Hendrix was left-handed but played a right-handed guitar upside down. He played extremely loud, overloading his sound system; he also used a fuzz box for distortion, a Uni-Vibe (which simulated rotating speakers), a wah-wah pedal, and the guitar's toggle switch and tremelo bar for special effects. Groups like the Dead, the Who, and the Yardbirds were using similar techniques, but Hendrix seemed to use them with more control for deliberate musical effect. A prime example of these effects is the song "Third Stone from the Sun."

Hendrix's finest album was his third release, *Electric Ladyland* (August 1968). His only number 1 album, *Electric Ladyland* included several highly experimental works, like the album's first cut, "And the Gods Made Love," which uses tape speed manipulation to create a successful, though brief, electronic composition. "Voodoo Chile" contains excellent playing by drummer Mitchell, guest organist Stevie Winwood, and Hendrix. The bluesy vocal shows the full range of Hendrix's voice, from Dylanesque delivery to a full shouting style. *Electric Ladyland* also includes Hendrix's only hit single, "All Along the Watchtower."

There are many delights on *Electric Ladyland*. There is an interesting thread of unity running through the double album, as several songs are begun on one side and returned to on a later side. For example, the album ends with "Voodoo Child (Slight Return)," which



Jimi Hendrix (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

is related to the earlier “Voodoo Chile.” Also, “Rainy Day, Dream Away” begins on side 3 as a gentle rock song with a hint of jazz feeling, and returns on side 4 as “Still Raining, Still Dreaming,” this time with a harder rock feeling. One can hear an old-fashioned 12-bar blues on “Come On (Part I)” and Hendrix’s infinite modifications of guitar timbres on “Gypsy Eyes.”

If you can only listen to one cut on *Electric Ladyland*, listen to “1983” (which imperceptibly flows into “Moon, Turn the Tides”). This long song shows all sides of Hendrix’s art. There are fine solos by drummer Mitchell and bassist Redding; tasteful use of the flute (played by Chris Wood) adds to the ethereal timbre. There are moments of driving rock, countered by peaceful moments of nicely refined electronic effects. Overall, it is a classic.

Electric Ladyland shows that Hendrix was well ahead of his time and was a far more creative musician than his reputation would suggest. Indeed, Hendrix himself began to feel that his stage antics were detracting from his more serious musical abilities, but as he attempted to play it straight, many fans were dissatisfied, apparently being more impressed by theatrics than by music. Hendrix disbanded the Experience in 1969 and retreated to upstate New York (more shades of Dylan?). However, he did appear at Woodstock, providing a spectacular version of “The Star-Spangled Banner.”

He opened his own studio, Electric Ladyland, in New York during 1969 and began recording his next album. There were problems, however; one came in early 1970 at Madison Square Garden, where Hendrix simply stopped playing in the middle of a set—he wandered offstage, apparently lost in his own mind.

The three Js—Jimi, Janis, and Jim—all died between September 18, 1970, and July 3, 1971, all at the age of 27. Hendrix died in London from inhalation of vomit resulting from barbiturate intoxication. An autopsy revealed 18 times the recommended dosage of Vesparax, plus tranquilizers, amphetamines, depressants, and alcohol.

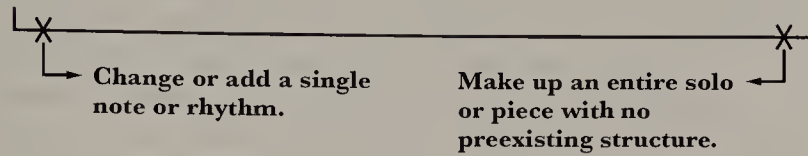
When listening to Hendrix, you might say, “Hey, what’s the big deal? I’ve heard lots of recent guitarists who do all that stuff and more!” That is exactly the point. Hendrix set new styles, new ways of making music with his instrument. Hendrix has become almost deified by later rock enthusiasts, especially guitarists. Although he belongs with the somewhat dated psychedelic or acid rock era, he is an important link in a line that runs from the 1950s mainstream rockers to the Stones and their followers, through Hendrix and the other acid rockers, and on into the harder rock and heavy metal of the 1970s and 1980s. Regrettably, some (not all) of the later bands grasped only the superficial and most accessible of Hendrix’s developments and left the more subtle and refined elements unused. According to John Morthland, “The Seventies heavy metal bands, with their emphasis on volume, monolithic riffs and droning guitars, owe something to Hendrix, but none have shown even a small fraction of either his finesse or imagination” (Miller 1980, 302).

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: THE ART OF IMPROVISATION

We have referred to the concept of musical improvisation at various times throughout this book. Instrumental improvisation became an important factor in most rock styles from the 1970s on, so let us take a closer look at the practice.

Webster’s New World Dictionary tells us that to improvise is “to compose, or simultaneously compose and perform, on the spur of the moment and without any preparation.” Essentially, this means that a musician is improvising anytime he or she makes up something to play on the spot or spontaneously adds to or changes what was previously written

or planned. This can mean anything from the most minute change all the way to an entire piece that is made up on the spot:



The Improvisation Continuum

In the classical music tradition, the performer strives to reproduce as faithfully as possible the exact notes and rhythms written by the composer. Even in classical music, however, performers sometimes add their own dynamics, phrasings, and tempo variations; these types of changes, which are usually preplanned, are considered interpretations, rather than improvisations. Gospel, C&W, rock, and every subcategory of jazz lie somewhere along our improvisational continuum. C&W, for example, has been relatively conservative; it would lie somewhere on the left end of the continuum.

On the other hand, jazz has always relied heavily on improvisation. Especially since the mid-1940s, there has been an increasing emphasis on freer improvisation in jazz. This trend reached its peak in the 1960s, when some jazz performers experimented with **free jazz**. In this style, performers simply played whatever came to mind at the moment, with little regard for traditional structure or even what the other players were playing. This style comes very close to the right extreme of our improvisational continuum.

For the first 10 years of rock and roll's history, improvisation certainly existed, but it was rather conservative. Because many of the players could not read music, the songs and arrangements were made up in their heads. Once set, there was an attempt to perform the song more or less the same way each time. Inevitably, no two performances would ever be exactly the same; performers could make small internal changes with each performance. Chuck Berry, Little Richard, and Jerry Lee Lewis were the most improvisational; the least improvisational early rock styles were the soft rock styles and, of course, Motown, but even these were, to some extent, improvisational.

However, with some of the British blues-based bands, such as the Yardbirds, and the psychedelic rock bands, such as the Dead, rock improvisation crosses over the imaginary center point on our continuum. When Eric Clapton took off on one of his 30-minute **rave-ups**, rock approached the level of improvisation known in jazz since the early 1940s. When the Dead performed one of their 30-minute pieces without benefit of a previously agreed-on structure, they moved to a new level of rock improvisation. On *Electric Ladyland*, Jimi Hendrix improvises extensively, at times approaching the rock equivalent of free jazz. Improvisation will be increasingly relevant to our study of rock throughout the 1970s.

One by-product of this increasing emphasis on improvisation is the enhanced status of the instrumentalist. Prior to the mid-1960s, the rock and roll star was the singer; instrumentalists were usually considered necessary baggage. Frankly, it is difficult to name many rock stars prior to 1965 whose reputations were built on playing, rather than singing. However, since the mid-1960s, the skillful instrumental improviser has gradually ascended to the level of the rock singer. Examples are guitarists such as Clapton, Hendrix, Jeff Beck, John McLaughlin, Pete Townshend, and Eddie Van Halen or keyboardists such as Keith Emerson and Rick Wakeman, and even drummers such as Carl Palmer, Billy Cobham, and Danny Seraphine.

This Musical Close-Up is titled "The Art of Improvisation." Improvisation is truly an art; like most arts, it involves some rather indefinable elements (sometimes called

inspiration or *intuition*) as well as some relatively objective elements. In some ways, improvisation is the ultimate musical expression because it combines the skills of both the performer and the composer. The improviser must think (or feel) what to play and then play it, all within a split second. It is a difficult thing to do and a difficult thing to teach. Like any other skill, one can learn the objective rudiments of the skill but not be able to add the intuitive element. So what are the rudiments of improvisation? What do good improvisers (rock, jazz, or whatever) need to know, and what are they doing when they improvise?

First, they must have total technical mastery of their instrument (and this can include voice, by the way). It does no good whatsoever to have the greatest musical inspiration of all time and then not be able to play it. Second, the improviser must have an absolutely solid feeling for rhythm. Rhythm must be internalized; that is, the improviser needs to be able to feel the rhythm inside and automatically, without counting. Third, the improviser must thoroughly understand chords and scales, that is, the way musical pitches are organized vertically and horizontally. These two terms—*vertical* and *horizontal*—may be a bit confusing to the nonmusician. **Vertical organization** refers to musical sounds that occur simultaneously, that is, chords:

vertical organization:

The diagram shows a musical staff with two parts. The left part is a C9 chord, labeled 'C9' below it, with notes C, D, E, G, and Bb. The right part is a melodic line in 4/4 time, with notes C, D, E, G, Bb, E, G, Bb, Bb. Above the staff, labels (F), (A), *, and ** are placed above the notes E, G, Bb, and Bb respectively. Below the staff, labels (F) and (A) are placed below the notes E and G respectively, with arrows pointing up to them. The notes Bb and Bb are labeled with (A) below them, with arrows pointing up to them.

The chord shown happens all at once; it contains five different pitches (C-D-E-G-Bb). If the improviser is thinking vertically, he or she automatically knows that those five notes will work in whatever line is improvised. The in-between notes (F and A) can work, too; for example, they could be used as passing notes between two chord tones (*) or as a neighbor to a chord tone (**).

Horizontal organization refers to a musical line, such as a melody, that unfolds note by note in time. Scales organize musical pitch material in a horizontal way:

horizontal organization:

The diagram shows two measures of music. Measure 1 is a scale, labeled '(1)' and '(scale)' below it, with notes C, D, Eb, F, G, A, Bb, C. Measure 2 is a melodic line, labeled '(2)' above it, with notes C, Eb, F, G, Bb, A, Bb, D, C. The notes are written on a staff with a treble clef and a 4/4 time signature.

Thus, if an improviser knows that the collection of pitches shown in measure 1 is the scale used for a certain song, he or she is fairly safe creating an improvisational line using those pitches (such as the line in measure 2). Even so, the improviser needs to be thinking vertically and rhythmically because how those notes are placed within the measure can determine whether they sound right against the prevailing chord.

Styles in improvisation change just like everything else. In some styles, vertical thinking predominated; players primarily thought in terms of chords and shaped improvisational lines to fit chords. More recently, players have leaned toward the horizontal (or *linear*) approach, thus allowing the scale and melodic line to take precedence over the chord. The latter approach often leads to a more dissonant sound because the horizontally conceived line may take the player outside of the notes of the prevailing chord.

It is really a rather amazing process. The effective improviser must unerringly feel the rhythm, know the chord progression (vertical thinking) and the appropriate scale (horizontal thinking), dream up something interesting that fits, and then be able to play it, all instantaneously. The best improvisers also have some overall idea about the shape of their total solo. Is it to be a structured length (e.g., 16 bars or 32 bars), or is it open-ended (“nod when you are through”)? Knowing that, what does one do within that time frame? One can start on low pitches, move to higher pitches, and then end low; or one can start low and gradually move upward toward the end in a straight line; or one can envision a series of peaks. What about dynamics? Does one start softly and build volume to the end, or start loudly, get softer in the middle, and then build to a big finish? Then there are considerations of rhythmic activity. One can begin with sparse rhythmic activity (just a few notes per bar) and build to a flurry of notes at the end, or begin with a burst, calm down in the middle, and end with another burst. Sometimes a player will take one short musical idea (called a motive) and work it over and over, playing it on different pitches, fragmenting it, extending it, changing its rhythm or accents, or even inverting it (changing the direction of the notes).

Shaping one’s improvisation is as important as playing the right scale or chord or rhythm. Nothing is worse than a solo that goes nowhere—one that aimlessly wanders from beginning to end, with a lot of meaningless notes in between. Far too many rock fans tune in to the singer and the lyrics and tune out during the instrumental break, but in a good band, some of the most exciting music happens not during the vocals, but during the instrumental improvisation. Begin to pay careful attention to such solos. Is the player “on” rhythmically? Is the soloist really in harmony with the chords the others are playing? Or if the solo seems to be dissonant at times, is it intentional (“outside” playing) or unintentional (mistakes)? Can you hear motives being developed (sequenced, fragmented, inverted, repeated, etc.)? And is there direction to the solo, or is the player just playing notes? Improvisation is an art. Most players live for their creative moment in the spotlight—their solo. Perceptive listening is almost as difficult as good improvising. It takes practice, but if you try, you will be surprised at how rewarding it is to really appreciate a great improvisation.

Jazz Rock

KEY TERMS

quartal
tritone

key centers
fugue

augmentation
ritard

Overview: A Tale of Sibling Rivalry and Its Resolution

Imagine a small family consisting of a mother, a father, and a teenager named Fred. Fred has been the pride and joy of his family for some 13 years and is quite a sophisticated, intelligent, and “cool” kid.

Then one day, a newcomer appears on the scene: a cute, cuddly baby sister. Suddenly, Fred is no longer the center of attention. Everyone devotes more time and attention to baby Susie, which makes Fred very jealous. After all, this gurgling little brat does not have one tenth of Fred’s intelligence, sophistication, or coolness!

Yet some years later, perhaps because Fred and Susie both come from the same roots, they find that they have much in common. In fact, as they become young adults, they find that they have much to share with each other.

No analogy is perfect, but Fred and Susie are a lot like jazz and rock. Both jazz and rock have a similar black parentage. Jazz is half a century older than rock but went through the same growing pains. By the time rock was born, jazz had become a quite sophisticated style of music. Baby rock and roll was starting all over again, with 12-bar blues, simple and basic rhythms, and illiterate musicians. Yet it was getting all of the attention, shoving jazz off the radio and out of the record stores.

The typical jazz player of the mid-1950s resented rock for two basic reasons: one musical and one financial. First, compared with jazz, rock was a musical infant. Jazz players were often superb technicians on their instruments; most early rock players could barely play three chords. Jazz rhythms, harmonic structures, improvisations, and forms had evolved to a high level of sophistication; rock was basic, simple, and musically mundane. To add insult to injury, rock and roll was lifting money right out of the jazzman’s pocket. More and more, the jobs at the schools, the country clubs, and the recording studios went

to youngsters who could play what was selling: rock and roll. And the rockers had no interest in jazz. Rock was easier and more fun to play and listen to; besides, it was the big moneymaker—and so the two siblings split. It would be some years later that they would find a mutual alliance.

By the late 1960s, a new, young generation of musicians was hitting the scene. Typically, they had been born in the mid- to late 1940s, and they had grown up with rock. However, their musical appetites yearned for new, more challenging sounds and more sophisticated demands, yet still in a style closely related to rock. The answer: Blend the best of jazz and rock.

Beginning around 1966, several bands appeared with the intent of mixing rock with an older blues band style that featured horns, including the Blues Project, the Paul Butterfield Blues Band, and the Barry Goldberg Blues Band. Typically, these bands added a horn line (trumpets and saxes) that played riffs, patterns, and interludes drawn from the style of black bands from the 1940s and 1950s. These early bands were the progenitors of the jazz rock style.

In their third album, *Resurrection of Pigboy Crabshaw* (1967), the Butterfield Blues Band included horns (trumpets and saxes). One member of the Butterfield band, guitarist Mike Bloomfield, went on to the Electric Flag, another early model of the jazz rock band. The Electric Flag had evolved from the earlier Barry Goldberg Band and consisted of Goldberg, Bloomfield, drummer Buddy Miles, and a changing membership that totaled between eight and 10 players, including three horns. The Flag lasted only a year and a half. Their first album, *A Long Time Comin'* (1968), gives a good idea of their style. Listen to “Killing Floor” from that album; it is a 12-bar blues and illustrates how the horns were integrated into the fabric of the song.

Of more long-lasting importance was the Blues Project. It came originally out of the folk music scene in Greenwich Village. As was the rage in 1965, the band turned electric and played the new folk rock sound, but they also played an electrified blues style. The membership vacillated from the beginning in 1965 through 1968, while they released several moderately successful albums. Along with the usual instrumentation, the Project included flute and saxophone. Two of its members, Al Kooper and Steve Katz, recruited two colleagues from a recent Café au Go Go (New York City) jam session—drummer Bobby Colomby and bassist Jim Fielder—and formed a new band. They added four horn players and called their new band Blood, Sweat, and Tears (BS&T).

Blood, Sweat, and Tears

Al Kooper was no newcomer to the music business. At 13, he had been a member of the Royal Teens when they recorded the novelty hit “Short Shorts” (number 3 in 1958). He reemerged as coauthor of a number 1 song in early 1965, “This Diamond Ring,” recorded by Gary Lewis and the Playboys. Kooper also played organ on Bob Dylan’s “Like a Rolling Stone,” creating one of the most memorable keyboard riffs in rock.

Drummer Bobby Colomby had played both jazz and rock drums. Jim Fielder played briefly with the Mothers of Invention and the Buffalo Springfield before joining BS&T. For the horn line, the first recruit was Fred Lipsius, who, in addition to alto sax and clarinet, played piano and arranged. He had studied at Boston’s Berklee College of Music. Dick Halligan was hired as a trombone player but later proved invaluable on flute, keyboards, and as an arranger. He had earned a master of arts degree from the Manhattan School of Music and was oriented more toward classical and jazz styles. Randy Brecker and Jerry Weiss, both trumpeters, rounded out the original eight-man lineup.

Appearing at the Café au Go Go in Greenwich Village, the new BS&T met with immediate critical and popular approval around New York City. Their first album, *Child Is*



Blood, Sweat, and Tears (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Father to the Man (1968), had moments of brilliance that foreshadowed subsequent sounds, but it was uneven, revealing the tensions already present between those in the band who favored rock and those who leaned more toward jazz. Two of the album's better cuts are Kooper's "My Days Are Numbered" and Randy Newman's "Just One Smile." Near the end of the latter song, the band breaks into a

genuine polyphonic texture that nicely offsets the melody-and-accompaniment texture of the balance of the song. More bluesy singing by Kooper may be heard in "Somethin's Goin' On" (also some fine dirty sax work by Lipsius). The strains of the "Overture" are heard at the end of the album, now titled "Underture."

Blood, Sweat, and Tears's first album rose to number 47 on the album charts and contained no Top 40 single hits. The tensions within the group culminated in Kooper's, Brecker's, and Weiss's departures. The rest of the band decided to try again, with new personnel. To replace Weiss and Brecker, Lew Soloff and Chuck Winfield were added. Soloff had earned his bachelor's degree from the Eastman School of Music. Winfield received his bachelor's and master's degrees from the Juilliard School of Music. Both trumpeters were steeped in classical background. To replace Kooper, David Clayton-Thomas, a Canadian singer, joined as lead singer in 1968. Their next album, *Blood, Sweat, and Tears*, exploded to the number 1 position in early 1969. Three hits came from the album: "You've Made Me So Very Happy," "And When I Die," and "Spinning Wheel"—all reaching the number 2 position. BS&T received an unprecedented 10 Grammy nominations, eventually winning three awards.

"Spinning Wheel," by Clayton-Thomas, the album's biggest hit, reveals a bit of what jazz rock was about. It begins with a distinctive jazz chord (an augmented ninth chord). Out of that chord comes a gentle rock song, but at the instrumental break, the rock beat gives way to a jazz beat, complete with a jazz walking bass and Lew Soloff's jazz-style solo. The rock beat returns as Clayton-Thomas reenters. The song fades on a curious calliopelike sound over an accompanying vamp that alternates 9/8 and 6/8 meters.

Perhaps the most impressive cut on the album is the lengthy "Blues—Part II," essentially an introduction to the band, featuring solos by various members. It is a through-composed form, meaning that each section of the piece is new; none of the earlier sections returns. The piece begins with an organ solo that is an impressive working out of a motive stated at the outset: a series of rising perfect fourths (an interval created by playing a note, such as C, then skipping two notes [D and E], and then playing the next note [F]). Dick Halligan develops the **quartal** motive by transposing, fragmenting, extending, and inverting it. As the Listening Guide shows, "Blues—Part II" then proceeds through a series of sections featuring a sequence of soloists and styles.

Odd meters (five beats, seven beats, etc.) and changing meters had been a part of jazz since the 1950s. Except for a few experiments by the Beatles and the Byrds, such metric experiments were uncommon in rock. However, jazz rock groups helped bring them into mainstream pop music. Steve Katz's "Sometimes in Winter" is basically in quadruple meter, but at the bridge section, the meter changes to 9/8 (in effect doubling the speed of the beat and making nine beats per measure), then back to quadruple, then again back to 9/8,

Listening Guide: "Blues—Part II" (Blood, Sweat, and Tears)

0:00–1:56	Section A: part 1	Organ solo. Statement of quartal (built in fourths) motive; sequenced five steps lower. Extended by improvisation based on motive.
1:57–2:36	Section A: part 2	Rhythmic quartal chords; motive sequenced.
2:37–3:30	Section B	Rhythmic pattern on quartal chords (organ). Horn line enters (briefly). Bass solo (light drum accompaniment) in jazz style.
3:31–4:22	Section C	Drum solo (jazz style).
4:23–6:31	Section D: part 1	After brief transition by band, jazzy sax solo over rock-style bass riff and light drums. Ritard at end.
6:32–7:53	Section D: part 2	Sax solo continues, but in a slower, softer jazz style. Accompanied by bass, guitar, and drums.
7:54–8:46	Section E	Bass states familiar rock riff (similar to earlier riffs by Cream and Iron Butterfly) four times; horn line harmonizes the riff, which becomes the accompaniment to a rock-style sax solo.
8:47–10:08	Section F: part 1	Short transition leads to vocal entry. Style is extremely relaxed at beginning (to allow for increase in tension to climax in next part).
10:09–11:45	Section F: part 2	New two-bar ascending scalar riff in organ and bass; vocal intensifies. Horn line joins the riff, as vocal moves to shouting, brass move riff to high range. As climax is reached, recording fades to segue to next track on album.

followed by a measure of triple meter ($3/4$), before finally returning to $4/4$. The horns join in a brief chorale at this point, accompanied by a running bass line; the chorale ends in a five-beat measure on another jazz harmony (a major ninth chord with a lowered fifth).

All in all, *Blood, Sweat, and Tears* is an exceptionally strong album, but some hard rock purists felt that the jazz rock fusion was too cerebral, too tight, and too sophisticated to be so-called real rock. However, BS&T opened up a whole new audience for rock. Jazz fans and some of the more open-minded classical listeners could find music to respect and enjoy in BS&T. Those rock fans who were willing to listen (fortunately, record sales suggest there were many) discovered that they could enjoy a well-played, technically more sophisticated style of rock. In late 1969, BS&T undertook a major tour that included 55 performances in nearly every major U.S. city and at many colleges and universities. Among the dates on this tour was a precedent-setting engagement at Caesar's Palace on the Las Vegas strip. The big Vegas hotels had avoided rock acts until earlier in 1969, when the International Hotel had booked Elvis Presley. BS&T's three-day engagement at Caesar's

Palace broke the house attendance record set by Frank Sinatra, but the hard-core rock counterculture was aghast that a rock band would stoop to play to such an overtly upper-crust audience (the Beatles' 1963 Royal Command Performance had apparently slipped their minds). The reaction reveals that these so-called rock fans were not really viewing rock as music but as a sociocultural symbol. As Clayton-Thomas put it, "We didn't change our show for them [the Las Vegas audience]. We're playing our music the same way. It's not diluted one bit from the early days at the Café au Go Go or the early days of the Fillmore East or West" (Wise 1971). Nevertheless, some of the same people who had applauded BS&T earlier now howled in derision, even though the music had not changed.

Blood, Sweat, and Tears 3 (1970) revealed no lessening of quality from its predecessor. It yielded two more single hits: "Hi-De-Ho," by Gerry Goffin and Carole King, and "Lucretia MacEvil," by Clayton-Thomas. The latter is a strong rock piece flavored by jazz harmonies. It is followed by "Lucretia's Reprise," which begins with a jazz rock vamp based on the previous song's chord progression; Clayton-Thomas shouts a vocal improvisation before Lew Soloff enters with a particularly impressive trumpet solo. There is an effective version of James Taylor's "Fire and Rain" and a creative arrangement by Lipsius and Colomby of "Forty Thousand Headmen," a song composed by Traffic's Steve Winwood and Jim Capaldi. In the latter song, themes by classical composers Bartók ("Ballad" from *Fifteen Hungarian Peasant Songs*) and Prokofiev (*Lieutenant Kijè Suite*) and jazz pianist Thelonious Monk ("I Mean You") are artfully interwoven. Clayton-Thomas's vocal versatility is best shown in "Lonesome Suzie" as he covers the range from a soft, tender timbre to a full shouting style (including a falsetto). "Somethin' Comin' On" shows off Fred Lipsius in a fascinating sax solo; notice the effective transition to Halligan's organ solo.

The masterpiece of *Blood, Sweat, and Tears 3* is "Symphony for the Devil/Sympathy for the Devil," a stunningly creative arrangement of the Jagger-Richard song, which will be the subject of the Musical Close-Up at the end of this chapter.

There was one personnel change prior to *Blood, Sweat, and Tears 4* (1971): Jerry Hyman was replaced by Dave Barger, who played low brass instruments (trombone, bass trombone, tuba, baritone). He holds a degree in music education from Boston University. The hard-rocking "Go Down Gamblin'" was the only Top 40 hit from this album. Ever since the late 1940s, jazz players had been extending the upper range of their horns, so, of course, the jazz rock horn lines followed suit with upper-range playing. Note the trumpet break on "Go Down Gamblin'," as the top note reaches above high C, but a particularly impressive example is Dave Barger's solo on "Redemption." Beginning a short motive near the bottom of the trombone range, he moves it up octave by octave until he reaches the upper end of the trumpet's range, reaching high C above the treble clef. Granted, it is virtually a squeal, but it is typical of jazz players' fascination with brass upper range.

As we discovered with more creative groups, such as the Beach Boys, the Beatles, and the Byrds, there are often small creative ideas worked into songs with such subtlety that one hardly notices. For example, on "Lisa, Listen to Me," as the instrumental break ends, Clayton-Thomas returns to the chorus, but as he sings the vocal line, the horn line imitates what he sings two beats later; the result is a brief but effective polyphony between the two lines. BS&T could have simply used the same accompaniment they had used on the first two choruses, but that is the creative mind at work: "This time, let's do it differently."

However, the bottom fell out for the group in 1971. Clayton-Thomas left in hopes of establishing a solo career. Having little success, he returned to the band in the mid-1970s, but by then, it was too late. Lipsius and Halligan, the band's most talented arrangers, also left, and by 1973, Katz and Winfield departed. Through the 1970s, there were several lead singers and a dizzying number of changes of instrumental personnel. The band swung like a pendulum between a more progressive jazz style and a heavier rock style. Album sales plummeted; the group's identity—and their magic—was gone.

Chicago

One of the awards given to BS&T as a result of its second album was *Billboard's* Trendsetter Award for 1970. It was an appropriate award, for BS&T did indeed set a trend that persisted through the 1970s and on into the 1980s. In the beginning, most jazz rock bands were simply variations on the BS&T format, but one of these groups proved to have staying power long after BS&T and the others had fallen by the wayside. Chicago's continuing popularity is matched only by a handful of performers in the history of rock. They had at least one Top 40 hit every year in the 1970s and eight hit singles in the 1980s. By 2000, Chicago could claim 18 gold albums and 13 platinum albums; from those albums came 20 Top 10 singles, including five that reached number 1. Few rock groups can claim that kind of success for over three decades.

The seven founding members of Chicago were all from the Windy City, except for Robert Lamm, who moved there as a teenager. They formed their first group in 1967, the Missing Links (later the Big Thing), and began playing in clubs throughout the Midwest. A college friend, James William Guercio, had moved to Los Angeles, where he was associated with Columbia Records as a record producer. Following his successful work with BS&T, he summoned his old friends to Los Angeles. They became the house band at the trendy club the Whisky a Go-Go and signed a Columbia contract under the name Chicago Transit Authority (CTA). The original CTA lineup included Lamm on keyboards, Peter Cetera on bass, Terry Kath on guitar, and Danny Seraphine on drums; the horn line consisted of Lee Loughnane on trumpet, James Pankow on trombone, and Walter Parazaider on flute and saxophones. Cetera, Kath, and Lamm alternated as lead singers.

Columbia released *Chicago Transit Authority* in the spring of 1969. Several songs ("Questions 67 and 68," "Beginnings," and "Does Anybody Really Know What Time It Is?") were not immediate successes, but made the Top 30 later (1971). *Chicago Transit Authority* is a double album (unusual for a first album). The opening cut, "Introduction," is similar in concept to "Blues—Part II," by BS&T. Beginning with a strong vocal and instrumental ensemble, it moves to a rapid-fire series of changing meters:

$$\left| \begin{array}{c} 4 \\ 4 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 6 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 7 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 6 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 6 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 7 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 6 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 6 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 7 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 6 \\ 8 \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} 3 \\ 4 \end{array} \right|$$

Not only is the tempo fast, but the 6/8 measures alternate between a feeling of 3 + 3 and 2 + 2 + 2, further obscuring the meter. The original key of G minor is lost as a series of sequences moves through several implied keys, before finally settling back into G minor for a trombone solo by Pankow. Loughnane follows with a trumpet solo in G major, complete with jazz-oriented harmonies. A guitar solo brings back both G minor and the rock feeling; the horn line returns to lead to the closing vocal. No blended form can ever hit directly in the middle between two styles. BS&T probably landed slightly to the jazz side of jazz rock, whereas Chicago lay more to the rock side.

When Chicago mayor Richard Daley initiated a lawsuit over the band's use of the name of the city's transportation department (Chicago Transit Authority), the band shortened its name to Chicago. *Chicago II* was released in early 1970 and contained two Top 10 singles, "Make Me Smile" and "25 or 6 to 4." "Colour My World," a plaintively beautiful and simple song, featuring a flute solo by Parazaider, was released in 1971 on the flip side of "Beginnings" and became popular in its own right. *Chicago III* (early 1971) was the third consecutive double album; it rose to number 2 and contained the hit singles "Free" and "Lowdown."

Chicago IV (number 3 in late 1971) was a four-record boxed set containing live recordings from the band's concert at Carnegie Hall. What followed was an amazing string of five consecutive number 1 albums, beginning in 1972 with *Chicago V* and going through 1975



Chicago, rock group (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

with *Chicago IX*, a greatest hits album. All told, *Chicago V* through *VIII* contained nine Top 30 hits, including six in the Top 10. During this period, the band's sound was very consistent. The only personnel change was one addition, Brazilian percussionist Laudir de Oliveira in 1974 (on *Chicago VII* and subsequent albums).

Perhaps the most interesting album is *Chicago VII* because it diverges from the typical Chicago sound. Appearing on this album were producer Guercio (acoustic guitar and bass), the Pointer Sisters, and Beach Boys Carl and Dennis Wilson and Al Jardine. The album also explores (lightly) electronic keyboards, including the ARP synthesizer and the Mellotron. The different sounds of *Chicago VII* are heard on side 1. "Prelude to Aire" begins with bongos and tom-toms; Parazaid's rhythmically complex solo is accompanied by increasingly sophisticated cross rhythms in percussion and the sounds of a Mellotron. "Aire" features the more typical Chicago horn line, but in a fast 7/8 meter, complete with syncopations; at the guitar solo, the meter changes to 7/4 (half as fast as 7/8). The song ends with complicated ensemble patterns back in 7/8.

"Devil's Sweet" opens with soprano sax improvisations over chords built in perfect fourths. After some rather ethereal sounds on percussion, there is a lovely duet for flügelhorn and soprano sax. The 6/8 meter is full of syncopation. A delicate solo on drums, using wire brushes, provides a transition to the next section, written in duple meter (the 2/4 is reinforced by Seraphine), but with its bass line and horn ensemble in triple meter (3/4). Finally, a somewhat more normal rock sound emerges featuring guitar and synthesizer; a drum solo leads back to the earlier soprano sax improvisations and the opening soprano sax-flügelhorn duet. All in all, side 1 of *Chicago VII* is the most adventurous and complex music on any of the Chicago albums.

Side 2 continues the experimentation of side 1. "Italian from New York" begins with bongos and ARP synthesizer (set in a sequencer pattern); chords built in fourths are set into an accompanying vamp, with five beats per measure. "Hanky Panky," after a syncopated

introduction, settles into a pure jazz trombone solo by Pankow. The album begins to return to normalcy with “Lifesaver”; it has a pounding piano beat (in 4/4 meter) and more typical Chicago horn lines. It also provides the album’s first vocals. The true Chicago fan must have breathed a massive sigh of relief as the last cut on side 2, “Happy Man,” began. Pete Cetera’s vocal over a bossa nova–style beat is a far cry from hard rock, but at least it approached the more familiar Chicago style.

Sides 3 and 4 of *Chicago VII* settle down to the more familiar Chicago sound. “(I’ve Been) Searchin’ So Long” is one of Chicago’s best songs, starting calmly but building to a big finish, with Cetera’s shouting vocal improvisations, active string lines, powerful bass lines, and high brass. “Mongonucleosis” is a strong Latin rock piece that may remind us of Buffalo Springfield songs like “Uno Mundo” and, of course, Santana. “Wishing You Were Here” is a beautiful song, profiting from the instantly recognizable Beach Boys harmonies. “Call on Me” is absolutely dead center typical Chicago in every way (it was the biggest hit on this album). In all, *Chicago VII* is a strong album, revealing the real versatility, creativity, and technical mastery of this band.

There was a momentary dip in Chicago’s popularity at the turn of the 1980s. *Chicago XIV* and *XV* (a greatest hits album) failed to make the Top 30, but with *Chicago 16*, the band regained its former strength with “Hard to Say I’m Sorry,” which became a number 1 single (their only previous number 1 hit had been “If You Leave Me Now” from *Chicago X*). The albums *Chicago 17* and *18* (1984 and 1986, respectively) sustained the group’s popularity and moved away from the jazz rock style toward a purer mainstream rock style.

Probably a central reason for Chicago’s remarkable longevity was the stability of its personnel. Six of the original seven members were still with the band as of 1986 (Terry Kath died from an accidental gunshot wound in January 1978). Although there had been additions and guest artists (e.g., the Beach Boys, the Pointer Sisters, and Maynard Ferguson), the basic nucleus remained intact. Of all of the jazz rock bands of the late 1960s to early 1970s, Chicago alone survived into the 1990s, with four of the original members still performing.

Other Jazz Rock Groups

Following in the footsteps of BS&T and Chicago were many bands that combined basic rock instrumentation with horn lines of varying descriptions. Most failed to achieve significant commercial success, but one that did find its way onto the charts was Chase. Bill Chase had played lead trumpet with Woody Herman’s big band for a few years, before organizing his own jazz rock band. The nine-man band, Chase, took a slightly different approach to the typical jazz rock horn line: It consisted of four trumpets. This emphasis on trumpets—especially in the high range—gave Chase a distinctive sound. Their first album, *Chase*, was released in 1971 and yielded the hit single “Get It On,” a hard-rocking tune in the best BS&T and Chicago tradition. On another of this album’s songs, “Reflections,” Chase used a tape delay echo effect on his trumpet solo; the delay was such that he ended up playing a duet with himself.

By the time of their third album, *Pure Music* (1974), the band contained only one original member—Bill Chase himself. It was more jazz-influenced jazz rock fusion, with little of the strong rock feeling of some of the earlier Chase cuts. Tragically, on August 9, 1974, Chase and three other band members were killed in a plane crash.

Other bands to follow Blood, Sweat, and Tear’s and Chicago’s lead were Dreams (which included original BS&T member Randy Brecker and his brother Mike), White Elephant (a 17-member band that also included both Breckers), and Symphonic Metamorphosis (a band made up of eight members of the Detroit Symphony).

By about 1972, the first phase of jazz rock was over (except, of course, for Chicago). But the jazz influence had added new concepts to rock and reinforced a few previous ideas.

Jazz brought with it a set of more complex chords, odd and changing meters, complex superimposed rhythms and syncopations, and new levels of complexity. It reinforced the concept of the lengthy and complex instrumental improvisation and added new sophistication to it. Finally, most previous rock groups had considered horns representative of “old” music and, if used at all, were better reserved for background chords or intermittent punctuations. With jazz rock, it became more evident that horns could take their place on the front lines with the lead guitar. Sometimes the jazz rock groups would move smoothly between a rock style and a jazz style; at other times, the rock beat and bass line would underlie a jazz-style solo.

Just as rock had done with folk and gospel influences earlier, it absorbed the new jazz influence and broadened as a style. Although such external influences are sometimes decried by rock purists, rock’s ability to integrate stylistic devices from coexisting sources is one of its strengths—and a primary reason why it continues to be a living, evolving, and dynamically vital style.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP:

AN ANALYSIS OF “SYMPHONY FOR THE DEVIL/ SYMPATHY FOR THE DEVIL” (BLOOD, SWEAT, AND TEARS)

In the Musical Close-Up at the end of Chapter 7, we analyzed a song by the Rolling Stones called “Sympathy for the Devil.” It is an effective rock song, but it is relatively simple musically. There were only four chords in the entire 6-minute song; the form was simple and repetitive; there was little or no change in the meter, beat, or rhythmic texture; there were only a few changes in timbre and no key changes; and the melody was simple and repetitive.

On *Blood, Sweat, and Tears* 3, there is an arrangement of “Sympathy for the Devil” that so utterly transforms the original song that, for all practical purposes, a new composition has been created. Dick Halligan’s arrangement, in fact, seems to require a new title—hence “Symphony for the Devil/Sympathy for the Devil.” To help you understand what a talented arranger can do when he or she takes a rather simple song and transforms it into a creative landmark, we will undertake a rather thorough analysis of the BS&T version of “Sympathy.”

The BS&T version is nearly 8 minutes long and is in three major sections, titled “Emergence,” “Devil’s Game,” and “Submergence.” The Rolling Stones tune actually appears only in the “Devil’s Game” section. “Emergence” and “Submergence” consist of entirely new material. The Listening Guide provides an overall perspective of the BS&T composition.

In “Emergence,” we are presented with a 20-note musical theme that we shall call theme A:

tritone

tritone

12-tone series with a repeated G \flat

E	B \flat	B \flat	A	F	A \flat	G	D	E \flat	D \flat	C	G	F \sharp	G \sharp	G \flat	B \flat	B \flat	C	F	E
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20

Listening Guide: "Symphony for the Devil/Sympathy for the Devil" (Blood, Sweat, and Tears)

0:00–1:10	Emergence: Theme A	Theme A (see Musical Close-Up for detailed discussion).
1:11–1:23	Emergence: Fanfare	Series of drum rolls leads to a dissonant brass fanfare.
1:24–2:03	Devil's Game: Labyrinth Chorus I (Theme B)	Theme B is original Rolling Stones tune; six phrases (see Musical Close-Up). Transition from sixth phrase to Chorus II (organ) based on notes 2–6 of Theme A.
2:04–2:40	Devil's Game: Labyrinth Chorus II (Theme B)	Chorus II has different accompaniment (see Musical Close-Up). Transition from sixth phrase to Chorus III (horn line) based on notes 2–16 of Theme A.
2:41–3:18	Devil's Game: Labyrinth Chorus III (Theme B)	Chorus III uses another new accompaniment (see Musical Close-Up). Note the transition between fifth and sixth phrases (notes 2–9 of Theme A). Last phrase is a cappella.
3:19–4:05	Devil's Game: Satan's Dance (Part 1)	Part 1 is a polyphonic section based on fragments of Theme A (see Musical Close-Up for detailed discussion).
4:06–4:52	Devil's Game: Satan's Dance (Part 2)	Improvised sax solo accompanied by drums and dissonant brass chords.
4:53–5:37	Devil's Game: Satan's Dance (Part 3)	Fugue section (see Musical Close-Up for discussion).
5:38–6:32	Devil's Game: The Demand (Chorus IV)	Chorus IV based on Rolling Stone lyrics. Creates an overall arch by beginning with whispers, increasing volume and intensity, and then decreasing instrumentation down to solo bass (see Musical Close-Up). Notes 1–12 of Theme A accompany the spoken lyrics.
6:33–7:04	Submergence: Contemplation	Theme A returns (notes 1–15) in piano.
7:05–7:44	Submergence: Return	Theme A backward. Begun by celesta; completed by piano, bass, trombone (as at the beginning).

Theme A emerges from the dark, low range of the trombone, bass guitar, and piano (as if the devil were hesitantly crawling out of some trapdoor from hell). First, we hear notes 1 and 2 of theme A. These two notes are significant. The interval between E and B \flat (notes 1 and 2) is a **tritone**, that is, it consists of three whole steps. Because the tritone has some unique acoustic characteristics, it was nicknamed many centuries ago *diabolus in musica*—"the devil in music." What better way to begin a song about the devil than with the tritone?

After notes 1 and 2, theme A starts over, giving us notes 1–6; then it starts over again, this time rushing, with no regular beat, from note 1 to note 15. There is a pause before moving to notes 16–20 (with some more pauses). Theme A ends where it began, on E.

Throughout this century, some classical composers have sought to avoid **key centers**. One way to achieve this was to compose a series of pitches in which all 12 different notes were used with no repetition (thus avoiding emphasis on any one note). Once devised, this series of pitches was used over and over to generate the balance of the composition. Theme A has 11 different pitches before it repeats G (notes 7 and 12); the very next note (F \sharp) would be the 12th different pitch. Thus the first 13 notes of theme A are like a 12-note series with one repeated note; notes 14–20 are not composed by any system, but are simply the result of Halligan's intuition. Interestingly, the highest note in theme A is B \flat ; from it, theme A descends to the final note, E, thus outlining another B \flat to E tritone.

After this darkly ominous presentation of theme A, the celesta plays a sequence that repeats notes 2–6 and ends on notes 7 and 8 (transposed to fit the last part of the sequence):

celesta:

trumpet and clarinet:

(2) (3) (4) (5) (6) 2-6 2-6 7 and 8

(theme A) ← transposed → ← transposed →

Notice that the celesta sequence is accompanied by accent notes at the beginning of each pattern (trumpets and clarinet); these notes are B \flat , B \sharp and A—notes 2–4 of theme A. Returning to the low register, the trombone, bass, piano, and trumpet finish theme A from notes 9–20 (untransposed). As the last note (E) is held in the bass, various pitches are added, creating a rather dissonant chord, but the pitches are not random: They are notes 1–8 of theme A.

As this chord releases, a series of four descending drumrolls enters. As they increase in volume, the devil prepares to speak. A brass fanfare is appropriate, but not a “pretty” one. Instead, the brass play a brief but dissonant fanfare, the notes of which are drawn from theme A (notes 1–15).

Part 2, “Devil’s Game,” begins with a section called “Labyrinth.” As the devil introduces himself, we are introduced to theme B, the tune of the Rolling Stones’ “Sympathy for the Devil.” You may recall that there were six phrases in each chorus of the original song. “Labyrinth” begins with the first chorus, but instead of using the same accompaniment throughout, BS&T devised a slightly different accompaniment for each phrase:

Chorus !:

Phrase 1: “please allow me”—voice; guitar on first beat of each bar

Phrase 2: “I’ve been around”—add piano (E) on third beat of each bar

Phrase 3: “I was around”—add syncopated bass guitar

Phrase 4: “made damn sure”—add syncopated drum notes

Phrase 5: “pleased to meet you”—full beat and accompaniment

Phrase 6: “what’s confusing you”—suspend accompaniment in second bar

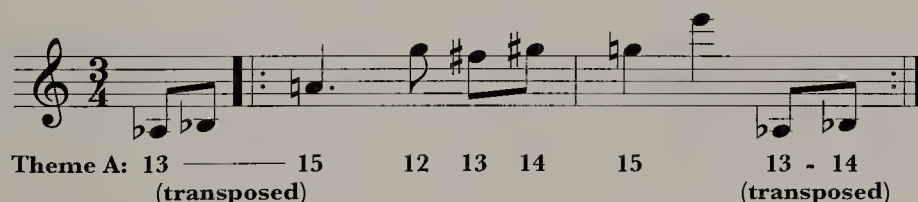
The second chorus is not set in the same way as the first chorus. For example, the phrase 1 accompaniment includes organ chords; phrase 2 adds brass chords, each of which starts softly and gets louder; and the bass line falls an octave as phrase 3 begins.

The third chorus is accompanied by an interesting interplay between the horn line and the electric guitar. The horns play a chord at the beginning of each measure; even though the chords descend within each phrase, the overall pattern rises from phrase to phrase. The guitar is also gradually working up to a high note near the end of the fourth phrase.

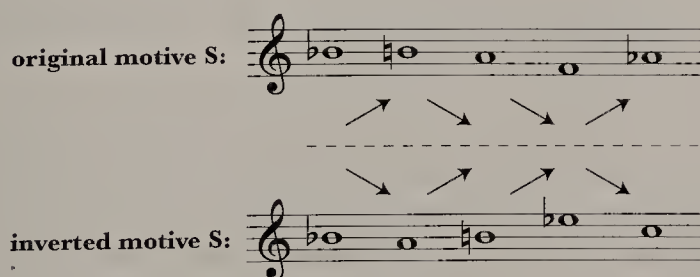
"Satan's Dance" is, in effect, an instrumental break midway through the piece. It consists of three internal sections: (1) a polyphonic section based on fragments of theme A, (2) a sax solo, and (3) a brief **fugue**—a polyphonic technique in which a theme (called a subject) is first presented alone and is then imitated successively by other voices or instruments at different pitch levels—on theme A. The opening polyphonic section begins with a five-note motive derived from theme A:



For ease of reference, we will call this motive (notes 2–6 of theme A) motive S (for "Sympathy"). After motive S is introduced, it generates a falling sequence that is imitated at a delay of one beat (by keyboards). Then the same thing is done again, but by two muted trumpets and trombone, creating a three-way descending imitative sequence. Next, the piano plays a short interlude based on notes 12–15 of theme A:



This is followed by a rising sequence, again with imitation, accompanied by rising chords in the horns. At the top of this rising pattern, motive S returns. Finally, Halligan inverts motive S; that is, where the original motive goes up, the inverted motive goes down, and vice versa:



Using inverted motive S, Halligan creates another rising sequence, played in imitation (delayed by one beat) on keyboards. This leads to an improvised sax solo, which is accompanied by wild-sounding drums and dissonant brass chords. The horn players produce a series of squeals as the solo comes to an end.

“Satan’s Dance” ends in a fugue. This little fugue begins with theme A (notes 1–15), but not at its original pitch level; interestingly, it is transposed up a tritone (the devil again):

Theme A: (transposed)

This subject (played by low brass) is imitated beginning in the sixth measure by trumpet. This is accompanied by the continuation of the lower brass line, creating a two-part (and eventually, a three-part) polyphonic texture. Finally, in the 11th measure of the fugue, the second occurrence of the subject (in trumpet) ends, and the third entry occurs, this time in the low range of the piano and bass. This time, the subject is extended to become the full theme A and is played at its original pitch:

Theme A: 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20

Over this bass presentation of theme A, the upper lines continue playing counter-melodies. As theme A reaches notes 16–20, the rhythmic values are lengthened (this is called **augmentation**); the beat slows down (**ritard**). As note 20 is reached, a gong is struck. The fourth chorus is set still differently from the earlier choruses. The lyrics begin in a whisper; the organ accompanies these whispers by building up a huge chord one note at a time. The notes, beginning with the low E, are notes 1–12 of theme A. As the chord gets louder with each added note, the whispers increase in volume, finally reaching a loud, full voice as the devil demands sympathy and courtesy or he will “lay your soul to waste.” The climax of the fourth chorus is reached as the organ chord and the spoken lyrics reach their highest volume; suddenly, they stop, and the devil sarcastically says, “Pleased to meet you!” As the accompaniment reenters (on “hope you guess my name”), the instruments begin dropping out successively, until nothing is left but the bass. The fourth chorus has created its own little arch, beginning with one bass note, and whispers, building to a climax and ending with a solo bass line.

It is time for the devil to return; “Submergence” depicts this process. First, there is “Contemplation.” We hear theme A much as we did in the beginning, starting with notes 1 and 2, then notes 1–6, and finally, notes 1–15. However, theme A stops on note 15; then there is a free spinning round and round notes 13–15, as they get louder and faster, then softer and slower (a mini-arch). The piano’s damper pedal is held down throughout “Contemplation,” creating a kind of blur. If the devil emerged to the sounds of theme A played forward, it is only reasonable that he submerge while theme A is played backward. Thus, in “Return,” theme A begins on note 15 and moves backward to note 1 (played by celesta). Trombone, bass, and piano play notes 6–1, then notes 2 and 1 (the tritone again). Finally, after a pause, the devil shuts the trap door to hell behind him as note 1 of theme A sounds one more time.

Arranger Halligan has illustrated creative use of every parameter of music: form, timbre, harmony, rhythm, melody, volume, and texture. Although this version is based on the Stones' original material and must therefore be considered an arrangement, perhaps you can see that it is virtually a new composition. To compare the original version with the BS&T version would be like comparing IBM's most sophisticated computer system with a pocket calculator; each has its place, and we may use and enjoy both, but let us understand and appreciate the difference.

Art Rock

KEY TERMS

suites
song cycles
rock operas

musical theater
pointillistic
codetta

coda
pedal point
ostinato

Overview: Rock as a “Legitimate” Musical Vocabulary

Prior to the mid-1960s, rock and roll was generally considered a simple and musically inconsequential style that appealed almost exclusively to teenagers, but then the Beatles and others demonstrated that rock could be something more. After all, rock and roll is a musical language; like all languages, it can be used to articulate substantive ideas as well as lighter subjects.

In the late 1960s, some rock artists began to explore more folk styles; some moved toward country; others ventured into jazz and new electronic techniques. In each case, rock as a style was enriched. There was an exciting realization that rock, as a musical language, was flexible and could be enhanced by relating to other musical styles. Rock was not limited to 2.5 minutes of “walk-talk” lyrics over three basic chords.

We have already met some of these pioneers: the Beatles, the Byrds, Dylan, Aretha Franklin, Jimi Hendrix, and Blood, Sweat, and Tears (BS&T). To some musicians, the question was, Just how far can rock really go? Can the musical language of rock be used to create major works of art, comparable to those of the classical tradition? Why not? After all, symphonies are made out of melodies, rhythms, chords, timbres, textures, and forms; why cannot rock-style versions of these elements be used to create similar works? It was just a matter of time before creative musical minds would try to answer the question.

The attempts to combine rock with classical music brought a storm of criticism. Calling this new style “self-conscious” and “pretentious,” critics seemed to assume the worst motives on the part of the new musical explorers, accusing them of “lame affectations of a cultured sensibility” and of seeking “to dignify their work, to make it acceptable for upper-class approbation” (Miller 1980, 347–48). The rock musicians who explored the new

ground of *art rock* or *classical rock* were risking condemnation by the hard-core rock establishment. That establishment, which prided itself on its rebelliousness, could be quite intolerant when some rock musicians ventured into new areas.

There were six typical approaches to combining classical elements and rock elements:

1. Quote a classical excerpt in the midst of a rock song. Cute, but this approach is often simplistic and hardly constitutes a true blending of styles.
2. Use a classical melody as the basis of a rock song. Again, no real stylistic blending takes place; the result is simply a rock song with a borrowed tune.
3. Create a series of rock songs conceived as units in a larger form. Such attempts are often called **suites** or **song cycles**. If the songs are not unified in some way, this can, in fact, merely be the pretense of classicism. However, if there is some discernible thematic unity or development within the set, the results can be satisfying.
4. Adapt a full classical work to a rock-style performance. Here a greater part of the classical work is borrowed: the form, the chords, the melodies, and the internal development as the classical composer intended it. These elements are then transformed by rock instrumentation, texture, and rhythmic interpretation. If done well, this method does offer a true mixture of styles.
5. Create a work for rock group and classical ensemble. This, too, can be quite successful. Here a rock group performs as a partner with a symphony orchestra or other classically oriented ensemble. Often, musical material is presented in a straight version by the orchestra and is then used as the basis of further elaboration, in a rock style, by the rock group. Sometimes the two units come together to create a total blend.
6. Using the musical language of rock, create an extended work modeled after a classical form. This is the most challenging approach but one that can be the most successful. Length is not the criterion. A long rock piece is just that: a long rock piece; if there is thematic development and purposeful structure, though, the result can indeed be comparable to classical models, simply using a different musical language. The most impressive achievements in art rock lie within this category. In this chapter, we will concentrate on the fifth and sixth approaches, with occasional references to the fourth.

Rock with Orchestra

The Moody Blues

Most art rock explorations came from British bands. The first major effort was by the Moody Blues, a band formed around 1964 as a blues-based band. After an early blues-oriented hit, "Go Now!" (number 10 in 1965), two of the original members departed. With the addition of Justin Hayward and John Lodge, the band purchased a Mellotron and changed musical directions. They issued *Days of Future Passed* in mid-1968; it became their first successful album in the United States, rising to number 3. "Tuesday Afternoon (Forever Afternoon)" hit the U.S. charts (number 24), as did "Nights in White Satin" on its reissue in 1972 (number 2).

Days of Future Passed was recorded with the London Symphony Orchestra and was a concept album. Although important as a prototype, the album was a pleasant but rather superficial attempt at rock-classical confluence. There is no real simultaneous interaction between the orchestra and the band and no real blending of styles. The orchestra provides an overturelike beginning and then provides transitions between the band's songs. At times, the Mellotron provides an orchestra-like accompaniment for the band. Most of the rock songs are in a rather soft style, except for "Peak Hour." The orchestra's music, though well orchestrated, adheres to a late-19th-century style, one of the pitfalls of many rock-with-orchestra

experiments: Often the rock musician's idea of so-called classical music really refers to styles that are 50–100 years old, and the result is a curiously anachronistic blend between up-to-date rock and an out-of-date classical style.

The Moody Blues' popularity ebbed and flowed throughout the 1970s and on into the 1980s. They enjoyed peak popularity in the early 1970s with albums like *A Question of Balance* (number 3 in 1970), *Every Good Boy Deserves Favour* (number 2 in 1971), and *Seventh Sojourn* (number 1 in 1972), and again in 1981 with *Long Distance Voyager* (number 1). Their use of the Mellotron became an identifying feature, as did their sophisticated melodies, harmonies, and vocals.

Deep Purple

The next significant effort in the direction of rock with orchestra came from a second-wave British invasion band whose hard rock style would come to be called *heavy metal*. Deep Purple was founded by guitarist Ritchie Blackmore in 1968. While living in Hamburg, Blackmore recruited four other British rockers for his new band. Their first single, a hard-rocking song called "Hush," hit the number 4 position on the U.S. charts. Their first two albums, *Shades of Deep Purple* and *The Book of Taliesyn*, also sold well. In September 1969, Deep Purple (now consisting of Blackmore, keyboardist Jon Lord, vocalist Ian Gillan, bassist Roger Glover, and drummer Ian Paice) gathered to perform Lord's Concerto for Group and Orchestra with the Royal Philharmonic Orchestra, conducted by Malcolm Arnold. The live recording, made in the Albert Hall, was released as Deep Purple's fourth album.

Lord's Concerto is in three large movements (fast-slow-fast), as is typical of the classical concerto. The orchestral style is more contemporary than that of the Moody Blues' orchestra but still seems to be a compendium of early-20th-century idioms. There are even *cadenzas*—virtuoso solos (often improvised), which typify the classical concerto. The second movement includes voice, rather unusual for the concerto, which is an instrumental form. For the most part, Lord's themes are presented by the orchestra in a straight style and are then interpreted by the band in a rock style. The third movement is by far the most successful because the two ensembles and styles begin to mesh, approaching a real rock-classical confluence.

In 1970, Lord fulfilled a BBC commission to write another work for rock group and orchestra. Beginning as a Deep Purple project, it soon grew beyond that. The resulting *Gemini Suite* is a six-movement work for rock soloists and orchestra. Each movement is centered around a different soloist, three of whom—Lord, Glover, and Paice—were members of Deep Purple; the other three soloists were guitarist Albert Lee and vocalists Tony Ashton and Yvonne Elliman. In *Gemini Suite*, Lord's orchestral writing is much more sophisticated, and there is some excellent rock playing. There is a closer interaction between the soloists and the orchestra, at times providing a very effective partnership. Overall, *Gemini Suite* is a successful step in the direction of rock-classical integration. Following is a brief description of the suite's six movements.

1st movement	guitar	based on an ascending third motive (e.g., C to E♭) and an ascending major triad; these motives are developed throughout the movement
2nd movement	piano	elements of classical, rock, and jazz
3rd movement	drums	features tight coordination between the drums and orchestra; following an extended drum solo, the orchestra returns with a marchlike section

4th movement	voice	begins with lyrical string melody; female vocalist sings two solo verses (accompanied by orchestra); following a short orchestral interlude, male vocalist enters; a male-female vocal duet based on the earlier female melody closes the movement
5th movement	bass guitar	bass underlies the orchestra before entering a solo cadenza; orchestra reenters for a brief dialogue; the movement ends quietly
6th movement	organ	orchestral writing is more contemporary in style; interaction between organ (accompanied by bass and drums) and orchestra involves trade-off passages



Deep Purple (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Deep Purple's primary impact came in the early 1970s with albums like *Fireball*, *Machine Head*, *Who Do We Think We Are!*, *Made in Japan*, *Burn*, and *Stormbringer*. Their biggest single hit, "Smoke on the Water" (number 4 in 1973), was an early classic of the hard rock, heavy metal trend of the 1970s. From mid-1973 on, a series of personnel changes hit the band, and their popularity waned. They disbanded in 1976 but reunited in 1984 to produce a number 17 album *Perfect Strangers*. Since the mid-1980s, there have been more personnel changes, several tours, and occasional recorded albums. In 1999, they recreated Lord's Concerto for Group and Orchestra in an Albert Hall concert with the London Symphony Orchestra.

Procol Harum

Begun in 1962 as the Paramounts, a blues-based band from London, Procol Harum's first single "A Whiter Shade of Pale" (1967) reached number 5 in the United States. After several personnel changes, there was a series of successful albums in the late 1960s and early 1970s. Their album *Live in Concert with the Edmonton Symphony Orchestra* (1972) became the group's highest-ranking album (number 5) and their only gold album.

For the Edmonton performance (November 1971), the band drew on songs released on earlier albums; the songs were orchestrated and given a larger orchestral context. The most ambitious effort was “In Held ’Twas In I,” a 19-minute work that had first appeared on the *Shine On Brightly* album. With “In Held ’Twas In I,” lyricist Keith Reid takes us on a journey from self-pity and depression through madness to an exalted reaffirmation of faith. The orchestra basically provides an accompanying setting for the series of songs in the set. Certainly the orchestral style is not as contemporary as the best moments of *Gemini Suite*, nor is the band as hard rocking as Deep Purple. Nevertheless, “In Held ’Twas In I” is a thought-provoking sample of early 1970s art rock.

There were others who explored the rock-with-orchestra format, such as the New York Rock Ensemble, the Electric Light Orchestra, the Mothers of Invention, and Emerson, Lake, and Palmer, which we will discuss later in the chapter.

Rock Operas and Theatrical Works

During this period, rock musicians also created music with a theatrical aspect. Works that include acting, costuming, and scenery can be described as **rock operas**. However, where the intent is a concert presentation—but still with the elements of specific characters, represented by soloists or chorus, and a developing story line—we use the more generic term **musical theater**.

In 1967, the relatively conservative world of Broadway was stunned by a rock musical called *Hair*. With music by Galt MacDermot, *Hair* was a celebration of the new Aquarian Age and the revolutionary freedom of the psychedelic hippie generation. The popularity of *Hair* (it ran on Broadway for 1,729 performances) was aided to some degree by the notoriety surrounding its nude scene. The rock music of *Hair* was in a soft rock style but was certainly revolutionary enough for Broadway. “Aquarius/Let the Sunshine In” became a number 1 hit in 1969 when it was covered by the Fifth Dimension.

Although opera is generally considered a classical form, there is nothing in its definition that dictates a particular musical style. In the simplest terms, an opera is just a play in which most or all of the dialogue is sung instead of spoken. Early in the 20th century, ragtime pianist-composer Scott Joplin had composed several operas using ragtime as the predominant musical style (e.g., *Treemonisha*). In 1935, George Gershwin had used jazz as the basis of his opera *Porgy and Bess*. It seemed only a matter of time before someone used rock as the musical basis of an opera.

The Who

In the late 1950s, Pete Townshend and classically trained John Entwistle got together with guitarist-singer Roger Daltrey, calling themselves the Detours at first, and then The Who. Soon they replaced their earlier drummer with Keith Moon, a former member of a British surfing group. They adopted a “mod” image, a new name (the High Numbers), and identified with the same blues-based milieu that produced the Rolling Stones and the Yardbirds. After their first release flopped, they returned to the earlier name, The Who, and cultivated their mod image with flashy new clothes.

The Who gained major popularity in England during 1965 and 1966, placing four singles in the British Top 10. One of these, “My Generation,” used a stuttering vocal to enunciate a rebellious teenage theme, ending with the hook line, “hope I die before I get old.” Their antiestablishment image was enhanced quite by accident when, at a 1965 performance, Townshend inadvertently broke the neck of his guitar on a low ceiling, and then he lost his temper and smashed it to pieces. Keith Moon followed suit by busting up his drum set. Noting the frenzied crowd reaction, they decided to keep the instrument-smashing routine as the climax of their act.

The Who's debut album, *The Who Sing My Generation* (1966), contained the title hit plus several rather derivative works, including James Brown's "Please, Please, Please" and a Beatlelike follow-up to "My Generation" called "The Kids Are Alright." But there was also a very strong instrumental called "The Ox," which featured excellent rock drums, piano, and guitar (including an early experiment with feedback). To fill up space on their second album, *Happy Jack* (1967), Townshend composed a long song with a story line and characters. He called the resulting "A Quick One While He's Away" a "mini-opera."

Although The Who had been popular in England since 1965, they had failed to make the first British invasion of America. Their American breakthrough came in June 1967 at the Monterey Pop Festival. Their next release, the psychedelically oriented "I Can See for Miles," made the Top 10 in the United States. Their next album, a concept album called *The Who Sell Out*, ended with another mini-opera called "Rael."

By 1969, The Who had established themselves as an important British mainstream rock band, but rather undistinguished from all the others, except perhaps for their flamboyant stage act—but in 1969, The Who released *Tommy*, a 90-minute rock opera. It was created primarily by Townshend, with some material by Moon and Entwistle. Destined to become one of the most acclaimed rock albums since *Sgt. Pepper*, *Tommy* rose to number 4, initiating a series of Top 5 albums for the band.

Tommy is the story of a deaf, dumb, and blind boy who triumphs by virtue of his incredible ability as a pinball "wizard." Brock Helander (1982, 625) calls the plot "a bizarre and elaborate tale of lost innocence, redemption, and contrition." Writer Dave Marsh calls it "skimpy, muddled, silly" (Miller 1980, 290). The music is certainly more restrained and sophisticated than The Who's previous music, but it bears little resemblance to classical music. In general, *Tommy* does not go beyond earlier adventures by groups such as the Byrds, the Beach Boys, Hendrix, and the Beatles. Nevertheless, the concept itself—a 90-minute theatrical presentation that develops a story line (however vaguely) through the use of characters, based on a rock musical style—was impressive. *Tommy* captured the imagination of critics and fans alike. It was performed in its entirety in London and New York (at the Metropolitan Opera House, no less). There was a symphonic version, a stage production, a ballet performance, a brass band version, and eventually, a film version and Broadway musical; in all, *Tommy* is probably The Who's most well-known work.

Eager to follow up on *Tommy*, Townshend began a new project called Lifehouse, using a science fiction theme. Although Lifehouse was abandoned, several songs for the project were included on the album *Who's Next* (1971). Possibly The Who's strongest nonopera album, this album contains consistently excellent mainstream rock singing and playing and well-integrated electronic sounds (the latter resulting from Townshend's new fascination with the synthesizer).

In 1973, *Quadrophenia* was released as Townshend's second full-length rock opera. If schizophrenia refers to a double personality, *quadrophenia* refers to a four-way split. Apparently, the reference was to the four very different personalities within The Who, and the four musical themes of *Quadrophenia*'s four sides seem to reflect this disparate foursome. The plot, if one can call it that, is even more obscure than *Tommy*'s, but the music is more mature. *Quadrophenia* became a number 2 album.

Severe problems overtook the band by the end of the decade. In 1978, years of alcoholism and drug abuse caught up with Keith Moon; he died of an overdose on September 7, 1978. At a performance at Cincinnati's Riverfront Stadium on December 3, 1979, 11 people were killed in the crush of fans outside of the stadium. Townshend managed to keep The Who together, although all continued to pursue individual projects. *Face Dances* (1981) hit the Top 5, and *It's Hard* (1982) made the Top 10. After disbanding and reuniting several times during the 1980s and 1990s, they considered returning to the studio to create a new album. Entwistle's death in 2002 delayed the project, but Townshend and Daltrey released an album in 2006 (*Endless Wire*).



The Who (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Other Rock Operas and Musicals

Another major rock opera of the early 1970s was *Jesus Christ Superstar*. With lyrics by Tim Rice and music by Andrew Lloyd Webber, *Superstar* opened in New York in October 1971 and ran for 720 performances. Centering on the last week of Christ's life, the plot was familiar and the music was strong. The "Overture" presented many of the opera's themes; the individual songs varied from the lovely ballad "I Don't Know How to Love Him" to the mainstream rock song "Superstar." In between were powerful songs like "I Only Want to Say" and humorous songs like "King Herod's Song." Virtually all of the dialogue was sung, often to very effective music.

Other rock musicals and rock operas include *Godspell* (1971), *Joseph and the Amazing Technicolor Dreamcoat* (1971), *The Wiz* (1975), *Evita* (1978), and *Grease* (1972). *Grease*, when it closed in April 1980, was the longest-running Broadway show to date, with a total of 3,388 performances.

Rick Wakeman and Yes

Yes had been formed in 1968 by vocalist Jon Anderson and bassist Chris Squire. When keyboardist Rick Wakeman joined them in 1971, he introduced multiple keyboards (acoustic piano, electric piano, organ, Mellotron, clavinet, harpsichord, and synthesizer) to the band's sound. Yes had already become known for its long, complex instrumental cuts, and with Wakeman's influence, the band's reputation for progressive rock grew stronger. The next album, *Fragile* (number 4 in 1972), yielded the group's only major hit of the 1970s, "Roundabout."

Anderson's clear, high voice, Wakeman's excellent keyboard work, and solid musicianship by Squire, guitarist Steve Howe, and drummer Alan White made Yes one of the most appealing rock bands of the 1970s. Four of the five members of Yes had at least some classical training (all except Anderson). *Close to the Edge* (1973) contained only three songs, one of which consumed one entire side of a disc. The live triple album, *Yessongs* (1973), was elaborately packaged and adorned with otherworldly cover art by Roger Dean. For *Tales from Topographic Oceans* (1974), Anderson and Howe based their lyrics on the shastric scriptures by guru Paramhansa Yogananda. This rather experimental album



Rick Wakeman (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

continued Yes's consistent ability to sell albums, but shortly after the release of the album, Wakeman left the group to pursue individual projects.

In 1972 to 1973, using various back-up musicians, Wakeman produced an album called *The Six Wives of Henry VIII*, which featured his multikeyboard work. The nine keyboards—two Mellotrons, two Minimoog synthesizers, organ, acoustic piano, electric piano harpsichord, acoustic harpsichord, and ARP synthesizer—were further modified with other electronic de-

vices (e.g., fuzz and wah-wah pedals and echo units). But his most ambitious work came with *Journey to the Centre of the Earth* (1974). Performed live at London's Royal Festival Hall, the production included the London Symphony Orchestra, the English Chamber Choir, narrator, and rock band. Based on the Jules Verne classic, the text is shared by a narrator, a chorus, and two vocalists. A symphonic introduction opens the first part, called "The Journey." The bulk of the work consists of soft rock songs and instrumentals, with interspersed narration, which continues until the final song, "The Forest." A brief segment of Grieg's "In the Hall of the Mountain King" is interjected before the work comes to a Hollywood-style closing.

Wakeman followed *Journey* with another similar attempt, *The Myths and Legends of King Arthur and the Knights of the Round Table* (which premiered as a pageant on ice), in 1975. *King Arthur* is generally less prone to slip into naive clichés and involves moments of more authentic rock style. "Sir Lancelot and the Black Knight" is an interesting combination of shouting vocal, rock, chorus, synthesizer, and orchestra; it may be the best achievement in either of Wakeman's two major works, although "Merlin the Magician" is also a fascinating blend of many diverse elements. Overall, *King Arthur* is a significant advance in the integration of musical styles and media, compared with *Journey*. *Journey* and *King Arthur* are not operas, but they are a type of musical theater, telling stories and involving characters through a variety of performance forces.

Wakeman and Anderson both left Yes by 1980, though Anderson returned for the 1983 album *90125*. Yes's biggest hit, "Owner of a Lonely Heart" (number 1), came in 1984.

Genesis

Genesis began in 1967 as a songwriter's collective of four students at England's Charterhouse School. By 1971, Genesis had grown to a quintet that included singer Peter Gabriel and drummer Phil Collins. Building a reputation as a progressive rock band in England, the band used Mellotron and other electronic keyboards as well as visuals and theatrics in live performance.

In 1974, they released the double album *The Lamb Lies Down on Broadway*. *The Lamb* is a surrealistic description of the adventures of Rael as he confronts the modern civilization of New York City. The story unfolds in a series of songs, all performed by Genesis alone (no orchestra, chorus, or narrator), in a sophisticated rock style that involves heavy use of electronics. However, the concept is theatrical; it develops a story with characters and commentary. On tours, they performed the album live, with Gabriel portraying Rael.

Peter Gabriel left the band in mid-1975, and Phil Collins took over the role of lead singer. Eventually reduced to a trio, the group achieved its greatest success in the 1980s with three gold albums and two platinum albums. Meanwhile, Peter Gabriel released six solo albums through the mid-1980s, each achieving Top 50 status. Collins left the band in 1996, finding success with albums such as *Dance into the Night*. He won an Oscar in 1999 for “You’ll Be in My Heart,” a song he wrote for Disney’s animated film *Tarzan*.

On the Classical Side

The confluence of rock and classical music need not always come from the rock side of the spectrum. Several composers with classical backgrounds have incorporated rock styles into major productions. Perhaps the most publicized of these works was *Mass* by Leonard Bernstein. Commissioned to write a work for the dedication of the John F. Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts in Washington, D.C., Bernstein created a theater piece loosely based on the Roman Catholic Mass. In addition to orchestra and chorus, there is a boys’ choir, a pipe organ, a rock organ, and rock and jazz ensembles. Interspersed throughout the *Mass* are several songs in various rock styles. Related works include Lalo Schiffrin’s *Rock Requiem*, the Electric Prunes’ *Mass in F Minor*, and the surrealistic opera *Elephant Steps*, with music by Stanley Silverman and text by Richard Foreman.

Nontheatrical Art Rock by Unaccompanied Rock Groups

In the overview of this chapter, we outlined six typical approaches to the confluence of rock and classical music. The sixth approach is to create an extended work modeled on a classical form using the musical language of rock. Rock operas and theater pieces fall into this category (granted, there is often some overlap), but there is a subcategory of this approach that we have not discussed: the unaccompanied rock group creating an extended work related to a classical model, but not an overtly theatrical work. “Symphony for the Devil/Sympathy for the Devil,” by BS&T, falls into this category (see Chapter 11). This is probably the most demanding assignment in the area of art rock. Accordingly, in considering such works, we shall meet several of the most talented groups in the history of rock.

Emerson, Lake, and Palmer

More than anyone else, Keith Emerson has persistently and successfully pursued the concept of art rock. An incredibly talented keyboardist, Emerson (born in 1944) first became known with a group called the Nice. Originally a quartet, it soon evolved into a trio, featuring Emerson’s multiple keyboards, instead of the more usual lead guitar. The Nice’s second album, *Ars Longa Vita Brevis* (1969), featured an extended work in four movements and suggested future directions for the Nice and Emerson. On their 1969 album *Five Bridges Suite*, the five-movement title work is an excellent example of Emerson’s versatility and technique as he moves fluently from rock to jazz to a Bachlike classical style. Accompanied by the Sinfonia of London Orchestra, it is a good example of art rock. Side 2 contains a rock with orchestra adaptation of Jean Sibelius’s “Intermezzo,” from the *Karelia Suite*, as well as rock interpretations of the third movement of Tchaikovsky’s Sixth Symphony and a unique combination of Dylan’s “Country Pie” and fragments from Bach’s Brandenburg Concerto no. 6. The last Nice album with Emerson, *Elegy* (1971), contained an extended rock version of Bernstein’s “America” from *West Side Story*. For a dazzling display of Emerson’s improvisations with the Nice, listen to “She Belongs to Me” (a Dylan song) as performed at the Fillmore East (released on Columbia album P11635, *Nice*, 1973).

At a performance at the Fillmore West, Emerson met guitarist-vocalist Greg Lake, who was there performing with his group King Crimson. The next year, Emerson and Lake

recruited drummer Carl Palmer, thus creating Emerson, Lake, and Palmer (ELP). ELP debuted in August 1970 at the Isle of Wight Festival and, in 1971, released its first two albums, *Emerson, Lake, and Palmer* and *Tarkus*. “The Three Fates” from the first album is in three parts, the first being a solo on pipe organ, the second a piano solo, and the third a work for the entire trio. As with much of their work, it is almost impossible to classify stylistically, owing to the effective blend of classical, jazz, and rock elements. That, of course, is the ultimate goal of a blended style: to be so perfectly blended that the contributing elements are barely distinguishable. The remarkable keyboard work of Emerson, the clean drumming of Palmer, and the coordination between all three represented a new level of sophistication in rock music. Listen carefully to “The Barbarian” or “Take a Pebble” from that first album to hear how tightly coordinated the trio was.

Side 1 of *Tarkus* contains a seven-part series of songs; especially interesting is “Eruption” (the first part of the suite). “Bitches Crystal” on side 2 is impressive for its variety of combined styles and fine playing. “Are You Ready Eddy?” is an ELP-ized version of Jerry Lee Lewis-style 1950s rock. ELP’s third album, *Pictures at an Exhibition* (1972), was a landmark art rock album. Based on a work by Russian composer Modest Mussorgsky, the suite represents the composer’s impressions as he strolls through an art exhibition. The “Promenade” theme recurs as he moves from painting to painting; the other segments of the work reflect the paintings he sees. ELP’s album adapts a significant amount of the original work, including “Promenade,” “The Gnome,” “The Old Castle,” “The Hut of Baba Yaga,” and “The Great Gate of Kiev.” There are also some added movements by ELP: “The Sage,” “The Curse of Baba Yaga,” and “Blues Variation.” For the most part, Mussorgsky’s themes, rhythms, harmonies, textures, and internal forms are preserved in the ELP version.

The next album, *Trilogy* (1972), rose to the number 5 position and features some landmark performances and compositions. In the midst of “The Endless Enigma” (parts 1 and 2)



Emerson, Lake, and Palmer, rock group (Source: Norman_Quicke/Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

lies a most impressive fugue, fully developed in classical form and performed impressively by Emerson (assisted by Lake). There is another electronic rock adaptation of a classical work: the “Hoedown” from *Rodeo*, by contemporary American composer Aaron Copland. Two impressive art rock compositions on this album are “Trilogy” and “Abaddon’s Bolero.”

It is with *Brain Salad Surgery* (1973) that ELP really put it all together. As with the Beatles on *Sgt. Pepper*, ELP draws together all of its earlier ideas into one consummate album. There is the rock adaptation of a classical work, the challenging fourth movement of Argentine contemporary composer Alberto Ginastera’s First Piano Concerto; there is the cute piece, “Benny the Bouncer”; there is the normal (for ELP) song “Still . . . You Turn Me On”; there is the spiritualistic “Jerusalem”; but the masterpiece of *Brain Salad Surgery* is *Karn Evil 9*, one of the most impressive achievements in the history of rock. This work will be discussed in more detail in the Musical Close-Up at the end of this chapter. Suffice it to say here that this three-movement work fulfills the goals of the sixth approach described in the overview of this chapter: an extended work for a rock group using a classical model but the musical language of rock.

Touring America in 1974, ELP amazingly managed to recreate *Karn Evil 9* in live performance. They hauled 36 tons of equipment with them, including six Moog synthesizers, two organs, an electric piano, and a Steinway grand piano for Emerson; with Palmer’s drum set, synthesizer, timpani, gongs, chimes, and so on, moving the band around for four months was quite a project. After an American tour in 1974, the trio began developing individual interests, resulting in the double album *Works, Volume 1* (1977). Side 1 contains Emerson’s Piano Concerto No. 1, a three-movement work modeled on the classical piano concerto but using Emerson’s highly personalized blend of classical, jazz, and rock idioms. Side 2 belongs to Greg Lake, whose songs are accompanied by orchestra and chorus. Carl Palmer is featured on side 3; his cuts include references to classical works by Prokofiev and Bach, plus a remake of “Tank.” Side 4 consists of the trio’s extended version of Copland’s famous “Fanfare to the Common Man” and the original extended piece “Pirates.” After two less impressive albums, a live album, and a greatest hits album were released, ELP seemed to disappear, only to reappear in the mid-1980s, releasing a strong album in 1992, *Black Moon*.



Keith Emerson (Photograph by Allen Olivio) (Source: Courtesy of David Whitehead, London Features International Ltd.)

Frank Zappa

You may have noticed that every band discussed thus far in this chapter has been British. Indeed, art rock was primarily a British development. However, it was left to an American band to provide what many feel is both the best and worst in art rock. If that sounds contradictory, wait until you meet the leader of this band. He is a study in inconsistency and self-contradiction. Among the adjectives that describe Frank Zappa are creative, enigmatic, erratic, puerile, pseudointellectual, unique, sophomoric, genius, and (above all) iconoclastic. That last word, according to *Webster's*, refers to a person "who attacks or ridicules traditional or venerated institutions or ideas regarded by him as erroneous." Zappa goes well beyond that definition; he attacks or ridicules everything: political and religious groups, women, men, and even himself.

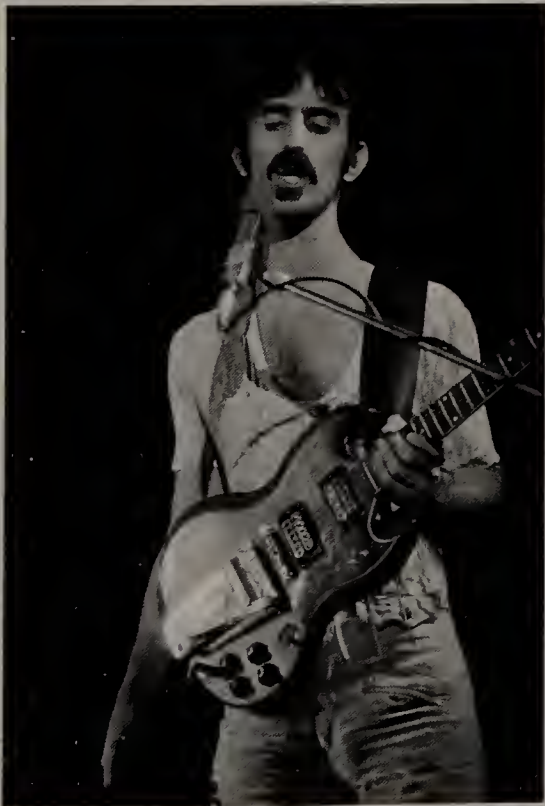
Frank Zappa was born in Baltimore on December 21, 1940, and later settled in Lancaster, Pennsylvania. He studied music during his brief college career and played with various local bands. Zappa's early musical enthusiasms were for R&B and contemporary classical music, especially Stravinsky and Edgard Varèse, an early experimenter in rhythmic complexity, the use of unpitched percussion, atonality (music not in a traditional key), and electronic music. Generally considered a pioneer who was slightly ahead of his time, Varèse became Zappa's musical idol.

Zappa moved to Los Angeles in 1964. There he joined with Ray Collins (vocals), Jim Black (drums), and Roy Estrada (bass) in a band called the Soul Giants; Zappa increasingly became the leader and changed the group's name to the Mothers of Invention. Becoming an underground favorite in the Los Angeles of 1965, their "freaky" music, looks, and behavior gained them considerable notoriety. They released their first album, *Freak Out!*, in mid-1966 on MGM/Verve Records. It was a double album and is often mentioned as the first real concept album, coming a full year before *Sgt. Pepper*. However, the concept is rather elusive, unless it is, as David Walley says (1972, 60), "a living testament to L.A. freakdom."

Freak Out! is an amazingly creative album, especially for 1965 to 1966. Many Zappa fans still believe it is his finest album. The first disc contains relatively normal songs, although all are touched by Zappa's musical eccentricity and verbal iconoclasm. "Who Are

the Brain Police" is miles away from anything being done in pop music then. Several parodies of 1950s soft rock ("Go Cry on Somebody Else's Shoulder" and "Wowie Zowie") reveal Zappa's perfect understanding of that style and his ability to recreate it with tongue-in-cheek humor. "Motherly Love" suggests Zappa's off-color side, which would increasingly manifest itself on subsequent albums.

The second disc lives up to the album's title. There are three extended pieces, the first ("Trouble Every Day") being a serious commentary on the racial riots in Watts. "Help, I'm a Rock" is a good first glimpse into Zappa's approach to art rock. Many contemporary classical composers have concentrated on timbre and improvisation as generative elements in their compositions. They have



Rock musician, avant-garde composer, and writer Frank Zappa (1940–1993) in concert
(Source: Images, Peter_Gould/Peter Gould)

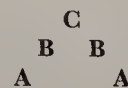
Listening Guide: "It Can't Happen Here" (the Mothers of Invention)

0:00–0:32	Section A	"It can't happen here." Nonmetric, nontonal expansion of this lyric.
0:33–1:08	Section B	"Who could imagine." First part improvises vocally on "Kansas"; second part improvises vocally on "Minnesota."
1:09–1:53	Section C	Instrumental break. Piano and drums in a fragmented, nontonal, pointillistic style.
1:54–(2:15?)	Section B	"Who could imagine." Vocal improvisation on "Washington, D.C." Section A ("It can't happen here") quietly enters under the "A.C.D.C." improvisation. Gradually, section A takes over.
(2:16?)–2:47	Section A	"It can't happen here" (begun in previous section) gradually dominates.
2:48–3:04	Section D	"I remember." Metric (duple meter); three phrases.
3:05–3:18	Section A	Slight variation on section A ("couldn't happen here").
3:19–3:47	Section E	Suzy Creamcheese section (dialogue with semifictional Zappa character).
3:48–3:55	Section A	Brief return of "It can't happen here" with filtered voices.

avoided the old concerns with keys, melodies, traditional chords, and metrically organized rhythms. Much of "Help, I'm a Rock" sounds disorganized and even chaotic—like a real freak-out. However, the work is actually structured to sound unstructured. Unless the listener has heard a good bit of avant-garde classical music, "Help, I'm a Rock" sounds like a work by people who have become deranged.

The song begins normally enough, with guitar and drums vamping in triple meter. The first section includes nonsense language and various groans, squawks, and other vocal sounds, followed by a mini-explosion. The vamp returns, and the voices superimpose the repeating words "help, I'm a rock" and "help, I'm a cop," interrupted by Zappa's seemingly improvised monologue. More nonsense vocals, sheeplike bleatings, and another monologue follow. The triple meter vamp is interrupted by a second major section, which features some female heavy breathing and various vocal noises that at times sound like simulated bird-calls. The third section is one of Zappa's finest works: "It Can't Happen Here." This song within a song may sound quite disorganized, but it really does create a structured form.

This unique form combines two common classical forms: the arch form and the rondo. The first five sections create a form that proceeds to a center point and then doubles back on itself (hence the term *arch form*):



Then Zappa begins alternating the A section with new material, which is the principle behind the classical rondo form. There are many points of interest as the Mothers work with various vocal timbres. For example, note the improvisation on "Minnesota." As one singer repeats "mi-mi-mi-mi-mi," and so on, he changes the timbre almost as if an electronic filter were being applied. Also listen to the female voice in the "I remember" section (D). After

the third phrase, she sings “bop-bop-bop” on widely scattered pitches; gradually these are shortened to become mere clicks (listen carefully because this happens quickly).

“Help, I’m a Rock” provides considerable insight into Zappa’s style of art rock. Unlike Jon Lord, Rick Wakeman, and so many others, Zappa was familiar with the most up-to-date experiments in classical music. His interest in nonmetrical, atonal music was right in line with many classical composers; his use of vocal improvisation and concentration on timbre and texture, often without traditional melody and harmony, was thoroughly contemporary. As we mentioned earlier, when many rock musicians and listeners think of so-called classical music, they think of Bach, Mozart, Beethoven, and Tchaikovsky, but those composers lived and worked over a century ago. For art rock to be a truly contemporary creation, one should be trying to blend contemporary rock with contemporary classical sounds. Zappa’s understanding of Stravinsky, Varèse, Stockhausen, and Cage allowed him to approach this challenge more successfully than most others.

Some mid-1960s listeners to *Freak Out!* must have assumed that the Mothers had to be stoned on drugs to create such weird music. However, Zappa was vehemently opposed to drug abuse and was a teetotaler. In a letter to the *Free Press* (October 7, 1966), Zappa said that “the sort of high you really want is a spiritual high and you are bullshitting yourself if you trust any chemical and/or agricultural short-cut to do it for you” (Walley 1972, 65).

The *Freak Out!* album was made by five Mothers: Zappa, Collins, Black, Estrada, and guitarist Elliot Ingber. After that, the personnel of the Mothers was constantly changing, but the force of Zappa’s personality provided all the consistency that was needed.

Of Zappa’s numerous creative albums of the late 1960s through the early 1970s, two deserve special comment. *Uncle Meat* (1969) began as music for a movie that was never finished. By this time, there were 10 Mothers, and they could play any combination of over two dozen instruments. In some ways, *Uncle Meat* brings together all of the elements of Zappa’s prior work in the way that *Sgt. Pepper* did for the Beatles and *Brain Salad Surgery* did for Emerson, Lake, and Palmer. Electronic effects are expanded, and there is spoken monologue, 1950s rock parody, contemporary classical music, jazz effects, and improvisation. Like most Zappa albums, *Uncle Meat* is meticulously assembled. Producer Tom Wilson called Zappa “a painstaking craftsman, and in some ways it’s a pity that the art of recording is not developed to the extent where you can really hear completely all the things he’s doing” (Walley 1972, 64). Referring to the care with which the multiple layers are assembled and with which the seemingly kaleidoscopic chaos is created, Zappa said, “These things are so carefully constructed that it breaks my heart when people don’t dig into them and see all the levels that I put into them” (Walley 1972, 80). Among the better cuts on *Uncle Meat* are “Dog Breath, in the Year of the Plague” and “Dog Breath Variations” on side 1, “The Uncle Meat Variations” and “Prelude to King Kong” on side 2, “Project X” on side 3, and all the “King Kong” segments on side 4. Parts of *Uncle Meat* use up to 40 overdubbed tracks; electronic manipulations are used to modify normal sounds (e.g., on “Dog Breath,” clarinets are sped up to sound like trumpets). Like much of Zappa’s work, *Uncle Meat* (most of which was done in late 1967 and early 1968) is years ahead of its time.

The live album, *Fillmore East*, June 1971, contains a mini-opera about an aspiring rock group whose first hit was moving up the charts. The story line deals with their experiences with some groupies and ends with a more or less authentic presentation of the imaginary band’s hit single, “Happy Together” (actually a number 1 hit for the Turtles in 1967).

A trend toward pubescent humor increasingly detracted from Zappa’s stature through the 1970s. Brock Helander notes Zappa’s (1982, 655) “penchant for puerile themes” and his “tendency toward cheap vulgarity.” Ken Tucker accurately observes that

Zappa spent the decade of the 1970s consolidating his reputation as an ornery oddball whose talents were, depending on your point of view, either squandered or used to decidedly avant-garde ends. Much of the goodwill Zappa had accumulated with the public and

critics in the 1960s for his hard-edged, adventurous music dissipated in the 1970s as Zappa began to emphasize sophomoric humor. (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 619)

Tucker further concludes that “Zappa’s work came to seem schizophrenic” (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 619).

As one surveys Zappa’s post-1970 work, one is tempted to paraphrase an old nursery rhyme: “When he was good, he was very very good / And when he was bad, he was horrid.” By 1976, Zappa had stopped referring to the ever-changing lineup of his backup musicians as the Mothers of Invention and simply recorded under his own name. For all practical purposes, Zappa’s effective leadership within the music scene declined severely. Writer Ken Tucker comments that “the title [of Zappa’s 1982 album—*Shut Up ‘n’ Play Yer Guitar*] suggested what many of his once-and-future fans felt” (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 619). Frank Zappa died in 1993.

Summary of Art Rock

The goals of the art rock movement remain largely unfulfilled. The attempts to effectively blend classical music with rock music were undermined by several factors:

1. Many art rockers had a naive and outdated notion of classical music. Thus their products were combinations of current rock and centuries-old classical style. Deep Purple, for example, played some true mainstream rock in their attempts at confluence, but the classical element was woefully outdated. On the other hand, Zappa’s classical style was quite contemporary, but many would note that as the classical elements ascend in his works, the rock elements recede; rarely, if ever, does he achieve a true balance.
2. Some groups unnecessarily softened their rock style, supposedly to blend more effectively with their outdated notion of the classical style. Some of the work by Rick Wakeman and the Moody Blues illustrates this pitfall.
3. The transient nature of rock undermines the long-term developmental process that is usually necessary to achieve an ultimate musical goal. Even the greatest classical composers rarely created masterpieces on their first or second try. Jon Lord’s *Gemini Suite* is better than his earlier Concerto; Wakeman’s *King Arthur* is an improvement over his *Journey*. But rock styles change rapidly, and the creators-performers move on to the next thing, often leaving the previous style unfulfilled.

The art rock trend receded as the 1970s progressed, but it did not end. In Chapter 14, “The Continuing Fragmentation of Rock,” we shall look briefly at some experimental groups who kept the art rock idea alive.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP:

AN ANALYSIS OF *KARN EVIL 9*

BY EMERSON, LAKE, AND PALMER

During the mid-1970s, *Karn Evil 9* was played in a shortened version on many progressive FM radio stations. As a result, many listeners became familiar with some segments of this work, but unless one listens to the entire 30 minutes, it is easy to miss both the ideological point and the total musical value.

Karn Evil 9 is in three movements, called “impressions.” Thus the macroform is like that of a classical concerto, with the usual three movements: fast, slow, fast. The “First Impression” is in two parts. Let us begin by looking closely at part 1 of “First Impression.”

The lyrics of part 1 set the scene quite effectively with some key words and phrases:

cold and misty morning	age of power
seeds have withered	silent children shivered
jackals for gold	suffering in silence
betrayed	hurt
beat	terrible
survival	no compassion
sorrow	helpless
refugee	

In fact, *cold* and *sorrow* are used twice. We certainly get the feeling that whatever or whenever this place is, it is rather bleak and dreary, but then our hero promises us repeatedly that he will “be there,” that he will come “to heal their sorrow, to beg and borrow, fight tomorrow.”

Musically, part 1 of “First Impression” consists of an introduction, three verses (interrupted by an instrumental break), and a **codetta**. A **coda** is a closing section of a major work, comparable to an introduction at the beginning; a **codetta** is a small coda that closes an internal section of a piece. The introduction is brief, but notice how tightly the trio is coordinated. Listen carefully to Palmer’s drums; you will find that he is changing his patterns with every measure, perfectly reinforcing the accents and rhythmic patterns of Emerson’s line; then listen to Lake’s bass line, and you will find that he is doing the same. This is analogous to what goes on in a symphony orchestra. The percussion section and the cellos and basses do not simply play continuous patterns throughout; each measure and note is carefully set into the changing fabric of the total sound.

Listening Guide: *Karn Evil 9*, “First Impression,” Part I (Emerson, Lake, and Palmer)

0:00–0:24	Introduction	Brief intro featuring keyboard; when drums and bass enter, they are tightly coordinated with keyboard.
0:25–0:49	Verse 1 (Section A)	Vocal enters (“cold and misty morning”); four phrases.
0:50–0:57	Verse 1 (Section B) (Refrain)	Two three-note descending patterns announce the short refrain (“I’ll be there”).
0:58–1:36	Interlude	Instrumental elaboration on material from Introduction.
1:37–2:01	Verse 2 (A)	Vocal returns (“suffering in silence”). Slight change in accompaniment (compared to verse 1).
2:02–2:08	Verse 2 (B) (Refrain)	Refrain (again preceded by two three-note descending patterns).
2:09–2:18	Interlude	Similar to earlier interlude, but interrupted by the instrumental break.

(continued)

2:19–2:43	Instrumental Break	New material. Notice the very tight coordination among all three players, with each reinforcing the rhythmic patterns of the others.
2:44–2:55	Interlude	The interrupted interlude resumes.
2:56–3:16	Verse 3 (A)	Vocal returns (“there must be someone”) to yet another “new” accompaniment.
3:17–3:24	Verse 3 (B) (Refrain)	Lyrics (“can’t you see”) added to the three-note descending patterns—which occur three times instead of the usual two.
3:25–3:41	Codetta	Closing section has new lyrics (“to heal their sorrow”) and new accompaniment.

In part 2, ELP compares their imaginary society to a carnival sideshow. At carnival sideshows we see unusual, freakish exhibits—things we do not see as a normal part of our lives. After a typical carnival barker welcomes us to the show, he points out a row of bishops’ heads in jars and a bomb inside a car. Possibly the bishops symbolize organized religion; apparently, this imaginary society does not include organized religion in its normal, everyday life. Perhaps the bomb represents terrorism, humanity’s spectacular cruelty to itself. Next we are shown a real specialty: some tears (could these represent human emotion?), and so it goes, as we are shown laughter (human emotion and joy), a ragtime band (music), a stripper (human sexuality and sensuality), Jesus (faith), and grass (natural phenomena). The world ELP is describing is totally devoid of the characteristics—good and bad—that make humans human, and the carnival analogy helps us see that.

Listening Guide: *Karn Evil 9, “First Impression,” Part II* (Emerson, Lake, and Palmer)

3:42–4:51	Introduction (Part 1)	Lengthy intro featuring synthesizer and organ; fast tempo in 7/4 meter.
4:52–5:21	Introduction (Part 2)	Based on a pedal point (a repeating note, usually in the bass, that continues to sound as the chords change above it).
5:22–5:54	Verse 1	AAB internal form (vocal begins with “step inside!”). Two four-bar phrases (each with new lyrics) followed by a four-bar refrain (“Roll up! See the show!”). Two-bar instrumental transition connects AA to the refrain. Drumroll provides transition to verse 2.
5:55–6:27	Verse 2	AAB. First two phrases (AA) have new lyrics (“left behind the bars”), followed by transition and refrain (“roll up!”). Transition to verse 3 is new (descending and ascending organ glissandi).
6:28–7:00	Verse 3	AAB. Same internal form as first two verses, with new lyrics for AA (“next upon the bill”). Followed by transition and refrain (“roll up!”). A series of descending drumrolls serves as transition to next section (Interlude).

7:01–8:38	Interlude	Instrumental section featuring guitar. As this reaches its climax (at about 8:35), texture is reduced to a synthesizer pedal point similar to the one in the Introduction (part 2), except that it is in the upper range. Pedal point fades (to allow listener to turn the LP to the second side).
0:00–0:05	Interlude (continued)	Resumes pedal point from previous section (sets up accompaniment for verse 4).
0:06–0:21	Verse 4	Abbreviated verse (AA). First phrase (“welcome back”) accompanied by synthesizer pedal point. Organ added for second phrase. Usual transition and refrain are eliminated.
0:22–0:43	Bridge	Similar form to the verses, but with new music and lyrics (“come inside”), thus designated as CCD. Two two-bar phrases (CC) followed by a new refrain (D) on “you’ve gotta see the show.”
0:44–0:51	Verse 5	Shortened to only one four-bar phrase (A) with new lyrics (“right before your eyes”).
0:52–1:06	Bridge	Bridge shortened to two phrases (CD)—first phrase of bridge (“come inside”) and refrain (“you’ve gotta see the show”).
1:07–3:02	Interlude	Instrumental interlude begins with an impressive improvisation featuring organ. Returns to a theme from the earlier interlude (guitar lead). Pedal point that ended the earlier interlude is replaced by a drum solo.
3:03–3:31	Verse 6	Drum solo continues to become the accompaniment for the first phrase (A); new lyrics (“soon the Gypsy Queen”). Full accompaniment for second phrase (note old-fashioned piano sound on the words “Alexander’s ragtime band”). Transition and refrain (“roll up!”), as in earlier verses. Drumroll provides transition to verse 7.
3:32–3:46	Verse 7	Abbreviated verse as in verse 4 (AA). New lyrics (“performing on a stool”). Usual transition and refrain are eliminated.
3:47–4:46	Coda	Begins with a brief vocal (“come and see the show”). Short drum solo leads to a return of the fast 7/4 meter and material from the introduction (synthesizer lead). Ominous chords lead to the final cadence.
<p>Note: The CD divides “First Impression,” Part II, as it was divided on the original LP (due to the need to turn the record over). The timing designations in this Listening Guide are based on the divided CD tracks. Therefore, they begin as a continuation of “First Impression,” Part I (at 3:42), and at the divide, they start over at 0:00.</p>		

“Second Impression” is entirely instrumental. It is largely through-composed—that is, it consists of a series of ever-changing musical sections carrying us forward. However, there are some melodic and rhythmic motives that tie together the various sections. In

section A, listen for a descending two-note motive (motive T) in the upper range of the piano:



In section C, motive T becomes very important. We hear it first as ascending chords on the piano:



Throughout section C, we hear motive T, sometimes in its original form (descending) and sometimes inverted (ascending). The real clue to the meaning of section C, and indeed the entire “Second Impression,” is suggested by a steady clicking sound that enters as the piano plays a series of runs and by more statements of motive T (which sounds something like the tick-tock of a clock). We are being transported through time (musically) to the society ELP tried to describe in “First Impression.”

“Third Impression” thrusts us into the midst of ELP’s imaginary society of the future. Our hero is there to do battle. After assuring us that he will act as our knight in shining armor, he bravely announces that no one in his “army” will yield to the enemy, but even as he speaks, we encounter the enemy, a computer, who warns our hero, “Danger! Stranger! Load your program. I am yourself.” Our hero is not intimidated. He says that no computer can stand in his way; only human blood can settle this ultimate battle. He calls on all the guardians of a “new clear” (nuclear?) dawn to join him as the maps of war are drawn. With that, our hero engages the computer in a musical war.

As the musical representation of the furious battle ends, our hero returns to report on the results. He tells us that we can rejoice in a great victory and assures us that our young warriors have not died in vain. In fact, he says that there is no need to memorialize the dead with flowers on their graves because their names have all been stored permanently in a

Listening Guide: *Karn Evil 9, “Second Impression”* (Emerson, Lake, and Palmer)

0:00–1:06	Section A	Features the piano. Motive T (see Musical Close-Up) occurs several times in the upper range of the piano.
1:07–2:53	Section B	Repeating accompaniment figure (called an ostinato). Latin fiesta flavor. At 2:29, lead shifts from synthesizer to acoustic piano; several piano flourishes end the section.
2:54–5:00	Section C	Pensive section with no rock beat. Frequent occurrences of motive T (ascending and descending). Steady clock ticks begin at 4:10 (see Musical Close-Up for more discussion).
5:01–5:43	Section D	Piano lead; expands a brief motive first heard at the beginning of section C. Glissando connects to next section.
5:44–7:07	Section E	Boogie-woogie bass (ostinato) with elaborate piano improvisation. Notice quick reference to motive T at the very end (6:58).

computer. Our hero has lost but does not know it. He, too, has become consumed by the inhuman technology of the computerized society. After all, we do not need flowers to

Listening Guide: *Karn Evil 9*, "Third Impression" (Emerson, Lake, and Palmer)

0:00–0:22	Introduction	Marchlike intro features horn calls played on synthesizer.
0:23–1:05	Verse 1 (AB)	Voice enters ("man alone"). First section (A) is eight bars plus a one-bar transition. Second section (B) is eight bars ("fear that rattles") followed by a five-bar transition to verse 2.
1:06–1:40	Verse 2 (AB)	Internal form similar to verse 1, beginning with the eight-bar A section ("man of steel") and one-bar transition. B section is also eight bars ("walls that no man"), but is followed by a one-bar transition that sets up the accompaniment to the bridge.
1:41–2:32	Bridge (C)	New material. Our hero (see Musical Close-Up) confidently says that "no man yields who flies in my ship." After a brief fanfare, the computer challenges him ("danger"). Computer words are electronically modified human speech.
2:33–2:55	Bridge (continued)	After his dialogue with the computer, our hero says that "no computer stands in my way" (same melody that began the bridge). He ends with his declaration of war.
2:56–3:55	Instrumental Break	Introduction to the battle sequence. Based on the melody (first section) of verse 1, section A, transformed into a march.
3:56–4:26	Instrumental Break (second section)	Introduces pedal point (a repetitive pitch) in a very rigid rhythmic pattern. Suggests the presence of the enemy (the computer).
4:27–5:50	Instrumental Break (third section)	Lengthy improvisation featuring organ. Typical ELP rock style. Note the return of the repetitive rhythmic pattern ("the enemy") near the end (5:31).
5:51–7:36	Instrumental Break (fourth section)	Sudden drop in intensity. Drumrolls and swirling patterns in low range of organ. Gradual build in intensity. Note return of the computer's rhythmic pattern at 6:30. Increased dissonance and higher ranges as climax is approached. Drums and organ chords provide transition to next section.
7:37–(8:32?)	Closing Section (D)	Vocal returns ("rejoice!"). New material. Dialogue between our hero and the computer. Note that the computer has the last word (the repetitive rhythmic pattern returns at 8:25). Final chord fades as Coda begins.
(8:33?)–9:03	Coda	Repetitive pattern on sequencer (see Musical Close-Up) gradually accelerates and moves more and more rapidly around the speaker system. The end is an immediate cutoff.

remember our dead; the computer has their names all safely stored in its memory tapes. Our pathetic hero says proudly, “I am all there is,” but the victorious computer tells him that he has been allowed to live. Our hero argues that the computer, after all, was created by humans to do good things. The computer simply replies that there was no choice; its creation was inevitable. It asks, “I’m perfect! Are you?”

Karn Evil 9 is a major musical composition that is nearly 30 minutes long. Through both music and lyrics, it presents a philosophical yet very relevant confrontation between technology and humanity. To bring this elaborate work to a close, ELP created the most appropriate coda imaginable. As the final synthesizer chord fades, a sequencer pattern begins. Of all instruments, the sequencer is the most automatic—and perhaps the least human. The 1970s-vintage step sequencer was an electronic instrument that, when programmed, triggered a sequence of pitches, rhythms, timbres, and volume levels on the synthesizer. Once programmed, the sequencer would cycle the programmed pattern forever (or until someone pulled its plug). It really was a music machine. For the coda of *Karn Evil 9* (see Listening Guide, “Third Impression”), ELP starts the sequencer and then moves the resulting synthesizer sequence back and forth from channel to channel; as the sequence itself gets faster and faster, so does the left to right to left movement (or circular movement in the quadraphonic version). Finally, the sequence becomes almost a blur as it whips from speaker to speaker. Suddenly, it ends. Only silence remains.

Karn Evil 9 is an exceptionally fine example of the sixth approach to art rock. There is no string quartet and no orchestra; the musical language is the language of rock. Yet, in its concept, it is more like classical music. It is a serious work of large proportions, designed to develop a central thought through a series of internal movements and sections. Appropriate music is created to serve each section as the central idea unfolds. The music is technically demanding; the playing is superb. Every measure is tightly coordinated and fulfills its role in the total scheme. It qualifies on every count as an artistic creation, realized through the language of rock—in other words, art rock.

Mainstream Rock

KEY TERMS

voice box

shuffle beat

psychedelic soul

Overview: The Decade of Nondirection

In the 1950s, rock and roll was born. Although many people were a part of this revolution, one man—Elvis Presley—figured the largest. In the 1960s, another revolution took place: the Beatles, who fused the fractured elements of pop music into one multifaceted style. Other styles grew out of this expanded definition of rock: folk rock, soul music, jazz rock, and art rock. Mainstream rock, which had nearly disappeared in the early part of the decade, was rejuvenated by the British bands of the mid-1960s and split into two related but separate styles: the harder, blues-based style of the Rolling Stones and their followers and the more refined, expansionist style of the Beatles and their followers. The counterculture of the United States pursued the harder mainstream style, creating psychedelic or acid rock. Just as the 1950s had given birth to rock and roll, the 1960s gave birth to a series of important substyles and witnessed a rebirth of mainstream rock, and again, just as Presley had dominated the 1950s, the Beatles became the giant symbol of the 1960s.

The new decade of the 1970s, however, did not begin well. The Beatles, musical and spiritual leaders of a generation, announced that they were disbanding. During a Vietnam War protest at Kent State University, National Guard troops fired into a group of protesters, killing four students. For all practical purposes, those shots ended the student protest movement of the 1960s. The counterculture was shocked even further by the deaths of Jimi Hendrix, Janis Joplin, and Jim Morrison—all between September 1970 and July 1971. Coming on the heels of the disillusioning violence at Altamont in December 1969, these events seemed to let the air out of the balloon. The youth movement of the 1960s was over.

Stunned and disheartened, a generation withdrew. There would be no exciting new trends, no revolutionary styles, no musical giants in the 1970s to match those of the 1950s and 1960s. Instead, there would be fragmentation, reaction, and continuation.

There are several dominant and interdependent characteristics of the 1970s. The first, and perhaps the primary, characteristic was the fragmentation of the market. We saw a similar phenomenon in the early 1960s, but it disappeared with the arrival of the Beatles. The fragmentation of the 1970s would not be similarly overcome. Its roots lay in the new mentality of the 1970s: “Me first!” The youth generation of the 1960s had addressed itself to society as a whole. It worried about war between nations, inequality between races, the relationship between humanity and the environment, and the roles of men and women. However, by the end of the decade, the focus turned toward self-realization and self-fulfillment. People wanted to “find themselves.” Students of the 1970s were less concerned with world peace and racial equality and more concerned with acquiring the skill needed to get a job and make money. As a by-product of the new me-ism, there seemed to be a reaction against the heavy issues, the obscure texts, and the intricate complexities of 1960s rock. Instead of the experimentation of the Beatles and the sophistication of jazz rock and art rock, many went back to the basics and embraced the simpler styles of disco, country-oriented rock, and hard rock.

Society fragmented into hundreds of self-interest groups. The relative simplicity of the old demographics—male and female; youth and adult; black and white; lower, middle, and upper class—fragmented into a complex array of clusters. As John Naisbitt (1982) wrote in *Megatrends*, we moved from an either-or society to a multiple option society. For example, by the end of the decade, instead of three television networks, cable systems offered the viewer over 40 choices. A similar explosion of choices occurred in food (from mustards to wine), magazines, books (in which a new self-help genre emerged), and many other aspects of life.

The music industry was no different. Radio discovered the concept of *formatting*, that is, programming certain styles of music for a specific audience who typically purchased a predictable set of advertised products. Naisbitt (1982, 239) provides a partial list of these formats:

album-oriented rock	disco	country rock
easy-listening pop	punk rock	country rock
big-band jazz	rhythm and blues	progressive rock
progressive jazz	oldies but goodies	

To this list could be added Top 40, classical music, ethnic music, Christian programming, talk radio, and all news. For the first time, record stores carefully segregated their products into bins following these categories. The world waited for the next Presley or Beatles but slowly began to realize that that was no longer possible. No one person or group could possibly cut across all those radio formats, all those record bins, and all those demographic minigroups.

If fragmentation was a central characteristic of the me decade, a second characteristic within the music world was the consolidation of power within the record industry. As Ken Tucker points out, “By the end of the 1970s, the rock market would be controlled by just six major companies: CBS, Warner Communications, Polygram, RCA, MCA, and Capitol-EMI” (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 521). The huge music conglomerates were big business; music was not an art, it was a product, like a pencil sharpener or an electric toothbrush. The formula was simple: Identify a viable (monied) submarket through sophisticated market research; determine what that submarket was willing to buy; design a product that met those

criteria; create the product; and mass-produce it and mass-market it. Thus the 1970s music industry sold some hard rock, some soft rock, some neo-folksingers, some neo-country, some neo-jazz rock, some art rock, some disco, some punk, some heavy metal—each to a clearly defined segment of the market. The corporate philosophy was solid: Do not get too experimental or innovative because it might not sell; stick to the proven product.

As a result, we shall find that most of the musical categories to be considered in Chapters 13–16 are basically continuations of earlier initiatives. If there was one characteristic that cut across the 1970s music scene, it was the explosion of electronic technology. The synthesizer and its various electronic spin-offs permeated virtually every style. Sound reproduction at live concerts and in record studios reached incredible heights of sophistication. The rock historian of the 21st century may look back at the bewildering kaleidoscope of styles in the 1970s and, finding little to tie it all together, simply call it the decade of electronic rock.

We have already discussed some of the artists whose initial impact came in the 1960s but who continued into the 1970s—groups like the Rolling Stones; Chicago; Emerson, Lake, and Palmer; The Who; and the Grateful Dead. Having already discussed their work beyond the 1960s, we shall confine our attention to artists whose principal impact first came in the 1970s and 1980s. The scene was so fragmented that if one lists 100 bands, one is tempted to devise 75 categories. Although some fit nicely into defined categories, many developed individual styles that elude simple categorization. To bring some order to the bewildering array of artists, we will concentrate on mainstream styles in Chapter 13, survey various combination styles in Chapter 14, and then devote Chapter 15 to a discussion of heavy metal and Chapter 16 to dance music. Several of these styles, in turn, fragment into substyles. Quite a few bands straddle two or even three categories, and a few seem to fit no category but their own. The reader should consider these categories merely as aids in structuring the total discussion and take care to avoid pigeonholing the artists. With that caveat, let us plunge squarely into the mainstream.

Mainstream Trends of the 1970s

The British Keep Coming

By 1967, the first British invasion had run its course, with only the Beatles and Stones continuing to have major impact on the U.S. charts, but in the last two years of the 1960s, a host of new British bands launched a second invasion. We have already met a number of these second-wave bands—The Who; the Moody Blues; Procol Harum; Emerson, Lake, and Palmer; Deep Purple; Genesis; and Yes—whose peak popularity came in the 1970s. As we have already noted, the rock mainstream entered the 1970s as a two-way split (Beatles vs. Stones influences); running parallel to this dual mainstream was the primarily British art rock trend (see Chapter 12). In the course of the 1970s, these would fragment even further. Some of the bands that began as hard-rocking, blues-based mainstream bands (the Stones side) veered off toward art rock; they became known as *progressive rock* bands. On the other hand, some bands increased their hardness and evolved into *heavy metal* bands. Heavy metal developed into a major rock style—one that continued strongly through the 1980s and even into the 1990s and beyond (see Chapter 15). Still others on the harder side of the mainstream took a turn toward *glitter rock* or *glam rock*—essentially a visual or theatrical (not musical) distinction. Finally, some rebelled against *everything* and developed the *punk* trend. The less strident, Beatles side of the mainstream also fragmented, although less dramatically. A number of these groups also drifted toward art rock, joining in the so-called progressive rock trend; others moved toward a more commercially popular sound (Top 40-oriented), and a few steered a course right down the center.

The Harder Side of the British Mainstream

Three British rockers who had careers beginning in the 1960s reached their greatest success as performers in the blues rock mold in the 1970s: guitarist Eric Clapton, keyboard player–vocalist Steve Winwood, and flamboyant singer Rod Stewart.

When last we spoke of Eric Clapton, he was a member of the Yardbirds, a British blues-based band that stressed lengthy improvisational solos (see Chapter 7). Clapton's interest in blues and improvisation continued in his next group, Cream, formed in 1966, which enjoyed a successful but brief career for slightly over two years. Their second album, *Disraeli Gears* (late 1967), includes several examples of their improvisational solos. Like other such groups, the band would superimpose a series of long improvisational solos over a basic riff. "Sunshine of Your Love" (number 5 in 1968) contains one of the most familiar (and oft-imitated) riffs in rock. Cream's repertoire included original songs as well as authentic American blues material. The double album *Wheels of Fire* (number 1 in 1968) offers several excellent examples of Cream's use of the 12-bar blues (note especially "Politician" and "Crossroads"). Internal tensions led to the dissolution of the band in late 1968.

Following the breakup of Cream, Clapton formed two short-lived bands: Blind Faith (1969) and Derek and the Dominoes (1970 to 1972). Tortured by a severe drug problem and an on-and-off love affair with Patti Harrison (George's wife)—whom he eventually married—Clapton retreated from the limelight for a while. He returned in 1974 with the number 1 album, *461 Ocean Boulevard*, issued under his own name. It contained the number 1 single hit "I Shot the Sheriff," a reggae-style song composed by Bob Marley. Throughout the following three decades, Clapton continued to record under his own name; he continues to be considered one of rock's most influential guitarists.

One of England's finest keyboard players was Stevie Winwood (born in Birmingham, England, in 1948). Winwood formed the group Traffic in late 1967. Traffic's finest album came in 1970 with *John Barleycorn Must Die* (number 5). Especially impressive was the strong playing of Winwood and the always tasteful work of woodwind player Chris Wood. Following the release of *When the Eagle Flies* (1974), which featured more excellent keyboard work by Winwood, the group disbanded. Winwood experienced significant solo success in the mid-1980s with the triple-platinum *Back in the High Life*, which included two Top 10 singles: the Grammy-winning "Higher Love" (number 1; featuring Chaka Khan) and "The Finer Things." In 1988 came a number 1 album, *Roll with It*, that included three hit singles: the title track (number 1), "Don't You Know What the Night Can Do?," and "Holding On."

Rod Stewart was born in London in 1945 to Scottish parents. In early 1967, he helped form the Jeff Beck Group with Beck and bassist-guitarist Ron Wood; in his two years with Beck, Stewart gained initial exposure to a wide audience in England and the United States. By 1970, a British mainstream band, Small Faces, reorganized as Faces and brought on Ron Wood and Rod Stewart. Stewart had already signed as a solo artist with Mercury Records, so he pursued a dual career as a soloist and as a member of Faces. However, Stewart's solo career gradually overshadowed the group's work, and Faces disappeared by the mid-1970s.

Stewart's second album, *Gasoline Alley* (1970), made the U.S. Top 30 and was the real beginning of his solo success. It was a hard-rocking album with clear blues roots. Stewart's hoarse, raspy voice was distinctive and seemed just right for the shouting tradition of blues-based mainstream rock. Stewart's follow-up album, *Every Picture Tells a Story* (1971), became a number 1 album and contained the hit single "Maggie May" (number 1 in 1971). He developed a flamboyant and spectacular stage act, complete with flashy costumes and his distinctive wild, blond hairstyle.

Following *Never a Dull Moment* (number 2 in 1972), Stewart's popularity seemed to decline for several years. However, in 1975, he reemerged with the successful *Atlantic*

Crossing album, which made the U.S. Top 10. Although it is sometimes felt that Stewart's post-1975 work falls short of his earlier blues-based classics, he continued to be an important rock personality. In the late 1990s, Stewart released a series of significantly mellower recordings, including *Human* (2001) and a series of recordings of jazz standards and show tunes in a series titled *The Great American Songbook*.

The Gentler Side of the British Mainstream

As we have mentioned, the harder side of the British mainstream of the 1970s fragmented into basic hard rock, heavy metal, glitter rock, and punk–new wave. Meanwhile, there was also the continuation of the somewhat less outrageous, less deafening, less shock-oriented side of the mainstream.

One of the most successful of these mainstream groups began on the harder, blues-based side and crossed over to the softer side in the mid-1970s. A quartet formed by former members of John Mayall's Blues-Breakers—Jeremy Spencer, Peter Green, Miek Fleetwood, and John McVie—debuted as Green's Fleetwood Mac at the British National Jazz and Blues Festival in August 1967. Fleetwood Mac included songs by Elmore James, Howlin' Wolf, and Sonny Boy Williamson (plus several blues-based originals) on their first album, *Fleetwood Mac* (1968). For the balance of the 1960s, the band was popular in England but virtually unknown in the United States.

The transition from a strong blues base to a softer style began in the early 1970s as a result of various personnel changes (including the addition of McVie's wife, Christine, on keyboard and vocals). The first album with the new quintet was *Future Games* (1971). The old blues sound was now in the past, and the newer Fleetwood Mac emphasized ballads and more refined harmonies.

By 1974, the band had survived legal difficulties, more personnel changes, and moved to Los Angeles. There they recruited the duo of Stevie Nicks (vocals) and Lindsey Buckingham (guitar and vocals). The initial album featuring the new lineup (Fleetwood, two McVies, Nicks, and Buckingham) moved completely from the harder to the softer side of the rock mainstream. *Fleetwood Mac* (1975)—with the same title as their debut album in 1968—was a commercial success, becoming their first number 1 album and producing three Top 40 hits. The follow-up album, *Rumours* (1977), was even more successful, holding the number 1 position for 31 weeks and turning multiplatinum with over 14 million copies sold. Again, there were three hit singles, including the number 1 song "Dreams." With three songwriters contributing to the new repertoire (Nicks, Buckingham, and Christine McVie), there was no dearth of good material. The solid vocal harmonies and excellent musicianship of the entire band accounted for their high level of success. *Rumours* suggests the versatility of the band as they move from the mainstream rock style of "Don't Stop" and "Go Your Own Way" to the soft rock sound of "Dreams." There is a liberal dose of folk rock style and even frequent touches of country sounds.

The McVie divorce and the personal separation of Nicks and Buckingham did not damage the group's professional work. The double album *Tusk* was released in 1979; it carried the earlier-evidenced versatility of the group toward a true eclecticism and yielded three Top 40 hits. However, as the 1980s began, the individual members of Fleetwood Mac increasingly pursued individual projects. The most successful was Stevie Nicks, who enjoyed seven Top 40 hits in the early 1980s.

Another standout musician of the 1970s was Elton John. Although he was enormously successful, he certainly was far short of being the influence across all markets that would make him a phenomenon like Elvis Presley or the Beatles. While the rock establishment has generally condemned John as being banal, mechanical, and slickly commercial, rock historian Charles Brown went so far as to say that (1987, 148) "Elton John epitomizes the best of 1970s music." The truth may lie somewhere in between.

Elton John was born Reginald Dwight in Middlesex, England, in 1947. After joining the band Bluesology, John began a period of some six years knocking around the British music business. Finally, thanks to a massive PR effort by Uni Records, his single “Your Song” entered the U.S. charts and rose to the Top 10 in early 1971. The music to “Your Song” was written by John, but the lyrics were by Bernie Taupin. The team of John and Taupin wrote virtually all of John’s music until they split up in 1976.

John’s peak period was from late 1971 through early 1976. Beginning with *Madman Across the Water*, he released nine albums, seven of which went to number 1. Along with the album sales, there were over a dozen Top 20 hits, including five number 1 songs. Of particular interest is the *Honky Chateau* album, which deemphasized the huge string arrangements and featured more guitar-oriented rock. The hits “Honky Cat” and “Rocket Man” appeared on this album. Also notable was “Crocodile Rock” from *Don’t Shoot Me, I’m Only the Piano Player*; it is a clever piece of nostalgia based on the late 1950s soft rock sound (compare it with Paul Anka’s “Diana”). “Saturday Night’s Alright for Fighting” is a strong example of John’s mainstream rock style; on songs such as this, he would jump up and down at the piano, recalling the antics of Little Richard and Jerry Lee Lewis. “Bennie and the Jets” features some very fine piano work by John plus some strong falsetto singing. His version of “Lucy in the Sky with Diamonds” was appropriately recorded with the assistance of Dr. Winston O’Boogie (John Lennon).

In 1974, John signed an \$8 million contract with MCA Records (the largest contract in rock history until Stevie Wonder topped it in 1975 with his \$13 million Motown contract). In 1975, John starred in the movie version of *Tommy*, and in 1976, he recorded his final album with Taupin. In 1978, he released *A Single Man*, yet another platinum album. Since then, Sir Elton John has continued to record, and his albums and singles continue to sell well. In 1997, he and Taupin reunited to remake “Candle in the Wind,” a song originally written as a tribute to Marilyn Monroe. The new version was created for and performed at the funeral of Princess Diana. John also had great success with sound tracks for *The Lion King* and *The Road to El Dorado*.

Still, there was no one star who equaled the success of Elvis or the Beatles. However, for a brief moment, one musician was poised to become this decade-defining musician for the 1970s. Mention the name of Peter Frampton now, and you might only get a blank look,



Elton John (Source: MCA Records)

but for a period of slightly less than two years, from 1976 to 1977, Frampton was being mentioned in the same breath as Presley and the Beatles. Frampton was a singer-guitarist who had played with a group called the Herd in the late 1960s and with Humble Pie (a hard rock band) in the early 1970s. Pursuing a generally undistinguished solo career, Frampton suddenly burst on the scene with a tremendously successful live double album, *Frampton Comes Alive!* (1976), which zoomed to number 1 and stayed there for 10 weeks. The song “Do You Feel Like We Do” featured a **voice box**, a device that routes the electric guitar signal through a tube into the singer’s mouth, thus allowing the mouth to shape the guitar timbre into “words.”

Frampton became a superstar almost overnight. The follow-up album, *I’m in You* (1977), reached number 2, but it did not come close to the sales records established by *Alive!* Another blow to his career came when Frampton played the role of Billy Shears in the movie *Sgt. Pepper’s Lonely Hearts Club Band*, which was badly received by both critics and the public. Following a severe automobile accident in 1978, Frampton attempted to pick up where he had left off, but to no avail. Another candidate for Giant of the 1970s bit the dust after a grand total of two Top 10 albums.

Mainstream Rock in the States

For each British mainstream fragment—harder mainstream, softer mainstream, heavy metal, glitter rock, and punk—new wave—there was an American parallel. Generally speaking, the American mainstream rock groups tended to be less hard than their British counterparts. Our first example is a group from San Francisco called Creedence Clearwater Revival (CCR). CCR shared very little in common with their Bay Area colleagues of the late 1960s. Their good old boy, Deep South sound was largely determined by their leader, guitarist-vocalist and songwriter John Fogerty.

Formed originally as a high school group in 1959, the band changed their name to Creedence Clearwater Revival in late 1967 and released a remake of an old 1950s hit, “Suzie Q” (originally sung by Dale Hawkins in 1957). Their second album, *Bayou Country* (1969), by its very title, fostered the deep southern image. From the album came a monster hit, “Proud Mary” (number 2 in 1969). *Willy and the Poorboys*, possibly CCR’s most



American rock group Creedence Clearwater Revival. From left to right: Doug Clifford, Tom Fogerty, Stu Cook, and John Fogerty (Source: Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

representative album, illustrates its typical styles: The deep southern sound is obvious in “Down on the Corner,” “Cotton Fields,” and “The Midnight Special”; songs like “Feelin’ Blue” and “Side o’ the Road” are very bluesy. “Effigy” is about as San Francisco-ish as CCR ever got. The southern sound was sometimes closer to rockabilly (“Suzie Q”), and at other times closer to the black blues sound. An interesting melding of styles may be heard in the Motown hit “I Heard It Through the Grapevine,” in which CCR preserves the original’s basic melody and harmonies but adds a lengthy guitar improvisation.

CCR’s popularity continued into the early 1970s. However, by 1971, Tom Fogerty had grown uncomfortable with his younger brother’s dominance; he left the band. In October 1971, they disbanded. Following the breakup, John Fogerty released a series of six solo recordings between 1973 and 1998, including *Centerfield* (number 1 in 1985) and *Blue Moon Swamp* (1997), which only reached number 37 but earned a Grammy for Best Rock Album.

Another San Francisco band that succeeded in 1970s mainstream rock was the Doobie Brothers. Formed in San Jose in 1969, the Doobies endured a bewildering series of personnel changes throughout their career. Normally using a lineup of two guitars, bass, and two drums, the band played a strong style of mainstream rock. Their first album, *Toulouse Street* (1972), included the popular anthem “Listen to the Music.” The unique voice of Tom Johnston, plus the strong vocal harmonizations, established the band’s appeal. As with many U.S. bands, the Doobies were not as hard as their mainstream British counterparts. They combined good vocals, good harmonies, and clean playing with sophisticated recording production. A good sample of early 1970s Doobie Brothers may be heard on *The Captain and Me*, which included the major hits “Long Train Running” and “China Grove.”

The sound of the band changed somewhat in 1975, when Tom Johnston fell ill; he continued intermittently with the band, but by early 1977, he had left permanently. With the loss of Johnston, a new Doobie sound emerged with the title song from the 1976 album, *Takin’ It to the Streets*, strongly influenced by new, keyboardist-vocalist and songwriter Mike McDonald, who had previously performed with Steely Dan. The harmonies became more sophisticated and even a bit jazz-oriented. However, personnel changes constantly plagued the band, and by 1982, the Doobies had passed their peak of popularity.

Although associated with the late 1960s San Francisco scene, Steve Miller achieved his greatest success in the 1970s. Raised in Dallas, Miller moved to Chicago after college, where he played with local bluesmen such as Muddy Waters. Miller formed his own band in San Francisco in 1966, but his big break did not occur until late 1973 with his ninth album, *The Joker*; the album hit number 2, and the title song rose to number 1. Miller’s popularity ebbed and flowed through the 1970s, but in 1982, he hit big again with *Abracadabra*. Miller’s mainstream style showed his blues roots, sometimes colored by touches of country and even vestiges of the old San Francisco sound.

One other San Francisco band began in the 1970s and endured to become a major act of the 1980s. Journey began in 1973 with two former members of Santana (see Chapter 14)—keyboardist Gregg Rolie and guitarist Neal Schon—as its nucleus. Journey’s first three albums were not big sellers. Lead singer Steve Perry was added in 1977 and was largely responsible for the success of their fourth album, *Infinity*.

In the early 1980s, Journey became firmly established as an important mainstream rock band. Their album *Frontiers*, which yielded four hit singles, is an interesting album as side 1 contains milder material, whereas side 2 reflects a style that is closer to hard rock and heavy metal. Such stylistic diversity typified Journey. They could produce ballads like “Open Arms” and “Faithfully” without sounding like a soft rock group; they could also move to the other extreme and sound like a heavy metal band (but far more artistic than most) in songs like “Edge of the Blade.” In between was a hard mainstream rock style that featured Perry’s strong, high voice (always perfectly controlled, even when he



Sly Stone (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./ Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

was shouting or screaming), Schon's superb guitar breaks, and solid musicianship by the rest of the band.

It is no doubt becoming apparent how fragmented rock really was in the 1970s. Black music also fragmented, as various artists moved in different directions. One of the first stylistic directions evolved in San Francisco, as Sylvester Stewart combined soul music with psychedelic rock to create a style called **psychedelic soul**. Stewart was born in Dallas in 1944 but soon moved with his family to northern California. There, Sly, as he became known, organized the Stoners in 1966,

and by 1967, the band had evolved into the seven-member Sly and the Family Stone. Their fourth album, *Stand!*, became Sly's first truly successful album, yielding four hit singles, including the number 1 "Everyday People."

Their performance at Woodstock (featured in the documentary film about the event) enhanced the group's popularity, especially with their sensational performance of "I Want to Take You Higher."

Sly's style combined many elements. At its foundation was a basically funky beat and bass line; horns added a jazzy element reminiscent of the old Memphis and Stax-Volt soul sound; some of the guitar work and the band's relatively loose performance style were associated with the San Francisco psychedelic sound, as were some of their drug-oriented lyrics. Of particular interest was the vocal format. There were frequently two or three lead singers; the mixture of a female voice and two distinctly different male voices created a unique sound. Although almost any Sly song will reveal the group's style, one of the best examples is their early "Dance to the Music."

The late 1971 album, *There's a Riot Goin' On*, reached number 1, but the end was near. *Fresh* (1973) was Sly's last Top 10 album, and "If You Want Me to Stay" was his last major hit (number 12). Subsequent albums fared less well.

Southern Rock

Leaving San Francisco, we move back to the South, where rock and roll was born. Other than the soul recordings in Memphis and Muscle Shoals, rock had left its birthplace. Most rock of the 1960s had come from places like Detroit, Los Angeles, San Francisco, Philadelphia, New York City, Liverpool, and London. However, in the early 1970s, there was an effort to get back to the basics of southern rock and roll.

In 1969, Duane and Gregg Allman (born in Nashville in 1946 and 1947, respectively) formed a band that would initiate the southern rock trend. The band's real breakthrough came with the Allman Brothers Band's live album, *At Fillmore East* (1971). The blues-based rock style was evident on songs like "In Memory of Elizabeth Reed" and the sidelong "Whipping Post" (or listen to "Midnight Rider" from the earlier *Idlewild South* album). Sadly, Duane Allman died in a motorcycle accident in late October 1971. *Eat a Peach* (1972) contained Duane's last recordings; the double album reached number 4 on the album charts. Slightly over one year later, the band's bassist, Berry Oakley, was killed in a motorcycle accident near the site of Duane's death.

The band managed to produce a new album, *Brothers and Sisters*, in 1973; it became the Allman Brothers Band's first and only number 1 album. A good example of the southern blues rock is "Southbound," a traditional 12-bar blues that displayed a perfect blending of R&B and rock. (An earlier example of the Allman Brothers' 12-bar blues rock is "Statesboro Blues.") However, by 1976, the band had fragmented. After several years, Gregg Allman reassembled a band and released several albums in the late 1970s and early 1980s that were moderate sellers.

The Allman Brothers were key to the beginning of the southern rock sound. Their work in the period from 1970 to 1973 established the return of rock to its southern R&B roots. Following in their footsteps was Lynyrd Skynyrd, a band whose roots can be traced back to the mid-1960s in Jacksonville, Florida. The Allman Brothers Band had been a sextet with two drummers (like the Doobie Brothers) and a dual lead guitar format. Lynyrd Skynyrd added a third lead guitar, becoming a rock septet.

Lynyrd Skynyrd established a strong reputation as a live performance band, partially as a result of their tour with The Who in 1973. Their peak popularity dates from the Top 10 hit "Sweet Home Alabama" (1974) through 1977, during which time three of their four albums made the Top 10. Taking the Allman Brothers' blues-based sound and adding a slightly harder rock sound, the band achieved a unique style. However, in 1977, the band's charter plane crashed, killing vocalist Ronnie Van Zant and two other band members and injuring others, thus ending the band's career. Three days before the crash, *Street Survivors* had been released; it reached number 5 on the album charts, the highest ranking of any Skynyrd album.

The Midwest and the Rest

Continuing our survey of the American mainstream of the 1970s, we move from the South to the Midwest. The group Kansas is sometimes considered to be a progressive or art rock band, based on the fact that the band prominently included violin and that the musical form of some of their compositions extended well beyond a simple verse-chorus structure. Indeed, there are moments when the classical training of several of Kansas's members can be discerned (e.g., "Lonely Wind" and "Journey from Mariabronn," especially with the latter's meter changes and modal melodies). However, more often, the overall sound is that of a sophisticated form of mainstream rock.

The six members of Kansas were fine players and singers. Their rock sound was solid; their harmonies (vocal and instrumental) were well conceived and well performed. From Topeka, Kansas, they formed their band in 1971. Kansas experienced their greatest success between 1976 and early 1978 with the albums *Leftoverture* (number 5 in 1976), which contained the masterful "Carry On Wayward Son" (number 11 in 1977), and *Point of Know Return* (number 4 in 1977), which included the number 6 hit "Dust in the Wind." Success proved elusive afterward, and in 1983, the group disbanded. Even when the original members of Kansas reconvened (substituting Billy Greer on bass) in 2000 to release *Somewhere to Elsewhere*, the audience did not materialize.

The problem of categorization continues when we move up to Chicago and encounter Styx. Although some writers would place them in the progressive rock category, their biggest hit, "Babe," came close to a style of soft rock.

In early 1975, *Styx II*, which had been released back in 1973, finally entered the Top 20, and the single "Lady" simultaneously hit the Top 10. The 1977 album *The Grand Illusion* became a smash hit and was the first of a series of five platinum albums. Along with the albums came a series of successful singles, including five Top 10 hits and the number 1 song "Babe" (1979). Styx's mainstream style could lean toward a harder sound at times and toward a softer sound at other times; there were even occasional touches of progressive rock. Taken overall, their style is a good representation of American mainstream rock of the late 1970s to early 1980s.

Tying the British and American mainstream together was Foreigner, formed by three New Yorkers and three Londoners. Formed in 1976 by guitarist Mick Jones and Ian McDonald, they released their first album, *Foreigner*, in 1977. As with Journey and Styx, Foreigner is capable of moving from a hard rock mainstream norm toward heavy metal on one side, or toward the softer side. Their 1981 album *4* was a monster hit, becoming Foreigner's only number 1 album. Their two most successful singles, "Waiting for a Girl Like You" (1984) and "I Want to Know What Love Is" (number 1, 1985), were among Foreigner's softer rock sounds.

Mainstream Rock in the 1980s

Bruce Springsteen

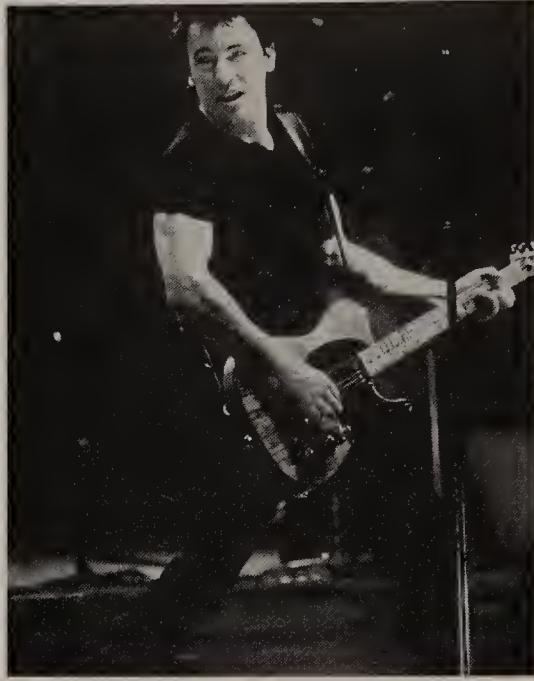
With all of the fragmentation, subcategories, cross fertilizations, and individualized styles of the 1970s and 1980s, whatever happened to just plain mainstream rock? Amid all the hyphens and adjectives, was there any band that consisted of a gutsy singer, a drummer, some guitarists, a piano player, and maybe a saxophonist playing good old dead-center rock and roll? The answer was yes, but it was a rather well-kept secret until the 1980s.

Like Michael Jackson, Bruce Springsteen achieved superstar status in the 1980s; like Jackson, he was no overnight sensation. Both had paid their dues through years of work in the music industry. Springsteen was born in 1949 in Freehold, New Jersey. As a teenager, he worked in a series of bands in the New Jersey and New York City (Greenwich Village) area. In 1972, he caught the attention of John Hammond, the A&R (artists and repertoire) representative for Columbia Records. Hammond, as we saw in the case of Dylan, had a penchant for spotting unique, nontraditional vocalists—those with a rough and raw basic sound.

Springsteen's first Columbia album, *Greetings from Asbury Park, New Jersey* (1973), was a slow seller. For his 1974 tour, Springsteen formed what was to become his excellent backup band, the E Street Band. The first real turn in Springsteen's career came with the release of *Born to Run* in 1975. Accompanied by a massive PR campaign (over \$200,000 worth), the album broke the Top 5.

With *Born to Run*, Springsteen became known to a much wider public. The album's side 2, especially, revealed the multifaceted appeal of Springsteen's music. The title song was mainstream rock (true of most Springsteen); note especially the instrumental break, featuring the excellent playing of saxophonist Clarence Clemons. This is not art rock, jazz rock, folk rock, or any other kind of mixed rock; it is quintessential rock and roll. Springsteen has a raw, unsophisticated voice, like Dylan, Joplin, and Hendrix. The lyrics are references to the frustrations, confusions, dreams, and disappointments of the average working-class person. The themes of unemployment, social issues, the difficulties of Vietnam veterans, and the rage and frustration of being unable to beat the establishment pervade almost all of Springsteen's songs. In that way, he is related to the heritage of the folk rock trend of the 1960s—one of the few remnants of that sentiment in the 1970s and 1980s.

"Meeting Across the River" is a relatively rare example of Springsteen in a softer mode. The trumpet obbligato played by Randy Brecker adds a nice touch to this haunting song. Although generally ignored, "Jungleland" may be the most interesting song on *Born to Run*. Moving nicely out of "Meeting Across the River," "Jungleland" begins quietly with piano and strings. Springsteen sets the scene: the street life of New York City and New Jersey after dark. In the second verse, the tension builds, and the textures gradually thicken. As Springsteen reaches the title line, "Jungleland," the full E Street Band enters, and the subsequent verse conforms to Springsteen's typical mainstream rock style.



Bruce Springsteen in concert in Miami, Florida
(Source: Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

A strong instrumental break, once again, reveals the strong musicianship of the backup band. After several verses, the rock beat slows to half speed for Clemons's mournful sax solo. As the beat resumes, Clemons continues to drive the song toward its conclusion, but there is yet another interruption as the energy dissipates; the beat stops, and the texture thins to acoustic piano. Springsteen reenters in a style similar to the opening verses. For the final verse, the tempo quickens and slows, reflecting the meaning and mood of the text. The music throughout "Jungleland" is skillfully manipulated to fit the text—the ultimate goal of any music-and-text configuration.

Spending much of his time touring, Springsteen returned to the studio in 1980. From these sessions came *The River* (1980), Springsteen's first number 1 album. This strong double album produced a number 5 single ("Hungry Heart") and launched Springsteen into his 1980s superstar status.

With this newfound success, Springsteen took a potentially dangerous step with his next album, *Nebraska* (1982). This brooding, introspective album was all acoustic and was recorded at his home on a four-track cassette recorder, and yet the album went to number 3 on the album charts.

But Springsteen's biggest commercial success came in 1984 with *Born in the U.S.A.* The title song became a popular anthem of the mid-1980s. The album reached number 1 and yielded two other singles, "Dancing in the Dark" (number 2) and "Cover Me" (number 7). "Born in the U.S.A." was interpreted by many as being a patriotic song. However, as with many Springsteen songs, there is an underlying conflict between the promise of the American dream and the stark disappointment of those who fail to attain it.

In 1986, Springsteen released a five-record boxed set called *Bruce Springsteen and the E Street Band Live: 1975–85*. It reveals a rock star who has maintained his own unique style, disregarding the transient ebbing and flowing of rock-related substyles. Springsteen's final album of the 1980s was *Tunnel of Love*, which reached number 1 and yielded two Top 10 hits ("Brilliant Disguise" and the title song, "Tunnel of Love"). In late 1989, Springsteen split from his longtime associates, the E Street Band. Throughout the 1980s and 1990s, the "Boss" remained true not only to his own musical principles, but to the historic principles of mainstream rock and roll: to express popular sentiments in a hard-driving, uncomplicated, but musically proficient style. His recordings during the 1990s, though critically acclaimed, sold less well than his earlier work. A 1995 reunion tour with the E Street Band reinvigorated both the artist and his audience. Springsteen produced one of the most austere and poignant artistic responses to the tragedy of 9/11 in his double-platinum album *The Rising* (2002).

U2

Springsteen, Michael Jackson, and Madonna (we will discuss these last two in Chapter 16) proved to be the superstars of the early 1980s (and beyond). In the last half of the decade, two superstar rock groups emerged. The first of these was an Irish rock group, U2. Formed

in 1976 by drummer Larry Mullen, the quartet paid its dues for four years by opening for other bands and touring England and Ireland. Finally, in 1980, Island Records signed the band to a contract.

Two early albums (*Boy* and *October*) fared poorly; *War* (1983), *Under a Blood Red Sky* (a live album), and *The Unforgettable Fire* did only passably well. *The Unforgettable Fire* provided the first solid hints that U2 was capable of better things. For example, both the title song and “A Sort of Homecoming” are strong, well-performed mainstream rock songs. The haunting “4th of July” evokes a New Age feeling (more about New Age later). “Bad” has a repetitive, minimalistic accompaniment. However, lead singer Bono’s vocal abilities are severely taxed in songs like “Promenade” and “MLK.”

Lead singer Bono (Paul Hewson) is unusually candid about his own talents. In one interview, he said, “I can’t really work out why anyone would buy a U2 record. When I listen to it, I just hear all the mistakes. . . . But I don’t like the way I’ve sung on any of the records. I don’t think I’m a good singer, but I think I’m getting to be a good singer” (Bronson 1988, 673). In the macho, egotistical world of the self-aggrandizing rock star, such remarks are quite rare.

How could this rather undistinguished group become superstars of the late 1980s? By 1987, U2 had been together for 11 years with no change of membership. The results were a new tightness for the band and noticeably stronger performance skills for each individual. The 1987 album *The Joshua Tree* not only achieved the number 1 position (for nine weeks) but was awarded a Grammy as Album of the Year and included two number 1 singles (“With or Without You” and “I Still Haven’t Found What I’m Looking For”). U2 was finally established as an important rock band of the 1980s.

One big album does not equate to superstardom (remember Peter Frampton?). In 1988, U2 followed with another number 1 album, *Rattle and Hum*. Comparing an early album such as *Under a Blood Red Sky* with *Rattle and Hum* provides a real lesson in the remarkable improvement that time and perseverance can yield to a band that stays together and pays its dues over the years. There are tight, solid, and powerful performances of mainstream rock songs such as “Helter Skelter” and “Hawkmoon.” There is a moving performance of “I Still Haven’t Found What I’m Looking For,” complete with a strong gospel



U2 on tour in 1982 (Source: Lynn Goldsmith/Corbis/Bettmann)

feel. Even when Bono's voice is fully exposed, as on "Love Rescue Me," the lead singer comes through with a strong, steady tone and reliable intonation. Like Springsteen, U2 often incorporates social, political, and even spiritual messages in their songs: "Pride (In the Name of Love)" and "MLK" are tributes to Martin Luther King; "Silver and Gold" is a song protesting apartheid; "God Part II"—dedicated to John Lennon—questions many forms of hypocrisy in society.

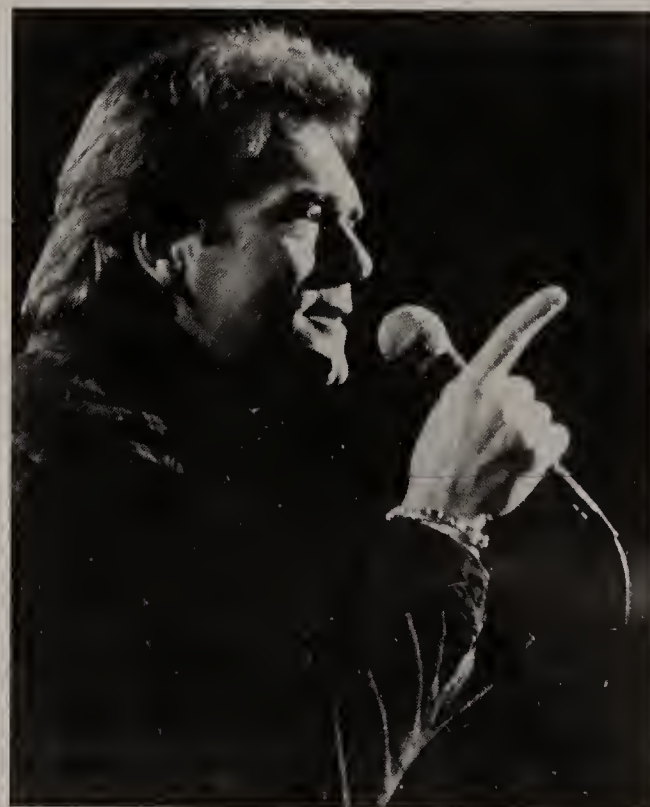
U2's success continued throughout the 1990s with albums *Achtung Baby* (number 1 in 1991), *Zooropa* (number 1 in 1993), the multiplatinum *All That You Can't Leave Behind* (number 3 in 2000), and *How to Dismantle an Atomic Bomb* (2004). These albums yielded an impressive series of single hits and several Grammy Awards.

Huey Lewis and the News

One of the more interesting entries on the gentler side of the 1980s mainstream was Huey Lewis and the News. Lewis's first album, *Picture This* (1982), produced one Top 10 hit, but *Sports* hit number 1 in 1983 and yielded four Top 10 hits: "Heart and Soul" (number 8), "I Want a New Drug" (number 6), "The Heart of Rock and Roll" (number 6), and "If This Is It" (number 6). They continued their success with "The Power of Love," the theme from the movie *Back to the Future*.

Lewis followed *Sports* with another number 1 album, *Fore!*, which contained five Top 10 hits, including two that reached number 1 ("Stuck with You" and "Jacob's Ladder"). His last album of the decade was *Small World* (1988), a particularly creative album that included some brilliant work by the Tower of Power horn section (see Chapter 14) and guest artists Stan Getz and Bruce Hornsby.

In some ways, Lewis's success is surprising. A level-headed, intelligent, and content family man, he is a stark contrast to much of 1980s rock. He is almost a nostalgic throw-back to the earlier days of rock and roll. In the words of Christopher Connelly, "Videos of the News have become a welcome oasis of normality in the broken-glass and leather-bikini world of MTV" (McDonough 1985, 161). He projects the image (apparently genuine) of just a good guy playing and singing some good old rock and roll.



Female Stars

The 1980s found more women in mainstream rock than in any previous decade. One of the most remarkable comebacks in rock history was achieved by Tina Turner. After disappearing from the charts for a full decade, Tina Turner reappeared in the mid-1980s as a "new" star. Her album *Private Dancer* moved to number 3 in 1984 and yielded three Top 10 hits, including the number 1 song "What's Love Got to Do with It." Turner capitalized on the new video trend, even as she turned 50 years old in 1988.

Huey Lewis (Source: Courtesy of Hulex Corporation)

New female stars also appeared and were well received by the rock audience. From the New York City punk–new wave scene came Blondie, a male quintet plus lead singer Debby Harry. The band produced a series of hits from 1979 to 1981, beginning with “Heart of Glass” (number 1 in 1979). Also coming from a punk background, Joan Jett and the Blackhearts hit the top spot in 1981 to 1982 with “I Love Rock’n’Roll.” Jett’s cover version of “Crimson and Clover” (originally by Tommy James and the Shondells in 1969) also reached the Top 10. Pat Benatar, a classically trained singer, produced three consecutive Top 5 albums from 1980 to 1982. Her strong vocals placed her in the rock mainstream, where she produced a Top 10 hit in 1980, “Hit Me with Your Best Shot.”

Mainstream Rock Beyond the 1980s

In the history of rock and roll, several artists have retained a high degree of popularity across multiple decades. This is no small feat when one considers the number of new artists appearing each year and the high level of competition in the popular music market. Classic rock acts that maintained a musical presence at the beginning of the 21st century include the Rolling Stones, Aerosmith, and the Eagles (primarily through the solo recordings of Don Henley). As time marched on, some of these artists, undoubtedly considered revolutionaries during the 1960s and 1970s, tended to become more mellow, including Eric Clapton, Sting, Elton John, and the Eagles.

Other musicians balanced this musical shift by also producing a significant amount of material that retained the rebellious, energetic, and often loud aspects of rock and roll. As a result, artists like Bruce Springsteen, Rod Stewart, Paul McCartney, and Billy Joel managed to retain their maturing fans from earlier decades, while attracting a whole new audience of postboomers.

As part of the process of musical maturation, several rock artists turned toward classical music as a creative outlet. We have already mentioned Paul McCartney’s *Give My Regards to Broad Street* (1984). In 1991, McCartney premiered his first classical composition, *Liverpool Oratorio*, receiving a lukewarm reception. In 2000, following the death of his wife after a battle with breast cancer, he released *A Garland for Linda* (number 7, classical), a collection of modern classical pieces, including one of his own titled “Nova.” Elvis Costello’s *The Juliet Letters* (1993) represents an ambitious effort consisting of a song cycle created in collaboration with England’s Brodsky Quartet. In addition, Costello collaborated with Burt Bacharach on the sound track for *Grace of My Heart* (1996), resulting in a Grammy nomination for the song “God Give Me Strength.” Elton John turned to composing film sound tracks for animated features such as *The Lion King* (1994; including the Academy Award–winning Best Original Song “Can You Feel the Love Tonight”). In 2001, Billy Joel released *Fantasies & Delusions: Music for Solo Piano* (debuted at number 1 on the classical chart). Credited to “William Joel,” performed by virtuoso Richard Joo, and recorded in Vienna at the famous Mozartsaal in the Vienna Konzerthaus, it reveals an earnest attempt by a veteran rock and roller to communicate with his audience via classical music, using only a solo piano.

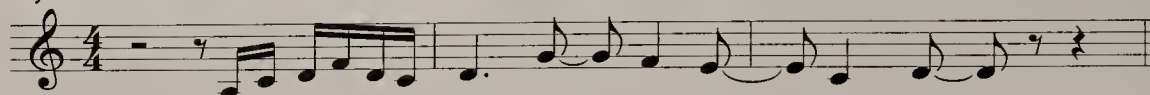
This trend toward rock artists reaching for a place in so-called serious art music is likely to continue, though it should be noted that most of these artists maintain an outdated concept of classical music (see Chapter 12).

Eric Clapton

We have already discussed Eric Clapton in this chapter, but because he serves as a prime example of a mellowing rock legend and because his acoustic version of “Layla” (1992) allows a direct comparison with his performance on the original recording (a hit for Derek and the Dominoes in 1970), let us take a closer look.

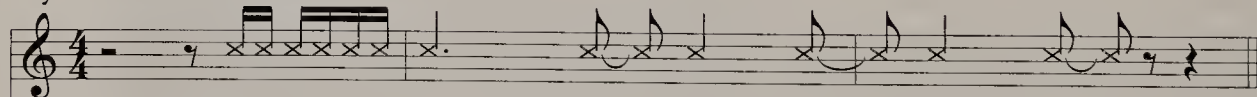
In 1992, Clapton appeared on MTV's *Unplugged* series, performing acoustic versions of many of his songs, including "Layla." In the 1992 version, the high-energy rock feeling of the early recording is replaced by a relaxed, laid-back musical feel. What are the specific musical elements that make this later recording sound so different? The overall instrumentation changed, replacing the two screaming rock guitars of Clapton and Duane Allman with acoustic guitar and acoustic piano. Clapton's vocal style is much lighter on the *Unplugged* performance, resulting in a more mature, introspective sound. Most noticeable, however, is the complete absence of the prominent guitar riff that pervades the original version:

Layla Guitar Riff



Why is such a memorable aspect of the original tune left out of the cover version? This question leads us to a discussion of the most changed musical aspect of Clapton's later recording: the rhythm. Most obvious is the significant change in tempo. The original recording was much faster, falling somewhere between 114 and 120 beats per minute, depending on which section one listens to. In contrast, the *Unplugged* version remains at a steady 93 beats per minute throughout. Listen carefully to both versions of "Layla," concentrating on how the beats are subdivided. If you focus your attention on the drummer's hi-hat cymbal in the original version or the tambourine part in the later recording, it is possible to hear an interesting difference between the two. In the verses of the original recording, the beat is divided in half (duple subdivision), while the beat in the choruses, where the word "Layla" enters, is divided into four (quadruple) subdivisions. In contrast, the MTV performance incorporates a triple subdivision of the beat, often with only the first and third notes of this subdivision being played. The resulting long-short, long-short rhythm is sometimes referred to as a **shuffle beat** and is associated with a more relaxed musical style:

Rhythm of Guitar Riff



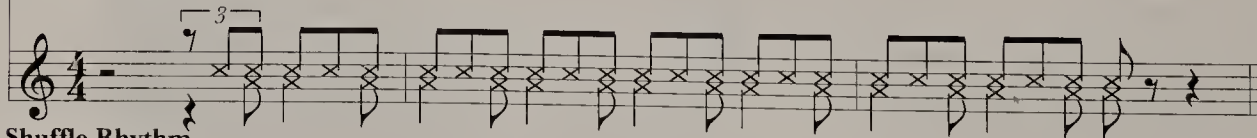
Beat Divided in Half



Beat Divided in Fourths



Beat Divided in Thirds



Shuffle Rhythm



If we look closely at the rhythm of the guitar riff from the Derek and the Dominoes recording, we can determine why this musical signature of the original was not incorporated into the later version: Because of the beat subdivision, it could not have been used without destroying the underlying shuffle rhythm. The guitar riff requires that each beat be divided into fourths rather than thirds. Therefore, Clapton chose to use the melody and harmony of the original, while altering both the timbre and rhythm for this remake of his classic tune.

The recording of his MTV session earned Clapton six Grammys, including Record of the Year, Song of the Year, and Best Pop Vocal Performance, Male, for “Tears in Heaven” (number 2, 1992), a song inspired by the tragic death of his four-year-old son.

Following a brief reunion with his fellow band members for Cream’s induction into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame, Clapton returned to his roots, releasing a collection of classic blues tunes titled *From the Cradle* (number 1 in 1994), which won a Grammy for Best Traditional Blues Album. Through the 1990s, he alternated between recording original material and traditional blues, including a duets album with longtime mentor/friend B. B. King.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: A LOOK AT ROCK LYRICS

Technically speaking, lyrics are not a musical element. Nevertheless, throughout the history of music, words and music have been intimately related. After all, the most natural (and cheapest) instrument is the human voice. Music alone is a powerful communicative tool, but its communication is nonverbal. The addition of words provides a more specific and understandable form of communication. A given piece of music may make us feel sad in a general way, but the words tell us what there is to be sad about (the loss of a love relationship, for example).

In spite of the importance of the guitar, drums, and various types of keyboards, rock has been, above all, vocal music. The overwhelming number of artists discussed in this book were singers (granted, most also played one or more instruments). In some cases, rock songs began with the music, the words being added to fit; but just as often, a song originated with a poem (lyrics), to which music was added. It works both ways.

Early rock lyrics were usually about boy-girl romantic situations or about good times. Sex was rarely involved, and when it was, the references were implicit. Among the most popular 1950s rockers, Little Richard came the closest to suggestive lyrics (e.g., “Good Golly Miss Molly” and “Long Tall Sally”).

The 1960s brought about major changes in rock lyrics. Although the surfers were still concerned with boy-girl romance and good times (add sun, surf, and cars to the list) and the dance craze focused (obviously) on dancing, the rising folk music trend brought social and political issues to rock lyrics. It was at this point that these songs ceased being merely a mirror of society and began to be an active agent of change in society. The lyrics of the folk rockers pointed the way to what they believed could be a better way of life—life without war, violence, racial prejudice, and environmental pollution.

By 1967, rock lyrics had made steady and impressive progress from the walk-talk, arms-charms lyrics of the 1950s to the thought-provoking lyrics of Dylan, the Beatles, the Byrds, and others, but around 1967, further changes began to take place. Prior to 1967, the subject of drugs in song lyrics had been regarded as taboo. Occasional references to drugs were accomplished by means of the double entendre. Songs like “Eight Miles High” and “Lucy in the Sky with Diamonds” created controversy but were excused because of the possibility of an innocent alternative meaning, but in 1967, songs like “White Rabbit” by the Jefferson Airplane and “A Day in the Life” by the Beatles began to appear, and rock took a significant step, from the innocent and the occasionally suggestive double entendre to the blatant enunciation of taboo topics.

Since the late 1960s, explicit references to drugs have become rather common in rock lyrics. Because the drug culture has an ever-changing jargon of its own, many rock song drug references are perfectly clear to the initiated but pass right by the non-drug-oriented

listener. While Country Joe McDonald sang overt drug songs like “Acid Commercial,” others resorted to drug jargon in songs like “Along Comes Mary” (the Association) and “Lady Jane” and “Jumpin’ Jack Flash” (the Rolling Stones). The drug references functioned in a dual capacity: They reflected the drug-oriented segment of the rock community that produced the songs, but because of the wide distribution of the music, they also spread the prodrug message to a broader spectrum of society that otherwise might not have been tantalized by drugs. So to the oft-asked question, Did rock music merely reflect the growing use of drugs in the 1960s and 1970s, or was it an active agent in that trend?, we must answer yes, it did both.

What of the other major taboo: sex? Again, the music of the late 1960s edged ever closer to overt and explicit sexual references. In British rock, the Rolling Stones led the way toward more explicit references to sex; on this side of the Atlantic, the “credit” goes to Frank Zappa. The latter’s *Fillmore East* (1971) album contained explicit sexual lyrics, although couched in Zappa’s typical dirty-joke context. More menacing was a song on the Stones’ *Goats Head Soup* (1973), originally titled “Starfucker.” The song refers to the sexual adventures of a groupie who relentlessly pursues rock and movie stars. (Atlantic Records label head Ahmet Ertegun insisted on the change of title to “Star Star.”)

Granted, there had always been underground groups that had produced sexually explicit songs, but Zappa and the Stones were superstars. Once the barriers were broken, the trend was unstoppable. The level of sexual explicitness remained more or less constant through the 1970s and intensified in the 1980s. Particularly noticeable were two new aspects in sexual rock lyrics: (1) the combination of sex and violence (often using the latter as a metaphor for the former) and (2) the fascination with so-called deviant sexual behavior.

Songwriters have used many different metaphors when referring to sex. They have described the innocence and springlike beauty of sex with references to “the birds and the bees”; referring to the thrill and excitement of sex, they have written of “bells and fireworks” and even “thunder and lightning” (the title of a 1972 hit for Chi Coltrane). In the 1980s, though, more violent metaphors became common. Songs by Mötley Crüe, Kiss, The Who, AC/DC, Judas Priest, Dokken, and Marvin Gaye describe the male sex organ as a gun, a knife, a sword, a steel rod, or a pipe; Kiss and AC/DC refer to the female sex organ as a cake to be cut or butter to be sliced; ejaculation is the act of shooting the gun; and semen consists of bullets. In some of the songs, the references could mean either sex or violence, but it is the virtual equation of the two, so that one is uncertain which is intended, that alarms many observers.

The second subtrend in sexual lyrics has been the drift toward forms of sex other than the male-female variety. Leading the way here was Prince, who sang of incest (“Sister”), masturbation (“Jack U Off”), group sex (“When You Were Mine”), and oral sex (“Head”). There are songs that combine sex and the occult and songs that describe sadomasochism. The uses of explicit language to describe straightforward sex are simply too numerous to mention, and of course, there are songs that, using nonverbal utterances (sighs, moans, screams, etc.), are musical depictions of the sex act (e.g., Prince and Donna Summer). We have certainly come a long way from “I Want to Hold Your Hand.”

Drugs and sex were not the only themes to find increasingly explicit expression in rock lyrics of the 1970s and 1980s. Themes of rebellion took a variety of forms. Of course, rock and roll, even in its earliest forms, was inherently rebellious, but the lyrics of those early rock songs were rarely overt in their rebellion. In the 1960s, folk, folk rock, and other socially oriented styles criticized existing society and offered “a better way”; these songs represented a more positive type of rebellion (in fact, a better word might be reform).

Perhaps in part because of the disillusionment of the 1960s youth movement, the rebellion of the 1970s and 1980s grew increasingly angry and negative. AC/DC’s “School Daze” provides a stark contrast to Chuck Berry’s “School Days.” Whereas Berry suggested that at

three o'clock, students lay down their educational burdens and swing down to a malt shop to dance, AC/DC screams at them to burn down the school. School itself is referred to as a "juvenile prison" and a "homework hellhouse." Negative views of education had been expressed earlier by Pink Floyd in "Another Brick in the Wall—Part II" when they said, "We don't need no education / We don't need no thought control / No dark sarcasms in the classroom / Teacher, leave them kids alone."

Songs by Kiss and Mötley Crüe expressed rebellion against school, parents, and other authority figures. Twisted Sister angrily shouted, "We're not gonna take it anymore!" and characterized adult (parental) society as being "condescending," "trite," "jaded," and "boring." Ozzy Osborne warned teachers and authority figures in general, "Do what you will to try and make me conform / But I'll make you wish you had never been born." Twisted Sister shouted at parents, "Just you try and make us!"

The angry sentiments of the metal bands were carried to even further extremes by some rappers (specifically the gangsta rappers; see Chapter 17). For these rappers, the targets of their lyrics were less likely to be parents and education. Gangsta rappers aimed their hostility at women, the police, and white people in general. These lyrics, too, were extremely explicit in their references to acts of violence and sex. Once again, these sentiments can be seen as reflections of normal teenage rebellion. However, there has always been much discussion about the possibility that the open defiance and angry hostility expressed in these songs may have the effect of intensifying normal (and even healthy) teenage rebellion, turning it into something more destructive.

Another form of rebellion that has grown steadily in rock lyrics is the trend toward the occult and, in its most extreme form, satanism. Although one can trace satanic references back to songs like "Sympathy for the Devil" and "Lueretia MacEvil," such references were rather innocuous and, in fact, painted a distinctly unflattering image of the devil. However, by the 1980s, some groups were not merely referring to the devil, but seemed to be advocating satanism. *Venom's* album notes say as much: "We are possessed by all that is evil; the death of you, God, we demand. We spit at the virgin you worship, and sit at Lord Satan's right hand." Groups such as Mercyful Fate, Exciter, Slayer, Megadeth, Iron Maiden, AC/DC, and King Diamond expressed similar messages. Although some of the satanic groups simply used this rather extreme form of rebellion as a sales gimmick, others seem to be genuinely devoted to their messages.

There has always been a vigorous debate about the effect of rock music on violent behavior and, particularly, suicide. There had been a brief fascination with death in a few songs of the late 1950s and early 1960s (e.g., Mark Dinning's "Teen Angel" of 1960, the Shangri-Las' "Leader of the Pack" and Jan and Dean's "Dead Man's Curve," both from 1964). Suicide had been specifically referred to in Jody Reynold's morose song of 1958, "The Endless Sleep." However, by the 1980s, teen suicides had tripled in a 30-year period and had become the second leading cause of death among people under age 25. Compounding the concern, an alarming number of teens had committed suicide while listening to suicide-oriented rock songs, including the oft-cited "Suicide Solution" by Ozzy Osbourne, which contains the lines "suicide is the only way out" and "why don't you kill yourself 'cause you can't escape the Master Reaper." (The early heavy metal group Blue Öyster Cult used that same reference in their song "Don't Fear the Reaper.") Similar sentiments are expressed in songs by Pink Floyd, AC/DC, Black Sabbath, and Metallica. In most cases, the bands and their defenders offer alternative interpretations for the lyrics. Some people see these songs as reflective of a troubled teenage society, not a cause of suicide. Others fear that this kind of negative message may push depressed teenagers over the edge and cause them to commit suicide. As with other themes in rock and roll, like sex and violence, it is often impossible to tell which comes first—the music or the societal trend.

These five themes—drugs, sex, violent rebellion, satanism, and suicide—have raised concerns about the effects of the more explicit rock lyrics on teenagers. Groups such as the National Parent Teacher Association and the Parents Music Resource Center communicated such concerns to the recording industry and also attempted to alert parents and teenagers to the potential dangers. With the concurrence of educators and psychiatrists armed with considerable research, they suggest that some (not all) rock lyrics may have gone so far that they have become potentially dangerous to the impressionable minds of teens and preteens. (We will return to this premise in Chapter 19.)

What is virtually unarguable is that rock lyrics have changed dramatically over rock's first five decades. By the turn of the century, one could truthfully say that there was no topic that was taboo to the rock lyricist; the language of those lyrics had virtually no limitations on explicitness. The innocence of the 1950s and the idealism of the 1960s were, for the most part, gone. A song like Madonna's "Material Girl," with its proud statement of purely materialistic values, might have been received with total revulsion 20 years earlier (1965); in 1985, it reached number 2 on the charts. The acceptance of explicit lyrics into the mainstream is evident if one compares the Oscar-winning song of 1977 ("You Light Up My Life" by Debby Boone) to the Oscar winner just 18 years later ("It's Hard out Here for a Pimp" by Three-6 Mafia).

Much of the concern over explicit lyrics has centered on heavy metal and rap bands, and, indeed, they seem especially prone to such antisocial lyrics, but we must point out that not all heavy metal and rap bands produce such lyrics, and some other artists have produced very explicit lyrics (e.g., Prince and Marvin Gaye). Furthermore, many songs never touch on any of these topics. We have dealt with these topics because some were relatively new to rock in the 1970s (e.g., satanism and suicide), and some were new in their level of explicitness (sex, drugs) and vehemence (rebellion).

The Continuing Fragmentation of Rock

KEY TERMS

progressive rock
singer-songwriters

worksong
jam

jam-grass

Overview: Substyles of the 1960s Evolve into the 1970s and Beyond

As we have noted, with the arrival of the Rolling Stones and the Beatles, rock's mainstream divided into a harder and gentler side, and then even these branches fragmented further. In the 1960s, due mostly to the Beatles, the musical language of rock became more sophisticated and creative. This decade also saw the emergence of folk rock, jazz rock, art rock, and soul music. In the 1970s and 1980s, we will see that these combination styles continued to develop, although several of them acquired new names: jazz rock became fusion music; folk rockers became singer-songwriters; art rock became progressive rock; and country rock was, in some cases, called progressive country. An exception seemed to be soft rock, which continued, unswerving, from its inception with Pat Boone and Elvis Presley straight into the new century.

Two styles that were new in the 1970s and developed dramatically in the 1980s were heavy metal and rap (see Chapters 15 and 17). Both of these new styles (each in its own way) were strongly antiestablishment, despite the overall trend in society for youth to tend to their own interests and pursue success within the establishment. While the 1970s were known as the "me decade" (see Chapter 13), this characteristic was compounded in the 1980s—called by some the "Decade of Greed." Of course, in any decade, there are those—especially among the youth—who rebel against the norm. For them, heavy metal and rap were the perfect expressions of anger and frustration with the establishment.

In the mid-1970s, the Watergate crisis resulted in a heightened distrust of the government and the American political system. The sordid affair eventually resulted in President Nixon's resignation from office. For young people who were by nature skeptical of the

government and politics, the Watergate crisis alienated them even further. They were angry and frustrated with the establishment. Heavy metal rock music seemed to be a perfect expression of their anger.

From 1980 to 1988, the White House was occupied by President Ronald Reagan, a conservative Republican. His vice president, George H. W. Bush, succeeded him as president from 1988 to 1992. During the Reagan years, the economy expanded, and aside from several small skirmishes, there was a period of peace. Those who functioned within the system flourished. However, there were those who felt disenfranchised. This especially included many African Americans. The rise of rap music (or hip-hop) became an expression of their anger.

So as is almost always the case, society and music reflected each other. Those who were content to work within the system to enhance their own hopes and dreams tended to be rather nonrebellious. They were content as well with the continuation of musical styles that were simply extensions of the past (even with new names). For those who were disaffected by the Watergate crisis of the 1970s and those who did not benefit during the Reagan years, heavy metal and rap became the favored musical styles.

Let us continue our survey of the 1970s and beyond by looking at the various combination styles that continued out of the 1960s. Even though these styles were essentially continuations, we will see, as we did with the mainstream styles, that each style fragments into an array of distinct sounds and artists.

Art Rock Evolves into Progressive Rock

The type of art rock represented by Jon Lord's *Concerto* and *Gemini Suite* and Rick Wakeman's *Journey* and *King Arthur* receded after the mid-1970s, as did the rock opera. The groups that continued to produce new music, such as Yes and Emerson, Lake, and Palmer, relied on the musical language of rock to create longer, more complex works that they hoped could be taken as seriously as classical works. To distinguish them from the earlier rock with orchestra and rock opera advocates, the term **progressive rock** took the place of art rock. The progressive rock groups of the 1970s were from England and the United States as well as from several other European countries. As with most 1970s genres, these groups had a considerable range of styles.

Pink Floyd

Pink Floyd was formed in London in 1965 from the remnants of several previous groups. Their debut album was critically acclaimed in the United States but was not a success. The group's creative leader, Roger "Syd" Barrett, became increasingly affected by psychological problems reportedly intensified by drug abuse; he left the band in 1968.

Pink Floyd produced a series of moderately successful albums through the early 1970s, but the turning point came in 1973 with *The Dark Side of the Moon*. Having become associated with the psychedelic rock trend, with their space-oriented lyrics, the band found themselves established as progressive rock superstars with this album, which was produced by Alan Parsons. *Dark Side*, which took some nine months to produce, not only became a number 1 album but became the longest-running chart album in history, remaining on the charts for over 14 years. This archetypal British progressive rock album deals with alienation, paranoia, and insanity. The heavy use of electronics was typical of Pink Floyd; although the album was rather dark and brooding, there were rock songs like "Time" and "Money." The song "Us and Them" shows the influence of producer Parsons (compare to the later "Time" by the Alan Parsons Project); "Brain Damage," a song about insanity, foreshadows later trends in heavy metal lyrics. There are touches of jazz (note the

sax work on “Us and Them”), soul (e.g., “The Great Gig in the Sky”), and pure electronic experimentation (“On the Run”).

Pink Floyd’s success continued through the mid- and late 1970s. The tour that promoted *The Wall* (number 1 in late 1979 to early 1980) involved an elaborate set, including a 30-foot high wall that toppled (of course) just before the end of the show. Also utilizing extra singers and instrumentalists, film, elaborate lighting, and more giant plastic inflatables, the Wall tour was among the most elaborate in rock history. In spite of internal squabbles, lawsuits, and personnel changes, Pink Floyd produced several number 1 albums in the 1990s (*The Division Bell* in 1994 and *P.U.L.S.E.* in 1995).

King Crimson

One of the leading British progressive rock groups of the 1970s was King Crimson. The ever-changing personnel of this band included a number of prominent 1970s rock musicians: Greg Lake (ELP), Ian McDonald (Foreigner), Bill Bruford (Yes and Genesis), John Wetton (Asia and Uriah Heep), and Boz Burrell (Bad Company). The guiding force of King Crimson was Robert Fripp. Their first album, *In the Court of the Crimson King*, was critically acclaimed and was relatively successful. The album contained five extended pieces and revealed the art rock creativity of Fripp.

King Crimson established a wide following in England and Europe but a relatively small (but loyal) following in the United States. *Larks’ Tongues in Aspic* (1973) is a fascinating album, especially for its extended works, including the title song (parts 1 and 2), “Exiles,” “Easy Money,” and “The Talking Drum.” Throughout, the band’s sound changes often and dramatically. There are moments of genuine hard rock, experiments with minimalism, changing meters, sound effects, interesting violin and viola work, and electronics. It is thoughtful music, utilizing a wide spectrum of sound resources in a diverse variety of styles, and thus provides a good perspective on the state of British progressive rock in the mid-1970s.

In late 1974, Fripp finally disbanded King Crimson. He later joined with Brian Eno to create several albums exploring the minimalist concepts that would be developed later by new wave and new age groups. Fripp’s fascination with electronics led to the development of “Frippertronics,” a style that involved creating a tape delay system through the use of two tape recorders and guitar. Although many bands happily answered to the phrase *progressive rock* in the 1970s, few truly deserved that title more than King Crimson.

King Crimson sprang to life again in 1981 with a new sound and new personnel. A series of impeccably produced recordings followed, including *Discipline* (1981), *Beat* (1982), and *Three of a Perfect Pair* (1984).

Jethro Tull

Jethro Tull usually has been grouped with the other British progressive rock bands of the 1970s. However, in retrospect, Tull seems far less consistently innovative and musically sophisticated than King Crimson, ELP, Yes, and Pink Floyd. Ian Anderson (flute, sax, guitar, and vocals) moved the band’s sound away from its blues base toward the new progressive rock sound. Tull found a more receptive audience in the United States than in their native England. Their *Thick as a Brick* (1972), consisting of one album-long song, established the band in the ranks of progressive rock. Anderson’s flute solos shifted between sounds of rock, jazz, and classical music. The next album, *Living in the Past*, yielded a popular single (the title song) that may be the first hit single in quintuple meter since Dave Brubeck’s “Take Five” of 1961. The concept album *A Passion Play* (1973) was critically scorned but rose to number 1 anyway. Several albums from 1974 to 1977 sold well in the United States, but the band never did quite as well after that, although it released albums well into the 1990s.

Other British Art Rockers

British leadership in art and progressive rock continued throughout the 1970s and included such bands as the Electric Light Orchestra (ELO), Soft Machine, Gentle Giant, and Henry Cow. Of these, the most popular by far was ELO. Soft Machine and Gentle Giant produced some very sophisticated progressive rock but failed to have major commercial impact. Henry Cow may have been one of the most innovative and creative of these bands. They remain largely unknown but, like all of these, can open up a new musical experience to the adventurous listener.

An offshoot of the progressive rock trend was the movement toward heavily electronic rock—later called synthpop, technorock, or electropop—characterized by a strong reliance on high-tech synthesizers and related electronic keyboards. One of the most successful early ventures into this branch of art rock was made by Mike Oldfield. In 1972, he released the impressive solo album *Tubular Bells*. Oldfield played a wide variety of instruments on the album, which had over 40 tracks and countless overdubs. An excerpt from the 49-minute work was used as the theme for the movie *The Exorcist*, which sealed its success.

Progressive Rock in Europe

Several German groups enjoyed success in the field of heavily electrified progressive rock. Passport was perhaps the best; purely instrumental, the band relied primarily on Klaus Doldinger's saxophone and keyboards, and combined elements of rock and jazz with a strong dose of tasteful electronic keyboards. Triumvirat, another German group, sounded remarkably like Emerson, Lake, and Palmer. Kraftwerk surpassed Passport and Triumvirat by achieving a Top 30 single, "Autobahn."

Gradually, progressive rock spread from England to other European countries. One of the best was the band led by guitarist Terje Rypdal in Norway. Rypdal's band shifted smoothly between a progressive rock style and jazz-rock fusion. Rypdal's 1974 album *Whenever I Seem to Be Far Away* is a good example of his work. From Holland came Focus, another band that moved deftly between progressive rock and jazz-rock fusion. Focus was formed in 1969 by organist and flutist Thijs Van Leer, a graduate of the Amsterdam Conservatorium. Featuring the fine guitar work of Jan Akkerman, Focus was capable of a variety of styles, as illustrated on *Focus 3* (1973), a double album. "Love Remembered" is a hauntingly beautiful soft rock song with jazz overtones, somewhat similar to parts of Pink Floyd's *Dark Side of the Moon*, and much of the Alan Parsons Project's work. "Carnival Fugue" is a particularly interesting work that begins like a classical fugue but soon moves to a jazz-rock fusion style. *Hamburger Concerto* (1974) places the band in the progressive rock category; the title work, a six-movement suite (not really a concerto in the classical sense), contains classical references and is a more or less successful attempt at "serious" rock.

Jazz Rock Evolves into Fusion

Groups like Blood, Sweat, and Tears, Chicago, and Chase were typical of jazz rock's first phase. These groups combined horn lines with basic rock instrumentation (see Chapter 11). As the 1970s began, a new style of jazz rock was born; to distinguish this newer approach, it became known as *fusion music*. The seminal album in this trend came in 1970 with *Bitches Brew*, a double album by jazz trumpeter Miles Davis. Among the musicians on this album were many of the key figures in the fusion trend of the mid- and late 1970s: John McLaughlin, Chick Corea, Wayne Shorter, Bennie Maupin, and Joe Zawinul. To Davis's rather austere style of jazz were added electric guitar, electric bass, electronic keyboards, and modified rock beats and bass lines. Whereas Blood, Sweat, and Tears and

Chicago essentially added jazz elements to their rock style, Davis added rock elements to his jazz style.

To the average listener, *Bitches Brew* presented a forbidding sound. The songs were long (usually a full side) and sounded like rather aimless, disjointed improvisations, containing few or no “tunes” and no simple jazz or rock beats. However, Davis had started some of the best musical minds in jazz and rock thinking. Several would take his basic, uncompromising style and modify it to create a popular style of jazz-rock fusion for the 1970s.

John McLaughlin

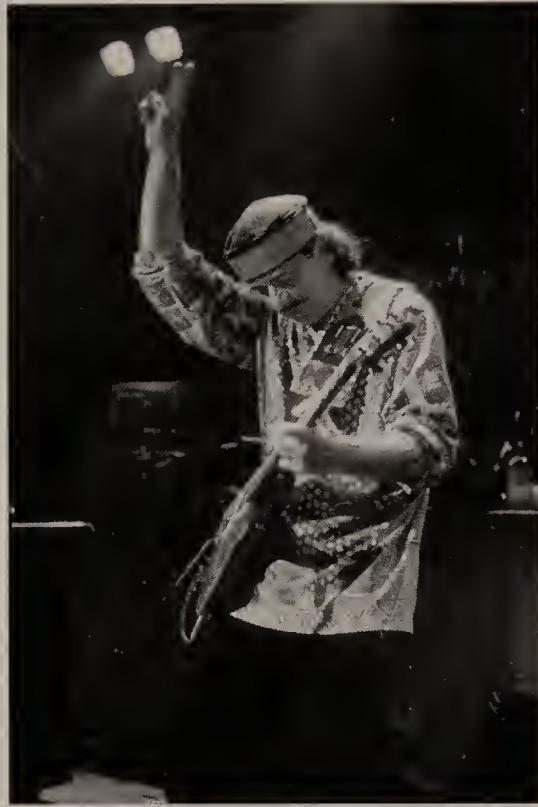
One person influenced by Davis was John McLaughlin, generally regarded as one of the premier guitarists of the 1970s. In 1971, he assembled a band consisting of himself, Czechoslovakian keyboardist Jan Hammer, drummer Billy Cobham, bassist Rick Laird, and violinist Jerry Goodman. The group, known as the Mahavishnu Orchestra, established itself as a popular jazz-rock fusion group with *Birds of Fire* (1973). McLaughlin took Miles Davis’s basic ideas and moved them closer to the progressive rock style. Cobham’s drum patterns, though complex and technically demanding, were still recognizable rock beats; similarly, Laird’s bass patterns were derived from more familiar rock style bass lines. As McLaughlin, Hammer, and Goodman played tunes and improvisations over these drum and bass foundations, the results were less foreign to the typical rock listener. At times, Mahavishnu moved closer to jazz, creating a true jazz-rock fusion; at other times, they moved closer to rock, giving the impression of a progressive rock band. The band’s playing was virtuosic at times, as they moved through various meters and technically impressive solos. Mahavishnu’s *Apocalypse* (1974), recorded with the London Symphony Orchestra, was an effective essay in art rock.

Weather Report

Another alumnus of *Bitches Brew* was keyboardist Joe Zawinul, who joined with soprano saxophonist Wayne Shorter (also a Davis alumnus) to form Weather Report, one of the most influential of the 1970s fusion bands. Like the Mahavishnu Orchestra, Weather Report modified the *Bitches Brew* concepts, making their sound more palatable for a larger audience—but unlike Mahavishnu, which moved toward progressive rock, Weather Report leaned toward jazz. Although Weather Report could certainly play straight-ahead jazz and incorporate recognizable rock influences, they could also create an ethereal, delicate sound, characterized by tinkling bells and otherworldly electronics. Most often, their songs (which rarely included vocals) were structured around several melodic motives, one or more bass patterns, and an accompanying riff; from there the musicians improvised. Weather Report’s albums ranked consistently high for a jazz-oriented group. The band continued as an influential jazz ensemble into the mid-1980s. (Recall that *Chicago VII* reflected the newer fusion style of the mid-1970s, especially the sound of Weather Report.)

Jazz-Oriented Fusionists

Through the 1970s, a number of jazz artists moved toward the fusion style by adding electric bass, electronic keyboards, and rock-derived bass lines and rhythms. One of the most successful was Herbie Hancock. He had played piano with earlier Miles Davis groups and established himself in the 1960s as a formidable jazz pianist (his funky “Watermelon Man” was especially popular). His album *Head Hunters* (1974) revealed an appealing fusion style and rose to number 13, an unusually high ranking for a jazz-oriented record. Hancock emphasized electronic keyboards, complete with filters, wah-wah pedals, and synthesizer modifications. The follow-up album, *Thrust*, also did well; listen to “Actual Proof” from *Thrust* to get a good idea of Hancock’s fusion style.



Carlos Santana (Source: Roberta Parkin/Retna Ltd.)

Jazz keyboardist Chick Corea (yet another *Bitches Brew* alumnus) also moved into the fusion sound, producing a series of moderately successful albums from 1976 to 1978. One of the most popular jazz pianists of the 1960s was Ramsey Lewis. Lewis had actually enjoyed a number 5 single in 1965 (his funky “The In Crowd”). In the mid-1970s, he turned toward the new electronic jazz-rock fusion sound. As an example, listen to “Tambura,” an especially good cut from his *Sun Goddess* album.

Santana

Through the 1970s and 1980s, others have pursued the second-phase jazz-rock fusion trend, including Oregon, Spyro Gyra, and Julian Priester, but there were fusion groups whose roots were not with Davis’s *Bitches Brew*. Santana, for example, had begun in

early 1967 as a blues band. Born in Mexico, Carlos Santana moved to San Francisco and later began working with Michael Bloomfield (Electric Flag) and Al Kooper (Blood, Sweat, and Tears). He formed his own band to combine Latin and African rhythms with rock instrumentation. Appearing at Woodstock in 1969 as a virtually unknown band, Santana electrified the crowd with their so-called Latin rock. Their debut album yielded a Top 10 hit in 1969, “Evil Ways.”

In the early 1970s, Santana became one of the most popular bands not only in the United States, but, because of their international tours, in the world. With their album *Caravanserai* (1972), there was a decided turn toward jazz-rock fusion. Although the album sold well (number 8), the new sound undoubtedly disconcerted many Santana fans. Certainly there was still the technically proficient guitar work of Carlos Santana and the solid keyboard work of Gregg Rolie, but the old Latin rock sound was less evident.

With *Amigos* (1976), Santana returned to a Latin-oriented style. By that time, Carlos Santana was the only remaining original member of the band. Subsequent albums through the mid-1980s sold well, although of equal interest have been Carlos’s recordings outside of his own band with artists such as John McLaughlin, Alice Coltrane, Herbie Hancock, Wayne Shorter, and Willie Nelson, among others. Santana’s popularity waned in the later 1980s, but he returned with a vengeance as a pop artist in 1999 with the album *Supernatural*, which reached number 1 and sold over 15 million copies (21 million worldwide). The single “Smooth,” a Latin-beat pop song, spent 12 weeks at the number 1 position, and the album received nine Grammy Awards. Since then, Santana has continued to release recordings (*Divine Light* in 2001 and *Shaman* in 2002).

Earth, Wind, and Fire

From a musical perspective, one of the finest bands of the 1970s was Earth, Wind, and Fire, formed in 1970 by Maurice White, who had worked as a session drummer at Motown and Chess Records before touring with jazz pianist Ramsey Lewis for three years. Earth, Wind, and Fire was a large band, consisting of Maurice White and his brothers Verdine

(bass) and Fred (percussion), plus six other musicians. The early *Last Days and Time* (1972) was a musically impressive album. Of particular interest on this album is “Power,” a 7-minute cut that begins and ends with a kalimba, an African “thumb piano,” in which a series of tuned metal tongues are fixed to a resonating board or box. A strong rhythmic vamp is established, over which Ronald Laws improvises a soprano sax solo; after a guitar solo, the rhythm breaks for a multilayered section for flutes. The insistent beat returns for a brief keyboard solo that fades back into the kalimba as the song ends.

The band’s first number 1 album was *That’s the Way of the World* (1975). “Shining Star” became the band’s first number 1 single. In the 1970s, Earth, Wind, and Fire placed a series of eight consecutive albums in the Top 10.

Listening to any of Earth, Wind, and Fire’s mid-1970s albums gives a good impression of the band’s style. *Gratitude* (1975 to 1976), *Spirit* (1976), and *All ’n All* (1977) reveal a talented band that both sings and plays with equal musicality. Vocals are smooth and well harmonized. In contrast with Maurice White’s lyrical baritone voice, there is frequent use of falsetto (usually by Philip Bailey). Rhythms are rock based but are far more complex than mainstream rock patterns; the tight coordination among drums, bass, rhythm guitar, and keyboards is not unlike the best of the fusion groups. Earth, Wind, and Fire’s horns are used in a variety of ways, from the short, punctuating style of the 1960s Memphis-Stax-Volt horns to a genuine jazz-rock fusion style.

“Magic Mind” from *All ’n All* shows their mature style of the mid-1970s. There is the solid, insistent accompaniment pattern played by drums, bass, and rhythm guitar; there are solid vocal harmonies, including falsetto; particularly impressive are horn sections, such as the one near the end of the song, which is rhythmically quite complex as a result of its multilayered construction. Earth, Wind, and Fire set a high standard for horn-dominated, jazz-influenced music of the 1970s.

Maurice White stopped touring with the band in the mid-1990s and revealed (just prior to the band’s induction into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in 2000) that he had been diagnosed with Parkinson’s disease. Despite the challenges, he continues to be actively involved in the music industry.

Tower of Power

Somewhat similar stylistically to Earth, Wind, and Fire was a San Francisco band called Tower of Power. Troubled by constant personnel changes, Tower of Power never achieved the commercial success of Earth, Wind, and Fire but certainly produced a high caliber of music. Originating in San Francisco’s East Bay Area, Tower of Power became an alternative to the psychedelic sound of the Haight-Ashbury society. Formed in 1967 by Emilio Castillo, the band did not achieve major success until the talented vocalist Lenny Williams joined in 1973. Tower of Power’s next three albums featured Williams, and all three made the Top 30.

The soulful sound came primarily from the lead singer’s style but was reinforced by the funky rhythmic foundation and the Memphis-Stax-Volt-derived horn lines. The horn line consisted of three saxes (and other woodwinds) and two brass (sometimes two trumpets, sometimes trumpet and trombone). One of Tower of Power’s finest albums was *Back to Oakland* (1974). The opening and closing theme of this album, “Oakland Stroke,” shows the herky-jerky style of the band, as complex rhythmic patterns are distributed throughout the ensemble. The sublime blend of Williams’s voice and the Tower of Power horns is best illustrated on “Just When We Start Makin’ It” (also note Chester Thompson’s fine organ solo). The rhythmically complex accompaniment patterns in “Can’t You See (You Doin’ Me Wrong)” create a jittery sound beneath Williams’s smooth vocal line. The Motown-derived emphasis on baritone sax is evident in “Squib Cakes,” a particularly strong jazz-rock fusion song that features excellent solos.

Other Fusion Artists

We have mentioned Jeff Beck before—as a member of the Yardbirds in the mid-1960s (he replaced Eric Clapton; see Chapter 7). After leaving the Yardbirds, Beck formed his own group in 1967. His first two albums, *Truth* and *Beck-ola*, featured Rod Stewart as lead vocalist. In 1975, Beck issued *Blow by Blow*, his biggest-selling album (number 4). Featuring Beck's quartet (guitar, keyboards, bass, and drums), *Blow by Blow*, produced by George Martin, was a thoroughly impressive album. Several follow-up albums continued the fusion sound, with Jan Hammer supplying excellent keyboard work. Beck remained one of rock's most creative guitarists well into the 1980s.

Coming from still a different direction was Chuck Mangione. Classically trained at the Eastman School of Music, Mangione formed an excellent jazz quartet, featuring his own work on flugelhorn. Accompanied by the Rochester Philharmonic Orchestra, Mangione produced a live album, *Friends and Love* (1971). Combining classical concepts with jazz and softer rock elements, Mangione's style evolved into a kind of art-jazz-rock-pop style. Always tasteful and accessible, Mangione brought a comfortable jazz sound to a wide audience. His most successful album, *Feels So Good* (number 2 in 1977), produced a Top 5 hit (the title song).

On the outer edges of jazz-rock fusion is Steely Dan. Leaning toward the rock side of the fusion style, this band reveals subtle jazz influences combined with the gentler side of the rock mainstream. The two key members of Steely Dan were bassist Walter Becker and keyboardist Donald Fagen. They formed Steely Dan in 1972 as a quintet. Their third album, *Pretzel Logic* (1974), reached the Top 10 and contained their biggest hit, "Rikki Don't Lose That Number" (number 4).

Steely Dan was something of an enigma; they had a unique sound that, even though often characterized as jazz-rock fusion, was nothing like other fusion bands. With an ever-changing membership, a sophisticated and enigmatic style, and an unalterable aversion to touring, it is amazing that they achieved such commercial success. *Katy Lied* (1975) revealed more obvious jazz influences (e.g., listen to "Doctor Wu," with jazz saxophonist Phil Woods). Steely Dan's last two studio albums, *Aja* (number 3 in 1977) and *Gaucho* (number 9 in late 1980) were not only big sellers but yielded four single hits. In the early 1980s, Becker and Fagen went their separate ways, with Fagen gaining considerable respect for his solo album *The Nightfly* in 1982.

After over 10 years, Becker and Fagen reunited for a national tour in 1993. Although they continued to record separately, they joined again to release *Two Against Nature* in 2000, which won three Grammy Awards, including Album of the Year.

The Singer-Songwriters of the 1970s

The first explosion of folk rock had dissipated by 1968; however, from the prototypes established by Dylan, Baez, the Byrds, Simon and Garfunkel, Buffalo Springfield, and others came a number of major new acts of the 1970s. Some strayed from the folk rock vein toward a country-oriented style; still others moved closer to a pop-oriented or softer sound. One or two even flirted with jazz. These 1970s latter-day folk rock performers became known as **singer-songwriters**.

According to Janet Maslin, "the term singer/songwriter . . . was always more of a catchall than a legitimate musical genre" (Miller 1980, 339). Indeed, the term implies nothing at all about style but merely tells us that a person composes and performs songs. Moreover, it seems to distinguish a group of performers for what they were *not* instead of for what they *were*. It usually referred to a musician who (obviously) composed and sang his or her own songs in a post-Dylan folk or folk rock style and who was not oriented toward

mainstream rock, art rock, jazz rock, soul, or disco. Even with that broad definition, one can think of a few exceptions.

As we saw when we traced Dylan, Baez, and Simon and Garfunkel into the 1970s, several changes took place as the style evolved. First, the lyrics changed from a focus on the world's problems (war, racial equality, the brotherhood of humankind, etc.) to a focus on the self. Second, in many cases (not all), the folk rock trend toward electronic rock increased dramatically. The 1970s singer-songwriter happily utilized the latest advancements in studio technology, electronic keyboards, and synthesizers. Let us begin our survey of 1970s singer-songwriters with one of the most talented of them all: Joni Mitchell.

Joni Mitchell

Born in 1943 in Alberta, Canada, Joni Mitchell was raised in Saskatoon, Saskatchewan. After the breakup of her marriage to folk singer Chuck Mitchell, she moved to New York City, where she became a part of the folk music scene. Signed to Reprise Records, her first four albums (1968 to 1971) sold progressively well and revealed a developing talent for more refined musicianship and inventive melodies. Her lyrics focused on themes of romantic love.

Switching to Asylum Records, Mitchell hit her commercial peak with *Court and Spark*, which rose to number 2 in 1974 and yielded a major hit with "Help Me." "Help Me" exemplifies Mitchell's songwriting ability at its best. The melodic line is wide ranging and inventive; rhythmic interest comes not only from the occasional metric changes, but from the rhythmic inflections of the melody, which often conflict with the established meter; the harmonic material is quite sophisticated and shows a relation to jazz. Mitchell's clear, pitch-perfect voice is evident in this and other songs on *Court and Spark*. Of particular note is the decidedly jazzy song "Twisted." Mitchell's performance perfectly depicts the mental distortion that is the song's subject—including the overdubbed duet on the schizophrenic final lines.

Subsequent albums found Mitchell drifting further toward a jazz-influenced style. The double album *Don Juan's Reckless Daughter* (1977 to 1978) firmly broke with her pop-folk past; using jazz musicians from Weather Report, she included the side-long "Paprika Plains," accompanied by a full symphony orchestra. The 1979 album *Mingus* went all the way to jazz. In preparation for some 18 months, the album began as a collaboration with jazz great Charles Mingus but became a memorial when Mingus died in early 1979. Two of the album's songs are Mitchell's, but four are Mingus's music and Mitchell's words. Fusion greats Wayne Shorter, Herbie Hancock, and Jaco Pastorius are among the musicians on this remarkable album. Mitchell has continued to record in her own unique style through the 1990s and early 2000s.

Carole King

The other leading female singer-songwriter of the 1970s (other than Baez, of course) was Carole King. A member of the famous Brill Building group of songwriters, King (with and without her husband, Gerry Goffin) had written a staggering number of hit songs for other artists since the early 1960s, including the Shirelles; the Drifters; Bobby Vee; the Everly Brothers; Steve Lawrence and Eydie Gorme; Little Eva; Herman's Hermits; the Animals; Blood, Sweat, and Tears; the Monkees; Aretha Franklin; and the Byrds. By the late 1960s, she had dissolved the songwriting team and divorced Goffin.

King's second solo album, *Tapestry* (1971), became a monster hit. It reached number 1 and held that position for 15 weeks; it eventually stayed on the charts for 302 weeks and was the biggest-selling pop album in history up until that time. "It's Too Late," backed with "I Feel the Earth Move," became number 1 hits. Other strong songs on this album were "You've Got a Friend," "Smackwater Jack," and "(You Make Me Feel Like) A Natural

Woman.” Subsequent albums sold well but lacked the impact of *Tapestry*. *Wrap Around Joy* (number 1 in 1974) was a particularly strong album and even hinted at a slight bend toward jazz, although not so pronounced as Joni Mitchell’s. The hit single “Jazzman” (number 2 in 1974) featured a sax solo by the L.A. Express’s Tom Scott. However, King’s albums after 1977 sold less well.

King’s style emphasized simple piano accompaniments and a pop or soft rock musical style. If her basic style was affected by any other style at all, it might have been a light touch of funk-soul-gospel (e.g., “We Are All in This Together,” from *Wrap Around Joy*).

James Taylor

James Taylor (born in Boston in 1948) was raised in an affluent and musical family. His early attempts at a recording career were not successful, so he moved to London, where he impressed Paul McCartney and Peter Asher, signing with Apple Records in 1968. His first album, *James Taylor*, did not fare well, although it contained several good songs (e.g., “Something in the Way She Moves” and “Carolina in My Mind”). Asher managed to negotiate a new contract for Taylor with Warner Brothers and produced his next album, *Sweet Baby James* (1970). It was a great success and yielded the major hit “Fire and Rain” (number 3 in 1970). Taylor sang in a soft folk rock style, with perhaps just a touch of country influence. A morose look at the depression of lost love, “Fire and Rain” exemplifies the inward turn and self-orientation of the singer-songwriter trend of the 1970s. Taylor’s follow-up album, *Mud Slide Slim and the Blue Horizon* (1971), rose to number 2 and contained Carole King’s “You’ve Got a Friend.” Even this relatively positive and outgoing song sounded sad and introspective in Taylor’s version.

In 1972, Taylor married singer Carly Simon. *One-Man Dog* (1972), which was recorded at his home in Martha’s Vineyard, reached the Top 5 and contained the attractive (but sad-sounding) “Don’t Let Me Be Lonely Tonight,” with excellent sax work by Michael Brecker. *Gorilla* (1975), a refreshing album, actually had a brighter, more upbeat sound, as exemplified by “Mexico” and the Holland-Dozier-Holland song “How Sweet It Is” (number 5 in 1975).

In the late 1970s, Taylor recorded with other artists, including Simon and Garfunkel and his wife Carly Simon. Taylor became one of the style setters among the post-Dylan softer singer-songwriters. Unlike some of the others, he never turned toward the heavily electronic sound or to jazz or the mainstream side of rock. Taylor has continued to record and perform. His album *Hourglass* (number 9 in 1997) won a Grammy for Best Pop Album. Since the turn of the century, several greatest hits albums and a Christmas album have been released.

Jim Croce

Jim Croce’s songs were usually as upbeat and positive as Taylor’s were morose and depressing. Ironically, Croce’s own story became one of the saddest of the 1970s. Croce was born and raised in Philadelphia. Signed to Capitol Records, he and his wife, Ingrid, released a duet album in 1969 that did not sell well. However, with the help of some friends, Croce was signed as a solo artist to ABC Records. With good production and strong backup musicians, Croce’s *You Don’t Mess Around with Jim* moved to number 1. The title song made the Top 10, and “Operator” made the Top 20, firmly establishing Croce as a bona fide member of the 1970s singer-songwriter trend.

Croce’s vocal timbre was unique; among all of the singer-songwriters of the time, Croce’s voice was one that was easily and instantly recognizable. Croce’s songs were well constructed musically, had appealing melodies, and often had a lilting rhythm that reflected his upbeat attitude. There were the character songs (e.g., “You Don’t Mess Around with Jim,” “Rapid Roy,” and “Bad, Bad Leroy Brown”) and the plaintively beautiful songs

(“Photographs and Memories” and “Time in a Bottle”). Either way, Croce made the listener feel good.

Croce had recorded his third ABC album, *I Got a Name*, in the summer of 1973, but before the album could be released, he was killed in a plane crash near Natchitoches, Louisiana (he was 30 years old). Released posthumously, *I Got a Name* became a number 2 album and yielded three Top 40 hits. “Time in a Bottle” was also released (from the first ABC album), and it made number 1 in late 1973.

Cat Stevens

The folk and folk rock trends of the 1960s and the singer-songwriter trend of the 1970s were American phenomena. An important exception was Cat Stevens (born Steven Georgiou, London, 1948). Several early albums and singles did well enough in England but made little impact in the United States. However, *Tea for the Tillerman* (1971) caught on and moved to number 8 on the American charts; the single “Wild World” rose to number 11. The song “Father and Son” is a particularly touching song that is reminiscent of Bob Dylan.

Stevens accompanied himself on acoustic guitar; like Croce, he was unique and instantly recognizable, not only for his vocal timbre but for his enunciation. Most of his songs were rather gentle; even the more rhythmically oriented songs (e.g., “Wild World,” “Ready,” and “Peace Train”) were gentle when compared to mainstream rock.

Stevens released a series of popular albums from 1971 to 1977, which yielded a string of hits, including “Morning Has Broken” (number 6 in 1972) and “Oh Very Young” (number 10 in 1974). By 1978, Stevens had turned to the Muslim religion, adopted a new name (Yusef Islam), and dropped out of the music industry. The former musician found his name in the news again in September 2004 when, due to the appearance of his name on a national security watch list, the plane he was flying on from London to the United States was diverted to Maine and grounded. Islam (Stevens) was questioned and detained prior to being returned to Britain.

Billy Joel

One of the few 1970s singer-songwriters to persevere into the 1980s and beyond was Billy Joel. Born on Long Island, New York, in 1949, Joel was a classically trained pianist. From 1964 to 1976, Joel knocked around the music business, his only major success coming with *Piano Man* (1974), an album that made the Top 30 and yielded the number 25 hit by the same name. From 1977 to 1980, Joel released three Top 5 albums (*The Stranger*, *52nd Street*, and *Glass Houses*), which yielded three major hit singles, including his first number 1 song, “It’s Still Rock and Roll to Me.” These successes propelled Joel headlong into the 1980s, where he found continued success. By the end of 1984, Joel had achieved 22 Top 40 hits, including the number 1 “Tell Her About It” and the number 3 “Uptown Girl.”

Joel does not fit the post-folk rock singer-songwriter trend in the way that Taylor, Croce, Stevens, Mitchell, and others do. He moved closer to mainstream rock (the softer side) and toward more elaborate production. His refusal to become typed into any one style has led to some criticism (recall similar problems with Presley, Dylan, Franklin, and others). For example, *An Innocent Man* (1982) features a shouting R&B-derived mainstream song like “Easy Money,” a doo-wop-oriented song like “The Longest Time,” and a ballad-style song like the title song. There is also the 1950s-style soft rock of “This Night” (complete with melodic references to the second movement of Beethoven’s Piano Sonata in C Minor, Op. 13 [“Pathétique”]); there is good-time rock and roll in “Tell Her About It,” the Four Seasons–like “Uptown Girl,” and the Sam Cooke-ish “Careless Talk.” There are reminiscences of Jerry Lee Lewis and Little Richard in “Christie Lee” and touches of jazz in the harmonica work of Toots Thielemans on “Leave a Tender Moment Alone.” Joel’s solid

musical background is evident in the flawless construction of his songs and his impressive performance technique.

Joel's success continued into the 1990s with *River of Dreams* (number 1 in 1993). The album's title song reached number 3 on the charts. He also completed several very successful international tours with Elton John (1994 and 1999). In 2005, Columbia released a box set (*My Lives*) that was a compilation of demos, B sides, alternate versions, and a few Top 40 hits. In 2007, Joel released the first song with lyrics he had composed in almost 14 years: "All My Life."

Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young

The term *singer-songwriter* usually refers to a soloist; however, one group—Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young—fits stylistically into the singer-songwriter trend. As Brock Helander notes (1982, 116), "More an aggregation of three (and four) individuals than a group, Crosby, Stills, Nash (and Young) created a characteristic sound that the three original members have attempted to maintain, somewhat equivocally, into the late-Seventies."

We have met David Crosby (the Byrds), Stephen Stills (Buffalo Springfield), Graham Nash (the Hollies), and Neil Young (Buffalo Springfield) in earlier sections of this book. As the first wave of folk rock dissipated in 1968, Crosby, Stills, and Nash formed their new group after an informal jam session in Los Angeles. Releasing their first album for Atlantic (*Crosby, Stills, and Nash*), the group emphasized excellent vocal harmonies and sociopolitical commentary. All three played guitar, with Stills dubbing in keyboard and bass parts (drums were supplied by Dallas Taylor). Neil Young joined the group in 1969 in time to perform with the group at Woodstock. The addition of Young enabled the group to execute rather complex four-part harmonies. There was a firm reliance on acoustic guitar, with only light use of electric guitars and keyboards.

The title song of the quartet's first album, *Deja Vu* (number 1 in 1970), provides a good sample of Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young. Tight vocal harmonies change in relatively fast rhythm in its opening moments. After a short vocal solo section, the vocal harmonies reenter, reflecting some jazz influence. Some Beach Boy–like vocal polyphony follows; changing to falsetto, the group sings the hook line, "We have all been here before." With its frequent sectional changes, "Deja Vu" is a very effective song. ("Carry On" illustrates similar vocal harmonies.)



Crosby, Stills, and Nash (Source: Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

There can be little doubt that Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young was the most sophisticated vocal group of the early 1970s. Their musical style was the natural extension of the work of the Byrds and Buffalo Springfield of the late 1960s. There were even the occasional country-oriented sounds developed by the earlier groups (e.g., “Teach Your Children”).

A live album, *4 Way Street*, was released in 1971 and also went to number 1, but by that time, the group had gone their separate ways. Each recorded solo albums, often with the assistance of at least one of the other former Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young members. The quartet reunited for a tour in the summer of 1974; a greatest hits album released that year went to number 1 (rare for a hits album). From the mid-1970s on, the group was on-again, off-again, often uniting around political events (e.g., the antinuclear MUSE—Musicians United for Safe Energy—demonstration in 1979, and the Survival Sunday concert in 1980). The band has reunited occasionally for tours and recordings since then.

Reggae

As we saw in Chapter 5, a popular style of Jamaican music—calypso—enjoyed brief popularity in the late 1950s and played a role in the early days of the folk music revival. In the 1970s, reggae, a new Jamaican musical style, gained great popularity in both the United States and England. Reggae originated in Jamaica in the mid-1960s, becoming closely associated with singer-songwriter Bob Marley. Marley’s recording career began in the early 1960s, but his first real success came with “Simmer Down” in 1964. Over the next few years, Marley and his Wailing Wailers recorded some 30 songs and became the hottest group in Jamaica. In the early 1970s, the Wailers became known throughout the Caribbean, but it was not until 1972 that they signed with Island Records and began to build an international reputation.

Reggae music is closely tied to the Rastafarian religion, which revered the late emperor of Ethiopia, Haile Selassie (common name: Ras Tafari). Speaking for the deprived and dispossessed classes of Jamaica, reggae music spoke of the dream of an eventual return to the African homeland. The music has a dry, staccato (detached) beat and guitar accompaniment; moderate tempos prevail, and the beat is relatively gentle. The Jamaican dialect colors the lyrics, which often express the political beliefs of the Rastafarians.

Marley’s *Natty Dread* (1975) brought the Wailers to the U.S. charts. However, it was not until 1976 that Marley made a major impact with *Rastaman Vibration* (number 8). “War”

(from *Rastaman Vibration*) was based on a speech by Emperor Selassie; “Roots, Rock, Reggae” became a minor hit.

By the late 1970s, reggae’s popularity had begun to fade. *Exodus* (number 20 in 1977) was Marley’s last Top 40 album; subsequent albums sold moderately, primarily to a relatively small cult following. Bob Marley died of cancer in 1981 at the age of 36; he was given an official funeral by the people of Jamaica, who had awarded him the nation’s Order of Merit one month before his death.

The reggae style was particularly influential in Britain. The Rolling



Bob Marley (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Stones and quite a few of the British punk groups reflected the influence of reggae. In addition, artists as varied as Paul Simon, Led Zeppelin, Stevie Wonder, the Police, the Clash, and Eric Clapton (Marley's "I Shot the Sheriff") all reflected the reggae influence in particular songs.

Folk Influences in the 1980s and 1990s

Since the beginning of recorded history, folk music (sometimes referred to as *roots music*) has provided a common musical experience for members of a given social group. The music of Woody Guthrie and Pete Seeger provided a foundation for much music of the 1960s (the Kingston Trio; Bob Dylan; and Peter, Paul, and Mary) and on into the 1990s (Tracy Chapman and Jewel). During the 1990s, and at the beginning of the 21st century, there were signs of revitalized interest in these familiar musical influences. The surprise popularity of the sound track for the film *O Brother Where Art Thou?* (number 1 in 2001) resulted in a stay of well over a year on the album chart. The first track on the album is a recording of "Po Lazarus," an authentic **worksong** performed by James Carter and other prisoners working in a chain gang at the Mississippi State Penitentiary. The song was captured in a 1959 field recording by folk music historian Alan Lomax. This various artist recording juxtaposes such authentic recordings with roots music from long ago, new recordings by roots artists, and new renditions of period songs by contemporary artists. What appeared to be a roots revival as a result of this sound track and follow-up releases lasted only a couple of years, but other folk styles continued to exert their influence on popular music.

Bob Dylan's Reign Continues

In a manner similar to the way in which Santana's commercial revival confirmed the importance of Latin music, the reappearance of Bob Dylan during the 1990s heralded a revitalized interest in folk-influenced music. A new generation of listeners became aware of Dylan's legacy listening to the music of the Wallflowers, a band formed in 1990 by Dylan's son, Jakob. Dylan's *Time Out of Mind* (number 10 in 1997) placed higher on the charts than any album he released since his first recording as a born-again Christian, *Slow Train Coming* (number 3 in 1979). The album earned the songwriter three Grammy Awards, including Album of the Year, Best Contemporary Folk Album, and Best Male Rock Vocal Performance for "Cold Irons Bound." Garth Brooks recorded a cover version of "To Make You Feel My Love," another track from *Time Out of Mind*, resulting in a number 1 hit on the country chart. In 2000, Dylan composed "Things Have Changed" for the *Wonder Boys* sound track; the song not only won a Grammy, but it also earned Dylan's first Oscar for Best Original Song. Dylan released *Love and Theft* (number 5 in 2002) and *Modern Times* (2006), continuing his series of commercially successful and critically acclaimed recordings and winning a Grammy for Best Contemporary Folk Album. Dylan's autobiography, *Chronicles, Volume One*, in 2004 and the Martin Scorsese documentary *No Direction Home* (2005) provide very interesting information from varying perspectives about this pioneering artist.

Tracy Chapman

Other folk-influenced performers and singer-songwriters have continued to carry on the folk music tradition within the popular music industry that began in earnest with the Kingston Trio in the late 1950s. The release of Tracy Chapman's self-titled debut in 1988 and the surprising commercial success of several tracks ("Fast Car," "Talkin' 'bout a

Revolution,” and “Baby Can I Hold You”) suggested that—at a time when radio airwaves were pumping out the music of George Michael, Van Halen, Bon Jovi, and the sound track from *Dirty Dancing*—the record-buying public was also interested in music that was reflective and introspective. Chapman’s follow-up album, *Crossroads* (1989), reached number 6. Later albums proved successful, though not at a consistently chart-topping level.

Jewel

During the mid-1990s, the daughter of a folk duo from the 1970s, Jewel Kilcher, seemed perched to become one of the most successful female solo artists in the history of rock music. Her recording debut, *Pieces of You* (1995), garnered little attention until over a year following its release date. “Who Will Save Your Soul” and “You Were Meant for Me” were minor hits, eventually pushing the album to number 4 on the *Billboard* chart, selling over 12 million copies. The third single, “Foolish Games,” was included in the sound track for the film *Batman and Robin*. Jewel’s participation in Lillith Fair, an all-female concert tour organized by Sarah McLachlan, placed her in a prominent position during a period when the number of female artists on the album charts surpassed the number of men for the first time. Other performers who participated in this important music festival over the years included Shawn Colvin, Sheryl Crow, the Dixie Chicks, Indigo Girls, Queen Latifah, Monica, and Liz Phair. Jewel’s follow-up recording, *Spirit* (1998), was not released until almost four years after her first album and debuted at number 3. Though the first single, “Hands,” reached number 6, follow-up singles failed to reach the Top 50. She continued to record folk-influenced music, such as the albums *This Way* (number 9 in 2001) and *0304* (number 2 in 2003), but the sales fell far short of her earlier recordings.

Country Rock and Progressive Country

The 1970s

C&W was one of the progenitors of rock and roll, and rockabilly emerged as one of the three basic trends of early rock, but by the early 1960s, rockabilly had almost completely died away. For much of the 1960s, the C&W influence in rock was virtually nonexistent. Only near the end of the decade did there appear to be some tentative interest in rekindling the old partnership between C&W and rock (see Chapter 8).

As the 1970s began, another surge of interest came from a rather surprising source: San Francisco. The Grateful Dead took a definite turn toward country rock with their 1970s albums *Workingman’s Dead* and *American Beauty*. Jerry Garcia was actively involved with a new San Francisco country rock band of the early 1970s known as New Riders of the Purple Sage. The New Riders’ albums sold moderately from 1971 to 1974 but tapered off dramatically after that.

Somewhat in the same vein were the Flying Burrito Brothers, whose membership included Chris Hillman and Gram Parsons. This post-Byrds country rock band existed from 1969 to 1975 and released some half dozen barely successful albums. Somewhat more commercially successful was Pure Prairie League, a Cincinnati band whose albums in the mid-1970s were considered important contributions to the country rock style.

Yet another country rock band of the 1970s was Bob Dylan’s backup group, The Band. Their first recognition (aside from the Dylan connection) came in 1968 with *Music from Big Pink*. Several albums between 1969 and 1976 sold quite well (three albums made the Top 10), and they were among the groups responsible for the reemergence of interest in country-influenced rock.

The Eagles

The most successful of the country rock bands was the Eagles, formed in 1971 in Los Angeles. *Eagles* was released in 1972 and yielded a Top 10 hit, “Witchy Woman.” Their third album, *On the Border* (1974), reached the Top 20 and contained the band’s first number 1 song, “Best of My Love.” The years 1975 and 1976 were peak ones for the Eagles, as their next four albums reached number 1, yielding four more number 1 singles.

As with most of the country rock bands, the Eagles moved between mainstream rock, a post-folk rock style, and country rock. Their first number 1 album, *One of These Nights* (1975), illustrates this versatility. Songs such as “After the Thrill Is Gone,” “Hollywood Waltz,” and “Lyn’ Eyes” (number 2) are perfect examples of 1970s country rock. The lead and backup vocals, the beat, and the instrumental accompaniment all contribute to the country-oriented sound. However, a song such as “Journey of the Sorcerer” moves toward progressive rock; the timbre of the mandolin may recall bluegrass music, but there is no stylistic incorporation of bluegrass. Several songs on the album show little or no derivation from country music (e.g., “Visions,” “One of These Nights,” and “Too Many Hands”); such songs are nearer the gentler side of mainstream rock.

Subsequent albums, beginning with *Hotel California* (1976 to 1977), revealed a drift away from the country rock sound so evident in the Eagles’ first four albums. By 1981, founder Glenn Frey (guitar, keyboards, and vocals) called it quits, and so did the Eagles. They reunited in 1994 for a very successful tour, and they released a number 1 album, *Hell Freezes Over*. The band was inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in 1998. In early 2001, the Eagles’ *Their Greatest Hits, 1971–1975* surpassed Michael Jackson’s *Thriller* (1983) as the greatest-selling album up to that time (29 million and counting). Having sold over 100 million albums total, the Eagles have proven to be one of the most significant forces in the history of rock music.

The Charlie Daniels and Marshall Tucker Bands

It seems only natural that some of the southern rock bands of the 1970s would turn toward C&W as an influence. Whereas bands like Lynyrd Skynyrd and the Allman Brothers leaned toward R&B influences (see Chapter 13), other southern bands, like the Charlie Daniels Band and the Marshall Tucker Band, leaned toward C&W influences.

Charlie Daniels, who was from North Carolina, played on several Dylan albums, including *Nashville Skyline*, early in his career. In the early 1970s, Daniels formed his own band and first hit the charts with “Uneasy Rider,” a satire of “The Ballad of Easy Rider” from the hit film *Easy Rider*. Daniels’s band was a genuine 50-50 blend of country and rock. Their first gold album, *Fire on the Mountain* (1974 to 1975), featured several strong country rock songs such as “Long Haired Country Boy” and “The South’s Gonna Do It Again,” a 12-bar blues often called *southern rock boogie* or *southern boogie and blues*. Southern country rock lyrics often dealt with broken romances (a C&W tradition), alcohol, and gambling; the vocalists’ enunciation emphasized southern roots. At times, the music moved toward a purer rock style, as in “No Place to Go.”

The Daniels Band played at sites as varied as the Grand Ole Opry and President Carter’s inauguration. They found their biggest success with the *Million Mile Reflections* album (1979), with its hit single “The Devil Went Down to Georgia.”

Similar in concept to the Charlie Daniels Band, the Marshall Tucker Band began in 1970 as the Toy Factory, changing their name by 1972. There is no person named Marshall Tucker in the band; the name supposedly refers to a local piano teacher in their hometown of Spartanburg, South Carolina. Their first three albums were reasonably successful, but in 1975, *Searchin’ for a Rainbow* made the Top 20. Performing as many as 300 concerts per year, Marshall Tucker found themselves increasingly popular as a live performance and

album band, but without major impact on the singles charts. In fact, their only Top 40 singles were 1975's "Fire on the Mountain" and 1977's "Heard It in a Love Song." The former is a good example of Marshall Tucker's country rock sound, with its steel guitar introduction, gentle country rock beat, and country-oriented vocal. The style is basically country with a light rock influence; note woodwind player Jerry Eubanks's flute line near the middle of the song, adding an interesting timbre that made Tucker's sound unique. Another good example is "Virginia" (also on *Searchin' for a Rainbow*), which uses a rock-derived guitar and bass riff to tie the song together. Of special interest is Eubanks's brief but lovely soprano sax solo.

Linda Ronstadt

Possibly because of the early precedents set by the Byrds and Buffalo Springfield, most country rock of the 1970s involved groups, rather than solo performers. A significant exception was Linda Ronstadt.

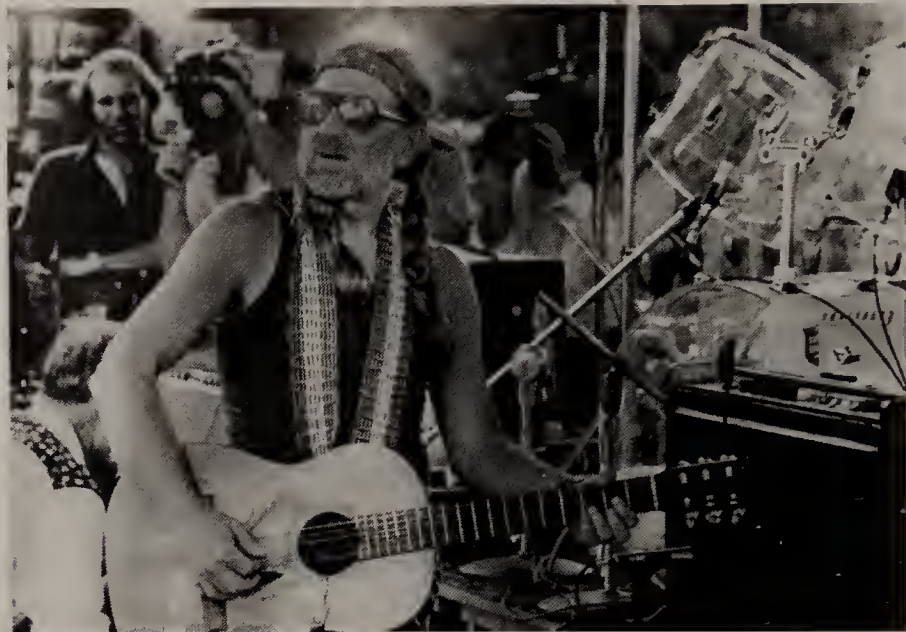
Her career started off slowly. However, her 1974 album *Heart Like a Wheel* yielded a number 2 hit ("When Will I Be Loved") and her first number 1 song ("You're No Good"). Ronstadt's next five studio albums were all Top 10 sellers, and in that span (1975 to 1980), she placed a dozen songs in the Top 40, making her the leading female solo singer on the rock scene.

Ronstadt had folk-oriented beginnings, but she became known as a country rock singer. Certainly albums such as *Linda Ronstadt* and *Don't Cry Now* reinforced that image (e.g., listen to "Silver Threads and Golden Needles" from *Don't Cry Now*). Throughout the 1970s, she continued to perform in a country-influenced style. *Heart Like a Wheel* contained the country-oriented "When Will I Be Loved" and even a version of Paul Anka's "It Doesn't Matter Anymore" (Ronstadt's version of this song was much more "country-fied" than Buddy Holly's original pop-style version). On *Prisoner in Disguise* (1975), even Smokey Robinson's "Tracks of My Tears" comes out country, as does Neil Young's "Love Is a Rose." Still, she produced a Top 5 hit in 1975 with Holland-Dozier-Holland's "Heat Wave," in a decidedly noncountry style, and in the 1980s, Ronstadt had incredible success with several albums that featured old songs from the 1930s and 1940s in lush arrangements backed by bandleader Nelson Riddle. She had even dabbled with the new wave trend by singing several Elvis Costello songs on 1980's *Mad Love* and with mariachi music in 1987's *Canciones de Mi Padre*.

Willie Nelson and Waylon Jennings

Around the edges of country rock were two other types of performer: country pop singers and progressive country (or redneck rock) singers. Interest in country rock naturally led to pure country music. The central figure in this trend was Willie Nelson. Nelson had moved to Nashville in 1961, where he had some success as a composer of country and pop songs for other artists, and as a performer, he placed a few hits on the country charts, but Nelson felt that the Nashville country music establishment was too restrictive. Late in 1969, he moved back to Texas. Several years later, he initiated his now-famous Fourth of July "picnics"—huge outdoor affairs that drew not only country music fans, but young rock fans. Nelson dropped the traditional country singer image; instead, he wore faded jeans and T-shirts; he grew his hair long and braided it; he put an earring in his ear and wore a bandanna around his head. By the norms of the traditional country music world, Nelson had become a rebel—an "outlaw." He was a redneck hippie.

In 1975, Nelson released *Red-Headed Stranger*; "Blue Eyes Cryin' in the Rain" moved to number 21 on the pop charts, opening the doors for more crossover recordings by other progressive country singers: Tompall Glaser, Waylon Jennings, Kris Kristofferson,



Willie Nelson (Source: UPI/Corbis/Bettmann)

Jessi Colter (Jennings's wife), and Jerry Jeff Walker. RCA's progressive country sampler, *The Outlaws* (1977), brought the music of Nelson and some of the others to a wider audience (it became a platinum album—the first in country music). Willie went on to have several more Top 40 hits in the early 1980s. His *Stardust* album of 1978 featured his versions of old pop favorites from the 1930s and 1940s (something of a precedent for Ronstadt's similar recordings).

Waylon Jennings's association with rock was only slightly stronger. Born in Texas, Jennings had played bass with Buddy Holly on his fateful last tour. Jennings had several country hits during the 1960s, but with the release of *The Outlaws*, he became a national figure. His *Ol' Waylon* album (1977) hit the Top 20 and yielded a Top 30 hit, "Luckenbach, Texas (Back to the Basics of Love)." He also recorded the theme song for the television show *The Dukes of Hazzard* and sang with Willie Nelson on the major country hit "Mama Don't Let Your Babies Grow Up to Be Cowboys." Jennings died in 2002 from diabetes-related conditions.

Progressive Country

The progressive country movement was more a social phenomenon than a musical one. Nelson's music was firmly rooted in the country tradition. Rock elements were subdued or totally absent. What appealed was his image as a rebel.

In 1980, the film *Urban Cowboy* (starring John Travolta, but including musical appearances by some 14 country and country rock acts) made the country movement cool. Suddenly, people all over the nation were wearing boots and broad-brimmed Stetson hats. However, the center of the progressive country movement stayed firmly in Austin, Texas, where the Armadillo World Headquarters became to this trend what the Fillmore had been to San Francisco. Huge country ballrooms, such as Gilley's in Houston and Billy Bob's in Fort Worth, capitalized on the urban cowboy trend.

Glen Campbell and Kenny Rogers

From the softer side of country came singers like Glen Campbell and Kenny Rogers. Campbell's gentle country pop style first reached national attention in 1967 with a number 5 album, *Gentle on My Mind*, and a Top 30 hit, "By the Time I Get to Phoenix."

After hitting what seemed to be a high spot in 1968 and 1969 with songs like “Wichita Lineman” and “Galveston,” Campbell’s popularity began to fade, but with the rising interest in country music in the late 1970s, Campbell enjoyed a real comeback (e.g., “Rhinestone Cowboy” of 1975 and “Southern Nights” of 1977).

Kenny Rogers was born in Houston in 1941. Joining with several members of the New Christy Minstrels, he formed Kenny Rogers and the First Edition. They produced their two biggest hits in the late 1960s: “Just Dropped In (To See What Condition My Condition Was In)” and “Ruby, Don’t Take Your Love to Town.” In the mid-1970s, Kenny disbanded the First Edition and pursued a solo career. Emphasizing the country side, he had his first solo hits in 1977 with “Lucille” (number 5—no relation to Little Richard’s song). Beginning with “She Believes in Me” (from *The Gambler*), Rogers initiated a long series of Top 20 hits that carried him into the 1980s as one of the most successful country pop artists in the music industry. Both Campbell and Rogers stayed with the softer ballad style, and in spite of his graying beard, Rogers did not follow the Nelson-Jennings outlaw image of progressive country.

The 1980s and 1990s

In the 1980s, crossover artists like Dolly Parton, Kenny Rogers, Eddie Rabbitt, Alabama, and the Oak Ridge Boys created a revived interest in country music within the general rock audience. As a result, sales of recordings by more mainstream country singers increased appreciably during the 1980s. George Strait, Reba McEntire, and Ricky Skaggs are credited with spawning a neotraditionalist movement (Haislop, Lathrop, and Sumrall 1995). The success of crossover artists proved that there was still an audience for traditional country sounds. Many songs that hit number 1 on the country chart, like Strait’s “Ocean Front Property” (1987) and Skaggs’s “Lovin’ Only Me” (1989), revealed an undeniable rock influence in their use of electric guitars and drums and in their general production quality. Multi-instrumentalist Skaggs even played an instrument called the *mandocaster*, a five-string instrumental cross between the mandolin and the Telecaster electric guitar. However, the basic songs were always identifiable as country music, incorporating the characteristic electric guitar twang, the pedal steel, and country-influenced vocal stylings.

In the mid-1980s, continuing the neotraditionalist movement begun by George Strait and Ricky Skaggs, new artists, such as Randy Travis and Dwight Yoakam, enjoyed great national popularity. Songs like “On the Other Hand” and “Forever and Ever, Amen” brought Randy Travis to the top of the country chart in 1986 and 1987, respectively. During a period when country albums were considered highly successful if they sold a half million copies, sales of Travis’s recordings were reaching into the multimillions, evidence that country music was, by the late 1980s, appealing to a wider audience.

Undoubtedly, some members of the rock audience had been turned off by the alternative music scene and the explicit violence of many rap recordings. As a result, they began searching for other musical styles with which they could be comfortable. It was largely this group who began to listen to country music and, liking what they heard, propelled the new generation of country artists toward an explosion of popularity in the 1990s. The year 1989 saw the release of a series of debut albums destined to bring country music to an extraordinary new height of popularity. Emerging artists included Clint Black, Garth Brooks, Alan Jackson, Travis Tritt, and Mary Chapin Carpenter.

Garth Brooks

Though Garth Brooks eventually proved to be the most prominent country music artist of the early 1990s, it was Clint Black who initially led the pack of young country singers. After a short period of time, however, it became apparent that Brooks provided the definitive example of country crossover for the decade. Combining elements of rock and country into

a series of incredibly successful recordings and a high-energy stage show, Brooks became the top-selling solo artist in history (George-Warren and Romanowski 2001), selling over 100 million albums. His songwriting ability and charismatic appeal enabled him to transcend the boundaries of the C&W market without alienating his strong base of traditional country music fans.

Born in Oklahoma, Troyal Garth Brooks was turned down by several record labels during his initial trip to Nashville. Persistence paid off when he was seen by a Capitol Records executive performing “If Tomorrow Never Comes.” His self-titled debut album hit number 2 in 1989. It was with the arrival of his second release, *No Fences* (1990), that Brooks stepped into the spotlight as the leader of the new generation of country artists. Rock influences are obvious in the drumbeat and rock guitar riffs in his song “The Thunder Rolls.” Notice the use of the 12-bar blues form in the verses for “Two of a Kind, Workin’ on a Full House.” The youthful energy of songs like “Friends in Low Places” or “Two of a Kind” is balanced by the more sentimental “Victim of the Game” and “Unanswered Prayers.” Brooks seemed to be equally comfortable with both styles. *Ropin’ the Wind* (1991) was the first album in history to debut at the number 1 position on both the pop and country album charts. On the country album chart, *Ropin’ the Wind* replaced Brooks’s own previous album, *No Fences*, which was completing its 41-week reign at the top. This album also began an impressive series of albums that topped both the country and pop charts. *Ropin’ the Wind* (1991), *The Chase* (1992), and *In Pieces* (1993) all debuted at number 1 on both the country and pop album charts. “Against the Grain,” the opening song on *Ropin’ the Wind*, incorporates distorted rock guitar timbres and a driving backbeat, placing his musical style well within the boundaries of rock and roll. Listen to “Kickin’ and Screamin’” and “The Night Will Only Know” from *In Pieces*, or “The Old Stuff” and “The Fever” from *Fresh Horses* (1995). Such songs are more accurately described as country-influenced rock than rock-influenced country. The verses of “Kickin’ and Screamin’” are based on an altered version of the 12-bar blues form that provided the foundation for so many R&B and mainstream rock tunes during the 1950s and 1960s.

In 1999, Brooks made the bold decision to record an album as “Chris Gaines,” a fictional Australian rock star. The album was promoted as a greatest hits collection and included a wide variety of musical styles, from new wave to R&B. Shunned by his country fans and ridiculed by critics, the album still managed to reach number 2 on the pop chart and sold over 2 million copies.

Garth Brooks provides an interesting exception to the image-conscious aesthetic that often drives the popular music industry. His slightly pudgy frame and receding hairline are reminiscent of the characteristics that predestined Bill Haley to be eclipsed by Elvis Presley as rock and roll emerged in the early 1950s. However, Brooks’s consistently creative musical output, energetic stage show, and endearing personality overcame such cosmetic issues. Brooks’s high-tech, high-energy stage show, revealing obvious influence of theatrical rock bands like Springsteen, Queen, and Kiss, attracted both country and rock fans to his live performances, consistently selling out 60,000-seat auditoriums. However, after personal problems and fading record sales, Brooks moved out of the limelight by the middle of the first decade of the new millennium.

Shania Twain

The career of Shania Twain provides the quintessential rags-to-riches story. Raised in a working class family in Ontario, Shania Twain (born Eileen Twain) and her parents, despite their economic condition, managed to send her to Toronto for voice lessons. She had the good fortune to be noticed by Mary Bailey, a well-known Canadian country singer, when Twain appeared on a national variety show. Bailey had the connections that eventually landed Shania in Nashville (Dickerson 1998). In 1991, with Bailey’s assistance, Twain



Shania Twain (Source: Lee Celano/Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

recorded a demo that earned her a contract with Mercury Records. In honor of the Ojibwe heritage of her stepfather, the singer changed her name to “Shania,” meaning “I’m on my way.”

Her self-titled debut album (1993) did not perform well, but it afforded an opportunity for her to be heard by John “Mutt” Lange, former producer of rock bands including Foreigner, AC/DC, and Def Leppard. The duo collaborated on her next album, *The Woman in Me* (number 5 in 1995), which evidenced a fresh approach to country music, including upbeat energy, powerful rock guitars, and top-notch production standards. The album, containing only songs penned by Twain, eventually generated seven hit sin-

gles, including “Any Man of Mine” and “(If You’re Not in It for Love) I’m Outta Here.” In 1997, Twain and Lange—now married—succeeded once again with *Come On Over* (number 2), containing an incredible nine hit singles, which became the best-selling album in country music history. In 1998, she received Grammy Awards for Best Female Country Vocal Performance and Best Country Song for “You’re Still the One,” a song cowritten by Twain and her husband/producer. In 2002, Twain reached the top of the charts with *Up!*, a two-disc release, each disc containing the same 19 songs, one version for the country market and one for the pop market. The songs included a cover of Abba’s “C’est la vie” and a Latin pop song, “Juanita.”

The Dixie Chicks

Taking their name from a classic country rock song by Little Feat, “Dixie Chicken,” the Dixie Chicks released their debut album in 1990 (*Thank Heavens for Dale Evans*). At that time, the group from Lubbock, Texas, consisted of sisters Martie and Emily Erwin, Laura Lynch, and Robyn Lynn Macy. Two more local albums followed before the group reformed as the trio, with new lead vocalist Natalie Maines (replacing Lynch), that would prove to be one of the most successful country rock acts of the 1990s, with Martie on fiddle and mandolin and Emily on guitar, dobro, and banjo.

With the release of *Wide Open Spaces* (number 1 country album, 1998), the Dixie Chicks attained superstardom. “There’s Your Trouble” and “You Were Mine” both entered the Top 40 and, along with the title cut, all three went to number 1 on the country singles chart. The album eventually sold over 12 million copies. The release of *Fly* (1999) and the Top 40 singles “Cowboy Take Me Away” and “Without You”—both of which topped the country singles chart—confirmed the group’s superstar status. This level of success continued with the release of *Home* (number 1 in 2002), containing two more Top 40 singles: “Long Time Gone” and “Landslide,” a song by Fleetwood Mac’s Stevie Nicks. The Chicks became embroiled in a political controversy over a statement Maines made in March 2003 about being “ashamed” that President Bush was from their home state of Texas. A significant backlash occurred from the group’s fan base, as some radio stations refused to play their music and some fans joined the protest by destroying their personal copies of the group’s CDs. Maines eventually apologized for the remark. The Dixie Chicks’ next album,

Top of the World, a two-CD live concert set, was released at the end of 2003 but did not soar to platinum status, as had the previous two releases. Deciding to confront the issue directly, the Dixie Chicks released a documentary titled *Shut Up and Sing* (2006) during the same year as the successful and critically acclaimed *Taking the Long Way*, returning the band to the top of the *Billboard* album chart.

Other Country Artists

The careers of other country stars rivaled that of Garth Brooks. Clint Black, Travis Tritt, Mary Chapin Carpenter, Emmylou Harris, Alan Jackson, Hank Williams Jr., and a host of others all played an important role in keeping country music in the spotlight. The progressive country music of the Kentucky Headhunters, k. d. lang, and Lyle Lovett encouraged a generation of rock enthusiasts to broaden its musical horizons to include C&W. The crossover success of Billy Ray Cyrus's "Achy Breaky Heart" (number 1 country and number 4 pop in 1992) succeeded in confirming the position of country music within the mainstream.

As country artists rose to their highest level of popularity since the emergence of rock and roll, country music dance halls flourished. Providing music for such social gathering places presented a certain difficulty with the eclectic mix of the new country audience. One attempt to meet this challenge, Brooks and Dunn's "Boot Scootin' Boogie" (1992), provided a curious blend of musical styles. The club mix version of the song takes the fundamental country sound and dance hall lyrics, adding an unmistakable rock backbeat and synthesizer bass line, not unlike those found in recordings by Madonna or other pop dance artists. Even the musical form exhibits close ties to rock and roll. Each verse is sung over a 12-bar blues, in which the final phrase is extended by two measures.

As the 1990s progressed, the fusion of country-folk and rock achieved an overwhelming level of popularity, as evidenced by its continued commercial success. However, by the end of the decade, the number of country rock crossovers had declined noticeably.

The Jam Band Phenomenon

Following in the footsteps of the Grateful Dead (and their post-Garcia incarnations as the Other Ones and, later, the Dead), and amassing a similarly devoted fan base, a number of *jam bands* began to hit the scene during the 1980s and 1990s. These groups integrated the sounds of country, folk, bluegrass, rock, jazz, and even punk into an eclectic and highly energized musical performance. Like the Dead before them, studio recordings took a backseat to their live performances, and improvisation formed a significant part of their concert performances. These groups included Phish, the String Cheese Incident, and Widespread Panic. Many jam band fans, a nomadic bunch reminiscent of Deadheads, migrated with the bands from city to city on their concert tours and, like the Deadheads before them, openly traded bootleg tapes of concert performances, with the band's permission.

Phish

The most successful of the jam bands of this period was Phish, formed in 1983 at the University of Vermont by guitarists Trey Anastasio and Jeff Holdsworth and drummer Jon Fishman. The term **jam** suggests a freedom in the style of performance, as opposed to the highly rehearsed sound of most commercial recordings, allowing for extended sections of improvisation, focusing on expressive communication from a performer to the other players and audience. This music's energetic style is one of the primary reasons that both musicians and audiences find jam bands so enjoyable to listen to. In these sometimes lengthy sections of instrumental improvisation, band members draw from numerous musical traditions, including country, rock, and jazz.

In 1988, Phish recorded their debut, *Junta*, and sold cassette copies at their performances. The average track length on this album was almost 9 minutes long, with the longest (“Union Federal”) being 25 minutes. By the time of their second album, *Lawn Boy* (1990), the group had built a significant following and was one of the first bands to utilize the Internet as a means of information dissemination, maintaining contact with their fans and selling merchandise (including recordings). Beginning in 1993, the band’s consistently acclaimed live performances began to translate into placement on the album chart, though, like the Grateful Dead, Phish has never had a Top 40 hit. This is perhaps not surprising given the influence of the Dead, who, as you recall, had only one Top 40 hit in their astonishing 30-year career. Phish continued to release numerous recordings into the new millennium and played their farewell concert in 2004.

Other Jam Bands

Following the success of Phish, other jam bands began to appear, including Widespread Panic, Disco Biscuits, ekoostic hookah, and Rebecca’s Statue. An outgrowth of the jam band phenomenon, **jam-grass**, also emphasized improvisation but was primarily influenced by mountain music and bluegrass (Cornmeal’s *In the Kitchen*, 2001).

The Dave Matthews Band

Though not typically included under the jam band rubric, the music of the Dave Matthews Band certainly matches the eclectic mix of musical styles evident in these performance-oriented groups, and the group built a similar fan base (also allowing bootleg recordings of their performances). Formed in 1991 in Charlottesville, Virginia, the band’s rise to prominence resulted from a combination of superbly crafted studio recordings (*Remember Two Things*, 1993, and *Under the Table and Dreaming*, number 11 in 1994) and their appearance on the 1993 and 1994 H.O.R.D.E. tours and as opening act for Phish and Blues Traveler. On *Crash* (number 2 in 1996), Matthews and his band exemplified an extremely high caliber of musicianship. Whereas Phish might entertain their audience with an on-stage performance on a vacuum cleaner, Matthews’s musical style included elements of world music, following the example of artists like Paul Simon, Peter Gabriel, and Sting.

Though almost any of their recordings would effectively illustrate this integration of musical styles, a particularly good example is the opening tracks of *Before These Crowded Streets* (1998). The brief opening track, “Pantala Naga Pampa” (with its Indian title meaning “there’s a python in my pants”), reveals Latin and Caribbean musical influence and segues directly into “Rapunzel,” with its staccato and syncopated rhythms verses. The Middle Eastern influence of “The Last Stop” and its unveiled sociopolitical message provide stark contrast to the opening tracks. With “Don’t Drink the Water,” we return to a more traditional Matthews Band sound.

In the late 1990s, the band returned to their live performance aesthetic, releasing several well-received live albums. As a new decade approached, their studio albums proved even more popular, as illustrated by their two number 1 albums, *Before These Crowded Streets* (2001) and *Busted Stuff* (2002), Matthews’s first solo album, *Some Devil* (number 2 in 2003), and another series of live recordings.

Soft Rock of the 1970s

Just as in the 1950s and 1960s, soft rock was immensely popular in the 1970s, and just as the other styles of the 1970s fragmented into subcategories, so, too, did soft rock. Generally speaking, as hard rock grew harder (especially with heavy metal and punk rock), soft rock grew softer. Some of the artists discussed in this section sit squarely on

the imaginary dividing line between soft rock and pure pop, moving back and forth across the line, depending on which album and which song one is considering. Recall that we consider a song to be soft rock if one or more of rock's basic musical elements is present—for example, a rocklike bass line or a rock-derived rhythmic pattern—no matter how gentle. If there is an absence of such elements, the song is considered pure pop music.

The Carpenters

The hottest soft rock act of the early 1970s was the Carpenters. Richard and Karen Carpenter, from New Haven, Connecticut, were talented musicians. Richard sang and played keyboards; Karen sang and played drums. Their second album, *Close to You* (1970), rose to number 2 and produced their first number 1 hit, the title track by Hal David and Burt Bacharach, and a number 2 hit, “We’ve Only Just Begun.” Both songs lie squarely on the soft rock-pop borderline. For example, the bridge of “We’ve Only Just Begun” has a stronger beat, complete with backbeat brass accents on the second beat and a steady eighth-note tambourine—enough to establish a soft rock sound—but the other sections of the song withdraw these elements and thus lie more in the pop realm. “Close to You” was primarily a pop song, although there was a very light triple division of the beat (listen for the cymbals) in its bridge section. There are a few other very light touches of rock influence: syncopations; a steady quadruple beat, with all four beats about evenly stressed; and a few rock-style piano voicings. The Carpenters’ lush, jazzlike vocal harmonies (e.g., listen to “Love to Surrender”) are the result of multitracking, a technique with which Richard had been experimenting for several years.

Their next album, *The Carpenters* (1971), also reached number 2 and yielded three Top 5 songs. Again, in “Superstar,” the formula included a bridge section with a more pronounced beat; in the other sections, the bass played a dotted quarter and eighth-note pattern, ♩ ♪ ♪ under a light but steady duple division of the beat. Many of the Carpenters’ songs conform to this pattern: a pop sound with subtle rock elements, moving to a harder style (relatively speaking, of course) in the bridge sections. Karen Carpenter’s excellent voice was capable of a variety of subtle changes; she was one of the finest rock or pop singers of the 1970s.



The Carpenters (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. — Los Angeles)



Barry Manilow (Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

The Carpenters' popularity was consistent through 1975. Beginning in 1976, album sales began to slump. In 1983, Karen died of cardiac arrest, resulting from her long struggle with anorexia nervosa, at the age of 32.

Barry Manilow

In the late 1970s, the biggest name in soft rock was Barry Manilow. After taking courses at City College of New York, the New York College of Music, and even Juilliard, Manilow found work in the music business composing and performing commercial jingles. In 1974, he released a ballad called "Mandy"; the song climbed to number 1 by early 1975. His next album, *Tryin' to Get the Feeling* (1975), rose to number 5, with "I Write the Songs" reaching number 1. These two songs provide good

insight into Manilow's style. A fine singer in the soft rock-pop style, Manilow often begins songs very quietly, with little accompaniment. Gradually, the texture thickens, as full orchestra and backup voices are added. Near the end, full production resources were used to build a big finish. Notice especially the drum part; from the outset, there is typically a subtle backbeat on the second and fourth beats, but as the song nears its big finish, the backbeat becomes quite exaggerated, usually with considerable echo.

Manilow did not compose "I Write the Songs." In fact, the song (composed by Bruce Johnston) had been recorded earlier by the Captain and Tennille and by David Cassidy. The lyrics refer to neither the singer nor even the song's composer, but to music as a concept. "I Write the Songs" is an eloquent acknowledgment of music's role in human society. Another effective ode to music's power is "Beautiful Music" (music by Manilow, lyrics by Marty Panzer). Midway through the song, Manilow moves as close to the gentler side of mainstream rock as he ever does. (Listen also to "A Nice Boy Like Me" to hear Manilow at his "rockiest.") For the balance of the 1970s, Manilow was the premier figure in soft rock. By 1990, he had enjoyed over two dozen Top 40 hits, including 11 in the Top 10.

Neil Diamond

Neil Diamond has been a successful singer-songwriter for over 40 years. He wrote hits for other musicians; beginning with "Cherry, Cherry" (1966), Diamond, the performer, had his own series of Top 20 hits. It was "Sweet Caroline" in 1969 that initiated his greatest period of popularity (at least until his comeback in the early 1980s). He achieved six Top 10 hits between 1969 and 1974, including the number 1 hits "Cracklin' Rosie" and "Song Sung Blue." Diamond's strong voice, usually accompanied by full orchestra and vocal backup, with very professional production, created a popular soft rock style. On occasion, a rock-derived beat and a rock bass line provided the necessary hint of rock to justify the label "soft rock" (e.g., on "Sweet Caroline" and "Longfellow Serenade").

Diamond's film debut in 1980's *The Jazz Singer* renewed his popularity. The sound track album reached number 3 and produced three Top 10 hits. "America" qualifies as soft rock; the album's other songs are in a pop style (although the bridge section of "Love on the Rocks" may cross the line back into soft rock).



Olivia Newton-John (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Olivia Newton-John

Moving from a harder to a softer style is fairly common (e.g., Bobby Darin, Buddy Holly, Fats Domino, and even Elvis Presley). But moving the other way is both rare and difficult; nevertheless, Olivia Newton-John made this shift.

Born in England, Newton-John launched her career with television and local pub appearances. Her version of Dylan's "If Not for You" hit the U.S. charts in 1971, but in 1973, she cut "Let Me Be There"; in early 1974, it peaked at number 6 and earned Newton-John a Grammy for Best Female Country Vocal. Somehow this woman born in England and raised in Australia became identified as a country music singer!

She followed with two Top 5 hits in 1974, including her first number 1 song, "I Honestly Love You." Her success with soft, country-style ballads led to her being named 1974's Female Vocalist of the Year by the Country Music Association (CMA). Many country fans and artists were enraged; some of the artists pulled out of the CMA and formed the Association of Country Entertainers. Olivia followed in 1975 with two more Top 5 songs, including the number 1 "Have You Ever Been Mellow."

The year 1978 brought the beginning of a major change in her career. Appearing in the 1950s nostalgia film *Grease*, Olivia portrayed Sandy, a demure, ponytailed innocent who, at the end of the plot, is transformed into a leather-jacketed, sexy chick in tight pants. The sound track album moved to number 1 and included three hit singles. The number 1 "You're the One That I Want" was a genuine rock song, lying between soft rock and the gentler side of the mainstream.

It seemed as though Sandy's transformation in *Grease* was replicated by Olivia's career. The new Newton-John released *Totally Hot*, with its hit single, "A Little More Love" (number 3 in late 1978). Appearing in the 1980 film *Xanadu*, she had two hit singles from its sound track album. The image change became complete with the controversial song "Physical" in 1981. Was it about the physical fitness craze or just plain sex? Whichever it was (if not both), the song was a hit. Musically, most of Olivia's post-*Grease* songs were rock; the softer elements include the elaborate production and Olivia's soft pop voice (and her image). Certainly she was closer to the mainstream than the Carpenters, Manilow, and Diamond.

Soft Rock Continues to Evolve

Lionel Richie

One of the most successful acts on the softer side of rock was Lionel Richie. Lead singer of the Commodores throughout the 1970s, Richie began moving away from the Commodores in 1981. He wrote and recorded the theme from the movie *Endless Love* and saw

it move to number 1. His first solo album, *Lionel Richie* (number 3 in 1982), yielded three Top 5 singles, including the number 1 hit “Truly.”

Richie’s first number 1 album, *Can’t Slow Down* (late 1983), produced an amazing five Top 10 singles, including two number 1 songs, “All Night Long (All Night)” and “Hello.” Although Richie’s biggest successes have been in the soft rock ballad style, he sometimes moves to a moderate or fast beat—always with a funky dance beat (sometimes close to disco). The Jamaican influence in “All Night Long” was an interesting stylistic touch (note, for example, Richie’s affected Jamaican enunciation and the nonsense syllable section—supposedly an old Jamaican chant).

Richie continued writing songs, performing, recording, and producing for himself and others into the late-1980s. In 1985, he was coauthor (with Michael Jackson) of “We Are the World,” a song (and video) produced by Quincy Jones to raise money for famine victims in Africa. The recording included a star-studded list of performers, including Harry Belafonte, Ray Charles, Bob Dylan, Waylon Jennings, Billy Joel, Willie Nelson, Steve Perry, Smokey Robinson, Kenny Rogers, Diana Ross, Paul Simon, Bruce Springsteen, Tina Turner, Stevie Wonder, and many others.

Richie’s 1986 album, *Dancing on the Ceiling*, became his second consecutive number 1 album. Although it proved to be his last of the decade, Motown pulled a string of successful singles from the album, including “Say You, Say Me” (number 1), “Dancing on the Ceiling,” “Love Will Conquer All,” “Ballerina Girl,” and “Se La.”

Pop Divas of the 1980s and 1990s

Several female singers found tremendous success in the field of 1980s soft rock. After Whitney Houston’s first hit single in 1985 (“You Give Good Love”), she reeled off 10 Top 10 hits before the end of the decade, including a remarkable seven consecutive number 1 hits, breaking the old record of six in a row established by the Beatles and the Bee Gees. Her two albums, *Whitney Houston* (1985) and *Whitney* (1987), held the number 1 position for 14 and 11 weeks, respectively.

Paula Abdul’s success came near the end of the decade with three consecutive number 1 hits in 1988 and 1989 (“Straight Up,” “Forever Your Girl,” and “Cold Hearted”). Her first album, *Forever Your Girl*, hit number 1 in 1989 and held that spot for 10 weeks. She has recently become much more familiar as a cohost, along with Simon Cowell, of *American Idol*.

A new crop of solo female artists emerged in the 1990s, representing a wide array of musical styles. According to Dickerson (1998, 17), “1996 was a landmark year. It was the year female solo artists out-charted their male counterparts on the Top 20 charts for the first time in history.” Of the artists scoring Top 20 hits that year, 61 percent were female, and the following year, the percentage fell only slightly to 60 percent.

Mariah Carey

A vocalist of incredible technical ability, Mariah Carey experienced a rise to stardom and commercial success rivaled by only a handful of her predecessors. Exhibiting a multi-octave vocal range, her recordings reveal both a sultry ballad singer and virtuoso vocal technician. In addition to her impressive vocal technique, Carey was actively involved in writing and producing her recordings.

Carey’s vocal style reveals heavy R&B and gospel influences. Listen, for example, to “Vision of Love” from her debut album. Carey’s vocal delivery in “Vision of Love” is heavily blues inflected, especially in its use of blues notes throughout (see p. 166). Her melismatic style of singing is similar to that of Aretha Franklin’s gospel recordings (see Chapter 9). The difference between Mariah and her predecessors is in her incredible vocal range and willingness to use it completely, as exhibited in the final chorus of the song. As



Mariah Carey (Source: Villard-Niviere/SIPA Press)

Carey sings a variation of the melody on one track of the recording, she harmonizes with herself on a second track, incorporating her extreme high pitch range (up to three octaves above middle C). The song concludes with an extended melisma (at one point, with no instrumental accompaniment), incorporating obvious blues and gospel influences.

Carey's debut album reached number 1 in 1990 and contained four number 1 hit singles; her second album, *Emotions* (1991), also reached number 1 with a second series of hit singles. With *Emotions*, Carey made history, becoming the first artist whose initial five singles all went to number 1. In fact, eight of her first 10 singles would eventually reach the top of the chart. Her *Unplugged* recording produced a number 1 cover of "I'll Be There," a number 1 hit for the Jackson Five in 1970. After marrying Mottola, almost

twice her age, Carey continued her commercial success with *Music Box* (number 1 in 1993), resulting in three more Top 10 hits: "Dream Lover" (number 1), "Hero" (number 1), and "Without You" (number 3). Following a number 2 duet ("Endless Love") with Luther Vandross in 1994, she released *Daydream* (number 1), containing the number 1 hits "Fantasy" and "One Sweet Day." The latter song featured 1990s vocal group Boyz II Men and held the number 1 position for 16 weeks. "One Sweet Day" is listed by Joel Whitburn (2000, p. 814) as the number 1 hit in *Billboard* Hot 100 history between the years of 1955 and 1999. With the release of this recording, Carey became the first female in the history of rock music to have three albums with sales of over 8 million copies each.

In 1997, the singer released *Butterfly* (number 1 in 1997), revealing evidence of hip-hop influence, as clearly demonstrated in the song "Honey," a collaborative effort with rap artists Ma\$e and the Lox. "My All," a second number 1 hit from the same album, followed in 1998. A greatest hits collection followed, and then *Rainbow* (number 2 in 2000), containing the number 1 hit "Heartbreaker," providing an appropriate end to the decade in which Mariah dominated the charts and became its best-selling female artist. Her interest in infusing the upbeat musical style of her recordings with elements of hip-hop continued with vocal appearances by a variety of rap artists, including Jay-Z and Snoop Dogg.

In 2001, Carey signed an \$80 million multirecord deal with Virgin Records (the largest ever to date), announcing that her first release would be a sound track to a film (*Glitter*), in which she would play the starring role. At the time, there seemed to be little risk involved in such a plan, but as is often the case in the music industry, even the best-laid plans sometimes go astray. Mariah was not the only artist to flounder during this year of falling record sales. According to *Rolling Stone* magazine (Goodman 2002, 21), it was "the kind of year the music business would just as soon forget . . . the most dramatic year of decline since the disco boom went bust in the late Seventies." As a result of the dismal commercial performance of the film (although the sound track album reached number 7 in 2001) and declining record sales, Carey and Virgin parted ways, with the record company paying off \$28 million of the contracted amount. Carey's personal life also made headlines as her behavior became increasingly unpredictable. After releasing the album *Charmbracelet*

(number 3 in 2002), Carey made a big comeback in 2005 with the number 1 album *The Emancipation of Mimi*, a return to her pop form.

Other Soft Rock Sounds

Soft rock continued into the 1980s with groups like Air Supply and the Alan Parsons Project. Australian band Air Supply combined lush instrumental backgrounds, highly professional production work, and strong vocals. The Alan Parsons Project stayed basically in the area of soft rock, but often veered toward progressive rock.

A rather interesting phenomenon in the world of late 1980s soft rock was the popularity of some young teen groups. The most successful of these was the quintet New Kids on the Block. The New Kids were between the ages of 11 and 15 when the group was formed in 1984 by producer Maurice Starr. Several years earlier, Starr had gathered some 13- to 15-year-olds from Boston into a reasonably successful group called the New Edition, which had placed six hits in the Top 40 between 1984 and 1988. On the basis of that success, Starr had high hopes for the New Kids. He was not disappointed; their 1989 album *Hangin' Tough* rose to number 1 and yielded five Top 10 hits, including two at number 1 ("I'll Be Loving You" and "Hangin' Tough"). The New Kids became the hottest soft rock group of the late 1980s, especially with younger rock fans. Their style alternated between soft ballads (four out of 10 cuts on *Hangin' Tough*) and a techno-dance style much like Madonna's. Starr played or programmed all of the instruments on the album.

As the decade turned, the New Kids released another number 1 album, *Step by Step* (1990), which yielded several more single hits (including the number 1 title song). The New Kids, New Edition, and other packaged acts of the late 1980s were harbingers of the so-called boy bands (and girl bands) of the 1990s (see Chapter 16).

New Age Music

Before we move past soft rock, we must note the advent of the softest style of music to hit the popular market since the mid-1950s: so-called New Age music. The musical origins of New Age music seem to be within that branch of new wave music that tended toward minimalist classical music. Precedents can be found in some music by Brian Eno and Robert Fripp. There is certainly a relation to the synthepop or technorock groups of the 1970s (e.g., Passport and Kraftwerk) as well as classical electrominimalists such as Philip Glass and Steve Reich.

A good example of electronic New Age music is Tangerine Dream. This German group, headed by Edgar Froese and Chris Franks, emphasizes electronic keyboards of all sorts. The music is usually rather quiet and serene, bathing the listener in waves of shimmering electronic sounds and repetitive, overlapping patterns (a hallmark of the minimalists). For a sample, listen to *Tangram* (1980). Tangerine Dream, in the tradition of art rockers, usually opts for side-long works that gradually unfold in a stream-of-consciousness idiom. Another group that has been dubbed "New Age" is the Mannheim Steamroller. Similar in general concept to Tangerine Dream, Steamroller produced a series of albums named *Fresh Aire I, II, III*, and so on.

Not all New Age music is heavily electronic. Its gentle, soothing sound also can be accomplished with acoustic instruments or combinations of electronic and acoustic instruments. Leading this field in the late 1980s was the Windham Hill Record Company, a California label that grossed over \$25 million in 1985 and grew steadily thereafter. By 1986, Windham Hill accounted for 15 to 20 percent of the billings for its distributor, A&M Records. Quiet, almost Muzaklike, Windham Hill records (and others similar in concept) surround the listener with a soft, soothing sound environment. Several of the more well-known names in this style are pianist George Winston and guitarist Will Ackerman (cofounder of Windham Hill). Although there is some derivation from rock, New Age is

TABLE 14-1

Name	Typical Hits	Comments
John Denver	"Take Me Home Country Roads" (number 2, 1971); "Rocky Mountain High" (number 9, 1973); "Sunshine on My Shoulder" (number 1, 1974)	Folk background; peak popularity from 1971 to 1976; folk roots flavored by light touches of C&W and soft rock
Osmonds (also Donny Osmond, and Donny and Marie)	"One Bad Apple" (number 1, 1971); "Go Away Little Girl" (Donny Osmond, number 1, 1971)	Usually a quintet, they placed 10 songs in the Top 40 from 1971 to 1976; as a soloist, Donny had 12 Top 40 hits in the same period; later in the 1970s, Donny and Marie became a duet, hosting a successful national television show; by the end of 1978, the total Osmond family had created 32 Top 40 hits
Roberta Flack	"The First Time Ever I Saw Your Face" (number 1, 1972); "Killing Me Softly with His Song" (number 1, 1973); "Feel Like Makin' Love" (number 1, 1974)	Soul background; early experience in church music; style has elements of soul with influences of jazz and soft rock; many successful duet releases with Donny Hathaway
America	"A Horse with No Name" (number 1, 1972); "Ventura Highway" (number 8, 1972); "Tin Man" (number 4, 1974)	Trio known for good vocal harmonies and enigmatic lyrics; George Martin produced many of their gentle rock hits
Seals and Crofts	"Summer Breeze" (number 6, 1972); "Diamond Girl" (number 6, 1973); "Get Closer" (number 6, 1976)	Duo from Texas; members of the Champs ("Tequila") in the late 1950s; soft rock style with lyrics sometimes reflecting their Baha'i faith (e.g., "Hummingbird" and "East of Ginger Trees"); occasional touches of country influence

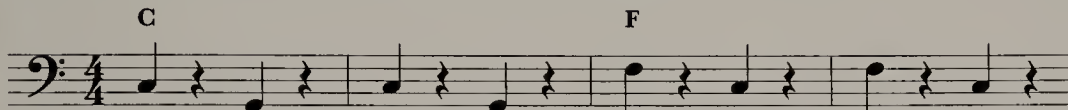
essentially antirock in most ways. Where rock has historically been stimulative music, most New Age music seems to offer the antidote for the loud, screaming tension, the driving beat, and the shock mentality of much rock and roll, but it may be more than a reaction against rock; it may also be a reaction against the stressful tensions and fast-paced tempo of life in the 1980s. Table 14-1 summarizes several more important soft rock acts of the 1970s.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: COUNTRY OR ROCK?

Country music reemerged as one of the most commercially successful musical styles during the late 1980s and early 1990s. However, the C&W that played such an important role in the careers of many early rock stars (e.g., Bill Haley, Elvis Presley, and Jerry Lee Lewis) bears only a faint resemblance to the country music that gained popularity toward the end of the 20th century.

As we have discussed, the audience for country music of the early 1950s was well defined, and the style of the music was fairly consistent, centering around simple, singable melodies and lyrics. Most songs were based on diatonic harmonies (frequently no more

than three or four chords) and basic, straightforward rhythms. Singers often incorporated an affected nasality in their vocal production, or other techniques like yodeling, falsetto, or allowing the voice to crack with emotion. C&W performers of the 1940s and 1950s played acoustic instruments (acoustic guitars, string bass, etc.) almost exclusively. The pedal steel (slide guitar) and fiddle rounded out the traditional C&W ensemble. Recall that most of the early C&W groups did not use a drummer. As a result, the bass player not only supplied the music's harmonic foundation, but was also responsible for providing the rhythmic drive. Often, the bassist would slap the neck of the instrument percussively, while playing the notes of a simple bass line. These bass lines normally consisted of the first and fifth notes of the musical scale for each chord of the harmony:



Eddy Arnold's "Bouquet of Roses" (number 1 country in 1948) exemplifies the simple melody, three-chord harmony, and uncomplicated rhythm associated with C&W. The presence of the pedal steel and fiddle place this song squarely in the category of country music. The absence of drums is made less noticeable by the acoustic guitar player's emphasis on beats two and four, that is, the backbeat: chunk-a-CHUNK chunk-a-CHUNK. The bass line for this song is a good example of the typical C&W bass line previously illustrated. Arnold's eventual crossover into the pop market is evident even in the vocal style of his early recordings, which incorporate a lead vocal style more closely related to the pop crooners than the nasal style of his fellow C&W artists and a highly trained group of backup singers.

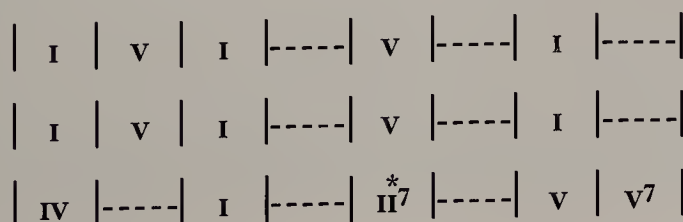
Kitty Wells' Top 10 single "There's Poison in Your Heart" from 1955 and Hank Williams's "Your Cheatin' Heart" from 1953 provide additional support for these same basic C&W musical characteristics. The acoustic instrumentation is identical to Arnold's "Bouquet of Roses." Vocal techniques are typical of those heard in recordings by other C&W artists. Wells's emphasis on consonants (e.g., *r* in the word *heart*), rather than sustaining pitches on vowel sounds, gives her vocal style a less refined, untrained character. Williams's emotive vocal cracks have similar effect, giving the music a comfortable feeling, lacking any semblance of pretense. The manner in which the fiddle and piano take turns carrying on a back-and-forth musical dialogue with the vocalist is a technique often incorporated in C&W.

The love-oriented lyrics for these songs are typical of C&W. "Bouquet of Roses" speaks of a young romantic bringing a gift to his beloved, while both "There's Poison in Your Heart" and "Your Cheatin' Heart" provide examples of the heartache experienced by a jilted lover. The series of harmonic diagrams that follow is provided to confirm the simplicity of the harmonies used in each of these songs. Notice the predominance of three primary chords (I, IV, and V) and the infrequent use of chromatic harmonies (marked with an asterisk):

"Bouquet of Roses"—original key: E♭ major



"There's Poison in Your Heart"—original key: G major



“Your Cheatin’ Heart”—original key: C major

	I	-----	IV	-----	V	-----	I	-----
	I	-----	IV	-----	V	-----	I	-----
	IV	-----	I	-----	II^*7	-----	V	-----
	IV	-----	I	-----	II^*7	-----	V	-----

Country music of the 1990s retained several of the musical characteristics associated with C&W, but there were a number of significant differences. Our discussion will focus primarily on the music of Clint Black and Travis Tritt, but any of the artists we have mentioned could serve just as well.

Black’s debut album *Killin’ Time* (1989) was accurately classified as a country album, evidenced by the traditional instrumentation (acoustic guitars, fiddle, steel guitar, and harmonica) and his vocal style. The title song opens with what can be described as a blues-influenced rock guitar riff, though the bass line, fiddle parts, and vocal style are pure country. “Better Man” provides an interesting juxtaposition of country and rock styles. The introduction and choruses incorporate a strong rock-influenced backbeat, while during the verses, the drummer’s style lightens substantially beneath stylistic inflections typically used by country performers. Though rock elements were certainly evident, this debut album was well within the boundaries of country music of the time.

However, the title song from his second release, *Put Yourself in My Shoes* (1990), stretches the definition of country almost to the breaking point. The yodeling vocal line assists in retaining at least a modicum of country sensibility. However, the blues-influenced harmonica introduction and fiddle fills interspersed throughout the song suggest an evolution of musical style. Perhaps the most obvious deviation is in the increased complexity and chromaticism of the harmony, as outlined in the following:

“Put Yourself in My Shoes”—original key: A major

intro:		I	VI^*7		V	III^*		bIII^*	II^*7		V	
verse:		V		VI^*7		I		V				
		V		VI^*7		I		V				
		I		VII^*		iii		VI^*7				
		V		VI^*7		bIII^*	II^*7		V			
chorus:		I		V		I		V				
		I		V		VI^*7		II^*	bII^*			
		I		V		I		V				
		I	VI^*7		V	III^*		bIII^*	II^*7		V	

Listening Guide: "Put Yourself in My Shoes" (Clint Black)

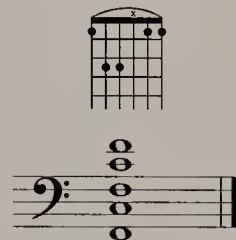
0:00–0:09	Introduction (4 measures)	Begins with a blues-influenced "harp" (harmonica) melody over a mellow acoustic guitar and light drumbeat. Unlike a typical country song, the level of chromaticism in the chord progression is extremely high, as four of the seven chords in the intro are outside of the key (see the chord chart). This rivals the level of chromaticism evident in some examples of the Beatles' music, discussed in Chapter 6.
0:10–0:18	Verse 1 (aaba') (16 measures total) a = 4 measures	As the vocal enters ("your mind is made up"), the nasal quality of the voice and the yodeling technique anchor this section clearly in the country style, though the chromatic harmonies continue to suggest an evolution of musical style. Pedal steel guitar takes over the blues-inflected "response" to the "call" of the vocal lines.
0:19–0:27	a = 4 measures	Repeat of the preceding melodic phrase with different lyrics ("you say that we could never see").
0:28–0:36	b = 4 measures	The chord progression changes ("we have our differences"), though the overall instrumentation and style remain consistent.
0:37–0:45	a' = 4 measures	A variation of the opening phrase, incorporating a highly chromatic chord progression.
0:46–1:03	Chorus (bb') (16 measures total) b = 8 measures	With the lyric "put yourself in my shoes," a dramatic change takes place in the musical sound, revealing a significant rock influence: heavier drumbeat, periodic integration of a growling vocal style, and rock-style "walking bass line" (see accompanying music notation). Also, a blues-influenced lead guitar, trading off with fiddle, adds an additional rock component. In the final measure of this section, the syncopated rhythms and the anticipation (i.e., early arrival) of the D major chord leading to the first measure of the next section represent a slight increase in rhythmic complexity.
1:04–1:22	b' = 8 measures	A variation of the preceding phrase, ending with a highly chromatic chord progression, interestingly similar to the progression at the end of the verse.
1:23–1:31	Interlude (4 measures)	Reappearance of the instrumental passage used for the introduction.
1:32–2:08	Verse 2 (aaba') (16 measures)	As before, beginning with "you're gonna keep walkin'," in this verse, the fiddle provides "answers," replacing the role of the pedal steel in the first verse. The last vocal phrase in this verse incorporates a growling vocal style at times similar to that in the Chorus.

(continued)

2:09–2:42	Chorus (bb') (16 measures)	As before. Lead guitar licks show evidence of direct rock influence.
2:43–2:59	Extension of Chorus	The high falsetto tone of the lead vocal in this extension of the Chorus is a clear throwback to the vocal sound of Jerry Lee Lewis and mainstream rock of the 1950s.
3:00–3:15	Outro	The song concludes with the same instrumental passage used for the introduction and interlude.

Notice the high degree of chromaticism in this piece (identified by the asterisks) in comparison to the C&W songs previously outlined. Such chromaticism was often utilized in pop tunes and soft rock. “Put Yourself in My Shoes” presents a hybrid song form, consisting of both country and rock characteristics. The vocal style and instrumentation hardly deviate from what was typically heard on C&W recordings. Especially noticeable is the prominent role retained by the pedal steel. However, the chromatic harmonies; the blues riffs played by the harmonica, fiddle, and lead guitar; the heavy drumbeat heard in the chorus; and the shouting vocal style in the chorus reveal a definite rock influence.

Several of Black’s later recordings bare little resemblance to C&W at all. Listen carefully, for example, to “Wherever You Go” from *One Emotion* (1994). The electric guitar part throughout is taken directly from mainstream rock and uses a performance technique called *bar chords*. In the most simple case, as in the introduction to this song, the performer plays only the root, the fifth scale degree, and an octave above the root (i.e., using only the three lowest-pitched strings), resulting in the following chord:



This chord contains the first and fifth scale degrees (an open fifth), but the third degree of the chord is absent. As a result, the tonality is ambiguous, neither major nor minor, accommodating equally well either a major third (A in the chord above), minor third (A \flat in the chord above), or a pitch somewhere in between the two (a *blue note*). In addition, this fingering pattern can be moved to any position on the guitar neck to form a chord, requiring only a minimal amount of technical expertise to play any chord of the chromatic scale. Bar chord technique has been used to great advantage throughout the history of rock. The opening measures of Deep Purple’s “Smoke on the Water” provide a clear musical demonstration of this bar chord technique. With that in mind, listen closely to Black’s “Wherever You Go” and notice the distinct contrast between this style of country music and early C&W.

With Travis Tritt, the transformation of country into a subgenre of rock music was complete. “Put Some Drive in Your Country” from Tritt’s debut album is a case in point. Notice, for example, the distorted rock guitar timbre and the musical texture, consisting of multiple rhythmic guitar lines subtly intertwined underneath a sustained electric slide guitar. The resulting sound is reminiscent of 1970s southern rock. In addition, Tritt’s shouting-style vocal delivery and the strong, consistent drumbeat, including a heavy backbeat, further emphasize the rock-country fusion. In the chorus of this song, Tritt’s lyrics even state his case

explicitly: He mentions a childhood promise he made to himself to combine southern rock and country.

Rock influences are a consistent feature of Travis Tritt's recordings. Even his ballads exhibit characteristics clearly derived from rock. Listen to "Anymore" (from *It's All About to Change*). Notice that the soft acoustic guitar accompaniment and vocal melody line heard at the beginning gradually build to a powerful rock ballad, adding a solid drumbeat, distorted rock guitars, and culminating in a rock-style electric guitar solo. Gone is the pedal steel break typical of country ballads. The way that this song builds is reminiscent of Led Zeppelin's classic "Stairway to Heaven." "Bible Belt" is a straight-ahead rock song with little country influence. Also noteworthy are the rock bass line, driving drumbeat, and shouting vocal style, with its bluesy inflection, evident throughout this song. The instrumental solos also reveal significant rock influence. The pedal steel characteristic of country music is replaced by an electric slide guitar in the style of Duane Allman, followed by a honky-tonk piano solo in the style of Jerry Lee Lewis. The driving blues-oriented rock style of "Leave My Girl Alone" and "Blue Collar Man" (both from *T-r-o-u-b-l-e*) share more in common with the music of Eric Clapton and Led Zeppelin than with George Strait or Ricky Skaggs. The guitar timbre and performance style incorporated in these songs are derived completely from rock and roll. Notice also that the harmonic structure of "Leave My Girl Alone" is that of the 12-bar blues. "Blue Collar Man" (cowritten by Tritt and Lynyrd Skynyrd guitarist Gary Rossington) is a 16-bar blues that simply repeats the first four measures of a basic 12-bar blues progression. Recall the similar extension incorporated by the Rolling Stones in "19th Nervous Breakdown" (see Chapter 7).

Shania Twain's landmark recording *Come On Over* (1997)—the title itself a double entendre reference to the musical crossover—contains further evidence that rock music's influence on the new generation of country artists was not short term. The opening synthesized horn riff, followed by a Madonna-esque spoken cue ("Let's go, girls . . .") and distorted rock guitar tracks, sets the tone for the album. "Love Gets Me Every Time" initiates a recurrent alternation between, in addition to integration of, rock and country elements. Listen to the brief one-measure rock guitar tremolo, followed by three measures of a rock riff, then one measure of country fiddle. The verse structure combines the rock guitar riff with the fiddle part, adding a pedal steel and vocal inflections (not to mention lyric choice, e.g., "gol darn") to shift toward the country side of the stylistic scale. "From This Moment On" shares more in common with the rock ballads of Journey and R&B crossovers of Celine Dion and Luther Vandross than with its country ancestor, right down to the rock guitar solo accompanied by a repeated 16th-note synthesizer pattern. The title track provides an interesting integration of the accordion-dominated zydeco music of New Orleans and Jamaican reggae, along with the typical country and rock elements.

Like Tritt's "Put Some Drive in Your Country," Shania Twain includes her own anthem explicitly touting the musical integration of rock and country: "Rock This Country." Opening with straight-ahead rock guitar and a powerful quadruple meter rock drum foundation, the stylistic alternation is evident in the recurring chorus section, presenting a musical dialogue between the rock guitar and fiddle, alternating every two measures. An element of consistency is maintained by the continuing rock drumbeat, emphasizing the backbeat. With this recording, there was certainly no doubt that Twain had, in fact, "come over" to rock and roll.

In summary, there are both commonalities and significant differences between the C&W and country music of the 1990s. As in C&W, the melody and lyrics (frequently love-oriented) retain their position of primary importance. The nasal quality, falsetto, and emotive cracks in the voice often are incorporated into more recent country, though yodeling has been used less frequently. However, later country music often juxtaposes a shouting style of vocals reminiscent of R&B and mainstream rock with traditional country vocal

techniques. Many of the more traditional-sounding country songs use instrumentation quite similar to that of C&W, though drums are almost always present in these later recordings. The pedal steel and fiddle provide a strong link with the country past. However, many of the rock-influenced country songs dispense with the pedal steel in favor of an electric slide guitar. Wearing a metal or glass cylinder on one finger of the left hand (for a right-handed performer), the guitar player slides the cylinder up and down the neck in lieu of pressing the strings into the fingerboard, creating a glissando (sliding pitch) effect. This style of playing was pioneered by early blues guitarist Robert Johnson, mastered by Duane Allman and Dicky Betts of the Allman Brothers Band, and adopted by many other southern rock bands of the 1970s. Contrast the sound of the traditional pedal steel in Garth Brooks's "Two of a Kind, Workin' on a Full House" to the use of the rock-influenced slide guitar in "Thunder Rolls."

The rhythm section in later country music took on a much more prominent role. The drums often propelled the music forward, powerfully emphasizing the backbeat and, at times, introducing tightly synchronized, syncopated rhythms with the bass player. With the drummer providing a consistently solid beat, the bass player was no longer tied to the simple two-beat bass lines found in most C&W of the 1940s and 1950s. In their search for new musical ideas, many bass players gained musical inspiration from rock bass lines. The simple harmonies of C&W were emulated in many recent country songs. Frequently, however, the chord changes incorporated creative alterations and higher levels of chromaticism than those of its predecessor. Finally, it is worth noting that the general production quality of country music recordings increased significantly in the transitional period during the 1980s, rivaling the studio sound quality of major rock artists.

It seems that the role of musical influence has almost come full circle. As rock music emerged in the early 1950s, C&W exerted considerable influence on many of the artists as well as on the music itself. At various stages (rockabilly, southern rock, etc.), country revived its influence on this younger musical sibling. During the final decade of the 20th century, however, rock music exerted considerable musical influence on country music. Many musical characteristics of rock became an integral part of the new style of country.

Heavy Metal

KEY TERMS

hardcore
thrash metal
speed metal

death metal
nü metal

complex or asymmetrical
meters

Overview: "We're Not Gonna Take It Anymore"

Writing about heavy metal is like aiming at a moving target. Heavy metal (as a musical style) has certain quantifiable musical characteristics, just as jazz rock, R&B, disco, and other styles do. Yet, to many heavy metal fans (and some writers), *heavy metal* is a more subjective, relative term—one that is subject to change if a heavier form of metal comes along.

Broadly considered, heavy metal has been a rather static style—not dramatically changed from the mid-1970s to the late 1980s. What has changed over the years are the lyrics and the extramusical factors (e.g., image and theatrics). Beginning with Alice Cooper's shocking theatrics to metal's original antihero mentality, each band must be louder, grosser, more rebellious, and more shocking than its predecessors. With each step of this progression, the most recent groups become heavy metal (if the term is used qualitatively), and the "old-timers" slip into a much-derided "softer" category. Paradoxically, the changes are rarely in the music itself.

For most of the 1970s and 1980s, heavy metal was the hardest of the rock styles. It appealed primarily to those whose self-image was that of the angry, macho, antiestablishment rebel. The general profile of the heavy metal fan was that of a 13- to 18-year-old Hispanic or Anglo male, often from less affluent and turbulent family circumstances. (Of course, there are also a vast number of exceptions to the general profile.) It is often assumed that heavy metal consumers were disillusioned and angry and that the music helped them act out their frustration with society.

Certainly the lyrics were a big part of this angry rebellion. Violence, suicide, and the occult are not uncommon themes in heavy metal songs, but anger was not expressed only by the lyrics. Musical elements, such as extreme volume, distorted timbre, screaming vocals,

insistent, repetitive riffs, and screeching, high-speed solos, all seem to reinforce the disaffected youth who has decided that he is “not gonna take it anymore” (in the words of heavy metal band Twisted Sister).

In this chapter, we will trace the evolution of heavy metal from its late 1960s roots into the 1970s, first from the British groups and then from the American groups. We will then discuss three heavy metal bands from the 1980s that typify the style in that decade. Finally, we will see how heavy metal moved through the 1990s and combined with another anti-establishment style—rap—to create yet another blended style.

British Heavy Metal Evolves

From the British blues-based bands evolved a harder mainstream rock style. A developmental line can be drawn from groups such as the Rolling Stones, the Yardbirds, and the Who to mainstream groups such as Cream, Blind Faith, Traffic, and Faces. This hard rock mainstream continued through the 1970s and into the 1980s, but branching off from this mainstream was a style that was eventually called heavy metal. Musically, heavy metal began as an exaggeration of hard rock. If hard rock was loud, heavy metal was louder; if hard rock was simple and repetitive, heavy metal was more so; if hard rock singers shouted, heavy metal singers screamed. One of the prototypes of British heavy metal was Deep Purple (see Chapter 12). When Jon Lord and his colleagues were not creating works like the *Concerto for Group and Orchestra* and the *Gemini Suite*, the band was developing a harder style of mainstream rock that was an early form of heavy metal.

Led Zeppelin

The premier British heavy metal band of the 1970s was Led Zeppelin. In 1968, after the Yardbirds disbanded, guitarist Jimmy Page recruited Robert Plant (lead vocals and harmonica),



John Bonham (drums), and John Paul Jones (bass and keyboards) to form Led Zeppelin. Signed almost immediately by Atlantic Records, the band released their first album, *Led Zeppelin*, in 1969; it proved to be their least popular album, reaching “only” number 10 on the U.S. charts (their next eight albums ranked either number 1 or 2). Although Zeppelin would eventually place half a dozen singles in the U.S. charts, they never released a single in Great Britain.

Following several tours of the United States, Zeppelin released *Led Zeppelin II* (1969), their first number 1 album. A shortened version of “Whole

Led Zeppelin: John Paul Jones, Robert Plant, Jimmy Page, and John Bonham (Source: James Fortune/Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)

Lotta Love” became a Top 5 hit, and the band was firmly established. “Whole Lotta Love” (the album cut) gives a good idea of the heavy metal sound in its early years. There is an insistent eighth-note (duple) subdivision of each beat; a strong, low-range guitar riff repeats under each verse; the vocal is high pitched, bordering on the full shouting style. There is guitar distortion, and, if played properly, it is loud. A long break in the middle of the song is reminiscent of San Francisco-style electronic experimentation (much feedback and distortion over a continuous beat). A brief guitar solo leads to the return of the basic riff and vocal; a free tempo shouted vocal solo breaks the pattern briefly, but the vocal and riff return and lead to the final fade-out. “Whole Lotta Love” is hard rock—only harder. Another interesting song on this album is “What Is and What Should Never Be,” a song that alternates between sections of heavy metal and “softer” sections. “The Lemon Song,” a 12-bar blues, illustrates the continuing thread from old R&B through the blues-based British bands to early heavy metal.

Listening Guide: “Stairway to Heaven” (Led Zeppelin)

0:00–0:52	Introduction (16 bars)	Four four-bar phrases (aabb). First phrase played by solo 12-string guitar; recorders enter at second phrase.
0:53–1:45	Verse 1 (16 bars)	Same internal form as introduction (aabb). Vocal enters in first phrase; recorders added for second phrase.
1:46–2:13	Verse 2 (8 bars)	Shortened to two phrases (aa). First phrase includes vocal; second phrase is instrumental (recorders and guitar).
2:14–3:05	Verse 3 (16 bars + 2 bars)	Four four-bar phrases (ccaa) plus two-bar instrumental transition. Electric guitars added. First two phrases (cc) are new material (“ooh, it makes me wonder”); second two phrases (aa) taken from earlier verses (with slight variation in underlying harmonies).
3:06–3:55	Verse 4 (16 bars + 2 bars)	Similar to verse 3 (with new lyrics).
3:56–4:43	Verse 5 (16 bars + 2 bars)	Similar to verses 3 and 4 (with new lyrics). Significant change in timbre by adding strong drumbeat beginning at the third phrase.
4:44–5:33	Verse 6 (16 bars + 2 bars)	Similar to verse 5 (with slight melodic changes and new lyrics).
5:34–5:54	Transition	Fast strums on electric guitar set up the guitar solo (next section).
5:55–6:43	Instrumental Break (20 bars)	Guitar lead over two-bar riff.
6:44–7:44	Verse 7 (26 bars)	New vocal over the instrumental break’s two-bar riff. Features screaming vocal, distorted power chords, and driving drumbeat. Climax of the song in full heavy metal style. Vocal is out for last six bars; accompaniment slows to a stop in bar 26.
7:45–8:02	Coda	Vocal solo leads to final statement of the hook line (title); refers back to the ♭ section of verse 1.

Led Zeppelin III and *IV* continued Zeppelin's popularity. Ironically, their most famous song, "Stairway to Heaven" (from *IV*), was never released as a single. It is a classic of early 1970s hard rock–heavy metal. As the Listening Guide shows, the song begins quietly with 12-string guitar and recorders (flutelike woodwind instruments). It gradually builds to a climax in the seventh (final) verse. The coda is most effective: a simple a cappella vocal phrase that reiterates the hook line.

Zeppelin's preeminence continued through *Houses of the Holy* (1973), *Physical Graffiti* (1975), and *Presence* (1976). Page's fascination with the occult was well known. Some of Zeppelin's surrealistic lyrics led to interpretations ranging from Celtic mythology to druidic symbolism to pure satanism. There have been charges of backward satanic messages in some songs (e.g., "Stairway to Heaven").

Zeppelin's problems began in 1975, when a series of personal tragedies struck Robert Plant. Zeppelin's 1979 concert, their first live appearance in England since the mid-1970s, was panned by critics. The final blow was the death of drummer John Bonham in September 1980. However, the remaining three band members reunited several times in the 1980s, and Jimmy Page and Robert Plant collaborated on *No Quarter* (1994) and *Walking into Clarksdale* (1998). In 1997, a collection of Zeppelin's live BBC sessions reached number 12 and was certified platinum. In 1999, the recording industry announced that Zeppelin was only the third act in history to achieve four or more diamond-certified albums (10 million copies sold).

Black Sabbath and Ozzy Osbourne

Going deeper into the British heavy metal sound and the black magic image was Black Sabbath, a quartet from Birmingham, England. Formed in 1969, they released their first self-named album in 1970, which was a moderate success. Lead singer John "Ozzy" Osbourne's voice was distinctive: high pitched, screaming, sometimes on pitch. The lyrics centered on mystical references to the soul, fantasies, and insanity. There were the distorted, repetitive guitar riffs and steady duple subdivisions of the beat that were to characterize heavy metal. The vocal style and the musical ambiance seemed to project attitudes of anger, defiance, and aggression; where most earlier rock styles had been good-time, "rockin' and partyin'" music, this music seemed to be clenching its fists. Although Black Sabbath had no single hits, their albums sold well through the 1970s. Osbourne left the group in 1978 to become a major heavy metal solo act of the 1980s. He was replaced for three albums (1980 to 1983) by Ronnie James Dio.

Osbourne fared well commercially after his split from Black Sabbath. The antihero concept pioneered by the Rolling Stones (see Chapter 7) reached new levels with Osbourne; a glance at the cover of *Bark at the Moon* (1983) suggests how far we have "progressed" from the days of Presley or the Beach Boys. The song "Rock 'n' Roll Rebel" is a teenage anthem, but not in the same way as Dylan's "The Times They Are a-Changin'." Ozzy tells parents, "Do what you will to try and make me conform/But I'll make you wish you had never been born," whereas Dylan asked them to "please get out of the new one [road]/If you can't lend your hand."

The early British heavy metal of 1970 does not sound significantly different from that of 1987. Ken Tucker explains this:

Heavy metal . . . is the primary music of teenage rebellion and, almost by definition, something a listener outgrows. As such, it is also an ideal commercial proposition, for it bypasses such sticky items as an artist's changing ambitions or inevitably uneven output. In the world of heavy metal, a new set of teens is ever entering the marketplace, and with them arrives the latest set of outrageous stars, whose popularity lasts just about as long as its generation of teens. (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 486)



Bark at the Moon by Ozzy Osbourne (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./ Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

American Heavy Metal

As in England, some American mainstream bands of the late 1960s turned the power up a bit higher and drifted steadily into heavy metal. In 1968, Steppenwolf had a number 2 hit with “Born to Be Wild”; contained in the song’s lyrics was the phrase “heavy metal thunder,” which some believe is the source for the name of the musical genre. Also called *power rock*, American heavy metal seems to have developed simultaneously in California and Michigan with groups like Blue Cheer, Iron Butterfly, Steppenwolf, MC5, Grand Funk Railroad, and Alice Cooper.

Blue Cheer was a power trio from San Francisco that enjoyed moderate success from 1968 to 1970. Iron Butterfly, formed in 1966 by keyboardist Doug Ingle, moved from San Diego to Los Angeles, where they became the house band at the Whisky a Go-Go. The band is remembered primarily for its 17-minute “In-A-Gadda-Da-Vida,” released on an album by the same name in 1968. A powerful work, it features a series of solos organized around repetitive bass riffs, in line with the concept of the long instrumental improvisations being developed simultaneously by some of the San Francisco groups and British blues-based bands.

Steppenwolf, formed in Toronto by German-born John Kay, moved to Los Angeles and signed a contract with Dunhill Records. By today’s standards, Steppenwolf barely qualifies as heavy metal; they seem to be more of a mainstream hard rock band. They tended to be more sociopolitically oriented and less prone to ultraloud repetitive chords and riffs than the

purier heavy metal bands. By 1972, Steppenwolf's popularity had waned, and they disbanded. Kay reorganized the band in 1974, but they failed to regain their earlier appeal.

MC5 was an early heavy metal band from Detroit. Their initial album, *Kick Out the Jams* (1969), was a live album and contained some profanity, which caused repercussions with some record stores and eventually with their label, Elektra Records. Moving to Atlantic, MC5 released one more album before disbanding. Far more successful was Grand Funk Railroad, a power trio formed in the mid-1960s in Flint, Michigan. Able to play a strong mainstream rock style or move to a heavy metal style, Grand Funk released a series of eight Top 10 albums from 1970 to 1974. In the meantime, they produced nine Top 40 singles, including two number 1 hits: "We're an American Band" (1973) and "The Loco-Motion" (1974). (For a while—from 1973 to 1975—they dropped the "Railroad" from their name.)

As we have noted, 1970s American hard rock groups were usually not as hard as their British counterparts; similarly, the early American heavy metal groups were not as consistently heavy as the British heavy metal groups. Often, they would venture into a heavy metal style (e.g., Grand Funk's "Sin's a Good Man's Brother" on *Close to Home*), only to retreat to a more mainstream style for the majority of their repertoire.

Alice Cooper

As we mentioned, as each new heavy metal band managed to "out-heavy" its predecessors, each of those predecessors slowly receded to a comparatively "softer" category. With Alice Cooper, a new brand of heavy metal was initiated, one that added the element of shock, as though heavy metal were an active attempt to be as repulsive, disgusting, and perverse as possible. (Cooper predates the punk trend of the later 1970s.)

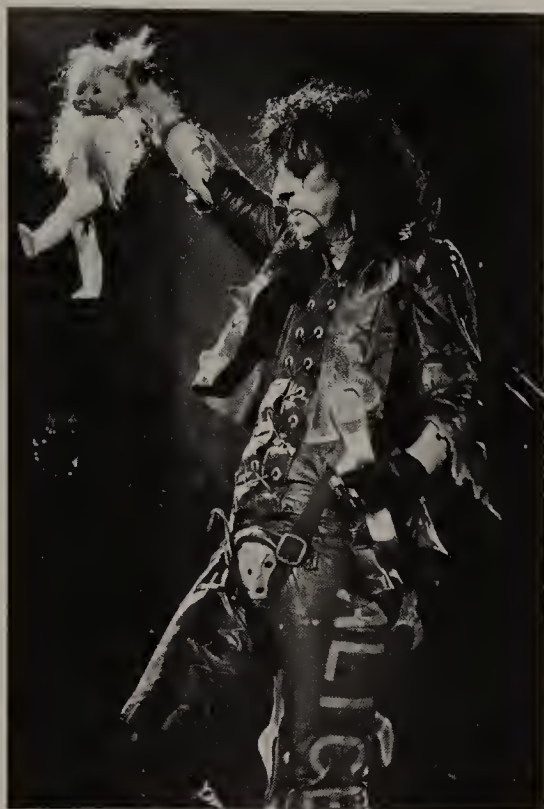
Alice Cooper is the name of the band as well as the stage name of its lead singer, Vincent Furnier. (Cooper took his stage name from the story of a 16th-century woman who was burned at the stake for witchcraft; he had dreamed that he was her reincarnation.) Born in Detroit in 1948, he eventually settled in Phoenix. While playing for a memorial birthday party for Lenny Bruce, Cooper was heard by Frank Zappa, who signed the band to a contract with his new label, Straight Records. Their first two albums, released in the late 1960s, were commercially unsuccessful.

Creating a highly theatrical stage act that consisted of tidbits of violence, the occult, sadomasochism, and animal abuse, Cooper began to achieve local notoriety. In 1969, while performing at a local Detroit ballroom, Cooper ended the evening's entertainment by throwing several live chickens out into the crowd; the crowd responded by ripping the chickens to shreds. The resulting publicity apparently convinced Cooper that if his music was getting him nowhere, perhaps shock could do it for him.

Cooper's first Warner Brothers album, *Love It to Death* (1971), made the Top 40 and yielded the number 21 hit, "Eighteen." This song, a typical teen frustration song, was not particularly heavy, but it did feature Cooper's shouting vocal style. *School's Out* (1972) really launched Cooper to national status as America's premier shock rock-heavy metal band. The album reached number 2, and the title song climbed to number 7. "School's Out" remains a good representation of early 1970s American heavy metal: repetitive guitar riffs, power chords, distorted guitar solo, shouted lyrics, and a driving beat (especially near the end). It is a forerunner of later heavy metal songs such as "School Daze" by AC/DC and similar works by Pink Floyd and others.

The peak year for Alice Cooper was 1973. *Billion Dollar Babies* became Cooper's first and only number 1 album, yielding three Top 40 singles. On the highly publicized album tour, Cooper sang the title song while abusing a toy doll—beating, kicking, stabbing, and throwing it, simulating intercourse with it, and decapitating it.

The major tour that promoted *Welcome to My Nightmare* (1975) was a full theatrical production, with Cooper in facial makeup, portraying a series of scenes from his "nightmare."



Alice Cooper (Photograph by Byron Samford)

(Source: Photograph by Byron Samford. Courtesy of San Antonio Light)

Subsequent albums were not as popular, and Cooper labored through the late 1970s and early 1980s with only moderate success. During a comeback tour in 1987, he pulled out all of his old tricks: representations of child abuse, abuse of women, sadomasochism, insanity, necrophilia, and murder by strangulation and impalement.

As Brock Helander notes (1982, 103), "Alice Cooper was one of the first rock groups consciously to dupe the unwitting media into promulgating a totally negative image for commercial gain." Cooper was capable of good mainstream rock and roll (e.g., "Under My Wheels"); his "Be My Lover" uncannily resembles the sound of Jagger and the Stones. His attempts at ballads ("Desperado" and "Only Women Bleed") suggest that his shouting vocal style must be preferred over his at-

tempts to really sing. In all likelihood, Cooper will be remembered for initiating the shock rock phenomenon, rather than for his music.

Kiss

With theatrics and makeup, Kiss (and Cooper, for that matter) drew a connection between heavy metal and the glitter rock trend that was more prominent in England. (American versions of glitter rock, however, were more macho in image and avoided the androgynous image of Bowie, for example.) Kiss's musical style was pure heavy metal—the heaviest of the American groups up to that time.



Rock group Kiss (Source: Chris Walter/Retna Ltd.)

Kiss was formed in 1972 by bassist Gene Simmons and established their reputation through their shock rock–heavy metal live performances. In fact, through 1984, only four of their 16 albums reached the Top 10; they have had only one Top 10 hit. However, as Brock Helander says (1982, 312), “Kiss . . . endeared themselves to legions of prepubescent fans . . . with gimmicks such as mock blood vomiting, fire breathing, explosions and fireworks, dry ice fogs, and rocket-firing guitars in performance.” As with Cooper, the success of Kiss resided more in the image and theatrics than in the music.

Sales began to slip in the early 1980s; thus, as a possible shot in the arm, the band unmasked for their 1983 album *Lick It Up*. They enjoyed something of a comeback in the mid-1980s. *Lick It Up* went gold; the follow-up album, *Animalize* (1984), went platinum. Kiss’s message for the mid-1980s was explicitly sexual (e.g., “Fits Like a Glove” from *Lick It Up* and “Hot Blood” from *Animalize*; see Chapter 13).

The original members reunited for a performance on MTV in 1996, which inspired a tour (the highest grossing concert tour of the year) and the release of *Psycho-circus* (number 3 in 1998). In 2003, Kiss’s *Symphony* found the band performing with orchestral accompaniment (much as Metallica had done in 1999). *Kissology Volume One (1974–1977)* was released in 2006 as the first of a series of DVD sets that includes concert footage, interviews, and never-before-seen clips.

Rush

Many critics agreed that heavy metal had all of the musical value of an electric razor. Loudness and grossness sold records to ever-susceptible teenagers but contributed little to the evolution of rock as a musical style. However, there were occasional groups that avoided the show biz theatrics and commercially inspired grossness and concentrated on the music. One of the earliest and most successful of these groups was Rush, a Canadian power trio. Rush’s first three albums were not big sellers, and it was not until their fourth album, *2112* (1976), that sales began to improve. For the balance of the 1970s, Rush attracted a relatively small but loyal following among those who liked the heavy metal style but were turned off by the gimmickry of the more popular bands.

In the 1980s, Rush found a bigger market. In the 1970s, the band had flirted with the darker side—especially on *Fly by Night* and *Caress of Steel*. Pure heavy metal songs, such as “Finding My Way” (*Rush*) and “Anthem” (*Fly by Night*), typified their earlier sound, but through the 1980s, Rush seemed to lessen the heavy part of their heavy metal style, and the band gradually found itself in the category of sophisticated hard rock (or possibly progressive rock). If one compares *Rush* (1974) with *Grace Under Pressure* (1984), one finds not only a remarkably different image, but also a strikingly different musical style. Although vestiges of heavy metal remain, much changed. Lead singer Geddy Lee’s voice dropped from his earlier adenoidal screaming to a more normal singing range; there is a heavy dose of synthesizers; the style adheres more closely to a strong mainstream hard rock style. Rush’s success continued into the 1990s and beyond.

The 1980s: Heavy Metal Continues

In the 1980s, heavy metal had a major impact. There would be a long list of successful heavy metal bands—far more than we can discuss here. We will, therefore, discuss three bands in more detail and then survey some of the others.

Guns N’ Roses

One of the most successful rock bands of the late 1980s, Guns N’ Roses was a quintet based in Los Angeles. Their first few releases did not fare well commercially. Their big breakthrough came in 1988 with the album *Appetite for Destruction*. It rose to the number 1

position and stayed there for five weeks. The album produced three Top 10 singles, including the number 1 “Sweet Child o’ Mine.” The success of the next album, *GN’R Lies*, was somewhat surprising because it was a reissue of their 1986 EP *Live Like a Suicide*, with four new tracks. Yet even this eight-song album sold sufficiently to achieve a number 2 ranking.

Lies is a good album to study because it represents the sound of Guns N’ Roses before and after their rise to stardom. There is a surprising variety of styles represented between the 1986 and 1988 material. The first two songs (both from 1986) are typical heavy metal, complete with screaming vocal, fast, pounding rhythm, steady duple subdivision of the beat, distorted power guitar accompaniment, and defiant lyrics. With the album’s third song, “Move to the City,” Guns N’ Roses moves back to a hard rock mainstream style. The difference between late 1980s hard rock and heavy metal can be a rather fine distinction, but in “Move to the City,” notice that lead singer Axl Rose lowers his voice range from the high scream of the first two songs. Also notice that the beat is no longer a steady duple subdivision (straight eighth notes), but a more rocking long-short pattern. This difference is also evident on the last of the 1986 songs, “Mama Kin.” Here the guitar accompaniment is almost Chuck Berry-like at times.

With the 1988 cuts, there is even more variety. The album’s single hit, “Patience,” begins with acoustic guitars and whistling. When the vocal begins, one is reminded of the opening verses of Led Zeppelin’s “Stairway to Heaven,” but unlike “Stairway,” “Patience” does not build to a powerful climax. Instead, it continues to develop in a style quite close to a typical singer-songwriter style of the 1970s (except perhaps for Rose’s more forceful vocal at the end).

“Used to Love Her” is the sort of song that can easily create controversy because of the lyrics (“Used to love her, but I had to kill her,” etc.). In some cases the musical style of such songs makes the lyric seem frighteningly serious, but in this Guns N’ Roses song, one gets the feeling that the band is just kidding. There is a gentle rockabilly tone that makes the song seem lighthearted. “You’re Crazy” continues with a rather gentle rocking beat. Here Rose varies from a heavy metal scream to a Zappalike vocal style (even the lyrics may remind one of Zappa). *Lies*’ last cut, “One in a Million,” also bears some kinship to the older singer-songwriter style but is beefed up by a much harder accompaniment.



Guns N’ Roses (Photograph by Neil Zlozower) (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Again, the lyrics are controversial; not only does Axl refer to “police and niggers,” but he complains that “immigrants and faggots” are spreading diseases and speaking unintelligible languages.

Overall, Guns N’ Roses presents an interesting and varied profile. They have been typed as heavy metal, but only some of their music actually falls into that category. They certainly are heavily derivative (not necessarily a put-down because all musical styles derive from one or more prior styles—including rock and roll itself). For example, a quick tour through *Lies* suggests images of singer-songwriters, Zappa, Led Zeppelin, and Chuck Berry. Guns N’ Roses drew considerable criticism not only because of some lyrics, but also because of the bad-boy behavior of Axl Rose. To the more common charges of being vulgar and sexist were added the charges of racism. The band’s antics (e.g., late and cancelled concerts, fistfights, etc.) were reminiscent of the old Rolling Stones bad-boy image.

Through the 1980s, Guns N’ Roses performed as a quintet. In addition to Rose, there was Duff McKagan (bass), Steven Adler (drums), and guitarists Izzy Stradlin (Jeffrey Isbell) and Slash (Saul Hudson). In the 1990s, there were fierce squabbles and personnel changes. Although Guns N’ Roses (with Axl Rose) continued into the new century, the commercial success of the band and the solo projects of its various members provided only a pale reflection of their popularity in the 1980s.

Van Halen

If one metal band came close to superstar status, it would be Van Halen. Eddie and Alex Van Halen were born in Holland, and their family emigrated to the United States in 1968. Trained in classical music, they soon turned to rock and roll. After establishing their reputation with hard rock and heavy metal bands in Southern California, they signed a recording contract with Warner Brothers records, with Eddie playing guitar, brother Alex on drums, Michael Anthony, bass, and David Lee Roth as lead singer. The band’s commercial and musical triumph came in late 1983 to early 1984 with *1984 (MCMLXXXIV)*, which rose to number 2 and yielded a monster hit, “Jump” (number 1 in 1984) and two other Top 20 singles. “Jump” was based on a catchy series of syncopated chords on synthesizer over a pounding, steady eighth-note bass. A harmonically interesting guitar solo and a virtuosic



Van Halen (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

synthesizer solo made "Jump" one of the most popular and musically valid songs to come out of heavy metal in the 1980s.

It was generally agreed that Eddie Van Halen had become one of the premier guitarists in rock (not just heavy metal), but it was Roth, with his sexy bad-boy image, who provided the commercial charisma for the group. However, by 1985, tensions between lead singer David Lee Roth and the Van Halens had reached the breaking point, and Roth announced that he was leaving the band. However, the replacement of Roth with singer Sammy Hagar did not slow down Van Halen. Both their 1986 album *5150* and their 1988 album *OU812* reached the number 1 position. Van Halen's success continued into the first half of the 1990s; however, after the replacement of Sammy Hagar by Gary Cherone in 1997, Van Halen's fortunes ebbed. In 2004, the band released *The Best of Both Worlds*, a compilation album that included three newly recorded songs, with Sammy Hagar as vocalist.

Many readers are no doubt crying, "But Van Halen isn't heavy metal!" Remember our moving target concept? Even though rock historians, such as Joel Whitburn, Ken Tucker, and Charles T. Brown, all describe Van Halen as a heavy metal band, today's heavy metal fan is likely to dismiss the group as having "gone commercial" or "softened up" because current heavy metal is so much heavier than it used to be.

Metallica

Many hard-core heavy metal fans view Metallica as the archetypal representative of the heavy metal style of the late 1980s and 1990s. The California-based band was formed by Lars Ulrich (drums) and James Hatfield (vocals) in 1981. Guitarist Kirk Hammett joined the band in 1982 and Jason Newsted (bass) in 1986. The group released three albums between 1984 and 1987 with some success; however, they did not crack the Top 10 until 1988's . . . *And Justice for All*. Rather unexpectedly, the album produced a number 4 single ("One"). Hard-core heavy metal bands did not place many singles on the charts in the 1980s because the typical heavy metal song was not considered appropriate for Top 40 airplay. Normally, for any heavy metal band to have success with a single, the song would need to be toned down several notches. Such is the case with "One," which is about as close to a ballad as Metallica normally comes. Even though the song is performed by a heavy metal band, it has few characteristics of the style. Nonetheless, the album as a whole is a good representation of Metallica's style. Musically, there are the requisite pounding, distorted, low guitar riffs, insistent heavy beat (and constant duple subdivision), growling vocals, and speed metal guitar solos. A few of the song titles suggest the rather gloomy tone of the album: "Blackened," "Harvester of Sorrow," "The Frayed Ends of Sanity," "To Live Is to Die," and "Dyer's Eve." Their lyrics reinforce this mood with frequent use of words such as the following:

<i>obscurity</i>	<i>callous</i>	<i>mutilation</i>
<i>death</i>	<i>opposition</i>	<i>darkest</i>
<i>dead</i>	<i>agitation</i>	<i>expiration</i>
<i>deadly</i>	<i>decay (decadence)</i>	<i>cancellation</i>
<i>evolution's end</i>	<i>frigid</i>	<i>smoldering</i>
<i>blistering</i>	<i>contradictions</i>	<i>darkening</i>
<i>terminate (termination)</i>	<i>chill</i>	<i>hypocrisy</i>
<i>kill (kills)</i>	<i>violation</i>	

This list was taken from one song (“Blackened”). Actually, it is one of the more positive songs on the album, concerning itself with the threatening of the environment. The tone of the lyrics (reinforced by the angry, driving music) pounds away at the impending doom of the planet and of humanity. Most of the album’s songs are about the miserable ways of society and how they overpower the helpless victim (presumably Metallica’s teenaged listeners).

Whether Metallica’s music is helpful or harmful to their angry, rebellious listeners is a serious question. In their defense, Metallica notes (in “Eye of the Beholder”) that “energy derives from both the plus and the negative.” If you listen to only one song on . . . *And Justice for All*, try “Dyer’s Eve.” It represents all of the characteristics of Metallica’s style of heavy metal.

Metallica’s popularity continued into the 1990s and beyond. *Load* (1996) reached the number 1 position and reflected some influence of grunge and other alternative styles. The band followed with *ReLoad* (number 1 in 1997), *Garage Inc.* (number 2 in 1998), and *St. Anger* (number 1 in 2003). They released a biographical film (DVD) called *Some Kind of Monster* in 2005 and a compilation video (*The Videos 1989–2004*) in 2006. The 1999 album *S&M* (number 2) is a live collaboration with the San Francisco Symphony.

Other Heavy Metal Bands

Besides Guns N’ Roses, Van Halen, and Metallica, there were many other successful heavy metal bands in the 1980s and 1990s, including Mötley Crüe, Twisted Sister, W.A.S.P., Quiet Riot, Queensrÿche, Ratt, Staind, and Slipknot (with their outrageous S&M-style wardrobe). England was home to several bands that were considered leaders in heavy metal: Iron Maiden, Judas Priest, Whitesnake, and Def Leppard. In addition, metal bands came from numerous other countries, for example, AC/DC, from Australia; Krokus, from Switzerland; and the Scorpions, from Germany.

Over the past few decades, a few real guitar virtuosos have emerged, including Eddie Van Halen, Randy Rhodes, Jimmy Page, and Steve Vai. Vai is an especially talented guitarist and a creative musician. His early experiences were with Frank Zappa, an influence that is evident in much of his later work. For example, listen to the highly creative (and humorously eccentric) *Flexible*, recorded in 1983 and released in 1988.

Perhaps the most impressive guitarist to come from the heavy metal style is Swedish guitarist Yngwie Malmsteen. A former lead guitarist with Alcatrazz, Malmsteen formed his own band called Rising Force. The band’s 1988 album managed to reach the number 40 position. Subsequent releases sold to a relatively small, in-the-know audience but did not enjoy the mass popularity necessary to reach the top chart positions.

With the success of heavy metal in the 1980s, many hard rock bands have become heavier in some of their songs, and the line between hard rock and heavy metal became very fuzzy, especially by the late 1980s. Often, a given band could be categorized either way. As always, precise, rigid definitions and categorizations are elusive when dealing with music.

Metal Fragments

By the mid-1980s, **hardcore** began to give way to a heavy metal–based spinoff referred to as **thrash metal**. Blending elements of 1970s heavy metal bands like Black Sabbath with the speed and intensity of hardcore, the postpunk rock audience (sometimes called *headbangers*) was given a rawer alternative to mainstream heavy metal. Elements of the thrash metal sound can be found in the 1970s recordings of Motörhead, Iron Maiden, Diamond Head, and AC/DC. Because most of these bands originated in England, this movement has sometimes been referred to as the new wave of British heavy metal. Credit for the first full-fledged thrash metal recording goes to Metallica.

Metallica's original guitarist, Dave Mustaine, created an even harder-driving version of thrash metal, forming Megadeth on his departure in 1985. **Speed metal**, as this derivative style was sometimes called, was incorporated by many recording artists of the period, including rapper Ice-T's *Body Count*. "Skin o' My Teeth," "Architecture of Aggression," and "High Speed Dirt" on *Countdown to Extinction* (1992) all serve as excellent examples of speed metal. Notice how the high-volume electric guitars played by Mustaine and Marty Friedman dominate the musical texture, typically subdividing the beat into four equal parts (quadruple subdivision). This insistent rhythm provides an accompanimental foundation that refuses to recede into the background, demanding the listener's constant attention as Mustaine's sinister vocals are heard above the energetic din. The driving rhythm of the guitars is solidly matched by Nick Menza's powerful drumming and completed on the low end by David Ellefson's electric bass. Compare these musical characteristics to the sound of *Body Count*'s eponymous recording, and note the similarities of the instrumental accompaniment supporting Ice-T's rapping.

Another derivative style, **death metal**, combined the tempo, volume, and heavy metal distortion of speed metal with graphic images of death and destruction. This substyle was exemplified in the music of Carcass, Cadaver, Napalm Death, and Slayer.

Nü Metal (Rap Metal)

As we shall see in Chapter 17, spoken rhymes are not the sole property of African American performers. One subgenre of rap was primarily performed by white rappers: the **nü metal** phenomenon, combining heavy metal and rap. A harbinger of this approach can be found in the music of Ice-T's project *Body Count* (1992), with its thrash metal accompaniment providing a foundation for the rapper's spoken social commentary.

Nü metal dripped with the angst that formed an inherent element of grunge but dispensed with subtlety. Whereas songwriters like Kurt Cobain often looked inside themselves for solutions to the world's problems and exhibited a high degree of tolerance, the lyrics of this hard-driving music were often loaded with misogyny, homophobia, and aggression. The aggression was often aimed at women—most often represented as sex objects. By contrast, other groups used the genre as an effective platform for political and social commentary.

In the latter camp was Rage Against the Machine. The group was formed in 1991 by Zack de la Rocha and Tom Morella, both children of social activists. The two connected with Brad Wilk (drums) and Tim Commerford (bass), producing a set of recordings that earned them a recording deal with Epic Records. The band refused to sign, however, until they were guaranteed complete creative control over their output, an astonishingly bold demand for new artists. After their debut album earned them a spot on the Lollapalooza tour, their next two albums—*Evil Empire* (1996) and *Battle of Los Angeles* (1999)—debuted at number 1. The band's fourth album, *Renegades* (2000), was a set of cover songs that did not garner as much attention. In 2002, following de la Rocha's departure, the instrumentalists of Rage merged with Soundgarden lead vocalist Chris Cornell (see Chapter 18) to form Audioslave. The new band released an eponymous CD (number 7) that, on its best tracks, combined the driving rhythms and urgency typical of Rage Against the Machine with the melodicism and vocal power of Cornell's former band. Their sophomore release, *Revelations* (2007), hit number 2, continuing the band's success.

Following the lead of Rage Against the Machine, Korn opened the door of mainstream music to nü metal. Though their initial self-titled album received relatively little attention, the band's incessant touring and growing fan base helped its follow-up, *Life Is Peachy* (1996), debut at number 3 on the album chart. With the release of *Follow the Leader* and *Issues* (both debuting at number 1 in 1998 and 1999, respectively), nü metal proved a powerful force that continued well into the new millennium.

Korn's influence also helped Limp Bizkit to attain superstardom. Joined in 1995 by turntable manipulator DJ Lethal (formerly with House of Pain), Limp Bizkit began its rise to prominence. The band was formed by rapper Fred Durst, who was, at the time, a tattoo artist in Jacksonville. When members of Korn visited his shop for tattoos, he took advantage of the situation and gave them his band's demo tape. Limp Bizkit's initial release, *Three Dollar Bill, Y'all\$* (number 22 in 1997), contained a rap metal cover of "Faith," a song written and originally recorded by George Michael (number 1 in 1987). Their second release, *Significant Other* (1999), replaced the Backstreet Boys' *Millennium* at the top of the charts, eventually selling over 7 million copies. The band's performance at Woodstock 1999 was cited by some as the event initiating the "mayhem and hooliganism that ultimately brought the three-day festival down in flames" (George-Warren and Romanowski 2001, 567). *Chocolate Starfish and the Hot Dog Flavored Water* (debuting at number 1 in 2000) was the fastest-selling rock recording of the year. In 2001, the release of *Results May Vary* (number 3) continued their commercial success.

After rap metal proved to be a popular genre with the record-buying public, other artists followed. Some of the more successful of these include Kid Rock, Staind, System of a Down, and Linkin Park.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP:

METER IN HEAVY METAL AND ALTERNATIVE ROCK

As you will recall from our discussion at the beginning of this chapter, the musical style of heavy metal is generally simple and repetitive. There are, however, certain early examples that are exceptions to this rule. As this musical style developed into the 1990s, interesting metrical structures became more commonplace.

Let us briefly review some music by early heavy metal pioneers Black Sabbath and Alice Cooper. With few exceptions, the songs recorded by these bands are in quadruple meter and almost always use a duple subdivision of the beat. Both of the Top 40 singles from Alice Cooper's trio of breakthrough albums, *Love It to Death* (1971), *Killer* (1971), and *School's Out* (1972), exemplify the simplicity of the metrical structure typical of this style. Listen to "I'm Eighteen" (number 21 in 1977) and "School's Out" (number 7 in 1972) to confirm the consistent meter throughout the song. Note also that these songs provide examples of the two basic types of subdivision, with the former illustrating duple subdivision and the latter illustrating triple subdivision. As further evidence, consider the complete set of tracks on *Killer*, focusing specifically on meter. "Under My Wheels," "Be My Lover," "You Drive Me Nervous," "Yeah, Yeah, Yeah," and the title track are all easily recognizable as quadruple meter with duple subdivision. Even the more theatrical tracks ("Desperado" and "Dead Babies") incorporate metrically consistent rhythms throughout their duration, although variety is provided through the use of musical texture and instrumentation. The single song on *Killer* in which the rhythmic structure does not remain consistent is "Halo of Flies," which uses quadruple meter throughout, but changes from duple to triple subdivision about 5 minutes into the song (at the entrance of strings, leading to a bass ostinato that emphasizes the new subdivision).

Black Sabbath has exerted an influence on almost every heavy metal band (and most so-called alternative bands). The driving rhythms and metrical regularity of their recordings, especially the early works, with Ozzy Osbourne as vocalist, laid the foundation for this style of rock. Listen to "Paranoid," "Iron Man," "Hand of Doom," "Electric Funeral," "Sweet Leaf," "Lord of This World," or "Supernaut." Any of these could serve as a prototypical example of heavy metal rock (even the ballads), with their use of quadruple meter and duple subdivision.

In the rather rare instances in which Black Sabbath songs are in triple meter (e.g., “Solitude”), again, the meter is consistent throughout. However, exceptions to this rule exist. For example, the brief introduction to “War Pigs” incorporates triple meter with triple subdivision but leads into a series of verses and choruses clearly exemplifying quadruple meter with duple subdivision.

As heavy metal music merged with elements of newer alternative trends (see Chapter 18) in the early 1990s, some groups began freely manipulating the solid metrical foundation on which the style had been built. Some of the most interesting of these experiments can be found on recordings by Soundgarden and Tool. These metrical manipulations come primarily in two varieties: uncommon meters (those other than duple, triple, or quadruple) and complex metrical structures resulting from frequently changing metrical groupings.

One means of infusing a sense of metrical interest into a song is to base the rhythmic structure on meters that are not divisible by two or three (e.g., 5, 7, 11, etc.). As has been pointed out previously, duple, triple, and especially quadruple meter are by far the most common meters in all rock styles, including mainstream rock and heavy metal. Some interesting examples of the use of uncommon meters include Soundgarden’s “My Wave” (five beats per measure; becomes clear after a brief intro prior to the lead vocal entrance) and Tool’s “Ticks & Leeches” (seven beats per measure when vocals enter) and “Lateralus” (five beats per measure when vocals enter). Another metrical device is to change the symmetrical subdivisions of a common meter into an asymmetrical pattern. For example, instead of the usual eight subdivisions in quadruple meter ($2 + 2 + 2 + 2$), the subdivisions could be arranged into a $3 + 3 + 2$ pattern. You can hear this pattern in the verses of Tool’s “Intolerance,” as becomes clear with the vocal entrance. In such cases, the meter is more accurately described as $3/8 + 3/8 + 2/8$, rather than the more traditional $4/4$. Such metric patterns are sometimes referred to as **complex** or **asymmetrical meters**. The pattern of $3 + 3 + 2$ found in “Intolerance” is one of the most commonly used complex patterns incorporated in the music of Tool. You can find a clearly audible occurrence of this pattern in “Disposition,” another track of *Lateralus*. We have seen the practice of changing meters before (remember examples by the Beatles, the Byrds, Chicago, and others), and it has been a common element of art music since the early 20th century.

Tool’s “Schism” provides an excellent, but relatively simple, example of this technique. Following a brief acoustic guitar intro, the meter combines a group of five eighth notes and a group of seven eighth notes, each preceded by a quick ascending arpeggio. Listen carefully to this section until you can hear the pattern. Then, notice that as the vocals sustain the word “communication” (approximately 1:20 into the piece), the metrical pattern shifts ever so slightly. At this point, the meter alternates a group of six eighth notes with the same group of seven eighth notes as before. The original meter returns when the vocals return with “I know the pieces fit. . . .”

Soundgarden’s “Mailman” provides another example of changing meters. Listen to the introduction and first verse of this song, and notice that there is a consistent sequence of the following metrical groupings: 8 subdivisions + 8 subdivisions + 7 subdivisions + 6 subdivisions, representing meters of $4/4$, $4/4$, $7/8$, and $3/4$. Yet another example of changing meter can be heard in Marilyn Manson’s “Get Your Gunn” (from *Portrait of an American Family*, 1994). This song alternates between sextuple groupings ($4 + 2$) in the verses and octuple groupings ($4 + 4$) in the chorus.

It can be enlightening to explore some of the more progressive forms of heavy metal and its various musical progeny. The creative manipulation of rhythmic structure is often an important reason why some songs sound fresh and interesting, while others seem mundane and boring.

Dance Music

KEY TERMS

diegetic music
nondiegetic music
techno
technodance music

house
electronica
samples

salsa
Tejano music
music piracy

Overview: The Selling of Rock—Changes in the 1980s and 1990s

The Music Video

In January 2004, the authors asked some 80 students in a class on the history of rock to name the five most important current rock music acts. The result was a list of 208 different bands; only four names received more than 10 votes (Dave Matthews Band, Radiohead, Outkast, and Pearl Jam). This admittedly unscientific survey suggests that the fragmentation of the 1970s continued unabated.

During the 1980s, there were several new developments that transformed the music industry. The first and most important of these was the music video. The recording industry and the radio industry have been partners in the promotion of rock music since the mid-1950s, but, generally, television was not a major factor in the development of rock. To be sure, Presley, Lewis, the Beatles, the Stones, and others appeared on Ed Sullivan's, Steve Allen's, and other variety shows, and shows like *American Bandstand*, *Hullabaloo*, *Malibu U.*, and *Shindig* promoted various bands, but the primary purveyor of rock and roll was radio.

With the advent of cable television in the late 1970s, there was an opportunity for a wide spectrum of specialized television formats, like all-news stations, all-weather stations, Christian-oriented stations, and all-movie stations. Why not an all-rock music station? Warner's Nickelodeon channel had experimented with a show called *Popclips*, which featured a *veejay* (video jockey) running music videos—video presentations of pop and rock

songs performed by the original artists. The idea of visual presentations of rock songs was not new (recall the Beatles' promotional film for "All You Need Is Love" and other examples from the period), but with the increasing popularity of videotape technology, the idea of transferring the Top 40 radio format to television was inevitable.

On August 1, 1981, an all-rock television channel debuted. Music Television—MTV—was allotted \$20 million in start-up costs. Just as record companies had long provided promotional discs to radio stations for airplay, so they now provided their rock videos to MTV at no cost. The promotional value to the record company and artist was tremendous. Using personable veejays, MTV copied the successful radio format of chatter and play, augmented by interviews, news about touring bands, and a variety of contests.

Artists and companies scrambled to create imaginative and technically innovative videos to go along with new releases. That the video often had little to do with the lyrics seemed to be only a minor concern. Video added a new weapon to the arsenal of the record companies in their continuing battle to promote artists and records. Now, if the video itself had enough appeal, it alone could propel a song to popularity. Some bands owed their success largely to the video format (e.g., Duran Duran).

Naturally, the MTV idea spread. Soon, WTBS in Atlanta, another cable station, produced *Night Tracks*—six hours of videos on weekend nights; the USA Network launched *Night Flight* in 1990; and even NBC ran their *Friday Night Videos*. In the early 1980s, rock videos, and MTV specifically, were the hottest new thing in rock. Other music-only cable stations (e.g., Country Music Television, the Nashville Network, Black Entertainment Television, the pay-per-view the Box, and VH-1, the sister channel launched by MTV in 1985 to appeal to an older audience) have challenged MTV's music video monopoly. Even the major networks, vying for the teen market, have programmed music video offerings into weekend late-night time slots. Music video channels have changed, chameleonlike, since their inception to reflect the most recent musical trends, giving each new musical direction and its associated artists an opportunity to be seen by a national audience. Some succeeded in taking advantage of this opportunity (Ice Cube, Nirvana, and Mariah Carey), while others faded away almost as fast as they appeared.

MTV had its detractors, though. One complaint was that the network emphasized white rock almost to the exclusion of black acts. This was undoubtedly the result of marketing studies that indicated that cable owners tended to be mostly middle- to upper-class urban whites. However, when Michael Jackson became a superstar, appealing to almost every demographic segment of the population, MTV yielded to the pressures of the marketplace and belatedly ran not only Jackson's videos but videos by other black artists as well. In fact, by the mid-1990s, as rap merged into the musical mainstream (see Chapter 17), black artists rose to a position of prominence on MTV.

Another criticism of MTV (and music videos in general) had to do with the frequent emphasis on sex and violence. A study by Barry L. Sherman and Joseph R. Dominick (1986), titled "Violence and Sex in Music Videos: TV and Rock and Roll," was published in the *Journal of Communication*. Their study noted that about 56.6 percent of the rock videos contained examples of violent acts; they also reported that about 75.9 percent included representations of sexual activities. This raises the question of whether the industry's new emphasis on music videos was actually affecting the content of rock music—after all, the television and movie industries discovered many years ago that sex and violence sell.

Yet another problem was that the *image* of rock artists had become as important—sometimes more important—than their music. During the late 1980s, for example, the pop charts were often dominated by pretty faces and well-shaped bodies, rather than innovative musical talents. Compare the sound of Paula Abdul and Janet Jackson (examples of the former) to recordings by Aretha Franklin and Luther Vandross (examples of the latter). The culmination of this "image over substance" tendency was realized late in 1989 with revelations

concerning Milli Vanilli. The band's album *Girl You Know It's True* won the Grammy Award for Best New Artist. As it turned out, the song was not sung by the "singers," Rob Pilatus (an out-of-work dancer and model) and Fabrice Morvan (a gymnast), but by Charles Shaw, a U.S. Army veteran. A producer in Munich, Frankie Farian, had paid Pilatus and Morvan \$4,000 each, plus royalties, to lip-synch to Shaw's vocals (Romanowski and George-Warren 1995). Once this deception came to light, an embarrassed Grammy committee rescinded the band's award. Lawsuits were filed against Arista Records and various concert promoters, resulting in a settlement that granted purchasers of the recording a rebate of up to \$3. Over 80,000 claims were filed in response.

The use of lip-synching and so-called ghost artists is not new and is certainly not unique to Milli Vanilli. Recall that Ringo Starr was replaced by a studio drummer on early Beatles recordings (e.g., "Love Me Do" and "P.S. I Love You"; see Chapter 6). Members of the Monkees sang but did not play any instruments on their early recordings, leaving this task to various studio musicians. The Monkees eventually learned to play instruments well enough to perform their songs in live concerts. More recent acts, such as Technotronics and C+C Music Factory, have hired models to lip-synch to vocals supplied by less attractive singers (DeCurtis and Henke 1992). The line between such enhancement and outright fraud became decidedly blurred during the 1990s.

Complicating matters, artists performing on tour were forced to compete with their finely crafted music videos, which were rapidly becoming, it seemed, a new musical form. Because of the physical impossibility of simultaneously performing the complex choreography, exaggerated theatrics, and vocal parts, many of these artists resorted to lip-synching at least portions of their live performances to meet the expectations of their video-viewing audience. Spontaneity, one of the cornerstones of early rock and roll, was thus cast aside in an effort to please an audience expecting a perfectly executed, visceral, multimedia experience.

During the mid-1980s, MTV began to introduce nonmusic programming (game shows, adult-oriented cartoons, *MTV News*, and political coverage), a trend that increased dramatically over the following decade such that, by the arrival of the new millennium, it was sometimes difficult to find music playing on MTV. Despite this ongoing change, MTV continued to play an important role in the dissemination of music and exerted a significant influence on the direction of musical evolution. *Yo! MTV Raps*, from the late 1980s, played an influential role in the popularization of rap music. Beginning in the early 1990s, MTV also sponsored a series of *Unplugged* concerts, in which various rock artists performed, in most cases, entirely on acoustic instruments. Acts included rock and roll mainstays like Eric Clapton, Paul McCartney, Sting, Bruce Springsteen, Rod Stewart, Bob Dylan, the Eagles, and Aerosmith as well as more recent artists such as Mariah Carey, Nirvana, Hootie and the Blowfish, Alice in Chains, Babyface, Alanis Morissette, Jay-Z, Shakira, and Staind. These performances allowed the audience to hear alternate versions of familiar songs, focusing on the craftsmanship evidenced by the artists' songwriting talent.

In the 1990s and into the 2000s, network television hosted a number of shows documenting the creation of musical groups, awarding recording contracts and concert tours to the winners. Some of these programs were picked up by VH-1 and MTV. The winning performers were often quite successful initially, though long-term commercial success proved elusive to most. The hit television show *American Idol* also capitalized on the trend, though with solo singers instead of bands, making season-long series out of searching the nation for talented young acts—a process in which the audience played an active role by voting for their favorite performers.

On March 24, 2000, *Making the Band* premiered on ABC. The band created in the process, O-Town, released an album that was certified platinum in 2001, which included the hit single "Liquid Dreams" (number 10). The WB Network responded with *Popstars*,

which documented the creation of a five-member girl group, Eden's Crush; their debut album titled, not surprisingly, *Popstars* contained the hit single "Get Over Yourself" (number 8). VH-1 also participated in this movement, introducing *Bands on the Run*, a more typical "battle of the bands" type of competition. For this show, each group was given a band van and the opportunity to tour 11 American cities, promoting and playing 13 shows over an eight-week period. Flickerstick, a Dallas rock quintet and winners of the competition, found themselves the subject of a bidding war among several major labels.

In some ways, this process of putting talented individuals together was nothing new. Examples date back to the girl groups of the 1960s and the formation of the Monkees for television. What was new, however, was the undeniable truth that there was serious money to be made out of making the process of artist selection, image transformation, and developing every aspect of the act into a public spectacle.

The Compact Disc

Whereas the 7-inch single was the primary medium of rock and roll in the 1950s, the 12-inch LP became the dominant medium in the 1960s. Throughout the 1970s, cassette tapes gained in popularity. At first, cassettes were quite unsatisfactory; sound quality was inferior, and there were frequent mechanical problems. However, the end of the 1970s brought solutions for these technical problems, as recently developed noise reduction technologies were introduced. Cassette tapes of the early 1980s produced a high-quality sound, and the players were every bit as sophisticated as the older reel-to-reel models. By 1983, roughly 50 percent of the total profits from recorded music (some \$3.78 billion) came from cassette sales; in 1984, cassette sales surpassed album sales for the first time in history (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986). The trend continued steadily until 1991, when the industry noted the first decline in cassette shipments, a decline that continued until, by the late 1990s, cassette tapes were no longer a viable format for music distribution.

The decline in cassette sales was related to the growing popularity of compact discs (CDs). These small discs could not only hold more music than any other previous recorded format, but produced a superior sound. By 1991, the industry was shipping over 333 million CDs (up more than 16 percent over 1990). Although this was still less than the number of cassettes shipped, the trend was clear. Industry representatives were understandably quite pleased with this development; CDs and tapes cost the same to manufacture, but the retail price for a CD normally ran between \$13 and \$17, whereas cassettes retailed for about \$9 to \$10. CD sales continued a rising trend until the year 2000, when other factors (see overview to Chapter 17) initiated a decline that could signal the eventual death knell for this format as well. Concerning LPs, by the early 1990s, they had practically disappeared from the scene. The decline of the LP was dramatic: from 295 million units shipped in 1981 to just under 5 million in 1991—a decline of over 98 percent. Meanwhile, the shipments of CDs rose from about 800,000 in 1983 to 333 million in 1991. Another audio format, digital audio tape (DAT) in a minicassette format, never took hold in the consumer market, though many studios adopted the new format for a relatively brief period of time preceding the introduction of the computer-based recording studio. In the four years from 1985 to 1988, recorded music sales rose from \$4.4 billion to \$6.2 billion, a trend we will see reversed dramatically slightly more than a decade later, as music sales dropped from \$13 billion in 1999 to \$9 billion in 2006.

Other developments in the 1980s included the small portable cassette players (often with built-in AM and FM bands). The Sony WalkmanTM and similar products became omnipresent. Now the music fanatic could hook the player onto a belt, slap on lightweight headphones, and have music almost anywhere, at any time. The larger boom boxes, or "ghetto blasters," were less favored because of their bulky size and weight. However, they had the advantage of having speakers and could be enjoyed by several listeners, whereas

the Walkman types required headphones for a single person. By the 1990s, the Discman™, the CD equivalent of the Walkman, had become equally popular. As of 2007, the most recent music playback technology is the MP3 player, a small, portable device that stores and plays thousands of songs in a digital format (most commonly MP3 or AAC files) as well as movies, and even books.

Rock Music Sound Tracks

Continuing a trend that began in the mid-1950s, the movie sound track has allowed both record companies and the motion picture industry to advertise their products via a highly profitable, mutually beneficial distribution system. The bicycle-riding montage to the accompaniment of “Raindrops Keep Fallin’ on My Head” (number 1 in 1969) inserted into *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid* is one of the first examples of a segment of film that was included solely for the purpose of marketing a song. Since then, hit singles have figured prominently in the filmmaking process. Between 1956 and 1958, sound track albums for *The King & I*, *Around the World in 80 Days*, *South Pacific*, and *Gigi* all reached the top of the pop album chart. From 1962 to 1963, Leonard Bernstein and Stephen Sondheim’s sound track from *West Side Story* held the number 1 position on the album chart for 54 weeks, setting a record that still stands.

In most of these cases, the music on the recordings was taken from scenes in the film when the entire cast broke out in song. This **diegetic music**—or source music—was assumed to be audible to all characters on the screen (Gorbman 1987). At other times, however, music is used for the purpose of setting a mood to highlight the drama of the action taking place. This **nondiegetic music**—or background music—is presumed not to be audible to the characters in the motion picture, but serves to enhance the psychological drama for the audience. Throughout film history, this latter role has been fulfilled typically by hiring a composer to create an appropriate musical score. In recent film releases, however, it has become commonplace to incorporate preexisting hit singles into the sound track (*American Graffiti*, 1973; *The Big Chill*, 1983; *Dirty Dancing*, 1987), matching the musical style and lyrics of this nondiegetic music to the cinematic narrative. It also is possible that music from the sound track will be heard by characters in the drama, as it emanates from a car radio, blares from the open doors of a nightclub, or plays softly from a bedside radio. Such music can serve to authenticate the era in which a film is set, to enhance the psychological drama of a scene, or, as in the movies *La Bamba* and *Great Balls of Fire*, to tell the story of a musical figure. Members of the audience who like the music are likely to purchase the sound track recording, and individuals who hear a sound track recording packed with hit singles may be influenced to attend the film—a win-win situation for both the record and film companies.

The Return of Dance Music

In the early days of rock, it was just assumed that every song was intended for dancing; whether it was “Blueberry Hill” or “Great Balls of Fire,” people were supposed to dance to rock and roll. This assumption reached a peak in the early 1960s with the dance craze (represented most dramatically by “The Twist”). However, as the 1960s progressed, there were styles that were meant for listening, not dancing. Certainly this was true of the folk music trend. As the music of the Beatles became more experimental—especially with changing meters—dancing became almost impossible. Most of the music of the jazz rock–fusion and art rock–progressive rock styles of the late 1960s and 1970s was not intended for dancing.

This is not to say that dancing went away. Motown provided a steady diet of music that emphasized dancing, and there was certainly plenty of other music to dance to in both the 1960s and 1970s. However, after the dance craze faded in the mid-1960s, it was not

until the mid-1970s that a style developed again specifically for the purpose of dancing. To trace the evolution of disco, we need to go to Philadelphia.

The Philadelphia Sound

Motown's power receded in the 1970s. Stevie Wonder and Diana Ross remained the company's greatest strengths, but as so many others left (e.g., Gladys Knight, the Jackson Five, the Four Tops, and the Miracles), Motown found it difficult to compete in an industry that varied from psychedelic soul to heavy metal to glitter rock. In the early 1970s, a new black-owned company appeared that gave Motown considerable competition. Producer-songwriters Kenneth Gamble and Leon Huff formed Philadelphia International Records and, for a while at least, appeared to have created another Motown. Gamble, Huff, and partner-to-be Thom Bell were experts at providing lush orchestrations for their black vocal groups. In 1972, they produced a major hit with "Back Stabbers," by a quintet from Canton, Ohio, known as the O'Jays, followed by their number 1 hit "Love Train" (1973).

The success of the so-called Philadelphia sound was at least partially due to the consistently strong backing of a group of studio musicians known as MFSB (Mother, Father, Sister, Brother). In addition to providing the recognizable backing for most of Philadelphia International's vocal acts, MFSB had a major hit of their own with "TSOP (The Sound of Philadelphia)"; it moved to number 1 in 1974 and became the theme song for the popular black-oriented, music-and-dance television show *Soul Train*.

By 1975, Philadelphia International (PI) was grossing over \$25 million per year and was second only to Motown among black-owned record companies. However, the young company soon encountered rough waters. Gamble and Huff were indicted on payola charges (Huff was eventually cleared, and Gamble was assessed a \$2,500 fine). Gamble's personal problems, combined with desertions by key staff members and some artists, greatly reduced PI's dreams of Motownlike success. However, the style of Gamble and Huff's music is often cited as a precursor of one of the 1970s most popular trends: disco.

Disco

The term *disco* was originally a shortened form of the word *discotheque*—a type of dance hall that had begun in France in the early 1960s. Cabaret owners found it far more economical to hire one disc jockey to spin records than to hire a live band; also, a variety of music could be played, some of which was bound to please every customer's tastes. During the 1960s, the discotheque concept was adopted in the United States, at first in the form of "underground" clubs. Soon, discotheques catering to all segments of society were flourishing around the country. With the coming of the San Francisco-style concert halls, with their live bands, discos faded out somewhat in the late 1960s and very early 1970s. Soon, however, they reemerged, featuring music that was specifically designed for dancing—a style that became known, naturally enough, as disco music.

Disc jockeys in 1970s discos were armed with two turntables so that they could move smoothly from record to record without stopping the beat, which was accompanied by pulsing colored lights and flashing strobe lights. The disco music was formatted into 12-inch discs, with one song per side. In the early 1970s, discos played pop and rock music, but they increasingly leaned toward the sound of Philadelphia International and similar styles. The music of the O'Jays, the Spinners, the Stylistics, the Temptations, Stevie Wonder, and Marvin Gaye was the typical fare of the early 1970s disco.

By early 1974, several artists released records specifically designed for the new disco scene. The Hues Corporation's "Rock the Boat" and George McCrae's "Rock Your Baby" both reached number 1 in 1974. "Rock Your Baby" was written and produced by two engineers at TK Studios in Hialeah, Florida: Harry Wayne Casey and Richard Finch. Soon

forming their own nine-member band, Casey and Finch released more disco songs under the name KC and the Sunshine Band. They scored four number 1 hits from 1975 to 1977. KC's music featured a simple but insistent rhythm track that never varied from the first measure to the last. The vocal line typically consisted of short unison phrases, more in the nature of repeating patterns than a true melody in the traditional sense. Lyrics were simple and repetitive to the point of absurdity (e.g., "Wrap Your Arms Around Me" repeats the title 29 times in its 3 minutes and 47 seconds—or once every 7 seconds). A horn line was also simple and repetitive and was used to punctuate the vocal line. All was subservient to the rhythm (a solid four beats per bar).

In 1975, the disco style exploded on the national scene. Led by Studio 54 in New York City, discotheques opened everywhere—either glitzy new constructions or rejuvenated old clubs, barns, or ballrooms. Some reports estimate that there were 10,000 discos in North America at the height of the disco craze, with some 200 to 300 in New York City alone.

One of the biggest disco hits of 1975 was "The Hustle" by Van McCoy. With its gentle sound, infectious beat, flute lead, and attractive string countermelody, "The Hustle" was a cut above the average disco song. Hitting the number 1 spot in the summer of 1975, the song spawned variants such as the California hustle, the Latin hustle, the American hustle, the New York hustle, and the tango hustle (shades of the twist). After the success of KC, Shirley and Company, the Hues Corporation, George McCrae, and others, even pop artists, such as pianist Peter Nero, jazz flutist Herbie Mann, trumpeter Doc Severinsen, and pop orchestra leader Percy Faith, made disco recordings.

Donna Summer

The year 1976 saw the first impact of one of disco's premier artists, Donna Summer. Born LaDonna Gaines, Summer initially did not make much of an impact with her first hit, "Love to Love You Baby" (number 2 in early 1976), which featured Summer's breathy vocal enriched by her sexualized moaning and groaning. Originally a 4-minute song, "Love to Love You Baby" was increased to a nearly 17-minute version for disco play. Too long for the standard 7-inch single, it was released to the record stores on a 12-inch disc like the ones used by discotheque disc jockeys. The 12-inch single soon became a common medium for commercial disco releases.

With "Last Dance" (number 3 in 1978), Summer proved herself to be a solid American pop singer capable of more than breathy double entendres. A slow balladlike section builds



up to the disco beat. Once this style was established, Summer recorded a series of legitimate soft rock songs that were based on the familiar disco beat. One of her best, "MacArthur Park," became her first number 1 song; between 1976 and 1980, she released 10 Top 10 songs, including three that reached number 1.

Saturday Night Fever and the Bee Gees

In 1977, disco became an international rage. Perhaps the most influential factor was the extremely popular film *Saturday Night Fever*,

Donna Summer on stage in New York

(Source: Robin Platzer/Peter Gould/Image Makers/Keystone Features/Peter Gould)

starring John Travolta. The film is about a young working-class New York man who becomes a prizewinning disco dancer. The sound track album sold over 25 million copies, becoming the biggest-selling sound track album of all time to that date. It included songs by KC and the Sunshine Band, MFSB, and Yvonne Elliman. In addition, there was a disco setting by Walter Murphy of the first movement of Beethoven's Symphony no. 5. The number 1 song, "A Fifth of Beethoven," seemed to show that virtually any previously composed music could be "discofied" simply by borrowing the melody and harmony and setting it to a disco beat and bass line.

There is no doubt that the big winners from *Saturday Night Fever* were the Bee Gees, the three singing brothers Barry, Maurice, and Robin Gibb. The Gibbs were anything but newcomers to the scene in 1977. The Gibb brothers began singing together as children in Manchester, England, and then moved with their family to Australia, where they became teen pop sensations. First hitting the U.S. charts in 1967 with "New York Mining Disaster 1941," they produced a series of hits through 1969. The trio almost dissolved at the turn of the decade but soon reunited to produce the number 3 song "Lonely Days" and their first number 1 song, "How Do You Mend a Broken Heart?"

The years 1973 and 1974 were difficult ones for the Bee Gees; they had no hit singles for the first time since 1967, and their albums fared poorly. Just as it appeared that they would fade, as so many others had before them, the new disco style offered salvation. The 1975 album *Main Course* hit the Top 20 and contained the number 1 song "Jive Talkin'."

It was *Saturday Night Fever*, though, that turned the Bee Gees into a household name. Most of the film's music was written by the brothers; they sang six songs on the double album, three of which became number 1 songs in 1977 to 1978 ("How Deep Is Your Love?," "Stayin' Alive," and "Night Fever"). They followed with three more number 1 songs in 1978 to 1979 and produced two more number 1 albums. However, as the disco mania faded in the early 1980s, so did the Bee Gees, who had become typed as a disco act. In the 1990s, the group enjoyed a renaissance, primarily in the United Kingdom and Germany.

Among the other groups that found success in the late 1970s disco surge were Kool and the Gang, the Village People, Tavares, and Chic. By 1980, disco had been adopted by

jet-set, upper-class society and thus became the target of intense ridicule by the rock community. After all, there had been disco songs by Ethel Merman, the Boston Pops Orchestra, and Barbra Streisand; there was even a Mickey Mouse disco album. It seemed as though everyone had a disco song or album—even Rod Stewart and Elton John. Although one could still go to affluent metropolitan clubs and hear a steady diet of 1980s-style synthesizer-oriented disco (called *technodance*), the basic style died an unmarked death around 1980. In the rock establishment, disco became an even more reviled and derided style than soft rock. Nevertheless, in the period from 1975 to 1980, it was an extremely potent force in the music industry.

The Bee Gees (Source: Getty Images Inc. – Hulton Archive Photos)



Motown Keeps Dancing

Michael Jackson

Occasionally we hear of “bubble babies”: babies who must stay in an enclosed, sterile environment to grow. Michael Jackson’s “bubble” was show biz—the stage. Growing up in his insulated world of theaters, studios, microphones, and lights, Michael never learned “the streets” that so many other black performers knew. The Apollo Theater, and the Motown and Epic studios—these were his elementary, middle, and high schools. In an industry of ultraworldly people, Michael is a study in almost incredible naivete. Jackson’s stage image was just the opposite: He appeared to be the singing, dancing, jiving extrovert who was the ultimate example of black funk.

Michael Joe Jackson was born in Gary, Indiana, in 1958. The musical Jackson family was headed by Joe Jackson, who saw to it that his six sons and three daughters knew music. The three oldest boys—Jackie, Tito, and Jermaine—formed a high school group that soon expanded with the addition of younger brothers Marlon and Michael. After several auditions, the group finally impressed Berry Gordy, who later recalled that he liked their tight vocals and polished performance style.

The Jackson Five’s first three albums reached the Top 5 and yielded four consecutive number 1 hits and one number 2 hit, all in slightly over a year (1970). The next nine Motown albums (through 1976) were not quite as spectacular but nevertheless yielded 10 more Top 40 hits. The natural musicianship of Michael Jackson dominates these recordings. His prepubescent voice was unmistakable (and not easily duplicated by would-be copycat groups).

In 1976, all but Jermaine switched to the Columbia-affiliated Epic Records. The loss of the Jackson Five did not delight Gordy. Motown sued Columbia for \$20 million, but eventually settled for \$600,000 and rights to the group’s name. Thus, they became the Jacksons and added younger brother Randy and sisters LaToya and Maureen. Their four studio albums for Epic in the period from 1976 to 1980 sold unevenly.

Michael Jackson’s solo career has been fabulously successful, flamboyant, and controversial. His first important solo album had come in 1979. *Off the Wall*, produced by



The Jackson Five (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Quincy Jones, sold over 7 million copies and produced four Top 10 songs, including two number 1 hits. The album revealed Michael's versatility as he moved from fast dance-oriented songs to softer ballads. As big an album as *Off the Wall* was (it eventually peaked at number 3), Michael continued to work within the Jacksons. Their album, *Triumph* (1980), was reasonably successful, rising to number 10 by the end of the year.

Even as the Jacksons' promotional tour for *Triumph* ended, Michael and Quincy Jones began planning the follow-up album to *Off the Wall*. The resulting *Thriller* album was released in 1982. The first single hit from the album (reaching number 2 on the charts) was "The Girl Is Mine," which featured Jackson and Paul McCartney.

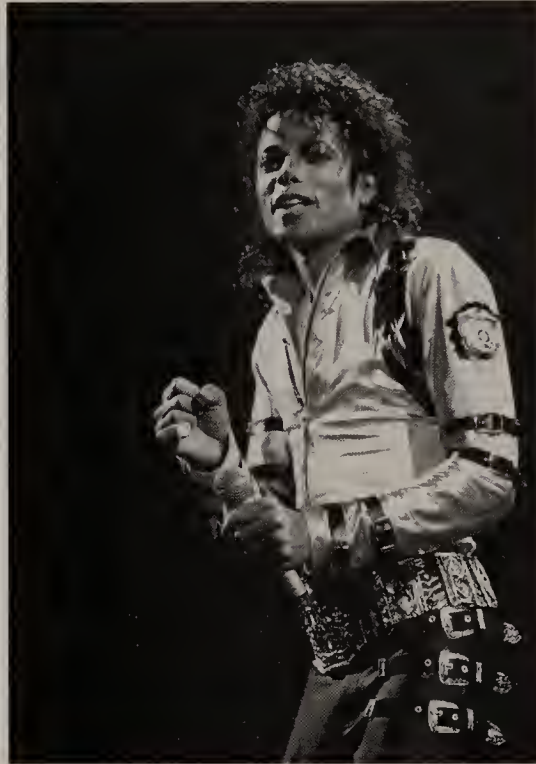
As 1983 began, a second song from *Thriller*, "Billie Jean," began moving up the charts, reaching number 1 by early March. Michael created the basic rhythm on a drum machine (it was "punched up" by a live drummer). The persistent bass line was added next, creating the interesting chug-chug sound of the song. Michael did the vocal line in one take. The lyrics were heavier than had been typical of previous Jackson songs; they concerned paternity charges resulting from an illicit love affair. The infectious beat, the menacing tone of the vocal and instrumental lines, and the effective video combined to make "Billie Jean" a whopping success.

Following "Billie Jean" up the charts was "Beat It," Michael's updating of the gang dance/rumble scenes from Bernstein's *West Side Story*. The bass and guitar riff from "Beat It" became instantly recognizable; the hard, macho vocal (macho for high-voiced Michael, at least) was appealing, as was the neo-*West Side Story* video. Adding to the unusually hard edge was Eddie Van Halen's guitar solo. By the time "Beat It" ended its three-week stay at number 1, it was becoming clear that *Thriller* was going to be a big album.

On May 16, 1983, NBC aired a two-hour salute to Motown's 25th anniversary. The show consisted primarily of old film clips, monologues, and updated performances by old Motown favorites. Although much of this nostalgia-oriented show looked backward, one exciting moment was utterly up to date and provided a glimpse of the future. After the Jacksons had run through some earlier hits, Michael took the stage as a solo act (sequined white glove and all). After a few remarks, he launched into "Billie Jean." Gracefully moving through his dance steps, heavily oriented to the break-dancing style, complete with the smooth, backward moonwalk, Michael clearly established himself in the nation's consciousness as a solo act, distinct from the old Jackson Five. His appeal cut across the demographic lines, reaching the young, their parents, male and female, black and white. He was a superstar.

By the end of 1983, three more *Thriller* singles had made the Top 10. Early in 1984, the title song made its appearance on the charts, eventually rising to number 4. The song's video was trendsetting; it was a minifilm directed by feature film director John Landis. With elaborate staging, sophisticated visual effects, state-of-the-art theatrical makeup, a miniplot, and lots of Jackson-style dancing, the "Thriller" video established an entire new level for music videos. The song itself had all of the hooks: a uniquely recognizable bass riff, a catchy beat (with strong backbeat), a strong vocal, superior production, and even the eerie voice of horror film star Vincent Price in a closing "rap." In more ways than one, it was a monster. The list of *Thriller's* staggering accomplishments recalls similar lists for Presley and the Beatles: It sold over 104 million copies (so far), held the number 1 position for 37 weeks (second only to the sound track album from *West Side Story*), and yielded seven Top 10 hits, including two at number 1. *The Making of Michael Jackson's "Thriller,"* an hour-long home videocassette, sold over 350,000 copies within six months of its release.

Michael returned to the studio to work with his family on their next album, 1984's *Victory*, followed by a much heralded tour. However, the concerts fell short of expectations. Ticket prices were high, and people wanted Michael—not the Jacksons. "Michaelmania"



Michael Jackson performing at Madison Square Garden (Source: Hollis/Retna Ltd.)

had run at fever pitch from late 1982 to 1984, but with no releases in 1985 or 1986, Michael's detractors—of whom there were many—happily pronounced him to be another certified fad. To their chagrin, Michael's new album, *Bad*, was released in 1987 and became another monster hit. It debuted at the number 1 position and stayed there for six weeks. Granted, these numbers pale in comparison to *Thriller*, but so does every other album in history.

Bad is a strong album, producing seven hit singles (including five number 1 hits—the most ever drawn from one album). Again produced by Quincy Jones, *Bad* shows Michael's continued strength in the style of "Beat It" and "Billy Jean." Indeed, most of the songs on *Bad* follow the general style of those earlier

hits. An interesting exception is "I Just Can't Stop Loving You," a soft rock ballad sung with female vocalist Siedah Garrett. It is a beautifully written song with a well-shaped melody and appropriate harmonies. Michael's and Siedah's voices are so well matched that one must pay very close attention to know who is singing at any given moment. It is also interesting to note a general similarity between the first two melodic phrases of this song and the opening phrases of "Home," the final song of the musical *The Wiz*. In the movie version of this musical, this powerful song was performed by none other than Michael's idol, Diana Ross.

The rumors of Michael Jackson's professional death proved to be greatly exaggerated. In 1991, he signed a \$1 billion multimedia contract with Sony. Although Michael's recordings fared moderately well at best through the 1990s, he remained a pop icon. He was married several times (including for two years to Lisa Marie Presley), endured several costly court battles, and established an admirable reputation as a philanthropist. Unfortunately, beginning in the 1990s and continuing into the new century, Michael has been repeatedly accused of inappropriate behavior with children—a charge he vehemently denies. The impact of these allegations, however, has been significant. Though his recordings continue to sell impressively—*Invincible* (2002) sold over 2 million copies—the commercial success of his later albums falls far short of his recordings made during the 1970s and 1980s.

The Commodores

Motown's other big success of the 1970s was the Commodores. The six members of this group met as students at Alabama's Tuskegee Institute; in 1971, they signed with Motown. Originally designed in the Motown tradition of the Temptations, Four Tops, and so on, the Commodores capitalized on the disco trend and made their impact as one of the more lasting of the disco groups. Their peak years were 1976 to 1981, during which time they enjoyed five Top 10 albums and nine Top 10 singles, including the number 1 hits "Three Times a Lady" (1978) and "Still" (1979). By 1982, lead singer Lionel Richie had departed to pursue his successful solo career (see Chapter 14). The Commodores eventually regrouped and had moderate success with *Commodores 13* in 1983 and *Nightshift* in 1985.

Other Music for Dancing

Among the new stars in the 1980s was a flamboyant new female singer named Cyndi Lauper. Affecting a punk–new wave look, she hit hard with her debut album *She's So Unusual* (number 4 in early 1984). In fact, Lauper's first album was the only debut album in history to yield four Top 5 singles. In spite of her punkish image, Lauper stayed in the gentler side of the rock mainstream. Her voice has an unusually high-pitched (at times almost squeaky) timbre, reminiscent of some older female stars (e.g., Teresa Brewer).

Janet Jackson was the youngest of the nine Jackson children and made her singing debut at the age of seven in Las Vegas with her famous brothers. Her first hit single came at the age of 20 ("What Have You Done for Me Lately"). She followed with numerous hit singles, including eight number 1 hits by the beginning of the new millennium. During that same period, Janet recorded five number 1 albums. With the release of *Damita Jo* in 2004, Jackson proved that her career was far from over.

Madonna

The most successful female star of the mid- to late-1980s was Madonna (born Madonna Louise Veronica Ciccone, in Detroit, in 1958). Having attained a limited reputation as a disco vocalist, she released her first album, *Madonna*, in 1983. The album made the Top 10 and included two Top 10 singles ("Borderline" and "Lucky Star"). These two, along with several single releases ("Everybody" and "Into the Groove"), were style setters in 1980s dance music—a synthesized update of 1970s disco. (We will have more to say about **techno**—or **technodance music**—later in this chapter.) Madonna's early dance hits have a gentle disco beat provided by a synthesized drumbeat and bass line. Bubbling synthesizers and simulated brass/wind interjections (and sometimes live backup vocals) provide timbral variety.

Without question, Madonna's life as a superstar began in late 1984 with the release of *Like a Virgin* (her first number 1 album and single). "Virgin" is a well-crafted song, sung convincingly. The technodance style is also evident in Madonna's next hit, "Material Girl." It was not until the release of "Crazy for You" that the real vocal potential of Madonna became apparent. Even the song's writers, John Bettis and Jon Lind, admitted they questioned the choice of Madonna for their ballad. Bettis says his response was, "Excuse me? This is for Madonna? Really? Can she sing a song like this?" (Bronson 1988, 606). The song hit number 1 in May 1985.



Once Madonna broke out of the dance music stereotype, her career was off and running. Her broader talents were explored in films such as *Desperately Seeking Susan*, *Shanghai Surprise*, *Who's That Girl?*, *Bloodhounds of Broadway*, and *Dick Tracy*. Her next number 1 song, "Live to Tell," reinforced her newfound reputation as a talented singer outside of the dance music style.

Madonna (Source: Jonas Ekstromer/AP Wide World Photos)

True Blue (1986) was Madonna's second consecutive number 1 album. It yielded three number 1 singles, including "Live to Tell," "Open Your Heart," and the controversial "Papa Don't Preach." "Papa" is an interesting combination of dance music and lyrics about a girl telling her father she is pregnant.

Madonna's next musical bombshell was the number 1 album *Like a Prayer* (1989). Again, Madonna incited controversy (more due to the video—which featured Catholic images, including the crucifixion and a gospel choir—than to the song). Although the song, as always, is danceable, Madonna and her backup singers drive to a relatively soulful climax. That soulful vocal style is also evident in "Express Yourself," another major hit from *Like a Prayer*.

No discussion of Madonna would be complete without a few remarks about her image. Modeling herself rather obviously after Marilyn Monroe, she unabashedly projected the female-as-sex-object stereotype. Her sexuality was tough—she lifted weights and was wiry and muscular, rather than fragile. Often raunchy and brazen, she seemed to relish every minute in the spotlight. Her revealing costumes, sexually suggestive videos, and self-advertised lifestyle left little doubt that she intended to be the female sex icon of the 1980s (and 1990s). Her flamboyant persona was enhanced even more by her brief but eventful marriage to actor Sean Penn (1985 to 1989).

In 1990, Madonna turned the new decade with *I'm Breathless*, an album of songs from, or inspired by, the movie *Dick Tracy*. Hits like "Justify My Love" and "Rescue Me" continue the technodance style under a mostly spoken lyric. Her appeal was primarily with young teen (and preteen) audiences, among whom she spawned many 12- and 13-year-old look-alikes. In the 1990s, she established a reputation as an actress, most notably for her title role in the movie *Evita*. In 1992, Madonna signed a seven-year, \$60 million deal with Time Warner guaranteeing release of all albums, films, and books under her own production company. Since the turn of the century, her albums have met with varied success. *Music* (number 1 in 2000) sold very well, but *American Life* (2003) was the lowest-selling album of her career. Her next studio album, *Confessions on a Dance Floor* (2005), was very successful and led to a tour in 2006 that grossed over \$260 million (one of the top grossing tours ever by a female artist).

Prince

One of the more enigmatic acts of the 1980s was Prince. Born Prince Rogers Nelson, Prince combined a number of fragments into his persona: shocking behavior, lots of soul-funk, a touch of glitter (Little Richard style), occasional rap, some folklike sociopolitical commentary, and even some hints of Michael Jackson. The one overt factor overriding all of these diverse internal elements was sex. Prince sold sex in all of its forms. His album *Dirty Mind* contained songs dealing with incest, oral sex, and group sex. Such subjects were nothing new to Prince, whose earlier albums contained songs like "Soft and Wet" and "I Wanna Be Your Lover" (with its line, "I want to come inside you").

Controversy (1981) contained the ultimate rap: the full text of the Lord's Prayer. Other attention grabbers were "Sexuality" and "Do Me Baby," the title of which speaks for itself—and that was only side 1. Side 2 offered "Private Joy," "Ronnie, Talk to Russia" (a quick little ditty urging arms control), "Annie Christian," and "Jack U Off" (likewise, no explanation required). *Controversy* (as an album and as a technique) worked. Prince's next album, *Prince **1999*** (1982), reached the Top 10, and the single "Little Red Corvette" broke through all radio markets to reach number 6.

Prince reached the top with the movie *Purple Rain* in 1984. It was a combination of fantasy and biography; the sound track album moved to number 1—selling over 13 million copies in its first year—and yielded four Top 10 songs, including two at number 1. With the singles undoubtedly promoting album sales among a wide audience, many first-time

Prince fans were probably surprised to hear a song like “Darling Nikki,” with its reference to masturbation. Prince accepted the 1984 Oscar for the score to *Purple Rain* and murmured his thanks to God.

Prince’s popularity continued throughout the decade with five more albums, including two that reached number 1: *Around the World in a Day* (1985) and *Batman* (1989). He also placed 16 songs in the Top 20, including four number 1 hits (“When Doves Cry,” “Let’s Go Crazy,” “Kiss,” and “Batdance”). In 1993, Prince announced that henceforth he would be known as the Artist Formerly Known as Prince, later shortened to the Artist. One year later, Warner Brothers dropped its distribution deal with Prince. Self-promotion and online distribution proved less effective and, as a result, singles and album sales for this artist were not impressive during the mid-1990s. However, with the release of *Musicology* in 2004, Prince became one of the top touring acts of the year, signaling a resurgence of interest in this talented yet enigmatic performer, a trend that was successfully continued with the release of *2131* (a recording and perfume) in 2007.

Dancing Through the 1990s and Beyond

Many artists who appeared during the 1980s continued their success into the 1990s and beyond: Madonna, Michael Jackson, Janet Jackson, and Whitney Houston. In addition, the 1990s revealed a number of artists that rivaled, and sometimes surpassed, the potential of these earlier stars. The rubric dance music is admittedly quite broad and encompasses a wide array of musical styles, but it continues to appeal to youth culture, and it remains an important function of music within contemporary society. We will focus on three categories of dance music, each of which contains a number of subcategories: pop dance music, rave, and Latin dance music. Pop dance music was driven by the marketing and promotional machines of the major record companies. The beginnings of rave dance music can be found in techno forms dating back to the work of Kraftwerk during the 1970s. Finally, the Latin invasion comprised a rising number of Latin American artists who attained remarkable commercial success in the United States. No longer part of the world music genre, this style of dance music found its way into the mainstream of American musical culture. (A fourth dance style—rap dance—will be discussed in Chapter 17.)

Pop Dance Music

The pop music machine just kept right on rolling into the new millennium, though generally declining record sales indicated that the public was beginning to tire of such packaged acts. The use of the term *pop* may be slightly misleading in this context because dance music of almost every description revealed significant R&B influence. Recall that during the 1940s and 1950s, many white artists and major labels recorded covers of R&B songs by African American artists, which were quite different (toned down and polished up) when compared to the original versions. During the 1990s, however, some white artists were quite accomplished at copying the style and delivery of authentic R&B, including the soulful interpolations, melismatic phrasings, and wide array of timbral variations for expressive purposes.

*NSYNC

Following in the footsteps of successful boy bands of the 1980s (New Edition, New Kids on the Block, Menudo, and the Backstreet Boys), *NSYNC became a sensation. The members of *NSYNC—Chris Kirkpatrick, Joey Fatone, Lance Bass, Justin Timberlake, and JC Chavez—all came to the group with previous entertainment experience, varying from touring with a national children’s choir to being regulars on Disney Channel’s *The New Mickey Mouse Club*. By 1995, *NSYNC was being handled by the same forces who had propelled

the Backstreet Boys to international success, Lou Pearlman and Johnny Wright. The band appeared at the same European concert venues where the Backstreet Boys had recently performed and were signed to RCA. The band's eponymous debut album received little attention until after their taped concert performance was aired on the Disney Channel. Shortly after the show, the album reached number 2 and yielded one Top 40 single, "I Want You Back" (number 13). Their seasonal album, *Home for Christmas*, reached number 7 and contained the hit single "(God Must Have Spent) A Little More Time on You" (number 8 in 1999). A cover version of this same song by the group Alabama (featuring *NSYNC) reached number 29 that same year.

In 1999, the group left RCA for Jive Records, a move about which the rival Backstreet Boys (Jive recording artists themselves) were not at all happy. With *NSYNC's following release, *No Strings Attached* (number 1 in 2000), there was no longer any doubt about which boy band reigned supreme. The almost inconceivable sales record set the previous year by the Backstreet Boys' *Millennium*, which sold 1.1 million copies during its first week, was more than doubled by the new *NSYNC recording, which sold an amazing 2.4 million copies in its first week. The album contained three Top 5 singles: "Bye Bye Bye" (number 4), "This I Promise You" (number 5), and "It's Gonna Be Me" (number 1). Even the release of the Backstreet Boys' *Black & Blue* could not put a damper on the commercial success of *NSYNC's release, which sold consistently well into 2001. Though the rival Backstreet Boys' album sold 1.6 million copies during its first week—surpassing the sales of their record-breaking *Millennium*—when compared to *NSYNC, their performance was second best. *NSYNC's success continued unabated with the release of *Celebrity* (number 1 in 2001). The success of Justin Timberlake's solo debut (*Justified*, 2002) tolled the death knell for the rest of the band. Timberlake and his former Mickey Mouse Club costar Christina Aguilera were among *Billboard's* Top 5 Artists of 2003, and both artists continued their success with more recent releases.

The Spice Girls

At the same time the boy bands were gaining popularity, a new batch of girl groups was on the horizon. Foremost among them was the Spice Girls, another manufactured group consisting of four female vocalists from Britain. Producers Bob and Chris Hebert ran an ad in the *Stage* magazine that read simply, "Wanted: Streetwise, outgoing, ambitious, and dedicated girls to play in a band." Four out of the five members were hired through this ad, although the band soon broke free of their original management. In 1995, they signed with Virgin Records. Each member of the group was given a nickname by the contributors to *Top of the Pops*, a British teen magazine, based on her personality, looks, or interests: Geri Halliwell became "Ginger Spice," Victoria Adams became "Posh Spice" (then later Victoria Beckham with her marriage to soccer great David Beckham), Melanie "Mel B" Brown became "Scary Spice," Melanie "Mel C" Chisholm became "Sporty Spice," and Emma Lee Bunton became "Baby Spice." Their first single, "Wannabe," debuted at number 1 in the United Kingdom, the first debut single by an all-female group to enter at the top of the British charts, and became a number 1 hit in the United States in 1997. *Spice*, the group's debut album, reached number 1 in the United Kingdom and was the first debut album ever to enter the American charts at number 1. The album contained three Top 10 hits: "Wannabe," "Say You'll Be There," and "2 Become 1."

The group's second album, *Spiceworld* (1997), was released simultaneously with the opening of their movie of the same name, featuring the single "Spice Up Your Life." Ginger Spice left the band in 1998 to pursue a solo career, though her debut recording, *Schizophonic*, was not as successful as her work with her Spice sisters. The Spice Girls, now a quartet, released *Forever* in 2000. Compared to their previous success, this recording was considered a commercial failure, and the group members disbursed to pursue solo projects.

Destiny's Child

Comparisons between Destiny's Child and the Supremes are inevitable, with lead vocalist Beyoncé Knowles being compared to Diana Ross (and enjoying the same level of individual attention). The four original members of the group were Knowles, Kelly Rowland, LeToya Luckett, and LaTavia Roberson. The original band (named Da Dolls) struggled for success, losing on the TV talent contest *Star Search* and having a recording contract canceled by Elektra after failing to produce an album. After Beyoncé's father took over their management, the group, now known as Destiny's Child, achieved their first success in 1997 with the hit single "No, No, No" (number 3). However, it was not until *The Writing's on the Wall* (number 6 in 1999) that they broke through with four Top 40 hits, including two number 1 singles: "Bills, Bills, Bills" and "Say My Name." Unfortunately, this success bred problems within the group. On turning 18 years of age in 1999, Roberson and Luckett informed Knowles's father that they were terminating their contract with him and seeking independent management. By early the next year, the pair was no longer part of Destiny's Child, a fact they claimed to have learned by seeing the video for "Say My Name," which included their replacements, Tenetria "Michelle" Williams and Farah Franklin. After less than half a year, Franklin was let go for reportedly missing performances. Destiny's Child—now a trio—recorded the song "Independent Women, Part 1," which was included on the sound track for *Charlie's Angels*, and it became a number 1 hit in 2000. Nominated for five Grammys, the group won two awards for "Say My Name." In 2001, the group continued its winning streak with *Survivor* (number 1), containing "Survivor" (number 1) and "Bootylicious" (number 7).

Beyoncé Knowles went on to establish a highly successful solo career. Shortly after costarring as the romantic lead in *Austin Powers in Goldmember* (2002), she released her first album, *Dangerously in Love* (number 1 in 2003), including guest appearances by Missy Elliott, Sean Paul, and Jay-Z. Her follow-up studio release, *B'Day* (2006), also reached the top of the *Billboard* charts, while a live album, *Beyoncé Live at Wembley* (2004), peaked at number 17.



Destiny's Child (Source: Timothy A. Clary/Agence France Presse/Getty Images)

Rave Dance Music

During the 1980s and 1990s, dance music was a primary form of entertainment, and artists recording this music constituted many of the most commercially successful performers of the period. With the emergence and eventual dominance of the synthesizer, MIDI sequencers, digital sampling, and loop-based composition, technology played an integral role in the creation of this music and its performance. Emerging directly from the disco era, techno blended the incessant beat of disco with the high energy and devil-may-care attitude of punk. Incorporating segments of previously recorded music, drumbeats, television chatter, and other so-called found sounds, the music was intentionally repetitive and noisy, providing a background for dancing and all-night partying. The style emerged in Detroit, led by DJ Derrick May, and passed to the United Kingdom, where associated underground psychedelic dance parties (raves) were very popular during the 1980s.

Contemporaneous with the emergence of techno was another genre of dance music known as **house**, supposedly named after the Warehouse Club in Chicago. It is possible to consider house music as the “style out of which most dance music since the mid-1980s has developed” (Fulford-Jones 2000, 758). In contrast to disco, to which it is also connected, house music was not a song-based form. Instead, many early house recordings consisted of a repetitive drum machine rhythm track in quadruple meter, an insistent bass drum pounding on every beat, and hi-hat cymbals emphasizing the offbeats. Bass lines and string parts (reminiscent of those typical of the disco era) were performed on synthesizers. Techno and house music spawned numerous and sometimes difficult to distinguish subgenres, including trip hop (Massive Attack, Tricky, and Portishead), dub (Lee “Scratch” Perry), **electronica** (Aphex Twin), and trance (Jam & Spoon and Sven Vath), an extremely repetitive style that suited its utilitarian purpose as music to stimulate movement at rave parties. In 1996, DJ Shadow’s trip hop album *Endtroducing* was among the first popular music recordings to be released that was constructed entirely out of **samples** (i.e., preexisting music).

Many rave/trip hop DJs maintained relative anonymity, working in dimly lit locations surrounded by cables interconnecting sound system, turntables, and often, a computer. As the genre became more popular in the early 1990s, however, major labels began to take an interest. Included in the first batch of signed artists were 808 State, the Orb, Messiah, and Moby. Notable among such DJs for shedding his anonymity, Moby began to incorporate a variety of styles into his albums. In addition to the predictable high-speed, repetitive tracks, *Everything Is Wrong* (1995) integrated elements of heavy metal (“All That I Need”) and blues-influenced punk (“What Love”). With *Play* (2000), Moby’s audience expanded significantly, and two Grammy nominations were evidence of growing critical acclaim. On this recording, Moby explored older styles of music, including traditional blues and gospel. Moby has continued to release a series of recordings, each of which has entered the Top 5 on the Top Electronic Albums chart, while performing less well on the general *Billboard* 200: *18* (2002), *Hotel* (2005), and *Go: The Very Best of Moby* (2006).

With the blinding pace at which computer technology is advancing from year to year, one can expect to see continuing development of these technology-related dance genres. DJs continue to synchronize the beats of their dance music but use laptop computers, instead of turntables. Other electronica groups from the late 1990s and early 2000s include Prodigy, Chemical Brothers, Daft Punk, Chicks on Speed, Basement Jaxx, and Stereo MCs. With a significant number of record labels devoted to the genre—for example, Tigerbeat6 (Oakland), Schematic (Miami), and Carpark (New York)—America continues to lead the way in the production of electronic dance music (Reynolds 2001).

The Latin Invasion

The 1990s brought a new round of Latin artists to the pop music scene. The level of success experienced by many of these performers suggested that Latin music no longer deserved to be considered part of that large (and dubiously named) category “world music.” Rather, the Latin influence had worked its way—at least temporarily—into the fabric of the American mainstream. Successful Latin artists of the late 1980s and 1990s included Ricky Martin, Selena, Jennifer Lopez, Christina Aguilera, Enrique Iglesias, and Marc Anthony. Their dance-oriented music was often based on Latin rhythms like the cumbia and **salsa**. There was often a focus on sensuality, and it was a music in which the male singers were allowed, if not expected, to be emotionally vulnerable. If there were any doubt about the musical infusion of Latin culture, final confirmation was provided by the phenomenal return of Carlos Santana with the success of *Supernatural* in 1999 (see Chapter 14).

Setting the pop music world stage for this Latin invasion was an accomplishment that required a potent superstar, someone to swarm the beach of the American popular music scene. Previous attempts had proven moderately successful but did not provide a foundation for a stylistic influx. Recall that Richie Valens recorded “La Bamba” (number 22 in 1959) as the B side for his hit single “Donna” (number 2 in 1958), and Julio Iglesias experienced a mild degree of success recording duets with well-established American performers: “To All the Girls I’ve Loved Before” with Willie Nelson (number 5 in 1984) and “All of You” with Diana Ross (number 19 in 1984). During the 1980s, the role was effectively carried out by Gloria Estefan and her band the Miami Sound Machine.

Gloria Estefan

Beginning as lead vocalist for a Latin American–flavored popular music group, the Miami Sound Machine, Gloria Estefan’s vocal and songwriting talents were highly marketable. Her father, bodyguard to the Cuban president, fled to Miami with his family in 1959, when Gloria was only two years old. The family left Cuba two years prior to the revolution placing Fidel Castro in the position of prime minister. In 1975, Gloria Fajardo (Estefan’s maiden name) and her cousin auditioned for the Miami Latin Boys, a local wedding band led by

keyboardist Emilio Estefan Jr. Renamed the Miami Sound Machine and performing a mixture of dance and salsa music, the group proved to be one of the most popular in Miami. Three years later, Gloria married Emilio, becoming Gloria Estefan.

The first recordings of the band were in Spanish, recorded on CBS’s Hispanic subsidiary. Initially popular in the Latino market, Miami Sound Machine eventually gained widespread popularity as they began recording songs in English. After scoring a popular dance hit in the European market with “Dr. Beat” in 1984, they released their first English-only album, *Primitive Love*, which included three Top 10 hits: “Conga,” “Bad Boy,” and the ballad “Words Get in the Way.”



Gloria Estefan and the Miami Sound Machine
(Source: Corbis/Bettmann)

By the release of their next album, *Let It Loose* (1987), Estefan's principal role in the group was confirmed, as the album was credited to Gloria Estefan and the Miami Sound Machine. Five Top 40 hits resulted from the release of this album, including her first number 1 single, "Anything for You."

Following the promotional tour for *Let It Loose*, Estefan began her career as a solo artist, releasing *Cuts Both Ways* in 1989. The two Top 10 singles resulting from her solo debut, "Don't Wanna Lose You" and "Here We Are," were both ballads, though the high-energy dance tune "Get on Your Feet" reached number 11. In the spring of 1990, Estefan sustained a serious injury when her tour bus was hit by a truck on an icy stretch of highway in Pennsylvania. Her follow-up album, *Into the Light* (1991), contained a song about the accident titled "Coming out of the Dark" (number 1). *Hold Me, Thrill Me, Kiss Me* (1994) contained the hit singles "Everlasting Love" and "Turn the Beat Around." The latter song was featured in *The Specialist*, a film starring Sylvester Stallone.

Maintaining a close connection to her cultural heritage, Estefan frequently recorded Spanish-language versions of her songs. The compact disc recording of *Cuts Both Ways* contains two such examples: "Si Voy a Perderte (Don't Wanna Lose You)" and "Oye Mi Canto (Hear My Voice)." She also released an all-Spanish solo album titled *Mi Tierra* (1993), featuring performances by an impressive list of Cuban musicians, including Tito Puente, Luis Enrique, and Arturo Sandoval.

Gloria Estefan opened the door for a wide variety of Latin artists, including Mellow Man Ace ("Mentiroso" in 1990), Kid Frost ("La Raza" in 1990), Mana (*Donde los Niños*), and many others. Confirmation of Latin music's successful invasion of the American charts came with the Bayside Boys Mix of "Macarena" by Los Del Rios, maintaining the number 1 position in 1996 for 14 weeks.

The official year of the Latin invasion can be identified as 1999. Though various forces were building prior to that time, the arrival of commercially successful recordings by Ricky Martin (*Ricky Martin*, number 1), Jennifer Lopez (*On the 6*, number 8), Enrique Iglesias (*Bailamos*), Marc Anthony (*Marc Anthony*), Shakira (*Donde Estan los Ladrones*), and Christina Aguilera (*Christina Aguilera*) confirmed the significance of this new sub-genre of rock.

Selena

In 1989, Selena Quintanilla became the first artist signed to EMI's recently established Latin label. Selena's early success came as lead singer for her group Selena y Los Dinos, including her older siblings Abraham (bass) and Suzette (drums). *Ven Conmigo*, the band's first recording, reached number 1 on *Billboard*'s regional Mexican chart in 1991 (Rosen 1996). Selena was not herself fluent in the Spanish language, but she became a superstar in the genre of **Tejano music**. After transitioning to solo act status, Selena released *Entre a Mi Mundo* and *Selena Live!*, which both reached the top of *Billboard*'s Mexican chart. In 1993, her live album earned the singer her first Grammy for Best Latin American Performance. Her next album, *Amor Prohibido* (1994), illustrated a wide variety of musical influences, including Tejano, R&B, and hip-hop. The album went platinum, and the title track won Selena her second Grammy.

Just as crossover success seemed inevitable, tragedy struck the young star. Concurrent with pursuing her musical career, Selena had opened two clothing boutiques. The singer's father had discovered paperwork proving that the manager of her shop in San Antonio, Yolanda Saldivar (founder and former president of Selena's fan club), was embezzling. On March 31, 1995, Selena went to a motel in Corpus Christi to discuss these charges with Saldivar. The conversation turned into an argument, and as she turned to depart, the singer was shot in the back. Selena staggered into the lobby and named Saldivar as the shooter, but died later that afternoon, just before her 24th birthday. (In the singer's honor, then

governor George W. Bush named April 16, the singer's birthday, "Selena Day.") *Dreaming of You* (1995) was released posthumously and entered the *Billboard* chart at number 1, the first Tejano record to ever reach the top of the chart.

Ricky Martin

Ricky Martin (born Enrique Martin Morales) began singing and acting at the age of six. In 1984, at the age of 12, Martin joined the Puerto Rican boy band Menudo. Five years later, the singer was forced to leave the group (Menudo members agreed that no one in the band's rotating lineup could be over 16 years old). Martin's initial major success in America came not as a singer, but as an actor in the popular soap opera *General Hospital* in 1994, followed by a brief period appearing in the Broadway version of *Les Misérables*. While earning a living primarily as an actor, the singer also released four Spanish-language albums, culminating with *Vuelve* (1998; number 1 on the Latin chart). The single "La Copa de la Vida (The Cup of Life)," from *Vuelve*, was used as the anthem of the 1998 World Cup competition. The song topped the singles chart in over 30 countries (but not in the United States), selling more than 11 million copies worldwide. As a result of this international success, "La Copa" became the biggest-selling single in the history of Columbia Records (George Warren and Romanowski 2001).

Martin performed at the 1999 Grammy Awards, where he himself was awarded a Grammy for Best Latin Pop Performance. *Ricky Martin* (number 1 in 1999) was the singer's first recording in English and contained the number 1 megahit "Livin' La Vida Loca," which became one of the best-selling singles since the beginning of *Billboard*'s Hot 100. In 2000, Martin released a follow-up album, *Sound Loaded* (number 4), resulting in only one hit single, "She Bangs" (number 12). He has continued to release albums that consistently top the Top Latin Albums chart but perform less impressively on the *Billboard* 200: *La Historia* (2001), *Almas del Silencio* (2003), *Life* (2005), and *Ricky Martin: MTV Unplugged* (2006).

The popularity of Latin-influenced music rose substantially during the 1990s and constituted an invasion in 1999. Time will determine the extent to which this interest is permanent in the taste of the American record-buying public. The trend continues at present. According to the Recording Industry Association of America (RIAA), during a period of slumping shipments within the music industry at large, sales of Latin music CDs rose 9 percent during 2001 (RIAA 2002). In 2002, the RIAA reported a decline of 8 percent in the sales of Latin music, citing the issue of **music piracy** as a primary factor in this slump. Music sales for the genre have varied dramatically during the intervening years, sometimes on the rise, sometimes on the decline.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: THE ANATOMY OF DISCO

It is indeed stating the obvious to say that the primary musical element in disco is the rhythm. In fact, the rhythmic element is almost the only common ingredient that ties together the multitude of disco songs from the 1975 to 1980 period. Tonal elements—melody and harmony—vary widely. The proof of this is that everything from Beethoven's Fifth Symphony to country songs to jazz tunes were adapted to the disco style simply by setting the respective tunes and harmonies over a disco beat. Texture varied also, from solo voice to three- and four-voice vocal harmonies. A tour through the work of Donna Summer reveals an interesting variety of textures, even within one song, such as "No More Tears (Enough Is Enough)." Forms also varied widely, from short, simple songs to longer, more complex forms.

If there is a secondary factor (behind rhythm), it is timbre. Most disco songs involve singer(s), drums, electric bass, rhythm guitar, strings, and sometimes brass. In fact, string lines consistently accompany the vast majority of disco songs, but these are not the lush string harmonies associated with pop or soft rock. Instead, the disco string line is usually fast moving, providing a busy counterline behind the vocal melody. Sometimes strings punctuate the texture in much the way brass and winds do in some other styles.

The overriding factor, though, is the rhythm. Because of the format of most discotheques, a wide variety of tempos was considered inappropriate. Using two turntables, the disc jockey simply juxtaposed the end of one song with the beginning of the next, providing a continuous flow of dance music. Wide variances in tempo would have destroyed that flow. Therefore, disco songs lie within a relatively narrow range of tempos. Also, to create the exciting, upbeat ambiance of the clubs, faster tempos were preferred.

Dancing is, of course, a physical activity, and disco music seems to connect in some mysterious way with our physical systems. It is difficult to listen to disco music and not feel the urge to move with the beat. There has been some speculation that the typical disco tempo is a multiple (double) of the characteristic human pulse rate (about 60 beats per minute). Such theories suggest that the most appealing disco tunes reinforce our body's "natural rhythm" by conforming to a tempo of about 120 beats per minute. For example, most of Donna Summer's disco songs range from 120 to 130 beats per minute (most often from about 124 to 130). Assuming that the pulse rate is likely to quicken somewhat while dancing, this conforms to the double pulse rate theory. However, there are also gentler disco songs. For example, most of the songs from *Saturday Night Fever* range from 108 to 114 beats per minute. In reality, there seem to be two distinct tempo groupings for disco: a quicker tempo in the 120 to 130 range, and a more laid-back tempo in the 108 to 114 range.

What of the rhythmic patterns themselves? There seem to be two basic elements common to most disco songs. First, all four beats are hit equally; in other words, the typical rock backbeat normally is missing. The quadruple meter is set by the dry thud of a bass drum. Second, there is a subdivision of each beat into four parts (notated as 16th notes), so the basic disco rhythm looks like the following:



The underlying subdivision of the beat is often played on hi-hat cymbals (with hard sticks) and reinforced by the rhythm guitar (often with a wah-wah pedal). If this were all there were to it, the disco beat would indeed be as simple and boring as its detractors claim. In fact, there is still room for considerable variance. The basic quadruple subdivision is consistently felt, but actual patterns vary. For example, some songs have a pattern that plays the first, third, and fourth subdivisions (skipping number two—although it is still *felt*):



In fact, the missing second subdivision may be present in another part of the texture (e.g., in the rhythm guitar or in the string or brass lines). Syncopated patterns can be devised that accent larger patterns (over two or four beats) but that are still dependent on the

quadruple subdivision. For example, “MacArthur Park” (Summer) includes the following patterns:

The notation shows six rhythmic patterns stacked vertically, each corresponding to a measure of a four-measure bar. The patterns are:

- brass (I)**: A single eighth note in the first measure, followed by a dotted quarter note in the second measure, and a half note in the third measure.
- brass (II)**: A quarter note in the first measure, followed by a dotted quarter note in the second measure, and a half note in the third measure.
- brass (III)**: A continuous eighth-note pattern across all four measures.
- strings (IV)**: A quarter note in the first measure, followed by a dotted quarter note in the second measure, and a half note in the third measure.
- synthesizer (V)**: A continuous eighth-note pattern across all four measures.
- basic subdivision (VI)**: A continuous eighth-note pattern across all four measures.

All of these patterns do not occur simultaneously, of course. As each one occurs, it reinforces the basic pattern being provided by percussion, bass, and guitar. The bass, in fact, often plays a *duple* subdivision of the beat, providing a level midway between the basic beat and the quadruple subdivision:

The notation shows three rhythmic patterns stacked vertically, each corresponding to a measure of a four-measure bar. The patterns are:

- bass drum: (level 1)**: A single eighth note in the first measure, followed by a dotted quarter note in the second measure, and a half note in the third measure.
- bass: (level 2)**: A quarter note in the first measure, followed by a dotted quarter note in the second measure, and a half note in the third measure.
- subdivision: (level 3)**: A continuous eighth-note pattern across all four measures.

None of these patterns is inherently disco. In fact, the brass pattern (brass III, above) is similar to one used by Blood, Sweat, and Tears in “Lucretia MacEvil,” which, of course, is not a disco tune. Taken all together, though, with the right instrumentation (timbres) and tempo, the aggregate sound is disco.

Listen to Donna Summer’s single version of “MacArthur Park” (see the Listening Guide). Try to hear the various rhythmic layers. The bass drum is providing the basic four equal beats (with a very slight backbeat on snare drum). What is the bass player doing? How about the rhythm guitar? Listen to the string and brass lines: Are they punching up the quadruple subdivision? You may begin to hear more than you thought was there!

Listening Guide: “MacArthur Park”¹ (Donna Summer)

0:00–0:03	Introduction (2 measures)	Brief intro played by strings; the meter here is very tricky: a bar of 3/4 followed by a bar of 3/8.
0:04–0:26	Verse 1 (A)	Voice enters (“spring was never waiting”), maintaining balladlike quality of the introduction; the rhythmic pulse is very subdued.
0:27–1:06	Chorus (B)	Chorus (“MacArthur’s Park is melting”) continues the style of the verse, with very subdued rhythmic component. Lyrics among the most enigmatic in rock history.

(continued)

1:07–1:13	Instrumental transition (C)	Disco beat enters, accompanied by Summer's "ah-ha" and the keyboard playing the "brass (II)" pattern ² referenced in the Musical Close-Up to this chapter.
1:14–1:42	Verse 2 (AA)	Second verse ("I recall the yellow cotton dress") consists of two repetitions of the A section but lasts only slightly longer than the first verse due to increased tempo. Note the entrance of the "strings (IV)" pattern at the end of each phrase.
1:43–2:23	Chorus (B)	Lyrics are identical and the melody very similar to earlier chorus, but disco accompaniment drastically changes the effect. Note that halfway through the chorus ("I don't think that I can take it") "brass (I)" pattern enters and remains until the final word of the chorus.
2:24–2:45	Instrumental break (C)	Combines all the various rhythmic patterns described in the Musical Close-Up, beginning with the "brass (II)" pattern played four times, modulating to different keys, then leading directly to the synthesizer solo, "synthesizer (V)," as the "brass II" pattern continues as accompaniment.
2:46–3:18	Chorus (B)	Similar to previous chorus with the disco beat, but Summer takes much more liberty with the melodic line.
3:19–3:33	extension of Chorus	The "brass (I)" pattern provides the foundation for this extension of the chorus, with Summer's high voice soaring above.
3:34–3:47	2nd Instrumental break (C)	Consists of alternation between "brass (II)" pattern and "synthesizer (V)" pattern.
3:48–3:55	Coda	Syncopated "brass (III)" pattern provides a rhythmically intense conclusion.
<p>Notes: 1. Single version.</p> <p>2. All rhythmic patterns referenced in this Listening Guide will use the same labels as those used in the Musical Close-Up.</p>		

Rap and Hip-Hop

KEY TERMS

MP3	gangsta rap
hip-hop	expressive deviations
masters of ceremony (MCs)	hocket

Overview: Technology, the Internet, and the Music Industry

We have seen how the explosion of electronic technology affected groups such as Emerson, Lake, and Palmer; Yes; Passport; Kraftwerk; and Triumvirat. This trend has continued unabated through the beginning of the 21st century. Not only did synthesizers become capable of doing more and more sophisticated operations, but tools such as samplers, sequencers, drum machines, and guitar and wind MIDI controllers made it possible to create complex multilayered compositions electronically. Often, one had to listen with a critical ear to discern acoustic performances from those generated electronically with the use of computer technology.

Perhaps the biggest single event occurred with the creation of the MIDI standard in 1983, a language that allowed electronic sound sources (synthesizers, for example) to interact with computers and/or other synthesizers. The MIDI revolution, along with more powerful, smaller, and user-friendly personal computers, had a tremendous impact on all styles of music. The biggest problem created by this trend was that no sooner had one invested time and money in one set of tools than newer models would hit the market that rendered previous hardware and software obsolete.

Terms such as *technodance* and *technorock* were applied in the 1980s to groups whose musical style was centered on electronically generated sounds. Typical of the technodance groups was New Order, a group from Manchester, England. If you wondered what happened to disco, listen to a bit of *Substance* (1987). Disco was back but transformed to the

timbres of synthesizers and drum machines. The repetitive accompaniment patterns and monotone vocal delivery may remind us of some new wave bands (like Devo) and some of the minimalists (like Brian Eno). The music may have been a bit monotonous, but that steady repetitiveness made it perfect for dancing.

Less dance-oriented but heavily electronic was the Cure, another British group. Their albums from the early 1980s made little impact in this country; however, they began to enjoy greater acceptance in the late 1980s. Their album *Disintegration* (number 2 in 1987) produced an attractive hit single, “Lovesong” (number 2), which was lighter on the electronics than the rest of the album. The Cure delivers rich and colorful walls of synthesized sound, reminiscent of Tangerine Dream, but with a stronger and more defined beat. Still, they rarely go all the way to a neo-disco beat and are, therefore, usually described as technorock, rather than technodance.

Depeche Mode’s style and popularity curve was similar to the Cure’s. Again, albums from the early 1980s sold rather poorly in the United States. However, beginning with the single “People Are People,” this British band began to receive more recognition. *Music for the Masses* (1987) made the Top 40; *Violator* (1990) reached the Top 10 and produced three Top 30 hits, including “Enjoy the Silence.” Like the Cure, Depeche Mode relied heavily on electronically generated and modified sounds over a clearly defined beat, which usually stopped short of the typical technodance beat. The result was a type of gentle mainstream rock—but heavy on electronics.

Another great technological leap was digital sampling, a process that involves the conversion of sound energy into a series of numbers representing the sound amplitude at discrete intervals of time. Transforming sound energy into a series of numbers in this manner allows the sound to be easily manipulated (e.g., played backward, speeded up, slowed down, combined with special effects, etc.) using the processing capabilities of a computer.

Prior to the arrival of digital sampling, musicians had attempted to recreate sounds of acoustic instruments by synthesizing the timbre on a variety of electronic keyboard instruments, with mixed success. Using digital sampling, however, the sound of acoustic instruments could simply be recorded digitally and then played back on a keyboard. Many recordings of the late 1980s and 1990s incorporated sampling to such an extent that a new song may be entirely based on the musical foundation of previous recordings. For example, M.C. Hammer’s hit single “U Can’t Touch This” (1990) is based on Rick James’s “Super Freak” (1981); his song “Pray” (also 1990) incorporates the rhythm track from Prince’s “When Doves Cry” (1984); and “Pumps and Bumps” (1994) uses samples from George Clinton’s “Atomic Dog” (1983). Other examples of this sampling technique may be heard in “Ice Ice Baby” by Vanilla Ice (bass line sampled from Queen and David Bowie’s “Under Pressure”), “That’s the Way Love Goes” by Janet Jackson (samples from James Brown’s “Papa Don’t Take No Mess”), “Slow Motion” by Color Me Badd (samples from “Spinning Wheel” by Blood, Sweat, and Tears), and “Wildside” by Marky Mark and the Funky Bunch (samples from Lou Reed’s “Walk on the Wild Side”). Some songs incorporate a multitude of samples from a variety of sources. Use of previously recorded music in this way initiated a serious legal debate concerning copyright infringement, as yet unresolved, that we will discuss shortly.

New Technologies and the Internet

The final years of the 20th century witnessed the death of the cassette tape as a viable medium for distributing commercial recordings. Dominance of the compact disc format and the arrival and eventual ubiquitous presence of the CD recorder sold with most new computer purchases sealed its fate. According to the Recording Industry of America’s yearend statistics, between the years 1998 and 1999, sales of cassette versions of commercial recordings dropped from 14.8 percent of the market to 8 percent, then slid to 4.9 percent the following

year, initiating a downward trend that continued until, in 2006, cassette sales accounted for less than 1 percent of the market. LPs have accounted for less than 1 percent of the market since the late 1990s. Another set of incompatible media formats, the DVD audio disc (DVD-A) and the Super Audio CD (SACD), provided higher-quality digital audio sound with the capability to reproduce music in surround sound, but neither format has yet succeeded in amassing significant market share.

The most significant technological innovation impacting the commercial music industry during the 1990s was the arrival of file-sharing capabilities via the Internet. Using this technology, brought into the mainstream by Napster and similar Web sites, users were able to download digitized music (typically in a compressed format called **MP3**) or share their own files with others around the world. In fact, *Spin* magazine declared that the number 1 album of 2001 was “Your Hard Drive” (2001, 73). Many idealistic musicians across the globe saw the Internet as a “great equalizer,” giving artists direct access to an audience without the need for an intervening record company. With the dramatic drop in the cost of digital audio workstations (a personal computer with sequencing and digital audio software), artists could produce near-studio-quality recordings at a fraction of the cost. In reality, however, the continuing need for marketing and distribution to succeed in the music business impeded the rise of all but a few of these hopefuls.

The response of the recording industry, similar to the reaction when the phonograph, radio airplay of music, and the CD recorder were introduced, was initially one of protectionism. The impact of free file sharing on the profit margins of major record companies resulted in a major backlash and eventual legal challenges. After a series of contentious confrontations, the record companies decided to buy their way out of the difficulty. BMG purchased Napster and Universal acquired MP3.com. For a brief period, this move proved fairly successful at limiting the amount of file sharing involving copyrighted commercial recordings, though other peer-to-peer software packages (e.g., Gnutella, Kazaa, and Morpheus) were still popular.

Some artists effectively used the new technology to introduce themselves to the world and enhance sales of their recordings. For example, prior to signing with a major label, Phish marketed their recordings and hawked band merchandise on the Internet. In association with the software company Sonic Foundry (makers of loop-based music creation software *Acid*), several artists offered their fans a chance to remix tracks from their recordings (<http://www.acidplanet.com>). Participating artists included Madonna (“Ray of Light,” “Music,” and “Deeper and Deeper”), Boz Scaggs (“Ms. Riddle”), Static-X (“Black and White”), Garbage (“Androgyny”), Debra Soule (“Amen”), and New Order (“Crystal”). Allowing an audience access to the sound files used as a foundation for such hit singles is certainly an innovative and enlightened approach. In a sense, the listener is given the opportunity to become a creator using existing, professionally produced musical materials.

Other artists, including Courtney Love and a coalition organized by Don Henley, began to actively address the inequities inherent in the relationship between recording artists and the corporations that market and distribute their work. According to Don Henley, the goal of his coalition was to use legal action to pressure the major labels to “change the fundamental rules that govern most recording contracts, including copyright ownership, long-term control of intellectual property and unfair accounting practices” (Wild 2002, 17).

During 2004, the success of online music sales brought change to the industry yet again. Apple’s iStore, Real Media’s Rhapsody, and even Wal-Mart began offering individual songs in copy-protected digital formats online for between \$0.49 and \$0.99 each. Entire albums could be purchased, downloaded, and instantly played, typically for between \$4.99 and \$9.99. This sales model offered the consumer incomparable convenience and immediate gratification since one could purchase, download, and play back the recording in a

matter of minutes . . . without leaving the house! Around this same time, portable MP3 players (like the iPod and Rio) began to overtake a market previously dominated by Sony Walkman and Discman. As the technology developed and became more affordable, portable units selling for between \$150 and \$400 could hold a person's entire recording collection (up to 10,000 songs for a 40-GB model). Following a significant decline in recording sales, availability of digitized sound files on the Internet (both legal and illegal), and major artists threatening to organize a union and take legal action, the recording industry was in a state of crisis.

Rap's Beginnings

One musical style that has continued to flourish despite the overall decline in CD sales is rap. Although many Americans became aware of rap music in the mid-1980s, the style actually dates back to the late 1970s. It seems to have developed in the neighborhoods of New York City (especially Harlem, the Bronx, and Brooklyn). A graphic description of a typical "block party" of 1977 is provided by Havelock Nelson and Michael Gonzales in their book *Bring the Noise* (1991, xvi):

A crew of soul brothers (Mod Squad afros, bell bottom jeans) troop down the hill with cartons of records, speakers, two turntables, and a mixer. These are the new gangsters in town, aural outlaws controlling the public airwaves. Slammin' their equipment in front of an old street lamp, their hands move slow, hooking wire and mics and testing a Gil Scott Heron drumbeat on a Technics turntable. BOOM/BLAST—"Yo, this be DJ Hollywood rockin' da turntables in da hood." Needles bounce, explode with the sound of the new urban blues. BOOM/BLAST—heavy bass riffs lifted from an ancient Stanley Clarke disc.

While Hollywood bellows into the mic', turntable assassin Lovebug Starski plays the role of Doc Magic Hands—spinnin' discs, scratchin' records, borrowing this drumbeat, that keyboard riff. "All da ladies in da hood say, "Yeah!" Fem voices roar and the block party erupts.

In the late 1970s, such block parties were part of a collection of urban art forms, labeled **hip-hop**, emerging in the South Bronx. The term, reputedly first coined by Starski himself, was used to describe the lifestyle, fashions, fast-talking comedy, and cultural expressions of this region of New York City (Toop 2007). The "cultural expressions" included break dancing, graffiti art, poetry, double-Dutch jump-roping, and music. During the 1980s, as the significance of break dancing and graffiti receded, the term *hip-hop* became associated primarily with a specific urban musical style. Hip-hop tracks incorporated extant musical sounds, combining these previously recorded segments into a new composition. It is interesting to note that at the same time bands in the punk movement like the Police and the Clash were being influenced by reggae, hip-hop was inspired by Jamaican DJs U-Roy and Lee Perry.

Setting up their sound systems in parks, school yards, and abandoned buildings, early hip-hop pioneers (known as *spinners*) included Kool Herc, Grandmaster Flash ("The Adventures of Grandmaster Flash on the Wheels of Steel," 1981), Afrika Bambaataa ("Planet Rock," 1982), Kurtis Blow ("The Breaks," 1980), the Fatback Band ("King Tim III [Personality Jock]," 1979), and the Sugar Hill Gang ("Rapper's Delight," 1980). Kool Herc began to add **masters of ceremony** (MCs) to speak over the foundation of these rhythmic grooves, sometimes covering up the silence with hand claps, or to provide improvised prosodic displays as the DJ changed records on one or more of his turntables. The addition of an MC

evolved into the musical form commonly referred to as *rap*. The identity of the MC was an important aspect of the performance, often beginning a rap with a pronouncement (or verbal *tagging*): “Yo, we got my homeboy Eazy-E in the house. Compton’s definitely in the house . . .” (from the beginning of NWA’s “Something Like That” from *Straight Outta Compton*). Spoken rhymes often included references to other rap artists, events, and/or songs, sometimes initiating a back-and-forth dialog from recording to recording.

Hip-hop was created primarily by DJs using turntables, rather than by musicians performing on traditional acoustic and/or electronic instruments. A patchwork of musical sounds was woven together to create dance music, often in a manner similar to the technique used by a jazz musician to spontaneously improvise a solo. As in the 1950s, DJs ascended to a position of prominence in the world of music, this time using a library of preexisting recordings. Some of the favorite musical resources used by early hip-hop DJs as well as later rappers included percussion and rhythm tracks from recordings by James Brown, Rufus Thomas, and other soul and funk artists. In 1989, Public Enemy used the rhythmic motif from James Brown’s “Funky Drummer” as a basis for “Fight the Power,” the theme song for Spike Lee’s *Do the Right Thing* (1989). Using two turntables and a mixer, a skilled DJ could create a “seamless blend of beats, riffs and hooks” (Peel 2000, 406) that eventually came to be used as a foundation for early rap music. In addition to excerpts from funk recordings, break sections from 1950s and 1960s rock songs and instrumental compositions were frequently used.

DJs developed techniques for adding their own sounds to the accompaniment. In the late 1970s, hip-hop DJs effectively transformed the turntable, a device used primarily to play back recordings, into a musical instrument. *Scratching*, as the technique came to be known, was accomplished by quickly pushing and pulling records on the turntable, resulting in a variety of effects: loops (short repeated sections), musical bursts, and backward playback. Some DJs used more than two turntables and developed a technique called *beat mixing*: playing back multiple records simultaneously, while adjusting the speed of each recording to synchronize the resulting complex rhythmic pattern.

There are many examples of dance music recordings that incorporated existing materials into a new context; for example, the use of sections from “Good Times” by Chic (1979) for the Sugar Hill Gang’s “Rappers Delight” (1980), Afrika Bambaataa’s use of melodies by Kraftwerk and Ennio Morricone for his own “Planet Rock” (1982), or the use of the Rolling Stones’ “The Last Time” (1965) for the Verve’s “Bitter Sweet Symphony” (1997).

Soon the personal computer (PC) became the primary workstation for creating the musical accompaniment for rap. The technique of borrowing excerpts from previously recorded material was surrounded by controversy. Many believed that taking brief sections of a composition was well within the poetic license exercised by an artist, while others felt that it was a direct violation of U.S. copyright law. In just one of the many cases that found its way into the legal system, the hip-hop group De La Soul settled out of court for failing to credit the Turtles after sampling a portion of their recording “You Showed Me” (1969). The band used the excerpt superimposed over a sample from a recording of a French lesson in “Transmitting Live from Mars” from their debut album, *3 Feet High and Rising* (1989).

In its most basic form, rap disposes of melody completely, using instead the rhythmic declamation of a spoken voice (or voices) over a foundation of percussion. Precursors of this declamatory style can be found in the recordings of many soul artists, including Barry White, Isaac Hayes, and Millie Jackson. The lyrical content of rap recordings is often dramatically different from other songs within the rock and roll mainstream. Some subgenres of rap incorporate graphic depiction of violence, objectification of women, and sexually explicit lyrics. Initially, rap audiences consisted primarily of young African American listeners, though during the 1990s, teenagers of all ethnic backgrounds accepted the musical style.



Run-D.M.C. (Source: Getty Images Inc.)

One of the first commercially released rap records was “Rapper’s Delight” by a Harlem group known as the Sugarhill Gang. Released in 1979, it peaked at number 36 in early 1980. By the mid-1980s, most people had heard some rap music, but it was still considered a black underground style, not commercially viable for major recording companies or MTV. Granted, there were a few “cute” raps that did reach the mass audience (video raps by professional sports teams), but the hard-core style did not gain real national exposure until the mid-1980s. A few rap albums in this period sold sufficiently to enter the charts: *Run-D.M.C.* (1984) and *King of Rock* (1985) by Run-D.M.C.; *Escape* (1984) by Whodini; and *Licensed to Ill* (1986) by the Beastie Boys.

The real breakthrough year for rap was 1986. *Raising Hell* by Run-D.M.C. reached the number 3 position and yielded two Top 40 singles: “Walk This Way” and “You Be Illin’.” “Walk This Way” was an update of a 1977 hit by Aerosmith and features the voice and guitar of Aerosmith members Steven Tyler and Joe Perry, respectively (see the Listening Guide). The rock flavor of Run-D.M.C.’s rap version may account for its national chart success. However, hard-core rap purists resented the intrusion of rock into their style.

Listening Guide: “Walk This Way” (Run-D.M.C. with Aerosmith)

0:00–0:17	Introduction (8 measures)	Drumbeat and turntable scratching clearly establish the duple meter and duple subdivision.
0:18–0:26	(4 measures)	Add signature guitar riff to the musical texture.
0:27–0:44	Verse 1 (8 measures)	Rap vocals enter (“now, there’s a backseat lover”) over an accompanimental guitar riff and solid drumbeat; the rapping technique of alternating between the two MCs is clearly in evidence; notice also the periodic appearance of a third voice: Steven Tyler’s recognizable vocal timbre.

0:45–0:54	Interlude (4 measures)	Signature guitar riff returns.
0:55–1:12	Verse 2 (8 measures)	“see saw swinging”; as before.
1:13–1:30	Chorus (8 measures)	During the chorus, Steven Tyler’s shouting vocal dominates, sounding much less like a rap single.
1:31–1:39	Guitar Solo 1 (4 measures)	Very brief guitar solo over the verse guitar riff.
1:40–1:48	Interlude (4 measures)	Signature guitar riff returns.
1:49–2:06	Verse 3 (8 measures)	“school girl sleazy”; this time the accompanimental guitar riff drops out at the beginning; Tyler is now totally integrated as one of the MCs; listen to the abrupt switching back and forth between rappers.
2:07–2:15	Interlude (4 measures)	Signature guitar riff returns.
2:16–2:33	Verse 4 (8 measures)	Tyler’s voice takes the lead role in this verse, double-tracked to give it additional prominence.
2:34–2:52	Chorus (8 measures)	As before.
2:53–3:01	Guitar Solo 2 (4 measures)	Another very brief guitar solo over a repetitive, monophonic, quadruple subdivision accompaniment. The guitar solo continues from here to the end of the song.
3:02–3:55	(24 measures)	Rhythm guitar accompaniment changes to the signature guitar riff.
3:56–4:13	(8 measures))	Here the second rhythm guitar part continues under the guitar solo, though the signature riff has dropped out temporarily.
4:14–4:36	Interlude (10 measures)	Signature guitar riff returns without guitar solo.
4:37–4:41	Guitar solo returns (2 measures)	Lead guitar solo returns over signature riff.
4:42–4:50	(4 measures)	Returns to second rhythm guitar part without signature riff.
4:51–4:59	(4 measures)	Lead guitar continues without any rhythm guitar accompaniment.
5:00–5:11	Coda (4 measures)	Lead guitar solo ends and drumbeat continues; the song ends as it began, with drums only, creating a kind of “arch form.”

Because of its commercial success, *Raising Hell* introduced the rap style to a much broader national audience. The trio featured Daryl McDaniels as the MC, Jason Mizell as the DJ (master of turntable manipulations), and Joseph Simmons as the drummer/key-boardist. The group took its name from the street names of its members: McDaniel was “DMC”; Mizell was “Jam Master Jay”; and Simmons was “Run.” Listen to “You Be Illin’” to get an idea of what DJ Jam Master Jay adds with his turntables (this song also contains a piano bass line and a “live” sax part).

Later in 1986, a white rap trio, the Beastie Boys, broke into the virtually all-black performance style with a number 1 album, *Licensed to Ill*. Adam Yauch (“MCA”) and Michael Diamond (“Mike D”) began as Young and Useless, a punk-oriented group. After adding Adam Horovitz (“King Ad-Rock”) in 1981, they moved to rap and became the Beastie Boys. Their raps cover a range of topics, from sexual promiscuity to drugs and alcohol to political commentary. As with Run-D.M.C., the most commercially successful cut from *Licensed to Ill* was the most rock-oriented single, “(You Gotta) Fight for Your Right (to Party),” which peaked at number 7 in early 1987. In fact, this song is more hard rock than rap. *Licensed to Ill* was the first rap album to hit number 1.

The Beastie Boys’ next album, *Paul’s Boutique* (1989), was three years in coming as the result of a legal dispute with their record company, Def Jam. The sound of the album was significantly different from their debut, selling far fewer copies and resulting in only one minor hit, “Hey Ladies.” Another three years passed before their third album, *Check Your Head* (1992), was released. With the release of *Ill Communication* (1994) and *Hello Nasty* (1998), the Beasties returned to the top of the charts, where both albums debuted. In 2004, after another long pause, the Beastie Boys released *To the 5 Boroughs* (also debuting at number 1). Though not prolific in their output, the Beasties continue to chart high with their releases, though the total sales figures have dropped significantly since the 1990s.

The next rapper to achieve a mass audience was L. L. Cool J. Like Run-D.M.C., James Todd Smith was from Queens. His first album, *Radio* (1985), had limited sales, but *Bigger and Deffer* (1987) rose to number 3 and yielded a hit single, “I Need Love.” As with Run-D.M.C.’s “Walk This Way” and the Beastie’s “Fight for Your Right,” though, Cool J.’s hit single was not a typical rap song. Instead of being hard rock-oriented, “I Need Love” was a rap ballad, a rap song with a slow tempo, soft beat, gentle accompaniment, and love-oriented lyrics. Although hard-core rappers may dislike the success of such “impure” rap hits, these songs did bring the general concept of the rap style (rhythmically delivered spoken lyrics) to a wide audience and paved the way to success for more authentic rap songs. (Speaking of rap combination styles, listen to “The Do Wop” from *Bigger and Deffer*—an entertaining combination of rap and doo-wop.)

Cool J. enjoyed fairly consistent success after 1987, especially with his album *Walking with a Panther* (1989). By that time, rap had been accepted as a commercially viable style. His success continued through the 1990s with *Mama Said Knock You Out* (1990; a Grammy winner), *14 Shots to the Dome* (1991), *Mr. Smith* (1995), and *Phenomenon* (number 7 in 1997).

L. L. Cool J. is cited as an influence by many rappers who came after and was the first rap artist to perform on MTV’s *Unplugged* in 1991. In the transition from the late 1980s to the 1990s, an explosion of rap artists hit the airwaves and the charts, including D. J. Jazzy Jeff and the Fresh Prince, the Fat Boys, Public Enemy, NWA, M.C. Hammer, Ice Cube, and Vanilla Ice. Although we cannot discuss all of these artists in detail, we will survey some of the changes represented by a few of them.

New York City may have been the birthplace of rap, but other cities contributed to the growth of the style. D. J. Jazzy Jeff and the Fresh Prince were from Philadelphia; Los Angeles produced Eazy E, Ice Cube, and NWA. NWA’s *Straight Outta Compton* (1989) introduced to a large segment of the public the deepest, most hard-core style of rap, untouched by hard rock, ballads, doo-wop, or any other softening or blending intended to achieve greater commercial success. This album only reached number 37, but it sold over 2 million copies. With the *Compton* album, many Americans were confronted with a style they had not heard before. One of the original members of NWA, Ice Cube, produced an album (*AmeriKKKa’s Most Wanted*) in 1990 that followed the trend set by NWA (perhaps

with somewhat more interesting samples of preexisting material). Nelson and Gonzales describe the album as follows (1991, 107):

From dealers chillin' in front of the projects to rival gangs spraying them with bullets, from the din of children roaming through the streets of shattered glass to a group of pregnant girlies gulping cheap, sweet wine in front of the local 7-Eleven. With an eye that magnifies brutal characters and violent situations, Ice Cube exposes a world that seems on the brink of exploding in the ear of the listener. This is Black Cali, 1990: Welcome to the nightmare.

These albums by NWA and Ice Cube established a substyle of rap that has become known as **gangsta rap** (discussed later in this chapter).

While some rap groups moved further into the angry, defiant style of gangsta rap, there were others who played more to the mainstream. Often defiled by the purists as being fraudulent, they nonetheless have achieved great commercial success. The most successful of the black rappers at the end of the 1980s was M.C. Hammer (Stanley Kirk Burrell), a product of Oakland, California. His first album, *Let's Get It Started*, was reasonably successful, but his second album, *Please Hammer Don't Hurt 'Em* (1990), was a monster hit, peaking at number 1, where it remained for nearly half a year. The antithesis of gangsta rap, Hammer's raps are antidrugs, antiviolenence, and speak positively to a young black generation. He even included several rap ballads in *Please Hammer Don't Hurt 'Em*. Some of the digital samples incorporated into the music were from prior hits by Rick James, Marvin Gaye, the Jackson Five, Prince, and the Chi-Lites. Several singles from the album moved into the Top 20: "Pray," "Have You Seen Her?" (a ballad), and "U Can't Touch This." Much of Hammer's popularity certainly stemmed from his dancing, prominently featured in his videos.

Following close behind Hammer's popularity was a white rapper, Vanilla Ice (Robert Van Winkle). His album *To The Extreme* (1990) sold more than 7 million copies. The hit single "Ice Ice Baby" peaked at number 1—the first rap single to do so. Some black rappers have accused Vanilla Ice of parodying black music; at the very least, he seems to be a rather pale imitation of "the real thing," and his status as a superstar proved fleeting.

By the end of the 1980s, rap was firmly entrenched as a new musical style in the realm of rock. Its musical derivation was primarily from James Brown; recall his steady, unchanging vamps, half-sung, half-spoken "hip" lyrics, and herky-jerky accompaniments. However, other than the selection of rather clever samples, the music accompaniment for most rap tends toward simplicity and repetition. There is no melody in most cases—only a bass line, a funky beat (often on a drum machine), and rhymes—but the rhymes are the key element. The lyrics of the rhymes range from the usual love topics to intense social commentary (sometimes positive, sometimes graphically negative).

Rap Comes of Age

In Chapter 2, black R&B of the late 1940s and early 1950s was described as the most important musical style leading to the emergence of rock and roll. At that time, it was relatively easy to determine specific musical attributes that distinguished R&B from other contemporaneous musical styles such as pop or C&W: its typical instrumentation, the hard-driving prominence of its rhythmic component, the simple three-chord harmonies common to the 12-bar blues form, and the shouting vocal style. By the 1990s, such a wide variety of music was being labeled "R&B" that this stylistic descriptor had been rendered practically meaningless. Soulful, but relatively mellow, performers such as Anita Baker,

Luther Vandross, and white vocalist Michael Bolton were all labeled R&B artists. At the same time, rappers often lay claim to being R&B artists. Rap music evolved into more than just one of many substyles of black music; it became one of the primary directions of popular music for young audiences of every race.

Rap music also proved to be a potent tool for protest and political activism. Inspired by militant black poets during the late 1960s and early 1970s—for example, the Last Poets in Harlem (New York) and the Watts Prophets (Los Angeles)—musician-poet Gil Scott-Heron released “The Revolution Will Not Be Televised” (1973), popularized by a cover version contained on Labelle’s *Pressure Cookin’*, released the same year. Early rap recordings initiating this trend include Brother D’s (with Collective Effort) “How We Gonna Make the Black Nation Rise?” (1985) and Grandmaster Flash and the Furious Five’s poignant portrayal of life in the ghetto titled “The Message” (number 4 R&B in 1982).

One of the most influential politically oriented hip-hop acts of the time was Public Enemy, boasting a dual MC format, with Chuck D (Carlton Ridenhour) as the authoritative political activist and sidekick Flavor Flav (William Drayton). The group also included Terminator X and Professor Griff. The group’s backup dancers, known as the Security of the First World (S1W), carried fake Uzis and, in a parody of Motown choreography, performed stiff, martial arts movements. In 1987, these self-proclaimed “prophets of rage” released their debut album, *Yo! Bum Rush the Show*, critically acclaimed but not a commercial success. The band’s second album, however, *It Takes a Nation of Millions to Hold Us Back* (1988), sold over a million copies and contained the single “Don’t Believe the Hype.” Chuck D labeled rap music as “CNN for black culture.” After recording “Fight the Power” for Spike Lee’s film, Public Enemy released *Fear of a Black Planet* (number 10 in 1990). This album addressed controversial topics, including white racism (“Burn Hollywood Burn” and “911 is a Joke”), and encouraged African Americans to unite (“Brothers Gonna Work It Out” and “War at 33 1/3”). The band’s next two releases, *Apocalypse 91* (1991) and



Public Enemy (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Greatest Misses (1992), continued their commercial success. The powerful messages contained in many of these songs provided unity and a clear sense of justice as well as inspiration for future artists: Run-D.M.C.'s "Hard Times" (1983) and Boogie Down Productions' *Criminal Minded* (1987). Though the lyrics conveyed strong feelings and a passionate belief in correcting the social and economic inequity evident in the treatment of minorities across the United States, the message was not a violent one. Violence, it seems, was left to rappers flooding the airwaves with the new subgenre known as gangsta rap. Public Enemy's *Muse Sick-N-Hour Mess Age* (1994) criticized this new style of rap, with its extreme portrayal of violence, encouragement of drug use, misogynistic vignettes, and materialism. Though this album entered high on the charts, it quickly faded, suggesting that the young generation may have found a new set of messengers to admire, perhaps precisely those to whom Chuck D was referring.

Gangsta Rap

By the mid-1990s, gangsta rap became a dominant subgenre of rap. Best-selling rap artists Ice Cube, Snoop Doggy Dogg, Ice-T, Dr. Dre, Cypress Hill, Scarface, and many others incorporated themes of gang-related violence and explicit pornographic depictions into their recordings, often using extramusical sounds such as gunshots and sirens. Warner Music Division at Time Warner experienced a tremendous backlash as political and social groups like the National Political Congress of Black Women and various police associations forced them to defend—sometimes at great expense—the distribution of this music. Under pressure from such groups, Time Warner removed the song "Cop Killer" from the eponymous debut album by *Body Count*, a project led by rapper Ice-T. This explicit description of an inner-city youth carrying out the premeditated murder of unsuspecting police officers was a song of unprecedented violence, and its lyrics seemed to set the stage for ever more violent lyrics to follow:

I got my twelve gauge sawed off,
I got my headlights turned off,
I'm 'bout to bust some shots off,
I'm 'bout to dust some cops off.

Gangsta rap generally had a driving beat, heavy metal guitar style, angry attitude, and violent lyrics. It was viewed by many as a catalyst to the anger of a generation of poor black youth and spawned a fierce debate about the social responsibilities of the recording artists. Rappers who "throw down," to use their terminology, such gang-related lyrics often claimed to be merely reporting incidents witnessed in their experience of inner-city urban life, not giving their stamp of approval to such actions. However, lyrics detailing graphic violence certainly serve to fan the fire of hatred far too common in these troubled urban areas, rather than offering solutions to undeniable social and economic problems.

With the rise of successful gangsta rappers on the West Coast (Ice-T, NWA, Ice Cube, Dr. Dre, and others), New York's claim to hip-hop preeminence was in question. This rivalry eventually found its way into recordings, with Marian "Suge" Knight (West Coast) and Sean "Puffy" Combs (East Coast) trading threats and insults via their song lyrics. "Dissing" (disrespecting) other competing groups using the imagery of gang warfare was common among gangsta rappers.

Many of the most successful rap artists rose to popularity as part of an ensemble and then departed to pursue solo careers. This *splinter phenomenon* has happened frequently throughout the history of rock and roll (e.g., Lionel Richie from the Commodores, Sting from the Police, Peter Gabriel from Genesis, Bobby Brown and Bel Biv DeVoe from New Edition). Two rap groups serve as particularly illustrative examples of this continuing phenomenon.

NWA

Formed in 1986, NWA (“Niggaz with Attitude”) experienced great commercial success with *Straight Outta Compton* (1989) and *EFILAZAGGIN* (1991; the title is “Niggaz 4 Life” backward). *Straight Outta Compton* resulted in significant controversy due to its inclusion of the track “Fuck the Police,” for which distributor Priority Records received a warning letter from the FBI. Members of the group who went on to highly successful solo careers include Ice Cube (O’Shea Jackson), Eazy-E (Eric Wright), and Dr. Dre (Andre Young). As a solo artist, Ice Cube released *AmeriKKKa’s Most Wanted* (1990), *Death Certificate* (1991), *The Predator* (debuting at number 1 in 1992), and *Lethal Injection* (1993). During the 1990s, he also had a very successful acting career, appearing in films such as *Boyz n the Hood* (1991), *The Players Club* (1998; written by, directed by, and starring Ice Cube), and *Three Kings* (1999). Eazy-E recorded *Eazy-Duz-It* (1988), *It’s On (Dr. Dre) 187um Killa* (1993), and *Str8 Off the Streetz of Muthaphukkin Compton* (1996). Dr. Dre went on to establish Death Row Records with Marian “Suge” Knight. His solo efforts include *The Chronic* (1993) and *2001* (1999). As producer, Dre worked successfully with Snoop Doggy Dogg, Tupac Shakur, and others. Dr. Dre was also responsible for discovering a white rapper from Detroit named Eminem and produced his highly controversial recordings (discussed later in this chapter).

The Wu-Tang Clan

From housing projects on Staten Island, the Wu-Tang Clan provides another example of a splintered rap group. Two cousins, RZA (Robert Diggs) and GZA (Gary Grice), were the group’s founders, enlisting the assistance of Ol’ Dirty Bastard (Russell Jones), Inspectah Deck (Jason Hunter), Raekwon (Corey Woods), U-God (Lamont Hawkins), Ghostface Killah (Dennis Coles), Method Man (Clifford Smith), and Masta Killa (Elgin Turner). Their debut album, *Enter the Wu-Tang (36 Chambers)* (1993), infused their ghetto-related lyricism with references to the martial arts. Interestingly, the group’s contract with Loud Records allowed each member freedom to negotiate with other labels for the release of solo project work. Method Man’s *Tical* (number 4 in 1994) was the first to take advantage of this arrangement. Other solo projects included GZA’s *Liquid Swords* (1995) and *Beneath the Surface* (1996), RZA’s *RZA as Bobby Digital in Stereo* (1998), Raekwon’s *Only Built 4 Cuban Linx* (1995), Ol’ Dirty Bastard’s *Return to the 36 Chambers: The Dirty Version* (1995) and *Nigga Please* (1999), Ghostface Killah’s *Ironman* (1996), Inspectah Deck’s *Uncontrolled Substance* (1999), and U-God’s *Golden Arms Redemption* (1999). Though group members experienced a significant amount of success as solo artists, they continued to record as the Wu-Tang Clan, including *Wu-Tang Forever* (number 1 in 1997), *The W* (number 5 in 2000), *Iron Flag* (2001), and *Disciples of the 36 Chambers* (2004). In November 2004, Ol’ Dirty Bastard died after collapsing suddenly in a New York recording studio from a heart attack due to intoxication by the combined effects of cocaine and Tarmadol.

Other Rappers

Salt-n-Pepa

Interestingly, while gangsta rap was becoming more extreme in its depiction of violence, milder forms of rap were being accepted into the mainstream of popular music. One of the first rap groups to cross over successfully to the pop charts, Salt-n-Pepa, consisted of three female rappers: Cheryl “Salt” James, Sandy “Pepa” Denton, and Pamela Greene (DJ). The trio, formed in 1985 (Denton, James, and manager-producer Hurby “Luv Bug” Azor met while working at Sears), then released *Hot, Cool, and Vicious* the following year. The album resulted in three minor R&B singles. Success on the pop charts did not come until a San Francisco DJ remixed the B side of one of these singles, “Push It.” The remixed



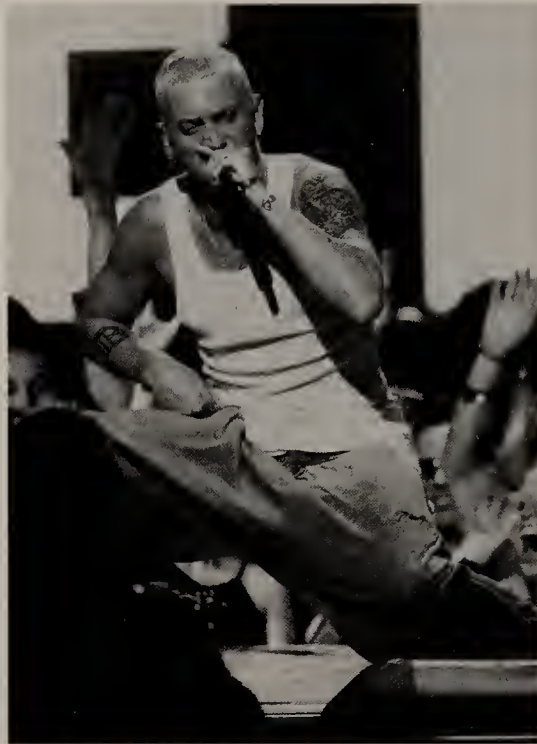
Salt-n-Pepa (Source: A. Berliner/Getty Images Inc. – Liaison)

version of the single reached number 19 and was nominated for a Grammy in 1988. That same year, Greene was replaced as DJ for the group by Deidre “Spinderella” Roper. The most successful song from the two following albums, *A Salt with a Deadly Pepa* (1988) and *Blacks’ Magic* (1990), was “Let’s Talk About Sex” from *Blacks’ Magic*. The women released *Very Necessary* in 1993, attaining their highest chart success with “Shoop” (number 4) and “Whatta Man” (number 3), a collaboration with the female vocal group En Vogue. In the mid-1990s, Salt-n-Pepa adopted the image of tough-rapping divas, as exhibited on “Ain’t Nuthin but a She Thing” (number 38 in 1995). However, the role of tough females in rap ultimately fell to Queen Latifah and Sistah Souljah, who rapped forcefully on the subjects of African nationalism and prowoman activism. As in the title song from Sistah Souljah’s *360 Degrees of Power* (1992), strident rhymes against racial oppression often contained explicit antiwhite sentiments.

Eminem

Rap music originated as an almost exclusively African American art form. As time went by, however, white rappers appeared on the scene. Early examples of nonblack rappers include Vanilla Ice and Marky Mark (Mark Wahlberg), though neither of these “white boys” could truly hold a candle to the rap style and verbal gymnastics of black MCs. More authentic sounding white rappers followed, including House of Pain and the Beastie Boys. In the late 1990s, the arrival of Marshall Mathers (a.k.a. Eminem) revealed that rap, gangsta or otherwise, was no longer solely the province of African American performers.

The appearance of white rappers provides an interesting parallel to the period when rock music emerged in the 1950s. While nonblack rap artists prior to the appearance of Eminem might be seen as purposefully toning down the angst and subject matter of their African American counterparts to make the style palatable to a wider audience (like Pat Boone covering a tune by Big Joe Turner), Eminem performed rhymes uncensored, emulating the style of his predecessors (like Elvis’s comparatively authentic integration of stylistic traits of R&B artists). Though Mathers’s recording debut, *Infinite* (1997), attracted little attention, the follow-up EP won him a recording contract with Interscope and brought him to the attention of its influential founder, Dr. Dre. Eminem’s second recording was extended into the breakthrough album *The Slim Shady LP* (number 3 in 1999), winning Grammys for Best Rap Album and Best Rap Solo Performance (“My Name Is”). *The Marshall Mathers LP*, debuting at number 1 in 2000 and becoming the fastest-selling rap



Eminem (Source: AP Wide World Photos)

album of all time, proved that Eminem was a force with which to be reckoned within the genre and earned him a second consecutive Grammy for Best Rap Album. His commercial success continued unabated with a series of number 1 albums: *The Eminem Show* (2002), *8 Mile* (2002; he also starred in the movie and performed its sound track), *Encore* (2004), and *Curtain Call: The Hits* (2005). His influence as an artist and talent scout also proved quite effective with several spinoff projects, including Dirty Dozen (D12) and 50 Cent. *Eminem Presents: The ReUp* (2006) is what has become known as a *crew album*, including appearances by Eminem protégés Obie Trice, D12, Status Quo, Cashis, and Bobby Creekwater. The album peaked at number 2, but critics generally spurned the recording.

The critical and commercial success of Eminem's recordings was second only to the controversy resulting from concern about his lyrics. Eminem openly ranted about guns, drugs, killing, abuse, homosexuality, misogyny, and many other controversial topics, often seeming to promote and encourage violence. Among the loudest voices in protest against his music were gay rights activists, religious groups, women's groups, and even members of his own family. He was sued by his mother for defamation and by his estranged wife (who he "killed" more than once in his recorded narratives). Like many other rap artists, Mathers wound up on the wrong side of the law, receiving two years of probation for assault and carrying a concealed weapon. The assaulted man allegedly kissed the rapper's wife outside a nightclub.

Why is it that we, both as authors of a rock history text and as the listening public, give attention to such an individual? Simply put, Eminem was one of the best MCs rapping during the transition to the 21st century. His rhyming skills and delivery style rivaled many of the best African American performers of the time, winning him the respect not only of the general public, but of many of his peers in the rap community. Second—and this is, admittedly, a slippery slope—the storytelling on Eminem's albums was presented through the eyes of "Slim Shady," a fictional alter ego who has been described as "a homicidal comedian through whom Mathers enacted his most outrageous and perverse revenge fantasies" (George-Warren and Romanowski 2001, 304). When Eminem narrates for us a tale of riding in the car with his daughter to a drop-off point, where they will dispose of the lifeless body of the child's mother (along with two other bodies, implied to be the stepfather and a half brother)—as he does in "'97 Bonnie and Clyde"—we are to believe that this is simply a storyteller stretching the bounds of poetic license for dramatic effect. There is no doubt that the dramatic impact is great, but once again, we ask, What of social responsibility?

New Jack Swing

In spite of the controversy surrounding gangsta rap, developments at the end of the 1980s served to bring rap into the mainstream of popular music. Credited largely to the influence of multi-instrumentalist and producer Teddy Riley, a new variety of rap referred to as *New*

Jack Swing, or *neo-soul*, evolved out of New York City, merging the hip-hop beat with light rap and traditional R&B vocals. Riley's own group, Guy, had an R&B hit with "Groove Me" in 1988. Singles by the band were selected for inclusion in the sound tracks to two black urban films, *Do the Right Thing* (1989) and *New Jack City* (1991). Members of Guy went their separate ways after releasing *The Future* (1990), which resulted in three Top 10 R&B singles: "Let's Chill" (number 3), "Do Me Right" (number 2), and "D-O-G Me Out" (number 8). Following the group's dissolution, Riley assisted Michael Jackson during the re-recording of *Dangerous* (1991), stamping that release with his trademark production sound. Listen to "Jam," the opening cut on Jackson's recording, to hear Riley's New Jack Swing influence. The song begins with rhythmically spoken words over a heavy dance beat. Throughout the entire recording, Jackson's vocals seem to take on a more mature, yet desperate, tone. In the middle of the song, following a brief synthesized horn break, there is a straight-ahead rap section, giving way once again to Jackson's vocals.

In 1994, Riley formed Blackstreet and experienced continued success with "Before I Let You Go" (number 7 in 1994) and "No Diggity" (number 1 in 1996). A reunion of Guy resulted in *Guy III* and a hit single, "Danein" (number 19 in 1999).

Following Riley's lead, other producers, including Jimmy Jam and Terry Lewis and Babyface, picked up on this eclectic and highly lucrative blend of musical styles. Babyface gained massive critical acclaim for his production talent, working throughout the 1990s with artists such as Paula Abdul, Pebbles, TLC, the Jacksons, Whitney Houston, Boyz II Men, and Bobby Brown. His production work and songwriting skill resulted in an amazing 12 Grammy nominations in 1997, tying the record set by Michael Jackson for *Thriller* (1982).

One of the first artists to popularize the New Jack Swing sound was Keith Sweat. Working as a commodities broker on Wall Street, Sweat successfully marketed his own demo, succeeded in finding an interested management company, and eventually signed a record contract. His debut single, "I Want Her" (number 5 in 1988), revealed a smooth blend of R&B and hip-hop, becoming the first New Jack Swing hit to receive national attention.

Other rap groups place more importance on the declamatory speaking style and hip-hop rhythms but still incorporate melodic aspects into the song structures. Former bandmates of Bobby Brown and Ralph Tresvant in New Edition, Rieky Bell, Michael Bivins, and Ronnie DeVoe, formed Bell Biv DeVoe in 1988. With the encouragement of producers Jimmy Jam and Terry Lewis, the three proved to be a dance music powerhouse. Bell Biv DeVoe's biggest hits ("Poison" and "Do Me!," both number 3) were culled from their debut album *Poison* (1990). All six members of New Edition, including Bobby Brown and his replacement, Johnny Gill, reunited in 1996 to produce *Home Again* (number 1 on both pop and R&B charts), including the songs "Hit Me Off," "I'm Still in Love with You," and "You Don't Have to Worry." Other examples of this rap R&B blend may be found in the music of Snap! ("The Power," 1990), Marky Mark and the Funky Bunch ("Good Vibrations," 1991), Color Me Badd ("I Adore Me Amor," 1991), and Arrested Development ("Mr. Wendal," 1993).

The successful crossing over of rap music into the mainstream of American popular music was completed by the late 1980s. Signs of such a transition had been on the horizon for some time, but with Run-D.M.C. and Aerosmith's version of "Walk This Way" in 1986, the crossover of rap to the mainstream was complete. Further proof of the fact came shortly thereafter with the release of the Beastie Boys' *Licensed to Ill*—the first rap album to reach number 1. Final confirmation that rap had truly been accepted into the mainstream was provided in the October 11, 2003, issue of *Billboard* magazine. That week, for the first time in rock history, all Top 10 on the Hot 100 songs were by black recording artists. All but one—the top position—were by rappers:

1. "Baby Boy," Beyoncé (featuring Sean Paul)
2. "Shake Ya Tailfeather," Nelly, P. Diddy, and Murphy Lee



The Sex Pistols (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

included songs that protested everything: boring jobs, police, America, rock music, violence, and racism. The growing affinity between the punks and reggae music was illustrated in “Police and Thieves” and “White Man in Hammersmith Palais.” *London Calling* (1979) made the Top 30 in the United States, as did the single “Train in Vain (Stand by Me).” The band actually broke the Top 10 with the album *Combat Rock* (1982) and a single, “Rock the Casbah.”

There were many other punk bands that wielded significant influence over musical developments during the following years. One of the most prolific of these groups, the Fall, was a British group from Manchester. Lead vocalist Mark E. Smith, the sole constant in the band’s surprisingly long career, was a harbinger of white rappers (see Chapter 17). With their tuneful single “Totally Wired” (1981), the band seemed to follow the move of many toward the new wave style. The Mekons and Joy Division are two other British punk bands worthy of mention. Both bands proved to have tremendous staying power, evolving musically from punk (or perhaps postpunk) to heavily electronic dance music. Following the suicide of lead singer Ian Curtis in 1980, Joy Division added a keyboard player and changed their name to New Order. The regrouped band’s breakthrough single was 1983’s “Blue Monday.”

With the negative publicity received in 1978 to 1979 by the Sex Pistols and other punk bands, some sought to establish a new name for this music with less negative connotations. Thus the term **new wave** was introduced. As Arnold Shaw notes, one can view new wave as an offshoot of punk, somewhat subtler and less prone to the gruesome, the overtly repulsive, and the sadomasochistic; or *new wave* may simply be a term coined to escape the criticism and censure heaped on punk groups (Shaw 1982). As is often the case, the truth may be a bit of both. Most bands (and their record companies) can tolerate—and at times even encourage—public outrage, unless it becomes so extreme that customers refuse to buy records and concert tickets. Also, it is understandable that impaling oneself with pins and slicing one’s chest open with broken glass begins, after a few performances, to lose its appeal, even to the most devoted of fans and performers.

Beginning in about 1979, many of the revolutionary punk bands, including the Clash, lessened the aggressive tone of their music, making it more palatable and accessible to a wider audience. This change initiated a move toward the new wave style. Elvis Costello (born Declan McManus in 1955) was a leader of this new movement. Whether it was due to his doubly nostalgic pseudonym or the gradual American acceptance of punk music, Costello's early recordings were moderately successful (*My Aim Is True*, number 32 in 1977; and *This Year's Model*, number 30 in 1978).

Underneath the punk attitude and the new wave musical veneer, his songwriting for these recordings reveals early signs of a skilled craftsman at work. In 1979, he launched his third major album, *Armed Forces*, with an American tour. The album rose to number 10, but in the midst of the tour, an incident occurred that had a transforming effect on Costello. He had been capitalizing on the mean, angry punk image quite successfully, but one night, in a Columbus, Ohio, bar, Costello publicly referred to Ray Charles as a "blind, ignorant nigger" and then went on to make similar comments about James Brown. Chastened severely in the press, Costello was embarrassed by the incident and subsequently apologized. According to Ken Tucker, Costello would "tone down his aggressive demeanor for the rest of the tour, and, indeed, for the next few years" (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 569). In some ways, that incident may have been a significant line of demarcation between punk and new wave.

Costello's songwriting talents began to be appreciated once the prohibitive shield of punkdom was penetrated. In fact, several of his songs have been covered by such singers as Linda Ronstadt and George Jones. Costello himself seemed to mellow somewhat, often recording oldies (*Taking Liberties*, 1980) and country-flavored material (*Almost Blue*, 1981). In the mid- to late 1990s, he teamed with pop songwriter Burt Bacharach for several successful albums, one of which (*Painted from Memory*, 1998) resulted in a Grammy Award. Costello continued to record prolifically in a wide range of musical styles; he recorded a collection of piano ballads that he composed, orchestrated, and conducted (*North*, 2003); an orchestral composition (*Il Sogno*, 2004); and then returned to his rock roots (*The Delivery Man*, 2004, followed by *The River in Reverse*, 2006, and *My Flame Burns Blue*, 2007).

America's Punk Minimovement

Although the punk movement made its greatest immediate impact in England, its roots lie in a handful of early- to mid-1960s American bands. Two prototypes were the Motor City Five (MC5) and the Velvet Underground. Formed in a suburb of Detroit in 1965, the MC5 released a series of influential recordings, including *Kick Out the Jams*, *Back in the USA*, and *High Time*, from 1969 to 1971. Also formed in 1965, the Velvet Underground was an eccentric band from New York City. Organized by classically trained pianist Lou Reed, the Underground defies categorization: Not only were they not in the mainstream, they were not in any stream but their own. Joining with John Cale, a classically trained violist and pianist from South Wales, guitarist Sterling Morrison, female drummer Maureen Tucker, and German-born female singer Nico, Reed christened the new group the Velvet Underground (after the name of a paperback book that was a survey of sadomasochism). They became a part of Andy Warhol's traveling "happenings," called the Exploding Plastic Inevitable.

Signed by MGM Records, the band released *The Velvet Underground and Nico* in 1967. Containing several explicit songs about drugs ("Heroin"), drug dealers ("I'm Waiting for the Man"), and sadomasochism ("Venus in Furs"), the album received very little radio play and died after reaching the number 171 position. Nico left the group, but the others released a highly experimental second album called *White Light/White Heat* in 1968. The title song was another drug song; "The Gift" consisted of a surrealistic, sexually oriented spoken lyric over a noisy, repetitive accompaniment. "I Heard Her Call My

beat at some points, while rushing ahead slightly at others—and the lax manner of his rhyming structure. Most of the time, couplet phrases rhyme, but sometimes they do not. To break up the quadruple meter and duple subdivision feel, the rapper periodically inserts triplet rhythms, providing a subtle lilt to the musical delivery.

With Eminem, the intensity of performance is a direct result of the delivery style. Mathers moves frequently and comfortably from intense, in-your-face machine gun delivery to taking apparent pleasure in mocking rap music . . . his own and that of other artists. As an early example of this artist's rap style, listen to "My Name Is" (on *The Slim Shady LP*). The opening lines—as the title and hook line suggest—tag the recording as being performed by alter ego Slim Shady. In particular, notice his use of the high-pitched "chicka-chicka" motive (a recurrent idea used on each of his recordings), a vocal attempt to replicate—parody?—a DJ's turntable scratching technique, a prominent element of many rap recordings. Apart from the meaning of the lyrics and the sometimes offensive subject matter, one of the most consistent rhythmic characteristic of this recording is that Eminem's vocal delivery is always ever so slightly behind the beat. This slightly dragging rhythmic sense is an effective technique to increase the level of tension and to enhance the sense of urgency perceived while listening to the music.

Finally, demonstrating a style with audible ties to New Jack Swing, OutKast members Dre (or Andre 3000) and Big Boi present a musical fabric that alternates between catchy melodic hooks and rap. As a result, OutKast represents a hybrid form of rap that uses the format of two rappers alternating back and forth and, at times, rapping in unison—a style obviously influenced by Run-D.M.C. This rhythmic vocal delivery is contrasted tastefully with melodic hooks. To hear a representative example of this music, listen to "So Fresh and So Clean" (from *Stankonia*). Notice how the syncopated melody of the chorus hook line appears periodically between rapped rhymes that constitute the verses. As you observe the verses, notice how the rhythmic rhyming of both rappers is delivered with a high degree of precision. Even the 16th-note subdivisions are performed nearly flawlessly, laying right in the groove. Also notice in the rapped verses that a line or couplet rhymed by one rapper or the other is often concluded in unison by both rappers. They also incorporate the hocket technique identified in the previous discussion about Run-D.M.C.

Even without the benefit of beautiful melodies, rap artists have numerous ways in which to embellish an expressive performance: altering the loudness, timbre, duration, and pitch range of the vocal delivery. With the concepts of expressive performance in mind, seek out examples of your own to compare and contrast the approach that various rap artists take to communicate a musical message via the rhythmic enunciation of their rhymes.

Alternative Styles

KEY TERMS

anomie
glitter
glam rock
punk rock

new wave
minimalism
grunge
Riot Grrrl

DIY
pop punk
indie
emo

Overview: Boomers and Postboomers

At the end of World War II, the United States experienced a significant increase in birthrate. This trend continued into the early 1960s. The resulting bulge in population is usually called the *baby boom*. Virtually every business in the nation, including the music industry, carefully followed (and attempted to predict) the movement of the boomers as they grew up and became consumers. They are counted not only as numbers, but as dollars. The spending power of the boomers will continue to be a major market influence well into the new millennium.

The boomers were the first generation that was raised almost entirely on rock music. Although they may have been rebels in the 1960s and 1970s, by the 1980s and 1990s, they began to settle down. They were by then doctors, lawyers, professors, and successful business executives. They married (usually several times) and raised families. With the arrival of the 21st century, many were beginning to look toward retirement. As is typically the case, many also became more conservative. The boomers continued to be most comfortable with things the way they were and were rather disturbed by the antics of their offspring. The economic strength of the boomers continued to be a major influence on the music industry into the new century, as older and more mainstream styles of rock once again became big business.

By the early 1970s, the boomers had begun having families of their own. As their children moved through their teens, from about the mid-1980s until 2000, they, too, wielded some economic influence. However, if the history of rock music tells us anything, we should expect that the postboomers, as was the case with their parents, would be drawn to musical styles that are clearly distinct from their parents' music. In fact, the more distinct—and even

repulsive—to their parents, the better. They sought alternative styles, which leads us to a closer consideration of that word.

Anomie and Alternatives

In the late 1980s and 1990s, certain rock groups and styles were referred to as alternative rock. Considering the entire history of rock music, this term seems redundant. Indeed, most rock music from its very beginning was “alternative” music. The young audiences in 1955 were fascinated by the music of Fats Domino, Chuck Berry, and Bill Haley, precisely because it represented a real alternative to the pop styles of Tony Bennett, Nat “King” Cole, and Eddie Fisher. The music of Elvis Presley, Little Richard, and Buddy Holly (and many others) continued this alternative style. When mainstream rock seemed to fade in popularity in the early 1960s, the young audiences again went crazy (literally) over the new sounds of the Beatles and the Rolling Stones. It was an exciting new alternative to the soft rock, pop, and rockabilly that had dominated the charts for several prior years (see “Overview” in Chapter 5). One can trace this fascination with the alternative throughout rock history. Heavy metal, punk rock, gangsta rap—these and other styles can be seen as reactions (or alternatives) to styles that enjoyed mainstream popularity. However redundant it may be in the context of rock history, the term *alternative rock* seemed to have been accepted in the 1990s. This chapter will examine more closely its various substyles.

Before incorporating the term *alternative* into our discussion, let us consider its implications just a bit further. In the early 1960s, we observed a brief period of fragmentation within the music market (see Chapter 5), but the overwhelming power of the Beatles—at least temporarily—overcame that fragmentation. However, in the 1970s, the fragmentation resumed with a vengeance (see Chapter 14). *Fragmentation*, of course, is simply a word that describes an explosion of alternatives. Generally speaking, we think of alternatives as being good. After all, it is nice to have a wide array of choices. However, is it possible to have too many choices? Can the presence of too many choices virtually paralyze us? Consider coming home from work or school and thinking, “Gee, I think I’ll listen to some music,” but while perusing the contents of your MP3 player, you are stymied. A Beethoven symphony would be nice. Or are you more in the mood for the Rolling Stones? Maybe some light jazz would be pleasant. Do you want to hear Radiohead or Chicago? Frustrated, you say to yourself, “Oh heck; I can’t decide. Maybe I’ll watch some TV instead.”

Perhaps you can recreate similar cases of decisional paralysis—“Oh, to heck with it!”—when you are confronted with over 100 TV channels, 200 kinds of wine, dozens of varieties of mustard, or a dizzying array of magazines on the rack. Of course, these decisions (or nondecisions) are not of life-shattering importance. However, what if the multiplicity of choices—alternatives—exists in more important realms such as values and lifestyles? Easy, you might say. You just figure out what is good (meaning healthy, safe, and wise) and what is bad. Again, what if society has purged those terms and concepts from our vocabulary and thinking? What if things are no longer good or bad, right or wrong, but merely “alternative”? The implication is that all of those choices are equally acceptable.

In the late 1960s, the boomers seriously questioned the values of the “establishment.” Among other things, this led to the antihero phenomenon (see “Overview” in Chapter 8). In effect, this resulted in a reversal of traditional values to the extent that good became bad and bad became good (we will develop this thought further in Chapter 19). In the intervening decades, there has been an increasing hesitation to render value judgments about what is good or bad, right or wrong, better or worse. This philosophy of egalitarianism—that all things should be equal—was implied in the late 1960s and early 1970s by the phrase “different strokes for different folks.” In other words, what is right for one person may not be right for another. There was no firm definition of what was right; it all depended on the person or circumstances. All things were relative, rather than absolute. In the late 1980s

and 1990s, some school districts advocated teaching *situational ethics*. This philosophy suggested that there is no absolute right or wrong; instead, what was right or wrong varied according to the situation. The desire to avoid stigmatizing some individuals or circumstances led to phrases such as *alternative lifestyles* and *alternatively abled*. People spoke of alternative medicine and alternative cuisine. Of course, we had alternative music. Indeed, the word *alternative* became one of the buzzwords of the 1990s.

Too many choices among equals (or alternatives) can lead to an inability to make any choice at all. The postboomers seem to have grown up with little or no guidance regarding values because, after all, if all alternatives are equal, then there is no difference in value (and hence no value at all). By extension, there are no standards because all things are simply equal alternatives. There need be no rules because there is no better or worse behavior.

The French have a word that seems to apply in this situation: **anomie**. It refers to a person or society that lacks purpose, identity, or ethical values, thus leading to a feeling of rootlessness. Some writers have referred to the postboomers as *Generation X*—a generation without an identity. Adolescent psychiatrists tell us that children and teenagers actually need and crave limits, rules, standards, and values, even though they may protest to the contrary. If this is true, we can understand why those without clearly defined boundaries might feel angry and betrayed. In frustration, they push further and further against what they believe to be society's norms, just to see how far they can go before forcing society to say, "Enough!" The tragedies at Columbine High School on April 20, 1999, and Virginia Polytech Institute on April 16, 2007, are just two examples of this attitude taken to its extremes. Keep this in mind as you read about the excesses evident in some styles of rap music (Chapter 17) and the more extreme styles of alternative rock in this chapter. As we consider the music of the postboomers, note that oftentimes, the music and lyrics seem angry. Often, the performers appear to be angry, as do their audiences. Whereas young girls used to sob uncontrollably at performances by Frank Sinatra, Elvis Presley, or the Beatles, now both females and males in the audience often seem to be mad at the world. Could it be that the availability of too many alternatives has led to a generation severely affected with anomie? The baby boomers protested because they did not like the establishment; their offspring may be protesting because of the lack of an establishment.

Alternative Rock: The Problem of Definitions

Throughout this text, we have been careful about the use of certain words when they are intended to connote a specific musical style. *Pop*, *mainstream*, *R&B*, and other terms have all maintained an intended distinction, based on specific, identifiable musical characteristics. At the conclusion of the 20th century, the diversity of musical styles (branches of the rock and roll genealogical tree) became so numerous that it makes the fragmentation during the 1960s and 1970s seem minor by comparison. At the same time, a high level of cross pollination between styles was occurring, resulting in many new stylistic labels for these various hybrids. Many of these subgenres are very difficult, if not impossible, to define (e.g., New Jack Swing, neo-soul, hip-hop, house music, trip hop, trance, electronica, rave, techno, speed metal, rap metal, and many others).

In addition, terms that have become familiar from earlier chapters have begun to take on different meanings. The term *rhythm and blues* provides a case in point. This term is no longer used to describe only the branch of the rock music tree that has its roots in the R&B of the 1940s and 1950s, but it is now often used to describe much different music (e.g., some subcategories of rap are now considered R&B). Pop, as defined by *Billboard's* online list of "Top Pop Catalog Albums," includes artists as diverse as Creed, Enya, U2, Pink Floyd, Metallica, Dixie Chicks, Miles Davis, Sade, Michael Jackson, *NSYNC, and Celine Dion. Only the latter artist would have been a likely candidate for pop as defined in earlier

chapters, and this label would not be appropriate for all of the music she has recorded. Further evidence of the blurring of boundaries can be found by listening to the music itself. The song “Pop” (number 19 in 2001) from *NSYNC’s *Celebrity* derived as much from hip-hop and techno dance music as from the musical style after which the song is named. Listen carefully to the final section of the single, in which members of the group themselves become a virtual drum machine, providing the dance beat by making vocal sounds that are then heavily processed by the recording engineer.

Use of the term *mainstream*, as if discussing a particular musical style, has become particularly problematic. A quick look at albums attaining multiplatinum status—tangible socioeconomic evidence of mainstream appeal—during the first two months of 2002 provides a glimpse of the diversity of taste inherent in the record-buying public at the time (see Table 18–1). At a time when alternative music (Linkin Park), rap and R&B artists (Ja Rule, Nelly Furtado, Shakira, and Usher), Latin music (Enrique Iglesias), and Christian rock (Creed and a various artist gospel recording) were all listed alongside the Dave Matthews Band, Nickelback, and Pink Floyd, the meaning of *mainstream* became diluted to the point of being meaningless. It is worth noting that the three best-selling albums of 2001 were Shaggy’s reggae crossover *Hotshot*, new age artist Enya’s *A Day Without Rain*, and boy band *NSYNC’s *Celebrity*.

As a result of the evolving definitions of these stylistic labels, the distinction between mainstream and alternative artists made in this chapter will be based not on musical style, but on artist intent. We will define *mainstream artists* as those who approached their craft in a manner similar to that of a corporation seeking to turn a profit, using music as a commodity. In contrast, artists in the alternative category, at least in the early years of their professional music careers, actively spurned the trappings of the business side of the industry, seeking rather to express themselves artistically, whether there was money to be made or not. This approach is quite similar to the independent record labels of the 1950s. In fact,

TABLE 18–1

Artist	Album Title	Number Albums Sold by Feb. 2002 (in millions)
Creed	<i>Weathered</i>	5
Destiny’s Child	<i>Survivor</i>	4
Enya	<i>A Day Without Rain</i>	6
Nelly Furtado	<i>Whoa, Nelly!</i>	2
Enrique Iglesias	<i>Escape</i>	2
Ja Rule	<i>Pain Is Love</i>	2
Michael Jackson	<i>Invincible</i>	2
Linkin Park	<i>Hybrid Theory</i>	7
Dave Matthews Band	<i>Everyday</i>	3
Nickelback	<i>Silver Side Up</i>	3
Pink	<i>Missundaztood</i>	2
Pink Floyd	<i>Echoes: The Best of Pink Floyd</i>	3
Shakira	<i>Laundry Service</i>	2
Sound track	<i>Coyote Ugly</i>	3
Sound track	<i>O Brother, Where Art Thou?</i>	4
Usher	<i>8701</i>	3
Various artists	<i>Songs 4 Worship: Shout to the Lord</i>	2

many of these artists intentionally chose to associate with an indie, rather than a major recording conglomerate, in an attempt to avoid the corporate money-making machine. Some artists, including Ani DiFranco, even established their own record labels, marketing and distributing their recordings. In this sense, the alternative approach is a state of mind that distinguishes it from the mainstream commercial approach of other artists.

The Beginnings of Alternative Rock: The 1970s

Glitter Rock

Since its earliest days, one of rock music's central themes has been the relationship between the sexes. Whether soft rock and rockabilly artists were singing about love, or mainstream artists were implicitly or explicitly singing about sex, the assumption was that both the love and the sex were heterosexual. This is a natural continuation of the traditions in the roots of rock. In the early 1970s, an offshoot of the British mainstream known as **glitter** or **glam rock** varied from this norm. Certainly these rockers were presenting an alternative to mainstream music by expressing their own individuality, portraying androgynous stage characters, with little thought for mainstream commercial success.

The unquestioned leader of this early alternative trend was David Bowie, one of the true enigmas of rock. He has been compared to a chameleon—able to change his persona radically and seemingly endlessly. When describing Bowie, most writers speak of his theatricality, his symbolic role, and his complicated psyche. His music is rarely the central focus. Indeed, Bowie was not a great musical innovator; he seemed to be more an actor who used rock music as his medium of communication.

Bowie (born in South London in January 1947) changed his name in 1966 from David Jones to David Bowie to avoid confusion with Davy Jones of the Monkees. As a teenager, he pursued his talent for art by working for a commercial art company and a London advertising agency; his theatrical abilities carried him into a mime company, avant-garde films, and a few commercials. Looking for his own musical style, he tried being a Dylan-like folksinger, an Anthony Newley-type pop singer, and a member of various local rock bands.



After several unspectacular albums, Bowie produced *The Man Who Sold the World* (1970). It contained some rather morose songs about his bizarre upbringing. The album cover depicted Bowie dressed to resemble either Lauren Bacall (Helander 1982, 49) or a “swishy blunt-cut Beau Brummel” (White 1984, 202). Openly admitting his bisexuality, Bowie soon found his style being referred to as glitter rock or glam rock. He began to project a purposely androgynous image.

David Bowie as Ziggy Stardust
(Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./
Getty Images Inc. — Los Angeles)

He created a character named Ziggy Stardust. His first album as Ziggy, *The Rise and Fall of Ziggy Stardust and the Spiders from Mars* (1972), revealed Bowie's ability to shift his musical gears. The opening moments of "Rock 'n' Roll Suicide" sound like Dylan; "It Ain't Easy" reminds us of R&B; and songs like "Star" and "Suffragette City" are good old rock and roll. The Ziggy Stardust tour of the United States that same year featured Bowie's peculiar mixture of bizarre makeup and costumes, elaborate lighting and staging, and camp theatricality. Bowie reached a peak of popularity in 1974 with *Diamond Dogs* and a live album, *David Live*, his first Top 10 albums. The Diamond Dogs tour to the United States included a \$250,000 set; however, midway through the tour, Bowie scrapped it and changed to a stark, plain style. Gone, too, was the orange hair and the deathly white face. Young Americans, released in 1975, contained elements of soul, R&B, and even disco ("Fame"). Promoting that album, Bowie toured in 1976 with a new image: dressed in black, except for a white dress shirt, blond hair slicked back.

After spending nearly a year in Berlin developing his next dramatic shift, Bowie reemerged in early 1977 with the first of three albums recorded in collaboration with art rock composer-performer Brian Eno. These three albums, *Low* (1977), *Heroes* (1977), and *Lodger* (1979), experiment with the heavily electronic minimalist sound of some late 1970s art rock. By 1980, the true actor in Bowie came to the fore. He had appeared in several earlier films, but with his starring role in *The Elephant Man* (live on tour and on Broadway), he achieved critical acclaim.

Bowie's success (and his ever-changing looks) continued into the new century with CD re-releases of his early recordings, new collaborations (Brian Eno and Trent Reznor), and innovative use of the Internet for marketing his music and new releases.

Back in 1976, Bowie had commented, "I consider myself responsible for a whole new school of pretensions" (Miller 1980, 389). Certainly, prior to Bowie, rock had prided itself on its rough-and-ready macho image (even Grace Slick and Janis Joplin belted and shouted lyrics in an aggressive, masculine way) and its unpretentious sincerity, but Bowie's theatrical makeup, orange hair, effeminate image, and fictional stage personae presented a new phenomenon. He was putting on a show; it was not real, it was theater. The effect on other performers, such as Elton John, Alice Cooper, Kiss, and Boy George, is easily recognized. Although these performers had dramatically different musical styles, all devised costumes or makeup and presented a theatrical show.

A somewhat similar image was projected by Boy George (born George O'Dowd in London in 1961). He combined the androgynous glitter image of David Bowie with a soft rock sound. Complete with female makeup, clothing, and hairstyle, Boy George sang in a soft, gentle voice that kept early fans guessing: Was it a he or a she? His group, Culture Club, hit its peak popularity in the early 1980s with a series of Top 10 songs in 1983 and 1984, including the number 1 "Karma Chameleon." Gradually pulling back from the androgynous look, Boy George nevertheless saw his career derailed by his severe drug addiction. Other British acts that aligned with the glitter rock trend were Mark Bolan's T. Rex, Gary Glitter, Mott the Hoople, and Roxy Music.

Punk Movements: Back to Basics

Punk I: The British Punks

One of the offshoots of the harder branch of mainstream rock was actually a rebellion against most of the other trends within rock, including soft rock, art rock, jazz fusion, heavy metal, and disco. As was the case with several 1970s rock trends, the focal point of **punk rock** was not musical, but extramusical. As Keith Richard commented, "I don't think there was anything new musically, or even from the PR point of view, image-wise.

There was too much image . . . and the music seemed to be the least important thing. It was more important if you puked over somebody" (Shaw 1982, 293).

Punk rock can be considered as (1) the ultimate rebellion against virtually all forms of post-1960s rock and against society in general, (2) the ultimate extension of the harder side of mainstream rock initiated by the Stones and other British blues-based bands, or (3) both of the above. Punk enthusiasts prefer the first explanation because they enjoy their self-image as ultimate rebels. Future rock historians may prefer the second explanation because, indeed, most of the elements of punk rock were simply the reduction ad absurdum of hard mainstream rock. It is also possible that the truth is a combination of both explanations.

The harder style of mainstream rock, from the Stones through heavy metal, set itself in opposition to the sophisticated experimentation and artistic ambitions of the post-Beatles branch of mainstream rock. Hard rockers stressed simplicity and repetitiveness; they preferred basic rock and roll; they hoped to shock "straight" society. The punks extended all these characteristics, playing music that was even simpler, more repetitive, and louder; their lyrics were patently gross; their images and antics were far more shocking. While extending these characteristics, they openly rebelled against the long, technically demanding instrumental solos, the serious art rock aspirations, and the wealthy, commercially successful rock star syndrome of many mainstream groups.

The first major British punk group was the Sex Pistols, formed in 1975. Basing their act on several prior "punk" bands from the United States (the Ramones and the New York Dolls), they played simple, loud rock and roll that reverted to the musical vocabulary of the hardest 1950s style, but with considerably less skill and taste. Lead singer Johnny Rotten (John Lydon) had never sung before joining the Pistols. But, as Keith Richard said, the music was not really the point. Signed by EMI, the Pistols released a single, "Anarchy in the UK," in 1976; it became a minor British hit. In early 1977, the Pistols appeared on London's *Today* television show; when host Bill Grundy asked Rotten to say something outrageous, he responded with several choice profanities. As a result, "Anarchy" became a bigger hit. The Pistols were denounced everywhere, from Parliament to the newspapers, and EMI dropped them like a hot potato. On their 21-date tour, all but three concerts were canceled or stopped in progress.

A&M Records signed the band, now including Sid Vicious (John Ritchie) on bass, and subsequently dropped them—all in one week's time. Finally, Virgin Records signed them to a new contract and released a sarcastic version of "God Save the Queen," which became a major British hit. Their one and only album, *Never Mind the Bullocks, Here's the Sex Pistols*, was released in late 1977. In early 1978, they attempted a U.S. tour, complete with considerable promotional hype. However, the act was a bit too much for American audiences, and the tour was abandoned in San Francisco. Rotten quit (or was fired) and formed a new band, Public Image, Ltd. The Sex Pistols continued through 1978, but in October, Sid Vicious was charged with murdering his girlfriend, Nancy Spungen, in Manhattan. He was found dead of an apparent drug overdose in Greenwich Village in early 1979.

Sex Pistols performances included vulgar lyrics, shocking onstage antics (sticking large pins in their bodies or slashing themselves with razor blades and broken bottles), and slapping members of the audience. As a social or psychological phenomenon, the punk trend may be deemed significant; as a musical style, it was important only to see just how bad rock and roll could get. As Lydon (Rotten) himself said later, "The Sex Pistols were a fiasco. A farce" (Miller 1980, 462).

The other major British punk band, the Clash, sounded significantly more musical when compared with the Sex Pistols. Slightly less outrageous than the Pistols in terms of lyrics and antics, the Clash nevertheless carried on the musical style of simple, basic, and repetitive harmonies, simple melodies, basic rhythms, and lots of screaming and distortion. The Clash released their first album in 1977. Not unlike the 1960s folkies, the Clash



The Sex Pistols (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

included songs that protested everything: boring jobs, police, America, rock music, violence, and racism. The growing affinity between the punks and reggae music was illustrated in “Police and Thieves” and “White Man in Hammersmith Palais.” *London Calling* (1979) made the Top 30 in the United States, as did the single “Train in Vain (Stand by Me).” The band actually broke the Top 10 with the album *Combat Rock* (1982) and a single, “Rock the Casbah.”

There were many other punk bands that wielded significant influence over musical developments during the following years. One of the most prolific of these groups, the Fall, was a British group from Manchester. Lead vocalist Mark E. Smith, the sole constant in the band’s surprisingly long career, was a harbinger of white rappers (see Chapter 17). With their tuneful single “Totally Wired” (1981), the band seemed to follow the move of many toward the new wave style. The Mekons and Joy Division are two other British punk bands worthy of mention. Both bands proved to have tremendous staying power, evolving musically from punk (or perhaps postpunk) to heavily electronic dance music. Following the suicide of lead singer Ian Curtis in 1980, Joy Division added a keyboard player and changed their name to New Order. The regrouped band’s breakthrough single was 1983’s “Blue Monday.”

With the negative publicity received in 1978 to 1979 by the Sex Pistols and other punk bands, some sought to establish a new name for this music with less negative connotations. Thus the term **new wave** was introduced. As Arnold Shaw notes, one can view new wave as an offshoot of punk, somewhat subtler and less prone to the gruesome, the overtly repulsive, and the sadomasochistic; or *new wave* may simply be a term coined to escape the criticism and censure heaped on punk groups (Shaw 1982). As is often the case, the truth may be a bit of both. Most bands (and their record companies) can tolerate—and at times even encourage—public outrage, unless it becomes so extreme that customers refuse to buy records and concert tickets. Also, it is understandable that impaling oneself with pins and slicing one’s chest open with broken glass begins, after a few performances, to lose its appeal, even to the most devoted of fans and performers.

Beginning in about 1979, many of the revolutionary punk bands, including the Clash, lessened the aggressive tone of their music, making it more palatable and accessible to a wider audience. This change initiated a move toward the new wave style. Elvis Costello (born Declan McManus in 1955) was a leader of this new movement. Whether it was due to his doubly nostalgic pseudonym or the gradual American acceptance of punk music, Costello's early recordings were moderately successful (*My Aim Is True*, number 32 in 1977; and *This Year's Model*, number 30 in 1978).

Underneath the punk attitude and the new wave musical veneer, his songwriting for these recordings reveals early signs of a skilled craftsman at work. In 1979, he launched his third major album, *Armed Forces*, with an American tour. The album rose to number 10, but in the midst of the tour, an incident occurred that had a transforming effect on Costello. He had been capitalizing on the mean, angry punk image quite successfully, but one night, in a Columbus, Ohio, bar, Costello publicly referred to Ray Charles as a "blind, ignorant nigger" and then went on to make similar comments about James Brown. Chastened severely in the press, Costello was embarrassed by the incident and subsequently apologized. According to Ken Tucker, Costello would "tone down his aggressive demeanor for the rest of the tour, and, indeed, for the next few years" (Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 569). In some ways, that incident may have been a significant line of demarcation between punk and new wave.

Costello's songwriting talents began to be appreciated once the prohibitive shield of punkdom was penetrated. In fact, several of his songs have been covered by such singers as Linda Ronstadt and George Jones. Costello himself seemed to mellow somewhat, often recording oldies (*Taking Liberties*, 1980) and country-flavored material (*Almost Blue*, 1981). In the mid- to late 1990s, he teamed with pop songwriter Burt Bacharach for several successful albums, one of which (*Painted from Memory*, 1998) resulted in a Grammy Award. Costello continued to record prolifically in a wide range of musical styles; he recorded a collection of piano ballads that he composed, orchestrated, and conducted (*North*, 2003); an orchestral composition (*Il Sogno*, 2004); and then returned to his rock roots (*The Delivery Man*, 2004, followed by *The River in Reverse*, 2006, and *My Flame Burns Blue*, 2007).

America's Punk Minimovement

Although the punk movement made its greatest immediate impact in England, its roots lie in a handful of early- to mid-1960s American bands. Two prototypes were the Motor City Five (MC5) and the Velvet Underground. Formed in a suburb of Detroit in 1965, the MC5 released a series of influential recordings, including *Kick Out the Jams*, *Back in the USA*, and *High Time*, from 1969 to 1971. Also formed in 1965, the Velvet Underground was an eccentric band from New York City. Organized by classically trained pianist Lou Reed, the Underground defies categorization: Not only were they not in the mainstream, they were not in any stream but their own. Joining with John Cale, a classically trained violist and pianist from South Wales, guitarist Sterling Morrison, female drummer Maurcen Tucker, and German-born female singer Nico, Reed christened the new group the Velvet Underground (after the name of a paperback book that was a survey of sadomasochism). They became a part of Andy Warhol's traveling "happenings," called the Exploding Plastic Inevitable.

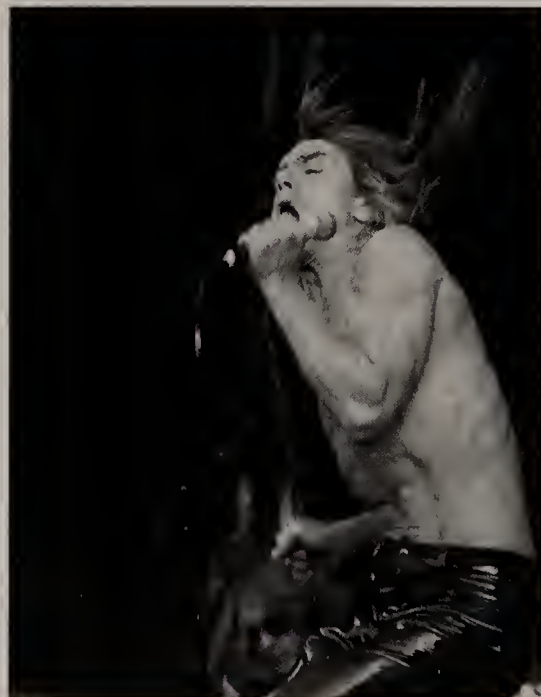
Signed by MGM Records, the band released *The Velvet Underground and Nico* in 1967. Containing several explicit songs about drugs ("Heroin"), drug dealers ("I'm Waiting for the Man"), and sadomasochism ("Venus in Furs"), the album received very little radio play and died after reaching the number 171 position. Nico left the group, but the others released a highly experimental second album called *White Light/White Heat* in 1968. The title song was another drug song; "The Gift" consisted of a surrealistic, sexually oriented spoken lyric over a noisy, repetitive accompaniment. "I Heard Her Call My



The Velvet Underground and Nico (Source: © 1966 Fred W. McDarrah)

Name” was an early experiment in distortion and feedback; the 17-minute “Sister Ray” contained half-sung, half-spoken sexually explicit lyrics over a heavily distorted, repetitive accompaniment. This avant-garde album peaked at number 199. The Underground staggered along for several years before finally disbanding in 1972. As an anticommercial, antiestablishment, avant-garde band, complete with emphasis on drugs and sex, the Velvet Underground was an early forerunner of the punk movement.

Not far behind was Iggy Pop and the Stooges. James Osterberg (Iggy Pop) was from Ann Arbor, Michigan. In 1967, he formed a quartet that specialized in loud, simple, and repetitive music, which served as a background for Osterberg’s outrageous antics. According to Brock Helander (1982, 577), “Over the years, his notoriety grew with deeds such as threatening and vilifying audiences, cutting himself with broken bottles, pouring hot wax over his body, intentionally smashing his teeth, and throwing up, even urinating on audiences and allowing ardent fans to perform fellatio on him.”



Iggy and the Stooges’s 1969 debut album was produced by the Velvet Underground’s John Cale. After this and the follow-up album fared poorly, the band went to England to work with David Bowie. Bowie produced their third album, *Raw Power*, which is often cited as an archetype, not only of the punk trend, but also for the heavy metal style. By 1974, the band had disintegrated. Several years later, Iggy teamed up with David Bowie again and released several more albums. In the early 1980s, he made another tour, complete with more outrageous antics. Even more than the Velvet Underground, Iggy Pop became the prototype of the punk style of the late 1970s.

Iggy Pop (Source: Toby Jacobs/Lebrecht Music & Arts Photo Library)

If the punk style flourished anywhere in the United States, it was in New York City. Following in the footsteps of the Velvet Underground came Patti Smith, who recited her poetry over the sounds of a drummerless duo or trio of instrumentalists. The Patti Smith Group released four albums during the 1970s, two of which, *Easter* (1978) and *Wave* (1979), made the Top 20. Smith dropped out of the music scene in the early 1980s when she moved to Detroit and married MC5 guitarist Fred “Sonic” Smith. In the late 1980s, she returned to the recording studio and released a series of albums, including the politically scathing election year release of *Trampin’* (2004). From Queens came the Ramones, a quartet that established an early punk image with their torn T-shirts and black leather jackets. The relatively small punk movement in the United States stayed loyal to the Ramones, allowing two of their albums to crack the Top 50 (*Rocket to Russia*, 1977; *End of the Century*, 1980). They specialized in very brief songs with simple lyrics that were performed at breakneck speed. Crossing between the punk movement and the glitter rock trend were the New York Dolls. Adopting eccentric costumes and sometimes androgynous makeup, the Dolls combined an amateurish primitivism with raw violence. Their brief appearance on the scene yielded two albums in 1973 and 1974.

The two 1970s punk–new wave bands that appear likely to claim a significant place in rock history are the Talking Heads, led by David Byrne, and the Police (whose lead singer, Sting, has had an extremely successful solo career). Emerging from the New York punk scene in 1977, the Talking Heads led the way from punk to new wave. They generally avoided the eccentric costumes and onstage antics and drew on contemporary classical trends to create a more sophisticated style. Their early lyrics often emphasized the struggle between the individual and society.

The Heads’ first four albums were produced by Brian Eno, an English art rock musician who had once been a member of Roxy Music. Eno experimented with the latest in electronic technology: synthesizers, tape manipulation, and computerized keyboards. By the beginning of the 1980s, Eno was forming a bridge to a subcategory of contemporary classical music often called **minimalism** (also called *pattern music* and *process music*). The minimalists created their music by designing a limited number of tonal sequences or patterns of unequal length; then, as these patterns repeated over and over, they created a constantly shifting overall sound. The basic concept of the minimalists’ simple, repetitive patterns was naturally appealing to rock musicians (and vice versa). In late 1970s New York City, rock musicians such as Eno, Robert Fripp (also formerly of Roxy Music), and Fred Frith were drawn to the music of minimalist composers like Philip Glass and Steve Reich.

Talking Heads’ albums, such as *Remain in Light* (1980), illustrate a rock style adaptation of the minimalist principles. When transferred to rock, the patterns were modified to conform to the regular quadruple meter, but one can hear the reliance on steady, unchanging patterns layered throughout the instrumental accompaniment. The result is an elaborate drone effect: It sounds rather robotlike and emotionless, as if some great machine were grinding out the music. For example, in “The Overload,” a steady drone persists throughout; the drum pattern is unchanging; the vocal line is sung as if it were a somber chant; only various electronic sounds color the otherwise unchanging sound environment. In songs like “Once in a Lifetime” and “Houses in Motion,” with their reliance on spoken lyrics over a constantly repetitive accompaniment, one is reminded of the old Velvet Underground of the late 1960s. One also hears influences of reggae and other black styles in the music of the Talking Heads (“Houses in Motion” is a good example). They even managed a Top 10 hit in 1983 with “Burning Down the House.” The Heads continued to evolve through the mid-1980s, and lead singer David Byrne continued a highly successful and prolific solo career into the first decade of the 21st century.

Also derivative of the punk movement and influenced by the new wave trend were the Police, a British trio headed by lead singer Sting (born Gordon Sumner in 1951). Originally

formed in 1977, it was not until 1980 that major success came with their third album, *Zenyatta Mondatta*. The Police's peak came in 1983 with *Synchronicity*, their first number 1 album. The album included mainstream rock in the form of the title song (parts 1 and 2), reggae references ("Walking in Your Footsteps"), punk influence ("Mother"), soft rock (the number 1 song "Every Breath You Take"), and even a touch of jazz rock ("Tea in the Sahara"). As was often the case with the Police, the lyrics were quite introspective and intellectually oriented, with hints of new age philosophy. After the band broke up, Sting's musical career as a solo artist proved quite impressive, including eight Top 10 albums between 1985 and 2003 and numerous hit singles. Confirming the magnitude of his star power, Sting managed to place a collection of music by John Dowland, an influential English composer and lutenist of the late 16th and early 17th centuries, at number 25 on the *Billboard* Hot 200 (*Songs from the Labyrinth*, 2006). In 2007, all three members of the Police came together for a reunion tour.

Growing out of the new wave movement were groups like Blondie, Pere Ubu, and Devo. The latter (from Akron, Ohio) took the idea of the machinelike, repetitive patterns and created a robotlike sound, using short, clipped vocals and instrumental lines. The result was an antiseptic rock sound, seemingly devoid of emotion—almost as far from soul music as one can get. Pere Ubu (from Cleveland) was similar in some ways, but the vocals of David Thomas varied from blunt, choppy declarative phrases and repeating words and phrases to sudden bursts of emotive squawks and shouts. Generally (with the exception of the Talking Heads), new wave seems to have been a brief fad during the transition to the 1980s and has had little long-term impact on the evolution of rock music.

Alternative Styles

The roots of alternative music can be found in the return to the basics of rock considered essential by the punk movement: Keep the music simple, limit the number and length of instrumental solos, and play with an attitude. Harbingers of these dissenters from the mainstream of rock began to appear in the 1960s; for example, the Velvet Underground (laying a foundation for the punk movement) and Captain Beefheart (eclectic pioneer of art rock). A similar reversion to musical simplicity and overt antisocial behavior was one of the distinctive characteristics in the split between the Beatles and the Rolling Stones during the 1960s (see Chapter 7). Though one of the difficulties inherent in any discussion of alternative music is the wide range of styles subsumed under this heading, it is possible to identify three main trends: postpunk hardcore music, thrash metal, and grunge. Having discussed thrash metal in Chapter 15, we will now take a close look at hardcore and grunge, along with their derivatives, all of which are commonly referred to as alternative.

Punk II: Postpunk Hardcore

A number of bands, both in America and England, refused to follow the new wave directions, developing instead into the hardcore movement of the early 1980s. These hardcore bands form a direct link between the punk rock of the late 1970s and the emergent forms of alternative music in the 1980s and 1990s. Formation of the SST record label in Southern California provided a means for bands like Black Flag (whose guitarist Greg Ginn had founded the label) and the Minutemen to record and distribute their music without the support of a major recording company. Following in the footsteps of their punk rock progenitors, the hardcore bands took loudness, intensity, tempo, and nihilism to new extremes.

Two premier hardcore bands of the early 1980s, X and Black Flag, served as prototypes for hard rock bands of the postpunk era. Combining the hyperactive guitar banging and pulsating drum rhythms of punk rock with lyrics expressing dark disillusionment and distrust, John Doe (John Nommensen, bass and vocals), Exene Cervenka (Christine Cervenka,

vocals), Billy Zoom (Tyson Kindale, guitar), and Don J. Bonebrake formed X in 1977, evolving out of the Los Angeles punk scene. “Nausea,” “Sex and Dying in High Society,” and “We’re Desperate” are typical examples of the band’s sound and message. In addition to founding SST Records, Greg Ginn (guitar) and Charles Dukowski (bass) added a party animal aesthetic to the nihilistic angst of the hardcore movement. Exuding a feeling of disillusionment, Henry Rollins (Black Flag’s vocalist since 1981) professed to be the typical product of a dysfunctional family. In discussing his feelings about life, he said, “I don’t know jack shit about love, or about feeling a relationship with a blood relative. That shit means nothing to me” (Szatmary 2007, 296). Such sentiments were expressed musically in songs like “Depression,” “Dead Inside,” and “Life of Pain” to the accompaniment of loud, distorted guitars and driving rhythms.

A large number of other bands could be included in the hardcore rock category, some of the most prominent of which were the Germs, Hüsker Dü, the Replacements, Dead Kennedys, the Circle Jerks (formed by founding Black Flag vocalist Keith Morris), and Suicidal Tendencies. However, because the hardcore movement served as a bridge between the punk music of the 1970s and the alternative movement of the late 1980s, we will turn now to developments relevant to these later musical styles.

Grunge

The Pixies

One of the most influential bands of the late 1980s, the Pixies laid the musical foundation on which **grunge** and much of the alternative music that followed is based. Cited as a primary musical influence by Nirvana’s Kurt Cobain, the Pixies had but one album that reached the Top 100 (*Doolittle*, 1989). Formed in Boston during 1986, Black Francis (born Charles Michael Kitteridge Thompson IV; guitar and vocals), Joey Santiago (guitar), Kim Deal (bass), and David Lovering (drums) began as Pixies in Panoply, releasing an EP in 1987, followed the next year by their first full-length recording *Surfer Rosa*. A staple of the Pixies’ musical style was the use of a soft verse alternating with a hard rocking chorus, a style frequently adopted in the music of Nirvana. Though Pixies recordings continued to be released in the early 1990s, the high level of tension between band members resulted in a series of solo projects and the eventual breakup of the group. Solo projects by Black Francis and those by Kim Deal (both the Breeders and the Amps) exerted a significant impact on the burgeoning alternative music scene. In a surprise chain of events, the Pixies reunited for a world tour in 2004, performing a series of sold-out tour dates.

Emerging from the Seattle area at the end of the 1980s, grunge proved to be the most commercially successful subgenre of the alternative music scene. Driven by the belief that the basis of artistic freedom was to provide an outlet so musicians could maintain artistic control over their material, instead of turning this responsibility over to a major record company, Bruce Pavitt turned an unsuccessful record store venture into a highly successful regional label called Sub Pop Records. Of course, it is likely that many of the bands that found their way to Sub Pop could not have attracted the attention of any major label, due to their raw musical style and the state of the music industry at the time. As a result, Pavitt began his career in the recording business by releasing a compilation of music written and performed by regional bands from the Pacific Northwest, titled *Sub Pop 100*. His next release was an EP by Green River, a local band with a sound that would soon become associated with the Northwest. Two members of Green River left to form Mudhoney in 1988, one of the earliest grunge bands and Sub Pop’s biggest-selling group during these early years. The other two members of Green River formed Mother Love Bone (one of the first Seattle bands to sign with a major label) and later achieved superstardom as Pearl Jam.

Musical characteristics of this early form of grunge were closely related to the hardcore sound and, therefore, to the punk music of the 1970s. The apparent purpose behind grunge and, for that matter, hardcore or thrash metal is not aesthetic beauty of the sort revered by the mainstream pop culture. Rather, these alternative artists revel in dissonance, the sound that purposely pervades their music at almost every turn, as if challenging the listener to move away from the comfortable place of the familiar, the tried and true.

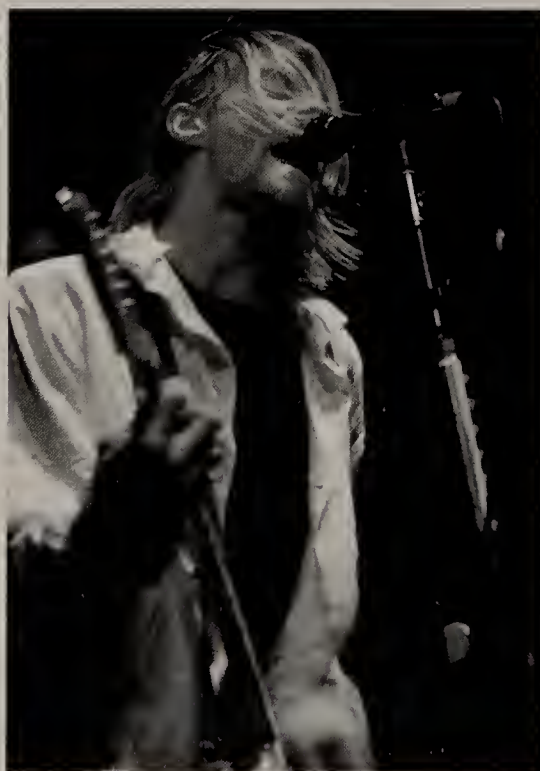
Though the musical characteristics of grunge were often intentionally uncomfortable to listen to, there was an element of tolerance in the lyrics. Songwriters like Kurt Cobain of Nirvana were openly progay and prowoman. Whereas the lyrics of punk rock commonly spewed messages of hate at the establishment and the world in general, grunge artists tended more toward self-reflection, taking that same intense hatred and turning it inward in a form of self-loathing.

Nirvana

Though Sub Pop's first real success story came with two EPs by Soundgarden, *Screaming Life* (1987) and *Fopp* (1988), credit for bringing the sound of Seattle grunge to the mainstream rock audience must go to Nirvana. Influenced musically by local punk band the Melvins, Black Flag, San Francisco's Flipper, Black Sabbath, and the Pixies, Kurt Cobain and childhood friend Krist Novoselic formed Nirvana in 1987. The group signed with Sub Pop Records the following year. Typical of the production that went into recordings made by most of their grunge contemporaries, Nirvana's debut album (*Bleach*, 1989) was recorded for a total cost of \$606.17 (Romanowski and George-Warren 1995). "School," "Blew," and their cover of Shocking Blue's "Love Buzz" exemplify the fast-paced rock style of the band. It is the melodicism of the ballad "About a Girl," however, that revealed the underlying talent and songwriting craftsmanship that was to carry Nirvana to a level of success far beyond that attained by the other Seattle bands. Receiving critical acclaim for this project, the band signed a recording contract with David Geffen's DGC label, hoping to deliver the musical style of the Pacific Northwest to a national audience. In 1990, they added drummer Dave Grohl.

Nirvana attained impressive commercial success with the release of *Nevermind* (number 1 in 1991), eventually selling over 10 million copies. In addition to successful album

sales, two of its songs were Top 40 hits: "Smells Like Teen Spirit" (number 6) and "Come As You Are" (number 32). "Smells Like Teen Spirit" (see the Listening Guide) was a breakthrough not only for Nirvana but for the entire alternative music scene. With its release, alternative music was accepted by many white, middle-class, postboomers as the music of their generation. African American youth had accepted rap music as their own, and now a second segment of the American youth population had a musical style from which teenage anthems began to emerge. "Smells Like Teen Spirit" is the first such song to evolve from the alternative tradition and to make a mark in the mainstream arena of rock and roll, stating explicitly the expectations of the postboomer generation: "Here we



Kurt Cobain of Nirvana (Source: Michael Ochs Archives Ltd./Getty Images Inc. – Los Angeles)

Listening Guide: "Smells Like Teen Spirit" (Nirvana)

0:00-0:24	Introduction (12 measures)	Begins with rhythm guitar on the chord progression that will serve as the foundation for each Chorus section (C). In the fourth bar, a drum fill leads to entry of the full ensemble.
0:25-0:33	Verse 1 (20 measures total) (A = 12 measures)	The verse consists of two basic musical ideas. The A section of the verse begins with a four-bar instrumental prelude.
0:34-0:49		Continuing the A musical idea, the vocal enters in the fifth measure with "load up on guns."
0:50-1:05	(B = 8 measures)	With a change of the accompanimental chord progression and the entry of the lyric "hello, hello," this B section of the verse provides a transition to the Chorus.
1:06-1:30	Chorus (16 measures total) (C = 12 measures)	The Chorus also consists of two sections. The C musical idea from the introduction initiates the Chorus ("with the lights out").
1:31-1:38	Instrumental Break (D = 4 measures)	Continuing the Chorus with a progression containing a surprising chromatic chord at the end of the first and third measures, this D section is answered at the end of each phrase by the lyric "yay."
1:39-2:03	Verse 2 (20 measures total) (A = 12 measures)	As before, begins with the four-bar instrumental prelude; the vocal enters in the fifth measure ("I'm worse at what I do best").
2:04-2:19	(B = 8 measures)	The B section returns.
2:20-2:44	Chorus (16 measures total) (C = 12 measures)	As before: the C musical idea .
2:45-2:52	Instrumental Break (D = 4 measures)	. . . followed by D.
2:53-3:24	Guitar Solo (16 measures)	The guitar solo—actually just an instrumental performance of the vocal melody for A, then B—occurs over the heavy instrumental accompaniment to the Chorus C section. It is in this instrumental section that three of the four musical ideas (A, B, and C) included in this song are simultaneously performed.
3:25-3:49	Verse 3 (20 measures total) (A = 12 measures)	As before, begins with the four-bar instrumental prelude (this time with a sustained lead guitar chord over this opening subsection); the vocal enters again in the fifth measure ("and I forget").
3:50-4:05	(B = 8 measures)	The B section returns.

(continued)

4:06–4:29	Chorus (21 measures total) (C = 12 measures)	As before: the C musical idea . . .
4:30–5:01	Coda (C = 9 measures)	This ending musical phrase uses the same instrumental accompaniment as the C section of the chorus, but the vocalist simply repeats a single phrase (“a denial”) nine times, until the final sustained chord.
<p>Note: In the listening guide above, it is worth noting that the sections labeled “A,” “B,” and “C” are all based on the same chord progression but are distinguished within the musical form due to the dramatic differences in texture and timbral content.</p>		

are now, entertain us.” After releasing a collection of early singles and outtakes in 1992, the band issued *In Utero* (1993), which debuted at number 1. Though this recording resulted in no Top 40 hits, both “All Apologies” and “Heart-Shaped Box” became favorites on AOR (album-oriented rock) radio stations. Cobain had wanted to name the album *I Hate Life and Want to Die*—an uncanny harbinger of events to come—but the record company eventually convinced him otherwise.

Success at the level experienced by Nirvana affects artists in different ways. There are those, such as the Beatles, the Rolling Stones, and Van Halen, who seem to thrive on attention and economic success as a confirmation of their ability. Others feel differently. Kurt Cobain’s level of personal happiness and satisfaction seems to have been inversely related to the level of Nirvana’s success. The greater the heights to which their popularity rose, the more Cobain felt his audience was blind to the antiestablishment message of their music. In response to those who accused him of selling out to the influences of a major label, Cobain replied in the liner notes for *Incesticide* (1992),

A big fuck you to those of you who have the audacity to claim that I’m so naïve and stupid that I would allow myself to be taken advantage of and manipulated. I don’t feel the least bit guilty for commercially exploiting a completely exhausted Rock youth Culture because, at this point in rock history, Punk Rock (while still sacred to some) is, to me, dead and gone.

The need to justify commercial success seems to be a common trait of alternative bands. Emerging as strong adherents of the artistic freedom associated with independent record labels, many alternative bands found themselves a few short years later signed with major labels and selling records at a rate comparable to—sometimes even surpassing—their mainstream rock counterparts.

During a period of time that, by all normal accounts, should have been extremely uplifting for him—unprecedented popularity for the band, his marriage to Courtney Love (vocalist for Hole), and the birth of their healthy baby—Cobain began to show signs of extreme discontent. Beginning in the spring of 1993, his unhappiness was manifested through a series of drug overdoses and a domestic assault incident. Revolver in hand, Cobain threatened to commit suicide in his own home on March 18, 1994. Following this event, he checked into a recovery center at the end of March but sneaked away after only two days. One week later, on the eighth of April, he shot himself in the head with a 20-gauge shotgun.

The news of Cobain’s death was as devastating to the postboomers as the earlier deaths of Jimi Hendrix, Janis Joplin, and Jim Morrison had been to the baby boom generation. Nirvana’s fans, along with hosts of radio stations and MTV, mourned their loss for

weeks. Later that year, *Unplugged in New York* (an album of Nirvana's live appearance on MTV the previous year) debuted at number 1, appropriately capping the career of one of the most significant rock groups of the early 1990s.

Pearl Jam

Another group that is widely credited with bringing the Seattle sound to national attention is Pearl Jam. As mentioned previously, bassist Jeff Ament and guitarist Stone Gossard had been members of Green River, one of the earliest proponents of grunge. Following the breakup of that band, the two bandmates joined vocalist Andrew Wood to form Mother Love Bone. Wood died of a heroin overdose shortly after the band completed its first album. Adding Mike McCready (guitar), Eddie Vedder (vocalist from San Diego), and Dave Krusen (drums), the band began performing under the name Mookie Blaylock in honor of the New Jersey Nets basketball star. Shortly thereafter, they changed their name to Pearl Jam, a reference to what the *Rolling Stone Encyclopedia* refers to as a "psychedelic confection" made by Vedder's half Native American great grandmother (George-Warren and Romanowski 2001). Apparently not exhibiting the aversion to major labels shared by some Seattle groups, Pearl Jam signed initially with Epic Records and released their debut album (*Ten*, 1992; named after the number on Mookie Blaylock's jersey), which reached number 2 on the charts. Particularly noteworthy examples of Pearl Jam's early musical style are "Even Flow," "Alive," and "Jeremy." In 1992, shortly after Nirvana brought alternative music to mainstream rock radio, Pearl Jam surpassed Nirvana in record sales, combining the riff-heavy guitar sound of 1970s rock with the angst of 1980s postpunk. All the while, however, they continued to provide their listeners with catchy guitar riffs, hook lines, and memorable choruses. Shortly after the release of their debut album, Krusen left the band to be replaced by Dave Abbruzzese. In contrast to the relatively consistent hard rock style of *Ten*, Pearl Jam's second album, *Vs.* (1993, debuting at number 1), reveals an impressive variety of musical styles. Contrast, for example, the hard rock sound of "Go" or "Leash" with the folk influence apparent in both "Elderly Woman Behind the Counter in a Small Town" and "Indifference."

During this period of time, the band made some risky business decisions. Though their rise to popularity was greatly enhanced by MTV hits and their appearance on the second Lollapalooza tour, spurning the accepted conventions of the recording industry, the band refused to release videos to promote *Vs.* In addition, during the promotional tour for the album, Pearl Jam chose to perform in smaller auditoriums and on college campuses, rather than in the stadium settings that had become commonplace for rock concerts. In an incredibly gutsy move, the band canceled the summer portion of their tour because Ticketmaster was pressuring the promoters to charge more than \$20 for concert tickets. Pearl Jam took legal action against Ticketmaster for unfair business practices, though the Justice Department eventually ruled in favor of the ticket agency.

The band's third album, *Vitalogy* (number 1 in 1994), is shrouded in lyrical messages of death and despair; it provides a sound track for the 1990s through the eyes of several postboomers. Like *Vs.*, this album consists of both heavy rock songs ("Spin the Black Circle" and "Last Exit") and ballads ("Nothingman" and "Better Man"). In addition, the band includes some of their most eclectic tunes yet: the funk rhythms and trance-inducing repetitions of "Aye Davanita," the odd two-chord accordion vamp underneath "Bugs," and the art rock-influenced sound collage "Stupid Mop." With the release of *No Code* (1996), Pearl Jam challenged their association with the grunge movement to an even greater degree. Along with the typical hard rock and punk influences clearly evident in "Hail, Hail" and "Habit," this album reveals a level of musical experimentation beyond that normally associated with alternative—and specifically grunge—bands. From the opening measures of "Sometime," with its soft guitar tone, fretless bass, and rolling thunder, the



Pearl Jam (Mike McCready and Eddie Vedder) (Source: © Neal Preston/CORBIS. All Rights Reserved)

music promises to be different. A song with a triple subdivision of the beat, providing a waltzlike feel, “Red Mosquito” alternates dramatically between instrumental sections reminiscent of San Francisco acid rock and verses that take on an almost folk rock or country character. Undoubtedly influenced by Vedder’s collaboration with Pakistani vocalist Nusrat Fateh on the sound track to the motion picture *Dead Man Walking* (1995), “Who You Are” incorporates droning guitar parts, tribal-sounding drums, and a Buddhist lyric. Also in 1995, the band collaborated with Neil Young on his album *Mirror Ball*. Returning to their hard rock roots, the band released *Yield* (number 2 in 1998), accompanied by the release of their first video since “Jeremy” in 1991.

In the fall of 2000, Pearl Jam made recording history. In one week, they simultaneously released 25 live double albums. Five of these entered the *Billboard* Hot 200 simultaneously. The band continued releasing live recordings from its 2000 tour, reaching a total of 72 releases by mid-2001. The concert from Seattle, Washington, on November 11, 2000, a three-CD set, proved the most popular. Although hailing from the grunge capital of the world, Pearl Jam moved beyond the boundaries of typical alternative music, revealing the influence of Zeppelin-style 1970s rock and even some Beatlesque experimentation. Confirming these ties with earlier rock and roll, Vedder was the vocalist asked to take the place of Jim Morrison when the remaining members of the Doors reunited for their induction into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in 1993. The continuing success of *Riot Act* (2002), *Lost Dogs* (2003), and *Pearl Jam* (2006)—all Top 20 albums—suggests that the extent of the historical significance of this band is still to be determined.

Riot Grrrl

As part of the “Women in Rock” thrust that gathered steam during the late 1980s and came to undeniable fruition by the mid-1990s, female performers also found their way into alternative and other punk-influenced musical styles. Unlike many of rock’s other stylistic developments, the official establishment of the **Riot Grrrl** phenomenon can be traced to a specific date: August 20, 1991. On that day, indie music fans from the Pacific Northwest swarmed to Olympia, Washington, for the International Pop Underground Convention: “Love Rock Girl Style Now,” which featured a number of all-female groups. The event launched the Riot Grrrl movement, which highlighted all-female alternative music but also

included activists and writers as well. Early meetings consisted of discussions about music and specific bands performing it, but also more serious issues confronting females, including violence against women and domestic abuse. As a result, “Riot Grrrl meetings were similar to the consciousness-raising sessions held by seventies-era feminists—with the added desire to create music” (Experience Music Project 2002, para. 2).

There were certainly pioneers from previous decades whose efforts effectively opened the door for this new wave of artists. Suzi Quatro and Joan Jett (and her early all-female band, the Runaways) are two examples of female performers of the 1970s and 1980s who performed hard rock music, receiving a significant degree of both critical and commercial success. The Riot Grrrl sound took on a more aggressive feminist tone than the music of these hard rock performers, however. Finding solid roots in the female punk bands of the late 1970s (e.g., the Slits and the Raincoats), Riot Grrrl bands typically adopted a **DIY** (do-it-yourself) ethic that required no prior musical training. Much like the early punk rock bands, Riot Grrrl spurred female artists to break out of the stereotypical crooning ballad mode, encouraging women to let go of their inhibitions and open themselves to multiple modes of self-expression and creativity.

By the summer of 1992, Riot Grrrl was being touted as the “next big thing” to come from the Pacific Northwest, considered by many at the time to be the hotbed of innovative, energetic musical activity. The success of Nirvana’s *Nevermind* (number 1 in 1991) focused attention on the Seattle area and assisted in bringing national attention to some of the more successful and deserving Riot Grrrl bands; Bikini Kill and Calamity Jane, for example, both opened shows for Nirvana. By the mid-1990s, however, many of the original bands had broken up. Nonetheless, the movement inspired a wave of female singer-songwriters during the late 1990s, including Ani DiFranco, Jewel, Alanis Morissette, PJ Harvey, Sheryl Crow, Norah Jones, and Sarah McLachlan—music sung by women, for women, primarily about issues important to women. The torch of feminist empowerment was passed from Riot Grrrl to Lilith Fair, McLachlan’s touring women’s music festival.

Pop Punk

As alternative music continued to work its way into the mainstream in the early 1990s, an interesting subgenre emerged from within the punk scene. Maintaining the high energy, punk attitude, and dissonant, distorted guitar sound of its progenitor, some artists began to incorporate melodic hook lines and tuneful choruses, resulting in what is sometimes referred to as **pop punk**. This odd mix of seemingly contradictory musical styles is perhaps best exemplified by the tremendous success of Green Day. Childhood friends in Berkeley, California, Billie Joe Armstrong (guitar and vocals) and Mike Dirnt (bass) formed the band in 1989. After adding John Kiffmeyer on drums, the trio released a series of EPs and two full-length albums and built a solid following in the Berkeley hardcore music scene, before signing with Reprise Records to release its first major label album, *Dookie* (number 4 in 1994). The album won a Grammy for Best Alternative Music Performance and earned Green Day plenty of MTV time as well as spots on the Lollapalooza tour and at Woodstock 1994. The band’s easily accessible 3-minute song forms with memorable hook melodies helped them sell over 10 million copies of this album.

With *American Idiot* (number 1 in 2004), Green Day proved they had matured significantly as musicians. Two of the tracks (“Jesus of Suburbia” and “Homecoming”) constitute what are essentially multimovement suites, each over 9 minutes in length and incorporating an impressive range of musical styles. The title track, overtly political in its message, presents the band’s reaction to the confusing and warped environment that constitutes post–September 11 American pop culture.

Pop punk’s energy and commercial viability was taken up in 1992 by another trio, Blink-182, from suburban Southern California near San Diego. Taking the polished-up

punk aesthetic of Green Day and adding a “no girls allowed” mentality, the band augmented their early performances with the addition of wet T-shirt (or wet pants) contests. Blink-182 steadily built a fan base and gradually began to attract significant attention with their series of independent label releases between 1993 and 1997. Major labels began to take notice in 1997, following the band’s number 11 hit, “Dammit (Growing Up).” After signing with MCA, Blink-182 experienced a high degree of commercial success with *Enema of the State* (number 9 in 1999), containing “All the Small Things” (number 6).

Despite pop punk’s success, punk music remained always on the periphery, never attaining widespread appeal relative to that of mainstream rock. In this respect, alternative music has far surpassed the punk movement in terms of commercial success and national attention. Rather than being glossed over and repackaged as a more palatable musical style, the way punk elements were incorporated into the creation of new wave, alternative music—primarily that associated with the Seattle grunge scene and nü metal (see Chapter 15)—was accepted warts and all into the mainstream of 1990s youth culture.

Indie Rock

We have previously used the term *indie* in reference to the independent record companies operating during the mid-1950s. In an effort to make a mark in a time when the popular music industry was dominated by the major labels (not much has changed, has it?), independent record labels initially attempted to compete by connecting with a smaller audience to whom they could deliver their product cheaply and efficiently (see Chapter 2). By the 1990s, **indie** referred to music that, in some manner, placed itself in opposition to the mainstream in musical sound, fashion, and/or image. An “indie kid” would typically don clothing that gave a “thrift shop” appearance, Buddy Holly–style dark (sun)glasses, and Converse tennis shoes—all readily available at any Urban Outfitters retail store. By adopting this look, indie kids attempted to convince peers that appearance was not important. Of course, this specific dress *was* important and played a central role in the social structure of the new indie culture. “The OC” on Fox network provided entertainment for the indie culture, a set of characters with whom they could closely identify. It also provided a sound track for a generation, with selections available for purchase on six CDs. Groups that fit into the indie category of rock include Weezer and Beck, revealing strong musical influence exerted by Sonic Youth and the Pixies. Dashboard Confessional, Coldplay, Modest Mouse, Jimmy Eat World, and Starsailor are sometimes included in the indie subcategory of **emo** (emotionally oriented rock).

Beck

Influenced during his teens by the music of Sonic Youth and Pussy Galore, and his upbringing in the bohemian environs of a street musician father and an artist-musician mother, Beck Hansen proved to be the ultimate indie kid. Eventually, as is often the case with creative musicians saddled with such a stylistic label, he began stretching the boundaries this moniker imposed. After a brief stint in New York City in the late 1980s, Beck returned to his Southern California birthplace and began performing in a number of artsy coffee shops. Encouraged by Tom Rothrock, owner of Bongload Records, Beck recorded and released “Loser,” a strange combination of folk music and rap. The single became a huge regional hit on Los Angeles’s alternative radio station and initiated a major label bidding war. After signing an agreement with DGC that allowed him to concurrently continue recording for small indie labels, Beck released *Mellow Gold* (1994), including “Loser,” which reached number 10 on *Billboard*’s Hot 100, his only Top 40 hit during the 20th century.



Beck Hansen (Source: Jon Stark/Lebrecht Music & Arts Photo Library)

After two independent releases in 1994, Beck returned to the spotlight with *Odelay* (1996). The artist won Grammys for Best Alternative Music Performance and Best Rock Male Vocal Performance (“Where It’s At”), while receiving Album of the Year recognition from major publications, including *Rolling Stone*, *Spin*, and the *Village Voice*. Through the 1990s, Beck continued to build his songwriting skills and versatility as a musician. *Midnite Vulture* (1999) is a particularly significant departure from the sound of his previous albums. On this recording, Beck sometimes sounded like a Prince clone, and the influence of neo-soul and R&B are evident throughout this self-produced recording. Consider, for ex-

ample, the use of falsetto on the tune “Debra” or the Stax-Volt horn section on “Sexx Laws”; both represent a dramatic change from the sound of his earlier material. However, with *Sea Change* (2002), Beck returned to a quieter and more introspective musical style, promoted before its release with a brief acoustic tour. Along with *Sea Change*, the release of *Guero* (2005; a return to the sound of *Odelay*) and *The Information* (2006; a hip-hop-influenced recording) resulted in a series of three Top 10 albums for this innovative artist.

Others

Although Seattle was the epicenter of the grunge movement, the national prominence attained by this music resulted in a proliferation of alternative bands from all over the United States: Smashing Pumpkins (Chicago), Sonic Youth (New York), Television (New York), Dinosaur Jr. (Amherst, Massachusetts), Soul Asylum (Minneapolis), Pavement (Stockton, California), Stone Temple Pilots (San Diego), Hole with Courtney Love (Los Angeles), and No Doubt with Gwen Stefani (Orange County, California). Showcasing some of the top alternative bands, the annual Lollapalooza concert tour, begun by Jane’s Addiction vocalist Perry Farrell, combined the talents of some of alternative music’s headliners with up-and-coming artists, allowing fans an opportunity to see their favorites and to be introduced to the next generation of likely stars. A significant number of alternative bands performed at Woodstock 1994 and Woodstock 1999, the 25th and 30th anniversaries of the 1969 rock festival.

Punk III: Neo-Punk Propels Rock into the New Millennium

With the arrival of *Is This It?* (2001) by the Strokes, there seemed to be a renewed interest in authentic punk rock (i.e., returning to the roots of the movement that initiated grunge). Forming in 1999, the Strokes were relative latecomers to the revival of the punk aesthetic, although the neo-punk of the 1990s was slick and clean in comparison to its 1970s precursor. Image, even if an illusion, was a high priority. These bands were willing to spend loads of time and money, if necessary, to ensure that their clothing was vintage and their hair was mussed just right, resulting in the “authentic” look of a punk rock band. In 2003, during the

transition to the 21st century, around the same time that the Strokes emerged, a whole group of bands sharing a similar punk aesthetic appeared: the Hives, the Vines, the White Stripes, and the Yeah, Yeah, Yeahs.

Predating the Strokes by several years, the Hives showed how internationally widespread punk-influenced alternative music had become. The band was formed in 1993 by a group of five school friends in the small industrial town of Fagersta, Sweden, influenced primarily by the music of MC5 and Iggy and the Stooges, but also deriving their pop stylings from the new wave trend of the 1980s. The band's image—dressed in sharp suits and ties—placed them in stark contrast to the 1970s punk rock image. Interestingly, the band intentionally spread disinformation about its members; for example, they concealed the fact that two members are brothers and claimed that their career was masterminded and their songs composed by “Randy Fitzsimmons” (whom no one has ever met). The year 1997's *Barely Legal* was the group's first full-length release. The recording and the associated U.S. promotional tour received much attention and won over many fans, including Courtney Love of Hole. They continued the success spawned by their aggressive minimalist style with the release of *Vendi Vidi Vicious* (1999), containing “Main Offender” and “Hate to Say I Told You So,” followed by *Tyrannosaurs Hives* (2004), which was significantly more polished sounding than the band's previous efforts and included the hit single “Walk Idiot Walk.”

As further proof that punk rock was no longer an isolated U.S.-U.K. phenomenon, the Vines emerged from Sydney, Australia. Craig Nicholls (vocals and guitar) and Patrick Matthews (bass and vocals) met when working together at McDonald's. In the mid-1990s, they began playing covers of tunes by Nirvana and Australian alternative band You Am I. The group's debut album, *Highly Evolved* (number 11 in 2001), was recorded in Los Angeles and released to significant critical acclaim, as a series of singles made its way to the airwaves: the title track, “Get Free,” “Outtathaway,” and “Homesick.” The Hives' 2004 sophomore effort, *Winning Days*, was one of the most anticipated releases of the year, promoted by their Australian Invasion tour. Nicholls's stage antics, always frenetic, became increasingly erratic during this tour and resulted in bassist Matthews walking off stage during a Sydney performance in May 2004. After that performance, Nicholls assaulted a photographer. In November, during the court appearance stemming from Nicholls's postperformance behavior, the singer revealed that he had Asperger's syndrome, a form of autism.

Formed in 1997 in Detroit, the White Stripes were an enigmatic, bass-free duo consisting of Jack White (born John Anthony Gillis) and Meg White (born Megan Martha White). Reminiscent of the disinformation campaign of the Hives, Jack and Meg have hidden the true nature of their relationship. Assumed at various times to be brother and sister or husband and wife, the two musicians contributed significantly to the neo-punk genre in the transition to the new millennium. Typically dressed in red and white outfits, the duo exudes a striking stage presence, while their unique sound—Jack on guitar and vocals, Meg on drums, and no bass—provides an interesting contrast to the typical punk rock instrumentation. In 1997, the Stripes debuted with two single releases, “Let's Shake Hands” and “Lafayette Blues.” Released in 1999, their eponymous full-length debut provided a mix of interesting covers (Dylan's “One More Cup of Coffee” and Robert Johnson's “Stop Breaking Down Blues”) with the band's own blend of original music. Their second album, *De Stijl* (2000), was named after the Dutch minimalist art movement, cited as a source of inspiration for their own stripped-down band sound. *Elephant* (2003) was recorded using only analog equipment and an eight-track recording system, rather than a typical state-of-the-art digital recording facility; it won a Grammy for Best Alternative Album, and one of its tracks, “Seven Nation Army,” won the Grammy for Best Rock Song. *Elephant*, *Get Behind Me Satan* (2005) and *Icky Thump* (2007) each reached the Top 10, each one placing higher than the preceding release.

The Yeah Yeah Yeahs formed in Brooklyn, New York, in 2000, shortly after vocalist Karen O and guitarist Nick Zinner chanced to meet in a bar. The two musicians began writing songs together and added Brian Chase on drums. Like the White Stripes, with whom the Yeah Yeah Yeahs made their initial live performances as an opening act, the band decided not to include a bass player. Their debut EP, *Yeah Yeah Yeahs*, and its follow-up, *Fever to Tell* (2002, including the hit single “Maps”), reveal an interesting blend of dance-oriented beats and a choppy, postpunk sound.

It is too early to tell how far-reaching will be the effect of bands representing this most recent incarnation of punk-influenced music. Their popularity and the sheer number of groups sharing similar musical influences leave little doubt, however, that the infusion of punk elements into the rock mainstream will continue to be an important influence in the foreseeable future.

Prog Rock

Amid all the noise and hubbub of the most basic alternative subgenres, there were some bands who began with the alternative mind-set, then evolved gradually into music that can rightly be referred to as high art. Not unlike the music created by art rock performers of the late 1960s and 1970s, these artists once again set about pushing back the boundaries of rock music. Two of the most important of these, Radiohead and Björk, will be discussed at length; other bands that deserve mention in this category include Tool, Nine Inch Nails, Sigur Ros, and God Speed You Black Emperor!

Radiohead

Thom Yorke (vocals and guitar) and Colin Greenwood (bass) were former schoolmates who formed Radiohead in 1991. Adding Ed O'Brien (guitar), Phil Selway (drums), and the bassist's younger brother Jonny (guitar and keyboards), the band quickly built a local following. Their debut album, *Pablo Honey* (1993), was a hit both in England and the United States. Undoubtedly influenced by the Seattle grunge movement, the lyrics evidence a similar self-loathing (e.g., “Creep”). The band's musical maturation was clearly evident on *The Bends* (1995). Like Nirvana before them, the heavy rock sound was balanced, at times, by interesting musical experimentation and, at others, a surprising Beatlesque melodicism (“High and Dry”). *OK Computer* (1997) proved to be the breakthrough album for Radiohead, winning a Grammy for Best Alternative Music recording. Though not intended as a concept album, several songs (“Karma Police” and “Paranoid Android”) communicate a concern with the ubiquitous presence of technology in our lives and the implied fear of losing control. “Paranoid Android” provides an excellent example of the band's tight formal structures with adventurous musical elements. Sections of the piece utilize septuple meter (seven beats per measure), changing tempo, polyphonic vocal textures, and the use of changing loudness levels for dramatic effect (e.g., a dramatic crescendo that increases from the relatively soft acoustic guitar sounds heard at the beginning to distorted electric guitars and shouting vocals). There were no Top 40 singles from the album and, reminiscent of the folk rock trend of the late 1950s and early 1960s, Radiohead's commercial success derived exclusively from album sales. In the late 1990s, a number of guitar-centric British bands emerged that were obviously influenced by Radiohead's sound (e.g., Travis and Coldplay).

Radiohead returned in 2000 with their anxiously awaited *Kid A*. The album was originally scheduled for a simultaneous premiere via MTV2 and the BBC, but three weeks prior to the scheduled release date, bootleg copies began to appear on the Internet. Despite this fact, however, and what appeared to be an intentional antimarketing campaign (e.g., no



Radiohead (Source: © Karen Mason Blair/CORBIS. All Rights Reserved)

videos for MTV rotation and no singles released), the album shot to number 1. The signature sound of Jonny Greenwood's guitar, so prominent on previous recordings, no longer provided the primary foundation for the accompanimental tracks. Instead, synthesizers and other electronic sounds dominated the musical texture. The album opens with the sound of an electric piano and heavily processed vocal fragments, while the lyrics—once Yorke's vocals enter in earnest—assure us that “everything [is] in its right place,” an interesting commentary on the radical change in the band's sound. Electric guitar sounds are completely absent until the third track, “The National Anthem,” when the electric bass guitar provides a driving rock beat. When the electric guitar does appear, it is just as likely to be in the form of feedback, providing another layer to be mixed into the complex musical fabric, rather than the riffs that have made the guitar a central part of a rock ensemble since the time of Chuck Berry's early recordings. In addition, many tracks on *Kid A* contain significantly longer instrumental sections, often providing ambient contrast to the vocals, instead of inserting a predictable guitar solo into the musical form. “Treefingers”—a song completely without vocals—is an interesting example of an almost 4-minute composition that verges on ambient music influenced by the work of Brian Eno. None of the songs from this album were released as singles, and the album was not supported, as was typically the case for rock albums, by extensive promotional touring. *Amnesiac* (2001), containing some tracks recorded during the same sessions as *Kid A*, debuted at number 2 and left no doubt about the band's penchant for musical experimentation. In 2003, the band released yet another critically acclaimed recording, *Hail to the Thief* (number 3). Following a bit of a lull in recorded output from the band, Thom Yorke released a solo album, *The Eraser* (2006), which reached number 2 on the album chart.

In addition to their creative musical output, Radiohead provided a model for how the Internet, and even Napster, could be used effectively to market and promote commercial releases. About six months before the release of *Kid A*, for example, the band created 15-second video animations (“blips”) that they made available to fans via the Internet. Fans were encouraged to trade the clips like “electronic postcards” (Knopper 2001, 69). Given the album's success on its release, making these materials available—including MP3 files of some of the tracks—seems to have whetted the appetite of the record-buying public, who were ready and willing to purchase the recording once it was available. Presenting a further challenge to a recording industry already reeling from online music sales

and the industry's apparent inability to adapt quickly enough to the changing landscape, Radiohead released *In Rainbows* (2007) for download from their Web site. Having fulfilled their six-album contractual agreement with EMI, the band chose to release this album using Internet-only distribution, and rather than assigning a set price, they allowed fans to determine the amount they were willing to pay . . . many choosing to download the tracks for free. The long-term impact of this unorthodox distribution method is not yet known but provides yet another sign that Radiohead is challenging tradition both in their approach to the music creation process and in the business model used to disseminate their recordings.

Björk

The music of Icelandic singer Björk Guðmundsdóttir reveals a very different but equally adventurous approach to the creative process. A performer from an early age, Björk completed her first album when she was 11 years old. The singer experienced significant success in Iceland performing in a hard rock band that eventually took the name the Sugarcubes before recording *Life's Too Good* (1988). This album was well received critically in the United States and United Kingdom, and a video for the song "Birthday" was placed into rotation on MTV. After recording several less successful albums with the band, Björk left to pursue a solo career. Her first release as a solo artist, aptly titled *Debut* (1993), contained a single titled "Human Behavior," which rose to number 2 on the modern rock chart. In 1995, Björk released *Post*, a widely varied collection of songs, revealing the influence of electronica ("Army of Me"), ambient music ("Hyper-ballad"), and even big band jazz ("It's Oh So Quiet"). The singer's unique vocal quality makes her easily identifiable, and her stream-of-consciousness lyrics manage to draw the listener into her (rather bizarre) world.

Though the earlier albums provided a strong sense of Björk's creative potential, musicality, and arranging skill, *Vespertine* (2002) left little doubt that she was a force with which to be reckoned. Consisting largely of what can most accurately be described as sonic montages, the singer performs her flowing vocal melodies over a primarily electronic foundation. Some selections ("Cocoon," "It's Not Up to You," and "Heirloom") are highly rhythmic, integrating many interesting sampled source materials into the mix (e.g., electronic pops and clicks, phonograph needle noise, and escaping steam). Add to this unique and highly creative mix the singer's inimitable vocal style and the result is highly interesting and distinctive. She composed the sound track and starred in *Dancer in the Dark*, a critically acclaimed motion picture alternating between a dark reality and the lead character's imaginative fantasy world. In a career marked by innovative musical experimentation, Björk's most stunning departure from popular song form yet came with the release of *Medulla* (2004). Built solely out of vocal sounds (sometimes heavily processed), the resulting sonic montage is truly an artistic masterpiece, although the recording presents an undeniable challenge to the listener who yearns to hear a hit single.

An undeniable shift occurred within the realm of rock music during the 1990s. Alternative music infiltrated, and then dominated, the mainstream of popular culture. During the same period, however, many artists continued to stretch the boundaries of rock and roll. It was an exciting decade, the definitive results of which are not likely to be known for years to come.



Björk (Source: © David Lefranc/Kipa/CORBIS. All Rights Reserved)

Summary of Punk and Alternative Styles

In its (r)evolutionary path, rock music has been influenced by a wide array of musical styles, some closely related to mainstream rock, others vastly different. The punk aesthetic has proven no different. In fact, the initial punk movement of the 1970s—not a dramatic commercial success on its own—realized its most lasting influence as its musical elements were subsumed into new wave, a subgenre that experienced a degree of commercial success. In the 1980s, punk influenced the grunge phenomenon, which truly brought alternative music into the rock mainstream. By the time of the neo-punk movement of the 1990s, some of the most commercially successful recordings were by artists identified as belonging to one of any number of punk-influenced musical categories. It is still too early to determine the long-term impact of and resulting musical development following the neo-punk movement of the late 1990s and early 21st century. However, one thing is not debatable: The cyclical infusion of punk elements into the rock and roll mainstream continues to serve as a periodic reminder that rock music, at times, may take itself a little too seriously and move beyond the realm of accessibility and mainstream popular appeal. The punk message is reflected by a return to the basics from which it emerged. Much as an emergency room physician uses electricity to return animation to a human heart that has stopped beating, the punk aesthetic provides a sense of renewed vigor, frenetic energy, and immediacy to rock music at times when the music appears to be in need of such an infusion.

MUSICAL CLOSE-UP: ALTERNATIVE VIEWS OF ALTERNATIVE ROCK

Have you ever thought to yourself (or perhaps even said), “Life is just too darned complicated!”? Indeed, if one steps back far enough to consider the entirety of human evolution, it does seem that there has been a consistent tendency for us to move from the simple to the complex. When the complexities of life begin to overwhelm us, we often yearn for a simpler existence—and so it is with music. Remember the old 12-bar blues we discussed back in Chapter 2? It was a very simple idea and, in its most basic form, worked well for thousands and thousands of songs, but inevitably, the human tendency to tinker with things had its effect. Over the years, chords were substituted, meters were changed, the AAB lyric and melodic scheme was modified, and there were even measures added or deleted.

Rock and roll began as a rather simple style of music, but as we have seen with the Beatles, Brian Wilson, Radiohead, and others, there were ever more creative manipulations to almost every one of its musical elements: harmony and tonality, rhythm and meter, timbre, form, and so forth. This all-pervasive evolution from simplicity to complexity is not an absolutely straight line. At frequent points along the way (whether one is considering blues, jazz, or rock, or any other aspect of the human experience), there are those who yearn for a return to simplicity. Their rebellion often takes the form of a “return to basics” or “return to roots” movement, and so it was with the punk rockers and those that followed in their footsteps. How are we to evaluate—musically—these alternative styles? Does the product of this rebellion have true musical value, or is it simply the noisy ranting of charlatans? Let us consider several alternative answers to these questions.

Alternative Rock as a Valid Musical Component of Rock History

The emergence of the mainstream rock sound of Little Richard, Jerry Lee Lewis, Elvis Presley, and other artists in the mid-1950s offered an alternative to the sound of pop artists of the era. One of the primary musical distinctions between pop music and early rock was

the raw energy of the rock recordings. In contrast to the carefully arranged instrumental parts and highly trained vocal stylings of the crooners, the R&B-influenced rockers presented a musical style that was—if imperfect in its performance—full of youthful energy and vigor. A similar contrast can be made during the late 1960s, if one compares the music of the Beatles and Rolling Stones. The musical style of the Beatles continued to evolve dramatically, resulting in recordings that some (not the present authors) might consider pretentious, while the Stones—after an initial foray into such experimentation—returned to their mainstream rock roots. Considering the evolution of rock music over the past several decades, one can identify specific musical trends that represented a return to a more basic style.

Of course, rock is not the only musical genre to have experienced such a cyclical pattern of complexity and simplicity. In its long history, Western art music has experienced many similar cycles. To focus on only one example, consider the remarkable change from the late Baroque style to the early Classical style. By the end of the Baroque period, complex polyphonic textures were the norm, best exemplified by the fugal compositions of J. S. Bach. The Classicism of Haydn and Mozart was, among other things, a move away from the intricate polyphony of Bach toward simpler textures, singable melodies, and more easily perceived forms. By the end of the Classical period, however, extreme complexity was again dominant in works such as Beethoven's Ninth Symphony and *Grosse Fuge*. Similar alternation between simplicity and complexity in art music composition can be traced right up through the 20th century and into the new millennium.

This same cycle of action and reaction has occurred numerous times in the context of rock music. Generally, the punk movements resulted in a return to a rawer, harder-edged sound. This return to the roots can be viewed as a valid reaction against two existing trends toward musical complexity and increased reliance on technology. Recall that the transition to the 1960s represented an initial fragmentation of the rock market. The resulting branches of the rock and roll genealogical tree included a variety of musical styles. As the decade proceeded, new styles emerged that were dramatically more complex than those that preceded. Two examples are jazz rock (Chapter 11) and art rock (Chapter 12). In comparison to most other subgenres of rock, the music of Blood, Sweat, and Tears; Chicago; Yes; and Emerson, Lake, and Palmer during the late 1960s and early 1970s provided a significant increase in the level of musical complexity. During this same period, the music of Queen, Steely Dan, Pink Floyd, Styx, and others represented a vigorous pursuit of perfectionism in studio recording technique. As a result, some of the highest-quality and most innovative recording productions in the history of rock were released during this time. Though many previous artists (Buddy Holly and Brian Wilson, for example) had used the studio as a musical instrument, the level of attention given to every detail of the recording process during the mid-1970s represented a new level of sophistication. One need only listen to the "operatic" section in Queen's "Bohemian Rhapsody" from *A Night at the Opera* (1975) or "Deacon Blues" from Steely Dan's *Aja* (1977) to hear the incredibly high production quality evident in these recordings, incorporating numerous overdubs and retakes. However, other listeners felt that rock music had begun to lose its connection with the energy inherent in the immediacy of a live performance. In fact, many early independent label R&B recordings were made by simply hanging a single microphone and capturing a live performance, imperfections and all.

The first punk movement was at least partially intended to deflate the balloon of this perfectionist movement, suggesting instead that a DIY aesthetic was more appropriate to rock and roll. Why should the creation and performance of music be reserved for a few highly trained musicians and recording engineers? Punk rockers joyfully celebrated the imperfections of a live musical performance and were more than willing to trade the studio perfection of art rock bands—a sound they believed represented a sanitized and

pretentious version of rock—for the energy and immediacy of their own radical musical style. Perhaps it is no coincidence that the Sex Pistols were formed in the same year as the release of Queen's *A Night at the Opera* and that their most important recording (*Never Mind the Bollocks, Here's the Sex Pistols*) was released the same year as Steely Dan's *Aja*.

During the 1980s, technology was used to an ever greater extent as a performance tool in popular music. Dance music frequently replaced a live drummer with rhythms “performed” by a drum machine, and many of the bass lines and keyboard parts were created using computer sequencers, rather than performed by live musicians. Even the parts that were performed by human hands were typically *quantized*—adjusted temporally for rhythmic accuracy—to make the performance more perfect than humanly possible. Listen carefully to Michael Jackson's “Speed Demon” from *Bad* (1987). Following the vocal phrase “speed demon” in the chorus, notice the mechanically perfect performance of the 32nd note runs of the bass synthesizer. Though highly trained musicians possess superb technical skills, the accuracy with which this musical line is performed (and repeated numerous times without deviation) is simply beyond human capability. Music by many artists during the mid- to late-1980s (Madonna, Prince, George Michael, Stacy Q, and Nu Shooz, for example) incorporated these same technologies. Live performance of certain parts (electric guitar, saxophone, vocals) was often incorporated to balance the lack of expressivity in the technically perfect performances of other parts. Prince, for example, typically used a live drummer *and* a drum machine as a means of getting the best of both worlds: a high degree of rhythmic and metrical accuracy, without giving up completely the expressivity of human performance.

By the mid-1980s, another punk-influenced musical revolution was initiated to counter this move toward computer-based musical performance: grunge rock, which emerged from the Pacific Northwest. Grunge bands were influenced musically by heavy metal and mainstream bands (Led Zeppelin, Black Sabbath, AC/DC, and Aerosmith) but were also heavily derivative of hard-core punk groups like Black Flag, the Melvins, the Butthole Surfers, and the Circle Jerks. Much of the music produced by Sub Pop Records during the 1980s was raw and intentionally simplistic. Volume and energy were the prime elements (e.g., Mudhoney's “The Rose,” Green River's “Hangin’ Tree,” or Nirvana's “Spank Thru”). However, with Nirvana's *Nevermind* (1991), the punk aesthetic found a mainstream audience. Other bands, including Soundgarden, Pearl Jam, and Alice in Chains, emerged from the Seattle area to become some of the most popular groups of the 1990s.

Thus the punk rockers and their progeny can be seen in the larger context of action-reaction. As has been the case throughout music history (and even human history), these rebellions against complexity and technological perfection sought a return to simpler, more human values. Taken in this light, they take their legitimate place beside countless others who have tried to balance the scales against the seemingly unstoppable human propensity for increasing complexity and sophistication.

Alternative Rock as a Form of Musical Charlatanry

In the preceding section, we have shown how much of alternative rock can be viewed as a legitimate reaction to more complex styles of rock music. However, we could see this apparent rebellion against complexity in a far different light. After all, there are two very different circumstances that can lead to such a rebellion. First, one may understand and appreciate complexity but consciously opt for a simpler style, or one may simply be incapable of dealing with the complexity (for one reason or another) and therefore have no choice but to pursue simplicity.

As an example of the former, consider the analogy cited above in classical music. It is true that Haydn and Mozart rebelled against the complex polyphony of Bach and other late

Baroque composers. However, both Haydn and Mozart were thoroughly schooled in the intricacies of the polyphonic styles that preceded them. They *chose* to develop a very different style. To find a more appropriate parallel to the punk rockers, we would need to identify some Mozart “wanna-be” in Austria of the 1760s whose name and music came and went in a couple of years because it had little or no musical validity. No one could legitimately suggest that Haydn and Mozart wrote in their style because they were incapable of writing complex polyphonic music (in fact, they did so at times). Although they adopted a somewhat simpler texture, their music was extremely sophisticated in other ways.

Far different is the person who adopts a simpler style because he or she really has no choice. He or she simply lacks the talent and sophistication needed to work in a more complex style. In the case of some of the alternative bands (not all, of course), one suspects that their so-called rebellion against complexity and perfectionism may be nothing more than a convenient rationalization that masks an inability to sing, play an instrument, or work creatively with the musical elements. Their product sells to consumers who, like themselves, may be incapable of appreciating anything other than the most basic musical styles. The rock press legitimizes the bands and their simplistic product because to do otherwise would force a value judgment—and remember from the beginning of this chapter that in today’s egalitarian culture, there is no better or worse, no good and bad; all things have equal value and are simply “alternatives.”

Let us return to a question that was posed in articulating part of the alternative rock philosophy: “Why should the creation and performance of music be reserved for a few highly trained musicians and recording engineers?” One pretty good answer might be, “Because they know what they are doing!” Let us consider an analogy. Suppose we restated our question as follows: “Why should the practice of medicine be reserved for a few highly trained doctors?” Medicine has become incredibly complex and technologically sophisticated. We now have laser surgery and the ability to perform intricate operations that actually replace human hearts, hips, and knees—all monitored closely by elaborate computer hardware and software. What if you or someone you care about were faced with a life-threatening medical emergency? How would you feel if your doctor announced that he or she was a “back to the basics” sort who strongly recommended bloodletting, a few well-chosen leeches, and an old 15th-century incantation? That is a type of alternative medicine you would probably do well to avoid!

So is alternative rock a valid musical response to the excessive musical and technological complexity of more advanced styles of rock, or is it just a smokescreen for the musical “wanna-be” (and an audience that is similarly incapable of appreciating more challenging styles)? The answer will probably come with time. Because of the natural tendency of the human race to move from simplicity to complexity, it seems likely that some punk-influenced groups will gradually inch toward greater sophistication, if they are capable of doing so. Others will stagnate and disappear rather quickly into anonymity.

A Final Note About Complexity and Simplicity

Before leaving this discussion of complexity and simplicity, we need to be certain that we have not led the reader to believe that complexity is inherently superior to simplicity. When we use the terms *complex* and *simple*, we mean to describe—as objectively as possible—the level of creativity demonstrated in the manipulation of the musical elements (as defined in Chapter 2). The music of the Beatles is more musically complex than that of the Rolling Stones. That is simply a fact based on an objective analytical study of the music. However, this observation does not imply any kind of value judgment (e.g., that the Beatles’ music is better than the Rolling Stones’). In fact, there is no inherent connection between complexity/simplicity and good/bad. “Good” and “bad” are value judgments based on a matrix of personal tastes, backgrounds, educations, and experiences.

Too often, we meet people who can appreciate only the complex or only the simple. They thrive on one and denigrate the other. Such people are living only half a life—musically speaking. The truth is that both simple and complex music can have a rewarding function in our lives. There are times when we desire and appreciate the challenges afforded by the more sophisticated music of the Beatles; Blood, Sweat, and Tears; or Emerson, Lake, and Palmer. However, there are other times when we crave the simpler, more visceral appeal of Little Richard, the Stones, or James Brown. This is no different than selecting a television show to watch. There are times when you might be ready for a show like *Law and Order: Special Victims Unit*, one that will cause you to think about complicated ethical or legal dilemmas. There are other times when you just need to “veg out” with a rather mindless sitcom. Both have a function in our lives.

In Chapter 7 (“The British Invasion”) and Chapter 11 (“Jazz Rock”), we encountered a song titled “Sympathy for the Devil.” The original song (by Jagger and Richard) was simple and repetitive. The arrangement by Blood, Sweat, and Tears, however, was remarkably complex. A nonmusical analogy can be made using two technological developments: a supercomputer and a handheld calculator. One is very complex; the other is relatively simple. However, both have practical functions for which the other is ill-suited. Thus you would not want America’s next space shuttle to be designed and controlled by a hand calculator, nor do you need to drag a supercomputer along with you to the market to determine which brand of toothpaste is cheaper per ounce. So it is with the two versions of “Sympathy for the Devil.” One is complex; the other is simple. The truly fortunate person is the one who can enjoy each version for what it is. If you honestly prefer one and find little to like about the other, that is a matter of personal preference and is absolutely your prerogative. What is unfortunate is if you cannot tell the difference!

An Overview and an Editorial

Overview: Eight Basic Statements

In Chapter 1, we stated the intention that this history of rock and roll would be told as objectively as possible, stating the facts and allowing the reader to draw his or her own conclusions. The evaluative statements made regarding musical content have, it is hoped, been based on valid musical analysis, and estimates of the relative importance of various performers have been made inasmuch as that seems to be a central task of any historian.

Chapter 19, however, is different. This overview contains a number of subjective evaluations, and the subsequent editorial is highly personalized. It is hoped that the comments therein will prove provocative or instructive; if not, perhaps they will—as was said once before—at least be interesting or entertaining.

Beginning with a mixture of R&B, C&W, and pop music, early rock and roll settled into three basic styles: mainstream rock, rockabilly, and soft rock. In the 1960s, other influences were added (e.g., folk, jazz, gospel, and classical music), resulting in several new substyles. In the 1970s, rock fragmented into a bewildering array of individualized substyles, most of which continued unabated through the 1980s and 1990s and on into the new century. With all of this, can we step back and attempt to draw a series of conclusions that might apply to all of the history of rock? Let us try. The eight basic statements that follow seem to apply across the entirety of rock. They are stated in no particular order, except that we will save the most important point for last.

Basic Statement 1

Rock and roll may be here to stay, but individual artists and styles are not. In other words, although rock as a general style may be permanent, its component parts are extremely transitory. Rock and roll is much like the weather: If you do not like it now, wait a while. For every Chicago or Rolling Stones, there are hundreds of performers who are here today and gone tomorrow.

For a number of years, the author conducted a survey in his university classes in rock history. The sole question asked was, What performer(s) who are popular today will still be popular 10 years from now? The results make the point: The majority of performers named in the 1984 survey were not even mentioned in the 1986 survey. Not only were most of those named in 1984 not popular in 1994, they did not even rate a mention just

two years later. The individualism of the market is reflected in the fact that out of 100 responses on a given survey, 63 separate artists were named—and few received as many as five votes.

There is one other observation that relates to basic statement number 1: Nothing is as out as that which is most recently out. Very often, there is a cycle: popularity to derision to nostalgia. In the aforementioned 1984 survey, Michael Jackson was the biggest vote getter; when his name was mentioned in class in 1986, the responses varied from snickers to outright guffaws. As time passed, the Jackson stigma passed, and Michael became a nostalgia item from the “good old early 1980s.” This phenomenon is particularly noticeable with the harder rock styles, especially with heavy metal. The principle in operation here seems to be that the more the appeal of a group is based on rebellion and shock, the more likely it is to pass from “super in” to “super out.” After all, what is outrageously shocking today will be old hat in two years—which brings us to our next observation.

Basic Statement 2

What were once vices are now habits. The principle of one-upmanship is quite powerful within the rock industry. The title of the Doobie Brothers album (which we have used as basic statement number 2) makes a profound statement where rock history is concerned. Again, this principle applies with increasing strength in the harder styles, especially where rebellion and shock are major factors. Competition within the rock industry is tremendous. Countless new bands are begun each year in the United States and England (not to mention Japan, Germany, Scandinavia, and elsewhere). All hope to “make it” and see their albums rise to the Top 10 and play to sold-out stadiums.

Unfortunately (or fortunately?), 99 percent will never come close to their dreams. Somehow, 1 percent attain success out of all those thousands of bands. Thus publicity becomes crucial—good or bad matters little (there is an old show biz proverb that all publicity is good publicity). To grab the spotlight from the current stars, a new band must play louder, have more elaborate props, cut bigger holes in their jeans, wear more spikes and chains, shout more obscenities, and bite the heads off more bats than the current groups. If not, they run the risk of being submerged in obscurity forever.

Thus one-upmanship is a fact of life for many aspiring bands. The only problem is that one-upmanship is a game that no one wins for long. The rules of the game mean another group will soon come along with more powerful amps, even more elaborate props, more revealing costumes, and even more explicit songs—and they will bite the heads off six bats, plus a baby rabbit.

The troublesome result of the one-upmanship game is that it implies a staggering future. If the game continues as it has for the last 50 years, where will rock and roll be by 2020? Just how loud can it get? How sexually explicit? How outrageous? The thinking person must be concerned.

Basic Statement 3

Good is bad, and bad is good. The one-upmanship game would not be a concern if each group were merely trying to play better music, make ever more uplifting statements, and set increasingly better lifestyle examples. This is, in fact, close to the nature of the game in the early and mid-1960s, where love, peace, and racial tolerance were themes. With the division of the mainstream in the mid-1960s into Beatles and Stones, though, an interesting change occurred. The Stones represented the antihero concept. Part of their popularity resulted from their being so bad. They acted bad, they sang bad—they were bad . . . and bad was good. In fact, in black jargon (picked up by nonblack populations), the word *bad*, said with the right inflection, meant “good.”

This inversion of traditional evaluative criteria developed through the 1970s, and the message seemed to be that the worse you were, the better you were (and vice versa). Distortion was deliberately added to the music. Thus rock consumers bought more and more sophisticated stereo systems—presumably as free from any distortion as possible—so they could hear the distortion better. Singers who screamed and shouted out of tune were praised, whereas singers who sang in tune were derided. The “best” or “real” rock groups were those who played with the least sophistication; any attempt to sophisticate the music was condemned as a sellout to commercialism or as a disreputable attempt at musical snobbery.

What may lie at the base of this peculiar inversion of values may be nothing more than sheer laziness. The more sophisticated and complex the music, the more that is required of both the performers and listeners. Some effort must be put forth to perform or listen intelligently to the more sophisticated compositions within any style of music—but it is an effort worth making. There must be something inherent in the finest music that allows it to last for hundreds of years, whereas hackwork totally disappears within a matter of weeks.

Some rock writers say, though, that “real” rock (meaning simple, three-chord, 4/4 rock) is for the “real” people (the average middle- and lower-income working classes). This is surely the most offensively prejudicial position one can take. It implies that only the privileged socioeconomic classes have the intelligence, inner drive, and discipline to learn to play or listen to the more sophisticated styles of music, and that the “regular guy (or girl)” cannot possibly appreciate more than three chords or four beats. Such a position is not only grossly offensive, it is also dead wrong. Anyone can learn to listen more intelligently to music. One need not know every chord, every metric pattern, or every form to respond to better music (in whatever style). As with anything else (football, baseball, politics, etc.), the more one knows, the more one enjoys.

By the way, the foregoing discussion should not be interpreted to mean that one ought to prefer more sophisticated music and shun simpler music. Musical preference is a complicated issue that profound minds have been grappling with for a long time. There is absolutely nothing wrong with liking simpler styles of music. What is wrong is to disdain more complex styles just because they are more complex. That would be just as bad as disdaining simpler styles just because they are simple. The goal should be to develop a broader taste that can accept and enjoy both simple music and complex music (and everything in between), while recognizing each for what it is. Fortunate is the listener who can enjoy Emerson, Lake, and Palmer or Blood, Sweat, and Tears and appreciate their musical complexities, and then fully enjoy Little Richard or the Rolling Stones, while recognizing their music as being pure and simple fun. In other words, one need not validate one’s own musical preference by disparaging other styles.

Basic Statement 4

“My album may be number 1, but I’m not commercial!” One of the basic ironies in the rock industry is that virtually everyone is striving for commercial success, while loudly proclaiming just the opposite. As was mentioned earlier, one of the most damning charges one can make is that a performer has “gone commercial,” but rock music is not only a musical phenomenon; it is a commercial enterprise. There need not be a stigma attached to the word *commercial*. The crux of the issue may be whether or not (and to what extent) a group alters its style simply to achieve commercial success. Thus, if a group maintains its style and gradually becomes popular enough to enjoy a wide appeal, they have simply carried their style to a wider audience. That should be a compliment to the musicians and to their earlier fans, validating their musical preference.

More problematic is the case of a band that consciously alters its musical principles solely to achieve commercial success. This rings of hypocrisy and raises embarrassing

questions about their musical sincerity. Sometimes it is difficult to know whether such a change is genuine or simply done to make a buck.

As we have seen, the word *commercial* is often slapped onto performers whose talents are versatile enough to enable them to perform in a variety of styles. If a musician has the musical talent to perform convincingly in a variety of styles, he or she should be respected, not condemned. Such condemnation often reflects the narrow-mindedness of the critic more than the lack of integrity of the performer.

In any event, the word *commercial* ought not be used as an evaluative musical term. It means nothing musically; it tells nothing about the harmonies, melodies, forms, and so on. It is an economic term. So beware the next time you hear someone disparage a performer for being “commercial.” Try to think (and listen) more deeply than that.

Basic Statement 5

Not all music is art; most of it is simply product. Have you ever stood in stunned appreciation while some musical whiz sat at a piano and improvised almost any tune you could name, or have you been amazed at the seemingly mysterious ability of some guitarist to invent tunes and chords at a moment’s notice? It is a vestige of 19th-century romanticism that we tend to view musical talent with awe and invest it with an aura of mysticism. In earlier centuries, musicians were often viewed merely as skilled technicians, not much different from our modern-day auto mechanics, electricians, or plumbers.

The fact is, only a small percentage of musical talent is mysterious. A much larger percentage is simply the result of plain old hard work. There is a standing joke about composition: that it is 10 percent inspiration and 90 percent perspiration. That is about right. A musician gets a musical idea in the same way one gets ideas about other things—from “somewhere.” Then come the pure hard work, discipline, and practice to turn that idea into a full-blown reality.

A true work of art seems to appeal not only to a large number of people, but to generations of people over many centuries; it is as though it transcends time. A product, however, is a far more mundane thing. Usually, a product begins with someone assessing what will sell, figuring out the technology required to produce it, and then going to work manufacturing it, promoting it, and selling it. Usually, such a product serves an immediate function and (as we all know too well) soon wears out or becomes obsolete and is discarded. This process applies to products as varied as automobiles, computers, and electric toothbrushes.

In every century and in every musical style, there have been very few true artists and a large number of musical manufacturers. The former create art; the latter make products. In Mozart’s time, there were hundreds of hacks who understood the musical language of the time and then went about producing compositions utilizing that language. They knew the skill of creating tunes, chords, and forms that were currently in style. Only a handful of composers of that time had that something extra that made their music rise above the level of product to the level of art. Several centuries later, we have forgotten the hacks, but we still remember Mozart.

Things are not much different now. Especially in a heavily commercialized industry like rock music, one can be sure that works of art will be few and far between, whereas 95 percent of what we hear is mere product. Many composers, performers, and engineers have learned the technical skill necessary to manufacture a marketable musical product; hence they go about their business of grinding out those products day after day. Fifty years from now (much less 200), 99 percent will be long gone; only a trace will remain.

So beware when rock musicians attempt to hide behind so-called artistic freedom. In most cases, they are merely successful manufacturers of a product. As such, they have the same responsibilities to society that manufacturers of automobiles, cigarettes, and lawn mowers have.

You might ask, Is not artistic freedom necessary for the creation of true art? Well, Bach worked from Sunday to Sunday for the church; he wrote many musical masterpieces within the strict confines of what was acceptable to his employer. Yet he still managed to create musical works that live 300 years later. Was he free as an artist? Absolutely not. How far do you think he would have gotten if he had popped a few satanic messages or sexually explicit songs into the Sunday morning church service? Or consider Haydn, who worked for years for an Austrian prince. Each week, he had to create chamber music, solo literature, or orchestral music for the court. Because Haydn was a true artist, he created masterpieces within the boundaries imposed on him. Whether such limitations are set by the church, the state, the employer, or the society as a whole, art can and has flourished within boundaries.

Basic Statement 6

The audience for rock is getting both older and younger. In its beginnings, rock and roll was the music of teens and very young adults (generally seventh grade through college years), but as we entered the 1970s, an inevitable fact became obvious: Those 1950s teenagers were entering middle age, and they still liked rock. A baby born in 1940 was 15 years old when “Rock Around the Clock” hit number 1; in 1970, that same person turned 30 but very likely still liked Elvis, the Beach Boys, Dylan, and the Beatles, and in 2000, that baby was 60 years old and in all probability still liked those artists as well as a few newer ones. Notice the number of “classic rock” and “adult rock” radio stations on your FM dial? Those are aimed at a relatively affluent segment of the population that is roughly 35 to 60 years old. These people are hitting their peak earning years (a fact of considerable interest to radio advertisers), and they want to hear their favorite artists from the 1950s and 1960s as well as a few of the more conservative acts of the 1970s through 1990s. Indeed, the rock market now extends to 60-year-olds.

The other end of this demographic expansion is with the preteens. The lowering of the age of rock consumerism accelerated with the coming of MTV and other televised rock video formats. It should come as no surprise to anyone that children—little children—like television. Now the 7-, 9-, and 11-year-old has immediate (and free) access to the most up-to-date rock videos. While parents and older siblings are at work, school, or elsewhere, the latchkey preteen is left to the electronic babysitter—television. He or she has a choice of cartoons, reruns, game shows, or rap videos. The television rock videos have brought an increasingly younger population into the world of rock and roll. The same can be said about the availability of music via the Internet.

This lowering of the age of pop music awareness is reflected at rock concerts, where the average age is steadily lowering. Whereas it was not so long ago that the rock concert was the province of those 16 to 24 years old, it is gradually becoming evident that the majority of concertgoers are 12 to 19, with a heavy sprinkling of preteens at most concerts. Whereas in 1957, the typical 12-year-old would only stare in astonishment at older brother’s new pink and black outfit and greasy ducktail, today’s 12-year-old may be a carbon copy of the Spice Girls or Britney Spears.

Thus we are saying that the rock market of the early 2000s extends from the early elementary school years to 60-year-olds. True, the teenager is still the center of the market, but to call rock and roll “teen music” is simply no longer accurate.

Basic Statement 7

Rock is no longer the counterculture—it is the culture. This statement naturally follows the previous statement. Rock and roll no longer stands as a teen-oriented countercultural phenomenon. It now pervades virtually our entire culture. It cuts across all economic groups, social levels, and ethnic groups. The rock style permeates movie music, music for

television, jazz, music at athletic events, church music, and country music. Granted, within rock, there are countercultural trends, but as a generic entity, rock so permeates our entire culture that all other styles of music (jazz, classical, pure C&W, etc.) are considered to be on the fringe, admired by small subcultural groups.

Basic Statement 8

Music, including rock and roll, affects behavior. Perhaps the most oft-quoted statement in this regard was made by Andrew Fletcher in 1703: “Give me the making of the songs of a nation and I care not who makes the laws.” In other words, music may be even more influential in shaping the attitudes and behaviors of a nation than its constitution, legal system, and government. Fletcher was hardly the first to recognize that fact. Socrates’ and Plato’s mentor, Damon, said that music, “being chaste, has the power of disposing our minds to virtue and, being the contrary, to vice.” Centuries later, Martin Luther would say, “Music is one of the greatest gifts that God has given us; it is divine and therefore Satan is its enemy. For with its aid, many dire temptations are overcome; the devil does not stay where music is.”

In our own century, anthropologist Alan P. Merriam wrote (1964, 218), “The importance of music, as judged by the sheer ubiquity of its presence, is enormous. . . . There is probably no other human cultural activity which is so all-pervasive and which reaches into, shapes, and often controls so much of human behavior.” We have known intuitively for centuries that music can make us feel relaxed, scared, patriotic, ambitious, mad, sad, happy, romantic, and reverent. The ability of music to affect human behavior is the basis of the entire field of music therapy.

In the past few decades, scientists have learned more and more about the ways in which we are affected by music. We know for certain that music affects us both physiologically and psychologically. Various musical stimuli can affect our heartbeat, respiratory rate, glandular secretions, and the production of electricity through the skin, but with all we have learned about the intimate relationship between music and people, there is even more that we do not know. Music psychology—an outgrowth of music therapy—is an exciting field of research. In future decades, we are sure to learn much more about how and why we react the way we do to music.

The fact that music is such a powerful tool in manipulating human behavior has been reflected in our society for years. Drums and bugles accompanied armies into battle, partly to spur feelings of patriotism and courage. Film and television producers spend much time, energy, and money ensuring that just the right bit of music accompanies each love scene, horror scene, or chase scene. As Arnold Perris points out, music (1985, 6) “reaches the emotions easily, often (always?) ahead of intellectual awareness.” Perris uses the example of the movie *Jaws*, in which (1985, 6) “a melodic motive in the bass arouses our fear of the shark each time we hear it, whether or not the terrifying creature appears before our eyes.”

Muzak is carefully programmed throughout the day to calm, stimulate, and otherwise affect the behavior of office workers. Doctors and dentists use music in their waiting rooms to help calm their anxious patients. The ability of music to make repetitive physical tasks easier or even fun has given rise to jazzercise, in which people congregate to do coordinated calisthenics to pop and rock music. They do 100 jumping jacks and think they are having fun (and pay for the privilege). Doing it without the music would be work.

In the Musical Close-Up in Chapter 13, “Mainstream Rock,” we noted the intimate relationship between lyrics and music. Music’s ability to help us remember verbal messages has been demonstrated repeatedly by commercial jingles. When an advertiser wants to be sure that a product name, a sales slogan, or even a telephone number becomes lodged in the consumer’s mind, he or she turns to music as an aid. Fifty years later, most people who

watched television in the 1950s can still recall the product name from an old jingle, “See the U.S.A. in your _____.”¹ They are likely to be able to sing the tune quite accurately. Do such jingles actually affect consumer behavior? Advertisers invest millions each year in the belief that they do.

Sesame Street has used this principle for years. Noting that children could reproduce commercial jingles they heard on television, the *Sesame Street* people decided to run “commercials” for the letter *j*, the number 9, and so on. Thousands of youngsters learned the “advertised” letters and numbers through the repetitive commercials. Psychologists believe the association of verbal messages with simple and catchy musical phrases helps embed those messages in our minds, ready for instant recall years later.

Certainly rock musicians have understood the power of music to affect human behavior. After all, they see the principle in action as they face thousands of screaming fans in arenas and stadiums night after night. They can play the crowd with uncanny insight. Certain songs tend to settle down a crowd, while others can bring the concert to a fever pitch. If they are not careful, artists can create a situation beyond even their own control, as the crowd’s animation becomes potentially violent, often threatening the safety of the onstage performers themselves.

The folkies and folk rockers of the 1960s relied heavily on music’s ability to affect behavior. Their “message songs” were intended to reinforce and even change people’s attitudes toward violence, war, and racial prejudice. David Crosby once remarked, “I figure that the only thing to do was to steal the kids. I still think it’s the only thing to do. By saying that, I’m not talking about kidnapping. I’m just talking about changing young people’s value systems, which removes them from their parents’ world very effectively” (*Rolling Stone Interviews* 1971, 410). The acid rockers also knew of music’s power. Jimi Hendrix is reported to have said that “you can hypnotize people with music, and when you get people at their weakest point, you can preach to them into their subconscious what we want to say” (Peters and Peters 1984, 76).

On several occasions we have noted that music has the capacity to both reflect society and change it. As composer Roger Sessions noted, “Bach and Mozart and Beethoven did not reflect Germany, they helped to create it” (Augros and Stanciu 1984, 139). In his excellent study of the use of music as a force for change, Arnold Perris attempts (1985, 222) “to demonstrate that composers in many times and places have consciously used their craft to change the world outside their studio.” Perris discusses various examples of the use of music in totalitarian societies as an important agent of controlling thought and behavior. Regarding Hitler, he quotes Hellmut Lehmann-Haupt, who said that the dictator (1985, 209) “does not think of art as a luxury or a pastime, a pleasant embellishment of life. . . . He has a very healthy respect for it. He knows that there is hardly a better way of getting hold of a person . . . his inner life, the subconscious, hidden personality—than through art.” Perris shows how leaders from Saint Augustine to Mao have all understood music’s ability to affect human behavior.

If music possesses such power, there is both good and bad news. The good news is that music can be used to uplift us, to help us learn, and to make us more tolerant. The bad news is that music can also encourage drug abuse, increase violence and rebellion, reinforce suicidal tendencies, and influence our purchasing decisions. Far too many writers on rock get themselves into an embarrassing and untenable position. Their enthusiasm leads them to point with pride to the undeniable effects music has had on clothing, hairstyles, and lifestyles; they praise music for its pivotal role in the civil rights and antiwar movements. Harry Belafonte, a motivating force behind “We Are the World,” remarked that “the power of artists is unlimited. . . . There are no boundaries on art; its universal power is absolutely

¹Chevrolet.

unlimited” (Bronson 1988, 605). However, many of the same commentators pull a quick about-face when confronted with potentially negative examples. What about drugs, incest, necrophilia, suicide, violence, degradation of women, satanism, and bestiality? Suddenly the party line changes. Music inexplicably becomes impotent; it is not considered an influence where these negative behaviors are concerned. Music, such writers would say, is just harmless, good-time entertainment, utterly devoid of any affective power.

The problem is that one cannot have it both ways. If we acknowledge that rock music has had positive effects (as it has), we must also be willing to admit that it has had negative effects (as it has). The person who proudly proclaims, “Oh, I listen to the music, but it doesn’t affect me” is either hopelessly naive or grossly ill informed.

As people have known for centuries (from Damon to Hendrix), and as scientists have begun to document, music is one of the most powerful tools known to humankind. In Perris’s words (1985, 6), “Music is doing something to everyone who hears it all the time.”

Editorial

Let us review the eight basic statements from the preceding overview:

1. Rock and roll may be here to stay, but individual artists and styles are not.
2. What were once vices are now habits.
3. Good is bad, and bad is good.
4. “My album may be number 1, but I’m not commercial!”
5. Not all music is art; most of it is simply product.
6. The audience for rock is getting both older and younger.
7. Rock is no longer the counterculture—it *is* the culture.
8. Music, including rock and roll, affects behavior.

The editorial comments that follow draw in varying degrees on these eight basic statements.

How Much Is Too Much?

In its 50-year history, rock and roll has changed dramatically. Elvis Presley sang about hound dogs and pleaded with his lover not to be cruel. Chuck Berry sang of school days and teenage would-be rock and rollers (“Johnny B. Goode”). Elvis bumped his hips; Chuck Berry duck-walked across the stage; Little Richard and Jerry Lee Lewis played the piano every way it could be played.

More recently, Prince tells us that incest is not so bad; Ozzy Osbourne suggests that “suicide is the only way out”; Twisted Sister says to “shoot ’em down with a fuckin’ gun”; the Rolling Stones sing, “Feel the hot cum dripping on your thigh from it”; Venom advises us to “plunge the dagger in her breast . . . sacrifice to Lucifer my Master”; and rapper Ice-T yearns to “dust” (kill) a cop. In concert, W.A.S.P. lead singer Blackie Lawless simulated intercourse using a buzz saw; Slayer simulated the cannibalization of women; Alice Cooper symbolically abused a baby doll; satanic symbols adorn numerous stage settings. Album covers show meat hooks pressed into nude breasts, chewed-up body parts beneath the blood-drenched mouth of a rock star, and fantastic scenes representing Hades. Videos revel in sadomasochism and violence. To paraphrase a popular commercial slogan, “We’ve come a long way, baby!”

“All a matter of degree,” you may say. Little by little, inch by inch, year by year, we have “progressed” from Elvis swiveling his hips through Hendrix humping his guitar and Morrison exposing himself to W.A.S.P. simulating intercourse with a saw blade. Yes, it is

just a matter of degree—but when does a difference in degree become a difference in kind? After all, 110 degrees Fahrenheit is simply a difference in degree from 15 degrees, but the former most of us think of as hot and the latter we call cold—opposites, in fact. At what point does temperature become “hot”—at 83? At 92? At 100? We are not certain; each of us has a different tolerance for heat, but we would probably all agree that when the thermometer reaches 120 degrees, we are hot. Somewhere, at different degrees along the way, we became hot—we crossed a line. Has rock and roll, while “progressing” by degrees, crossed a line? Recall five of our basic statements:

1. the one-upmanship principle
2. the inverted values principle
3. the younger rock audience
4. the rock is the culture principle
5. the music-affects-behavior principle

If these principles continue to operate for the next 10 years, as they have for the last 50, what will rock and roll be like in 2020? What will today’s 18-year-old face as he or she attempts to raise a child in the rock culture in the year 2023?

Increasingly, thoughtful observers have begun to wonder just how much is too much. Has the one-upmanship game gone too far? Even though not all agree as to when and where the line was crossed, many reasonable people agree that things have gotten a bit out of hand. Rock and roll has gradually become something different in kind, not simply different in degree. As former Doobie Brothers member Michael McDonald said, “The energy we were trying to create as opposed to the energy people create today and call rock ‘n’ roll seems like a real dichotomy. This music that was made to make anyone within hearing range feel good is now all of a sudden meant to intimidate” (Woodward 1985, 82). Certainly there is an element of hatred and violence in much of today’s rock that simply has not been present in any style of music previously. Something is different.

Whereas rock’s critics have traditionally been fundamentalist religious groups, a new segment of the population has become concerned. In June 1984, the National PTA, representing 5.6 million members, adopted a resolution calling on record companies to advise consumers if their products contained material with explicit language or sexual references and inferences not commonly recommended for all age groups. At the instigation of the Parents’ Music Resource Center (PMRC), a hearing was held before the U.S. Senate Committee on Commerce, Science, and Transportation on September 19, 1985. Among those testifying were representatives of the PTA, the PMRC, the recording industry, the radio industry, a psychiatrist, a music educator, and performers John Denver, Frank Zappa, and Dee Snider (lead singer of Twisted Sister). The purpose of the hearing was not to foster legislation to control rock music, nor was it antirock, as some writers have erroneously reported (e.g., “Even as the PMRC was mounting its antirock campaign . . .”; Ward, Stokes, and Tucker 1986, 620). The hearing did attempt to focus attention on a certain segment of the music industry that may have “crossed the line”; it called on the music industry to clean up its own act and practice some social responsibility. The hearing further encouraged companies to label potentially offensive albums for the purpose of informing the consumer (a standard practice in other segments of the marketplace, from movies to cigarettes to children’s toys). Commenting on this topic, Neil Young remarked, “It’s a product, it’s packaged food for the mind. Why not label it as to content?” (Harrington 1985). (You might note that Neil Young is referring to our basic statement 5.) Frank Zappa further suggested that lyrics be printed on the outside of albums, a suggestion that met with near-unanimous approval. Although some called this “censorship,” that was a false issue.

Neither the labeling of the product nor the printing of lyrics qualifies as censorship; in fact, such procedures represent the increased dissemination of information, not the suppression of information—in other words, exactly the opposite of censorship.

According to basic statement 8, music, including rock and roll, affects behavior. Will our culture be affected more by Bruce Springsteen, Michael Jackson, Huey Lewis, and Lionel Richie, or by Snoop Dogg, NWA, and Venom? The answer rests with the delicate interplay between the consumer and the industry. If consumers buy more of one and less of the other, the industry will be quick to react. After all, they are merely manufacturing a product to sell. To a large extent, though, the industry can determine what the consumer thinks he or she wants to buy. For example, referring to the selling of Sha-Na-Na, a 1950s-style rock revival group of the 1970s, Neil Bogart of Casablanca Records said, “To build this group, we created a music industry trend. We called it rock ’n’ roll revival. With slogans, stickers, buttons, and industry and consumer contests, and even black leather jackets for our promotion staff, we brought back the fifties.” Bogart concluded that “talent may be compared to commercial products—the cigarettes you smoke, the TV set you watch, or the car you drive. You select that brand of product that you have been convinced is the one you should buy” (Szatmary 1991, 223–224).

David Szatmary points out the importance of the rock critic in creating the consumer’s “free will.” He quotes columnist and author Richard Goldstein, who maintained (1987, 171) “illusions about the value-free purity of rock until the day in 1969 when my agent informed me that a large music publisher would pay me \$25,000 for three presentations on the state of popular music. It was understood that I would favor this company’s artists in my reviews.” Some companies provide up to six copies of each new release, worth up to \$10,000 per year, to major rock writers (Szatmary 1987). It is simply naive to believe that the rock industry functions with a free-willed consumer purchasing the artistic expressions of an idealistic group of musical creators.

Can It Get Better?

Yes. A remarkably valid solution was suggested by none other than Frank Zappa at the Senate hearings in 1985:

Children in the “vulnerable” age bracket have a natural love for music. If, as a parent, you believe they should be exposed to something more uplifting than “Sugar Walls,” support Music Appreciation programs in schools. Music Appreciation costs very little compared to sports expenditures. Your children have a right to know that something besides pop music exists. (U.S. Congress, 1985)

One of the finest writers on contemporary American culture (and especially on the media and our educational system) is Neil Postman, professor of communication arts and sciences at New York University. In *Teaching As a Conserving Activity*, Postman (1979) suggests that an educational system should serve as a counterbalance to the existing cultural environment. In other words, education should provide what the culture does not. He bravely suggests a curriculum that provides substantive education in areas absolutely essential to the development of human culture, but unlike so many “back to basics” prescriptions, Postman wisely includes music and the arts as one of the essentials.

In so considering music a cultural essential, Postman is on absolutely solid anthropological ground. Music has been one of the few consistent characteristics of every society since the beginning of recorded history. No matter how primitive and unsophisticated, no matter what continent, no matter what the ethnic, economic, or social profile, every society has had music. Anthropologists have concluded, therefore, that all societies have felt the need for some type of musical expression. It is apparently a necessity of human existence.

This anthropological evidence runs exactly counter to the oft-held position that music is a luxury, a nonessential that may be jettisoned from the educational curriculum at the first provocation. How often have you heard some educational reformer angrily demanding that the educational fluff be cut out of the curriculum? In most cases, music is cited as one example of fluff. One can hardly imagine a more historically ill-informed position.

What kind of music should we teach? Again, Neil Postman has a valid suggestion. Consistent with his philosophy that education should provide a counterbalance to the cultural environment, Postman recommends that schools should stay as far away as possible from contemporary works—especially avoiding products of the popular culture. That idea sounds so reactionary that it is downright revolutionary, but Postman's idea makes good sense. After all, teaching rock and roll to high school students is like teaching Eskimos about ice. Postman argues that the so-called First Curriculum (by which he means television and the other electronic media) supplies a glut of information about the contemporary popular culture; hence the Second Curriculum (the school curriculum) should provide a counterbalance—that is, it should inform students about alternative artistic products from other (including past) cultures. Thus he is saying almost exactly what Frank Zappa said about the advisability of exposing youth to other styles of music beyond rock and roll.

We are in the age of relevance—knowledge for knowledge's sake is an unappreciated concept—but relevant to what? Today, most students might reply, "Relevant to making money!" If it applies to operating a computer, running a business, or repairing a DVD player, it is relevant; if it deals with the philosophy of religion, the history of government, or the music of Schubert, it is irrelevant. Worse, it is boring! Remember, Madonna said we are "living in a material world."

Even though we may agree with Postman's idealistic suggestions, we must also face reality. Perhaps the solution lies somewhere in between. For example, perhaps we should study rock and roll, but in doing so, perhaps we should try to distinguish between art and product. What is it about the music of the Beatles that continues to enliven the interest of both the average listener and the musically educated? Why do musical scholars find works by Blood, Sweat, and Tears and Emerson, Lake, and Palmer so fascinating? What was it that these groups (and others) did that seems to set them apart from the others? Maybe the answer has to do with genuine musical creativity—the talent some musicians have to take whatever musical language they prefer (classical, jazz, rock, etc.) and manipulate it (via melody, harmony, form, timbre, rhythm, etc.) in new and imaginative ways. If students can begin to appreciate true musical creativity in rock (and also to recognize the more pervasive musical mundanities), it often follows that they crave further musical stimulation, seeking it out (and finding it) in other styles such as jazz or classical music. This may not happen in every case, but it happens more often than one might expect.

Rock and roll, just like almost anything else you can name, is neither all good nor all bad. Just because someone criticizes an aspect of rock, he or she should not automatically be labeled "antirock." In fact, just the opposite may be true; the criticism may stem from an abiding love of rock music and a belief in its validity as a form of musical expression. Such critics want rock to be the best it can be: a creative musical style that enhances our society, rather than debasing it.

Where to Now?

Trying to forecast trends in the unpredictable music industry is risky business. During the 1990s, rock and roll turned 40 years old. Jazz was about that age when it experienced its popular decline, and it was not long after that the new kid on the block—rock and roll—took over. Does a similar fate await rock and roll? Will the early 2000s witness the death of rock?

Probably not. One of the points made earlier in this chapter was that rock has become totally integrated into our culture. By now, there is such a multitude of rock styles, each with its own audience, from preteens to folks in their 60s, that it seems highly unlikely that rock will die anytime soon. (For that matter, jazz did not die, it just receded from its position of prominence to a place somewhere in the midst of the musical fabric.)

Like jazz, rock may not die in the early 2000s, but there is historical precedent for the emergence of a new style that could cause the harder rock styles to decline in their commercial impact.

As we have mentioned, the harder rock styles are based to a large degree on the one-upmanship principle. Many heavy metal and rap bands have raced pell-mell down a very steep path of explicit sex, graphic violence, anger, depression, and defiance. Coupled with the numbing sameness and a paucity of musical value, this appears to be a path that may well face an eventual dead end. Although there may always be an audience for such music, the early years of the 21st century may find a larger number of listeners who have had a stomach full of rock degradation and negativism.

The probability is that the children of the postboomers will be listening to a musical style that we can hardly imagine. Suppose you had told people in 1946 that in 10 years, most of the music they were listening to would be obsolete—replaced by a raucous new style called “rock and roll.” They would have laughed at you and had no concept of what such music would be like. Just as was true then, the seeds of the next new style are probably around us now, but we are not likely to recognize them.

In spite of our inability to predict the future, we can hazard a few guesses about the music of the early 2000s. Certainly there is no reason to think that the technological trend will slow down; thus it is likely that MIDI instruments, computers, synthesizers, and other manifestations of music technology will continue to be important in whatever pop styles emerge.

Also, the softer styles of rock seem to have had a consistent appeal throughout the last 50 years, and there is no reason to expect anything different in the future.

Finally, people like to dance. Whether it was swing, the twist, disco, or technodance, dance music seems to have a consistent appeal in every era. So we can probably predict that some form of dance-oriented music will continue to be successful well into the 2000s.

Rock has a wonderful, colorful, and exciting history. From Bill Haley and the Comets through Presley, Dylan, the Beatles, the Stones, Motown, Chicago, ELP, Jackson, Springsteen, and Hammer—it is a fascinating story and one that shows no signs of ending any time soon. We hope that this and the preceding chapters have given you some perspective on rock’s history. Perhaps the next time you hear of an exciting new group or new style, you will have a better idea of how it fits into a larger picture and whence it came.



Discography

A BASIC RECORDED LIBRARY OF ROCK AND ROLL

Spending a lot of money on recordings is no problem; anyone can do it. However, the Discography that follows attempts to reduce the seemingly endless possibilities to a manageable collection. Even so, there are approximately 300 entries, equaling an expenditure of between \$4,000 and \$4,500.

It is hoped that this Discography provides a representative sampling of styles across rock's first 50 years. Needless to say, some hard decisions were made regarding what to include and what to leave out. Of course, no two rock discographers would ever come up with the same list. In this case, there was also the concern that artists and songs discussed in the text were appropriately represented in the Discography.

In trying to keep the list as short (and inexpensive) as possible, some inevitable trade-offs were accepted. First, in a number of cases, greatest hits compilations were listed. While such compilations are a cost-effective way to acquire the "biggies" by a given artist, it must be remembered that some of the given artist's most creative work may not be among the most popular Top 40 hits, but in the other tracks of various albums. The authors have attempted to include compilations judiciously, opting for specific albums in cases where the artist's best work might be lost on a greatest hits album.

A second trade-off involves anthologies or compilations (listed separately). Here again, one gains in cost-effectiveness (e.g., why buy an entire album of the Kingsmen when all one wants is "Louie, Louie"). However, most anthologies contain a certain percentage of significant material, plus a balance of filler material. Also, there is inevitably some duplication among similar anthologies. Again, there are many anthologies available; those listed were thoughtfully selected for breadth and coordination with the text.

One final note: If your funds are limited, please note the asterisks in the discography. These selections signify a very basic library of just over 100 items (approximate cost: \$1,500), which would seem to be the minimum required to establish a basic sampling of rock's first 50 years. In the cases in which multiple recordings are listed for a group or artist, you will find an asterisk preceding the specific albums that warrant, in the opinion of the authors, this "most significant recording" status. Another option that has recently become

available is purchasing individual songs for less than \$1 each from a music download service, using a computer-based media player. Two of the most popular options—both free at the time this text was published—are Apple’s iTunes (<http://www.apple.com/itunes/>) and RealPlayer (<http://www.real.com>). Though this may be seen as an economic option, it should be considered a distant second in terms of purchasing music to build a library. After all, purchasing an entire album, containing both hit singles and album cuts, provides a much broader perspective on the output of any given artist or group. We have created two iMix collections of recordings to go with this text: a “required” list and a supplementary “recommended” list. Simply visit the iMix area of Apple’s Music Store, using iTunes, then enter “Stuessy” into the “search for” field. You can download some or all of these items with a click of your mouse and a credit card. See the *Instructor Manual* for this textbook (available from Prentice Hall) for step-by-step instructions for downloading these recordings.

SELECTED DISCOGRAPHY

- AC/DC, *Back in Black*, Epic 80207
 Aerosmith, **Greatest Hits (1972–79)*, Columbia 57367; **Big Ones*, Geffen 24716
 Air Supply, *The Definitive Collection*, Arista 14611
 Alice Cooper, **Greatest Hits*, Warner 78129
 Allman Brothers Band, **Best of Allman Brothers Band*, Polydor 823-708
 America, *Premium Gold Collection*, EMI 837638
 Animals, *Best of the Animals*, ABKCO 4324
 Baez, Joan, **Diamonds and Rust*, Mobile Fidelity 646; *Hits/Greatest and Others*, Vanguard 79332
 Beach Boys, **Pet Sounds*, DCC 1035; *The Greatest Hits Vol. 1: 20 Good Vibrations*, EMI 21860; *The Greatest Hits Vol. 2: 20 More Good Vibrations*, EMI 20238
 Beastie Boys, *Ill Communication*, Grand Royal CDP-28599; *Licensed to Ill*, Def Jam 4464
 Beatles, **Abbey Road*, Capitol 46446; **The Beatles (White Album)*, Capitol 46443; **Sgt. Pepper’s Lonely Hearts Club Band*, Capitol 46442; **Please Please Me*, Capitol 46435; *Revolver*, Capitol 46441; *Rubber Soul*, Capitol 46440
 Beck, **Odelay*, Geffen 24823
 Beck, Jeff, **Blow by Blow*, Epic 85440
 Belafonte, Harry, *Calypso*, RCA 53801
 Berry, Chuck, **The Anthology*, Chess 112304
 Björk, *Post*, Elektra 61740; *Vespertine*, Elektra 62653
 Black, Clint, *Greatest Hits*, RCA 66671
 Black Sabbath (see also *Osbourne, Ozzy*), *Paranoid*, Victor 61711
 Blood, Sweat, and Tears, **Blood, Sweat, & Tears*, Legacy 63986; **Blood, Sweat, & Tears 3*, Mobile Fidelity 2013; *Blood, Sweat, & Tears 4*, Columbia 66422
 Blondie, *Parallel Lines*, Chrysalis 21192
 Bon Jovi, *Slippery When Wet*, Mercury 538089
 Boone, Pat, **Pat Boone’s Greatest Hits*, MCA 10885
 Bowie, David, **Ziggy Stardust*, Virgin 21900
 Boy George (see *Culture Club*)
 Boyz II Men, *Cooleyhighharmony*, Motown 6320
 Brooks, Garth, *No Fences*, Capitol 93866
 Brown, James, **20 All Time Greatest Hits*, Polydor 511326
 Buffalo Springfield, *Box Set*, Rhino 74324
 Byrds, **The Notorious Byrd Brothers*, Legacy 65151; **Greatest Hits*, Sony 9516
 Campbell, Glen, *The Very Best of Glen Campbell*, Capitol 46483

- Carey, Mariah, *#1s*, Columbia CK 69670
- Carpenter, Mary Chapin, *Come On Come On*, Sony 48881
- Carpenters, **Yesterday Once More*, A&M 75021-6601
- Charles, Ray, **Ultimate Hits Collection*, Rhino 75644
- Chase, *Chase*, Endorphin 001
- Checker, Chubby, **Greatest Hits*, Prime Cuts 1334
- Chemical Brothers, *Dig Your Own Hole*, Astralwerks 6180
- Chic, *C'est Chic*, Atlantic 81552
- Chicago, **Chicago Transit Authority*, Rhino 76171; **Chicago VII*, Chicago Records 3007
- Clapton, Eric, **461 Ocean Blvd.*, Universal International 9158; **Cream of Clapton*, Polydor/Chronicles 31452 7116; *Unplugged*, Reprise 45024
- Clash, *The Clash*, Sony Japan 520; **London Calling*, Epic 63885
- Coasters, *The Very Best of the Coasters*, Rhino 71597
- Cooke, Sam (see also *Soul Stirrers*), *Greatest Hits*, RCA 67605
- Costello, Elvis, *The Very Best of Elvis Costello*, Rhino 76652
- Cream, *The Very Best of Cream*, Polydor/Chronicles 523752
- Creedence Clearwater Revival, **Chronicle: The 20 Greatest Hits*, Fantasy 2
- Croce, Jim, **Photographs & Memories*, Atlantic 92570
- Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young, **Déjà Vu*, Atlantic 82649
- Culture Club, *Colour by Numbers*, Virgin 86180
- Daniels, Charlie, *Million Mile Reflections*, Columbia 35751
- Davis, Miles, **Bitches Brew*, Columbia 65774
- Deep Purple, **Gemini Suite*, Cleopatra 234; **Deepest Purple/The Very Best of Deep Purple*, Warner Brothers 2-3486
- Denver, John, *The Very Best of John Denver*, BMG 67442
- Depeche Mode, *Violator*, Sire 9260812
- Derek and the Dominoes, *Layla*, Polydor 9167
- Devo, *Freedom of Choice*, Warner 3435
- Diamond, Neil, *12 Greatest Hits, Vol. II*, Columbia 38068
- Dixie Chicks, *Wide Open Spaces*, Sony 68195
- DJ Shadow, *Endtroducing*, Mo Wax 124123
- Domino, Fats, **My Blue Heaven*, Astan 20082 (LP)
- Donovan, *Greatest Hits and More*, EMI 1333
- Doobie Brothers, *Best of the Doobies*, Warner 78096
- Doors, **Best of the Doors*, Elektra 5035 (LP)
- Dr. Dre, **The Chronic*, Death Row 6300
- Dylan, Bob, **The Essential Bob Dylan*, Columbia 85168; **The Freewheelin' Bob Dylan*, Columbia ck-8786; *The Times They Are a-Changin'*, Columbia 8905; **Highway 61 Revisited*, Sony 90324; *Blood on the Tracks*, Sony 377
- Eagles, **Their Greatest Hits*, DCC 2051; *Hell Freezes Over*, Digital Sound 1006
- Electric Light Orchestra, *Greatest Hits*, Jet 4775002
- Emerson, Keith (and the Nice), *Here Come the Nice: Immediate Anthology*, CASTL CMETD055
- Emerson, Lake, and Palmer, **Brain Salad Surgery*, Atlantic 19124; **Emerson, Lake, & Palmer*, Rhino 72223; *Tarkus*, Castle 434; **Pictures at an Exhibition*, Rhino 72225; *Trilogy*, Rhino 72226
- Eminem, **The Eminem Show*, Interscope 493290; *The Slim Shady LP*, Interscope 90287; **The Marshall Mathers LP*, Interscope 490629
- Estefan, Gloria, *Greatest Hits*, Sony 86729
- Everly Brothers, **All Time Original Hits*, Rhino 75996

- Flack, Roberta, *Softly with These Songs: The Best of Roberta Flack*, Atlantic 82498
- Fleetwood Mac, **Greatest Hits*, Reprise 25801
- Focus, *Focus III*, Red Bullet 66189
- Four Seasons, **Anthology*, Rhino 71490
- Frampton, Peter, *Frampton Comes Alive!*, Mobile Fidelity 678
- Franklin, Aretha, **Amazing Grace*, Atlantic SD2-906; *Soul '69*, Rhino 71523
- Gaye, Marvin, *What's Going On?*, Motown 530883
- Genesis, *The Lamb Lies Down on Broadway*, Virgin 1
- Grateful Dead, **Live/Dead*, Warner 1830; *Workingman's Dead*, Warner 1869
- Green Day, *American Idiot*, Reprise 48777; *Dookie*, Reprise 45529
- Guns N' Roses, *G N' R Lies*, Geffen 24198; **Appetite for Destruction*, Mobile Fidelity 699
- Haley, Bill (and the Comets), **Universal Masters Collection*, Polygram 112174200088
- Hancock, Herbie, *Thrust*, Sony 86568
- Harrison, George, *All Things Must Pass* [boxed edition], Capitol 46688
- Harvey, PJ, *Dry*, Island 555001
- Hendrix, Jimi, **Electric Ladyland*, MCA 11600; **Are You Experienced?*, MCA 11602
- Holly, Buddy (and the Crickets), **The Buddy Holly Collection*, MCA 10883
- Houston, Whitney, *Whitney: The Greatest Hits*, Arista 14626
- Iron Butterfly, *In-A-Gadda-Da-Vida*, Atco 33250
- Iron Maiden, *Number of the Beast*, Sony 86210
- Jackson, Janet, *Rhythm Nation 1814*, A&M 75021-3920
- Jackson, Michael, **HIStory: Past, Present and Future Book 1*, Epic 59000; **Thriller*, Sony International 504422
- Jackson Five, *The Ultimate Collection*, Motown 530558
- Jay-Z, *Vol. 2: Hard Knock Life*, Roc-a-Fella 558902
- Jefferson Airplane, **Surrealistic Pillow*, Cloud 9 84791
- Jethro Tull, *The Very Best of Jethro Tull*, Emi 532614
- Jett, Joan, *Fit to Be Tied: Greatest Hits by Joan Jett*, Blackheart 31
- Joel, Billy, **Greatest Hits Vols. 1 and 2*, Columbia 40121
- John, Elton, **Greatest Hits*, DCC 2013; **Goodbye Yellow Brick Road*, Universal International 9107
- Joplin, Janis, **Cheap Thrills/I Got Dem Ol' Kosmic Blues Again Mama!/Pearl* [boxed set], Sony 64804
- Journey, *Escape/Frontiers/Infinity* [boxed set], Columbia 61387
- Judas Priest, *British Steel*, Columbia ck-36443
- Kansas, *Leftoverture*, Columbia 34224
- King, Carole, **Tapestry*, Song International 4931805
- King Crimson, *In the Court of the Crimson King*, Discipline Gm 501; *Larks' Tongues in Aspic*, Virgin 849935
- Kingston Trio, **Story*, EMI 576219
- Kiss, *Lick It Up*, Polygram International 120499
- Lauper, Cyndi, *She's So Unusual*, Song 38930
- Led Zeppelin, **Led Zeppelin II*, Atlantic 7567-8268-2/4; **Led Zeppelin IV*, Atlantic 11614
- Lennon, John, *Lennon Legend*, Capitol 21954B
- Lewis, Huey, **Sports*, Mobile Fidelity 509.
- Lewis, Jerry Lee, **25 All-Time Greatest Sun Recordings*, Varese 066129
- Lewis, Ramsey, *Sun Goddess*, Columbia 33194
- Linkin Park, *Hybrid Theory*, Warner Bros. 47755
- Little Richard, **Good Golly! Ten Greatest Original Hits*, RSP 53314
- L.L. Cool J., *Bigger and Deffer*, Def Jam 527353
- Lynyrd Skynyrd, **Best of the Rest*, MCA 31006

- McCartney, Paul, *Wingspan*, Capitol 32946
 Madonna, **The Immaculate Collection*, WEA International 10843
 Mahavishnu Orchestra, *Birds of Fire*, Legacy 66081
 Malmsteen, Yngwie, *Eclipse*, Polydor 843361
 Mamas and the Papas, **Greatest Hits*, MCA 11740
 Mangione, Chuck, *Greatest Hits*, A&M 540514
 Manilow, Barry, **Platinum Collection*, Arista 17545
 Mannheim Steamroller, *Fresh Aire 4*, American Gramophone 5004
 Marley, Bob, **Legend: The Best of Bob Marley and the Wailers*, Studio One 127
 Marshall Tucker Band, *Searchin' for a Rainbow*, K-Tel 702
 Martin, Ricky, *Ricky Martin*, Sony 69891
 Mathis, Johnny, *16 Most Requested Songs*, Legacy 40217
 Matthews Band, Dave, **Before These Crowded Streets*, RCA 67660; *Crash*, RCA 66904
 Mayall, John (and the Bluesbreakers), **Bluesbreakers with Eric Clapton*, Mobile Fidelity 616
 M.C. Hammer, **Please Hammer Don't Hurt 'Em*, Capitol 92857
 Megadeth, *Countdown to Extinction*, Capitol 98531
 Metallica, **... And Justice for All*, Elektra 60812; **Metallica* [Black Album], Elektra 61113
 Miami Sound Machine (see *Estefan, Gloria*)
 Miller, Steve, *Greatest Hits 1974–78*, DCC 1103
 Mitchell, Joni, **Court and Spark*, Asylum 1001; *Mingus*, Asylum 505
 Moby, *Play*, V2 Records 27049
 Moody Blues, **Days of Future Passed*, Polydor 844767
 Morissette, Alanis, *Jagged Little Pill*, Maverick 45901
 Morrison, Jim (see *Doors*)
 Mothers of Invention (see *Zappa, Frank*)
 Mötley Crüe, *Theatre of Pain*, Motley/Beyond 78009
 Nelson, Rick, **A&E Biography: A Musical Anthology*, Capitol 99428
 New Kids on the Block, *Hangin' Tough*, Columbia 40985
 New Order, *Substance: The Singles 1980–1987*, Qwest 25621
 Newton-John, Olivia, *Magic: The Very Best of Olivia Newton-John*, UTV 585233
 Nirvana, **Nevermind*, Mobile Fidelity 666; *Incesticide*, Geffen 24504
 Notorious B.I.G., *Ready to Die*, Bad Boy 73000
 *NSYNC, *Celebrity*, Tombstone 10125
 NWA, **Straight Outta Compton*, Priority 57112; *Greatest Hits*, Ruthless Records 50561
 Oldfield, Mike, *Tubular Bells*, EMI 850733
 Osbourne, Ozzy, *Bark at the Moon*, Epic 67238
 Outkast, *Stankonia*, La Face 26072
 Parsons, Alan (Project), *The Turn of a Friendly Card*, Arista ArCD-8226
 Passport, *Looking Thru*, Wounded Bird Records 7042
 Pearl Jam, *Vs.*, Sony International 47459
 Peter, Paul, and Mary, **The Best of Peter, Paul, and Mary: Ten Years Together*, Warner 3105
 Phish, *Junta*, Elektra 61413
 Pink Floyd, **Dark Side of the Moon*, EMI 679180; *The Wall*, EMI 679182
 Pixies, **Doolittle*, 4AD Records 70905; **Surfer Rosa*, 4AD 78030
 Platters, **The Best of the Platters*, Ember 3339
 Police, **Synchronicity*, Interscope 493606
 Presley, Elvis, **The Sun Sessions*, BMG International 37101; **Worldwide 50 Gold Award Hits, Vol. I*, RCA 56401

- Prince, **Controversy*, Warner 3601; *The Hits 1*, Paisley Park 45431; *The Hits 2*, Paisley Park 45435-2; **Purple Rain*, Warner Bros. 7599 251102
- Procol Harum, *The Best of Procol Harum*, A&M 75021-3259
- Public Enemy, **Fear of a Black Planet*, Def Jam 523 446; **It Takes a Nation of Millions to Hold Us Back*, Def Jam 527358
- Queen, *Queen—The Platinum Collection: Greatest Hits I, II & III* [boxed set], Hollywood Records 2061-62360-2
- Queensry'che, *Empire*, DCC 1138
- Radiohead, **The Bends*, Capitol 29626; **OK Computer*, Capitol 55229; *Kid A*, Capitol 27753
- Rage Against the Machine, *Rage Against the Machine*, Epic 52959
- Ramones, *Ramones*, WEA International 27421
- Red Hot Chili Peppers, *Blood-Sugar-Sex-Magik*, Warner Bros. 26681
- R.E.M., *In Time*, Warner Bros. 48381; *Eponymous*, Capitol 93457
- Richie, Lionel, *Can't Slow Down*, Motown MOTC-6059
- Rogers, Kenny, *20 Greatest Hits*, Capitol 46106
- Rolling Stones, **Their Satanic Majesties Request*, ABKCO 8823002; **Exile on Main Street*, Virgin 47864; **Forty Licks*, ABKCO 40402; *Sticky Fingers*, Virgin 47863
- Ronstadt, Linda, *Greatest Hits*, Asylum 1092
- Ross, Diana (see *Supremes*)
- Run-D.M.C., *Raising Hell*, Profile 16408
- Rush, **Rush*, Mercury 534 623; **Grace Under Pressure*, Mercury 534 634
- Santana, **Santana*, Columbia CK-9781; **Supernatural*, Arista 19080; *Caravanserai*, Columbia/Legacy 63595
- Seals and Crofts, *Greatest Hits*, Warner 3109
- Sex Pistols, *Never Mind the Bollocks, Here's the Sex Pistols*, Warner 3147
- Shakur, Tupac, *All Eyez on Me*, Death Row 63008
- Simon and Garfunkel, **Bookends*, Sony International 95; **Greatest Hits*, Columbia 31350
- Simon, Paul, *Graceland*, Warner Bros. 25447
- Smashing Pumpkins, *Mellon Collie and the Infinite Sadness*, Virgin 40861
- Smith, Patti, *Horses*, Arista ARCD-8362
- Snoop Doggy Dogg, *Doggystyle*, Death Row 63002
- Sonic Youth, *Daydream Nation*, DGC 24515
- Soul Stirrers, *Sam Cooke with the Soul Stirrers*, Specialty 2106 (LP)
- Soundgarden, *Superunknown*, A&M 540 198
- Springsteen, Bruce, **Born in the U.S.A.*, Columbia 38653; **Born to Run*, Sony 64406
- Steely Dan, **The Very Best of Steely Dan/Reelin' in the Years*, MCA International 19147
- Stevens, Cat, *Greatest Hits*, A&M 546 889
- Stewart, Rod, **Gasoline Alley*, Mercury 558 059
- Sting (also see *Police*), **Fields of Gold: The Best of Sting 1984–1994*, A&M 540 370
- Stone, Sly, **Greatest Hits*, Epic 30325
- Strokes, *Is This It?*, RCA 68101
- Styx, *Caught in the Act*, A&M 75021-6514
- Summer, Donna, **Anthology*, Casablanca/Mercury 518 144
- Supremes, **The Ultimate Collection*, Motown 530 827
- Talking Heads, **Remain in Light*, Sire 6095
- Tangerine Dream, *Tangram*, Virgin 11
- Tavares, *Check It Out*, Unidisc 7192; *Hard Core Poetry*, Capitol 11316 (LP)
- Taylor, James, *Greatest Hits*, Warner Bros. 78094

- Temptations, *The Ultimate Collection*, Motown 530562
- Tool, *Aenema*, Volcano 31087
- Tower of Power, **Back to Oakland*, Warner 2749; **Tower of Power*, Warner Bros. 2681
- Tricky, *Maxinquaye*, Island 524089
- Tritt, Travis, *It's All About to Change*, Warner 26589
- Twain, Shania, **Come On Over*, Mercury 112773
- Twisted Sister, *Stay Hungry*, Atlantic 80156
- U2, **Achtung Baby*, Polygram 510347; **The Joshua Tree*, Mobile Fidelity 650; **Rattle and Hum*, Polygram 842299; *The Unforgettable Fire*, Universal Japan 9711
- Valli, Frankie (see *Four Seasons*)
- Van Halen, **1984 (MCMLXXXIV)*, Warner 47741; **Van Halen*, Warner Bros. 47737
- Velvet Underground, **White Light/White Heat*, Polygram International 9135
- Vicious, Sid (see *Sex Pistols*)
- Wakeman, Rick (also see *Yes*), *The Myths & Legends of King Arthur & the Knights of the Round Table*, Polygram International 394515
- Weather Report, *Weather Report*, Sony International 9658
- Weezer, *Weezer* [Blue Album], DGC 24629
- White Stripes, *Elephant*, V2 27148
- Who, The **Tommy*, Polygram International 9196; *Quadrophenia*, Polygram International 9200; *Who's Next*, Mobile Fidelity 754; **My Generation: The Very Best of The Who*, MCA 11462
- Williams, Hank, *40 Greatest Hits*, Mercury 821233
- Wings (see *McCartney, Paul*)
- Wonder, Stevie, **At the Close of a Century*, Motown 153 992
- Wu-Tang Clan, *Enter the Wu-Tang (36 Chambers)*, BMG 2120367
- Yardbirds, **Ultimate*, Recall 184
- Yes, **Close to the Edge*, WEA International 6292; **Fragile*, Atlantic 82524; *The Yes Album*, Atlantic 7567826652
- Zappa, Frank, **Freak Out!*, Video Arts 1203; *Uncle Meat*, Video Arts 1208

ANTHOLOGIES

- *American Graffiti* (MCA 8001): includes Bill Haley, Del Shannon, Frankie Lymon, Buddy Holly, Diamonds, Beach Boys, Chuck Berry, Platters, Joey Dee, Fats Domino, Flamingos, Silhouettes, Five Satins, Buddy Knox, Del Vikings, Big Bopper, Skyliners, Mark Dinning, Spaniels, Booker T. & the MGs, and others.
- Atlantic Blues* (Rhino 82309): four-CD box includes Jimmy Yancey, Professor Longhair, Joe Turner, Meade Lux Lewis, Ray Charles, Dr. John, Stick McGhee, Guitar Slim, Stevie Ray Vaughan, Ike and Tina Turner, B. B. King, LaVern Baker, Wynonie Harris, Esther Philips, Rufus Thomas, Bobby Bland, Aretha Franklin, Howlin' Wolf, Muddy Waters, Freddie King, and others.
- Atlantic Rhythm and Blues: 1947–1974* (Atlantic 82305): seven-CD box includes Stick McGhee, Ray Charles, Joe Turner, LaVern Baker, Clyde McPhatter, Chuck Willis, Coasters, Drifters, Ben E. King, Carla Thomas, Solomon Burke, Booker T. and the MGs, Otis Redding, Sam and Dave, Percy Sledge, Wilson Pickett, Rufus Thomas, Esther Philips, Don Covay, Joe Tex, Brook Benton, King Curtis, Aretha Franklin, Roberta Flack, Donny Hathaway, Les McCann and Eddie Harris, Spinners, and others.
- *Dick Clark's #1's 50's to 70's* (Rhino 74350): six-CD box with an eclectic selection of major artists and hits.
- *Hair* (RCA 1150): the original Broadway cast recording.

- **History of British Rock* (Sire 1CD65471/2): includes Fleetwood Mac, Donovan, Beatles, Chad and Jeremy, Animals, Derek and the Dominoes, Troggs, Dusty Springfield, Billy J. Kramer, Gerry and the Pacemakers, Cilla Black, Searchers, Manfred Mann, Freddie and the Dreamers, Cream, Bee Gees, Peter and Gordon, Kinks, and others.
- **Hitsville USA: The Motown Singles Collection 1959–1971* (Motown 636 312): four-CD box featuring virtually every Motown artist and/or group during these years.
- Hitsville USA Volume II: The Motown Singles Collection 1972–1992* (Motown 159 027): four-CD box representing later Motown hits.
- **Jesus Christ Superstar* (Decca 11542): the original London studio recording, featuring Ian Gillan (vocalist for Deep Purple) performing the role of Jesus.
- O Brother, Where Art Thou?* (Mercury 170069): the original motion picture sound track album.
- Outlaws, The* (SPA 55407): includes Willie Nelson, Waylon Jennings, Tompall Glaser, and Jessi Colter.
- **Saturday Night Fever* (Mobile Fidelity 716): includes Bee Gees, MFSB, Tavares, K.C. and the Sunshine Band, Kool and the Gang, Walter Murphy, Yvonne Elliman, and others.
- Sub Pop 200* (Sub Pop Records 25): includes Nirvana, Soundgarden, Green River, Mudhoney, Screaming Trees, and others.
- **Woodstock* (Atlantic 500): includes Joan Baez; The Who; Jefferson Airplane; Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young; Country Joe and the Fish; Sly and the Family Stone; Santana; Butterfield Blues Band; Jimi Hendrix; Arlo Guthrie; and others.

MUSIC DVDS AND ROCKUMENTARIES

- The Beatles Anthology* (5-DVD set; Apple C9 7243) is an exhaustive collection of recordings, interviews, and performances by the Beatles.
- Don't Look Back* (Docurama NVG-9447) is a documentary about Bob Dylan by D. A. Pennebaker filmed during a three-week concert tour of England during the spring of 1965.
- Elvis: The Great Performances* (3-DVD set; Rhino R2 976096) captures many defining performances throughout the various periods of Elvis Presley's career.
- Gimme Shelter* (Criterion 99) is a documentary film based on the Rolling Stone tour leading up to and including Altamont.
- History of Rock 'n' Roll* (5-DVD set; Warner 34991) is an exhaustive overview of five decades of rock music, including performances by too many artists to mention and commentary by famous rock musicians who were influenced by the performers you see.
- The Last Waltz* (Special Edition; MGM 1003426) is a documentary film directed by Martin Scorsese that captures the final concert by The Band; it includes guest appearances by Bob Dylan, Eric Clapton, Neil Young, Joni Mitchell, Van Morrison, Muddy Waters, Ringo Starr, Paul Butterfield, and others.
- The Complete Monterey Pop Festival* (3-DVD set; Criterion 167), recorded during the summer of 1967, includes defining performances by Jefferson Airplane, Janis Joplin, The Who, Jimi Hendrix, Simon and Garfunkel, Ravi Shankar, Otis Redding, the Mamas and the Papas, Canned Heat, the Animals, and others.
- Woodstock: 3 Days of Peace & Music* (Director's Cut, 2-sided DVD; Warner 13549) is a beautiful documentary including performances by Joan Baez; The Who; Jefferson Airplane; Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young; Country Joe and the Fish; Sly and the Family Stone; Santana; Butterfield Blues Band; Jimi Hendrix; Arlo Guthrie; and others.



Bibliography

- Augros, Robert M., and George N. Stanciu. *The New Story of Science*. Chicago: Gateway Editions, 1984.
- Bangs, Lester. *Psychotic Reactions and Carburetor Dung*. New York: Serpent's Tail, 1996.
- Beaujon, Andrew. "That Other Rock." *Spin*, January 2002.
- Belz, Carl. *The Story of Rock*. 2nd ed. New York: Harper Colophon Books, 1972.
- Berry, Chuck. *Chuck Berry: The Autobiography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987.
- Blake, John. *All You Needed Was Love (The Beatles After the Beatles)*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1981.
- Bronson, Fred. *The Billboard Book of Number One Hits*. Rev. ed. New York: Billboard Publications, 1988.
- . *The Billboard Book of Number One Hits*. Exp. 5th ed. New York: Watson-Guption/Billboard Books, 2003.
- Brown, Charles T. *The Art of Rock and Roll*. 2nd ed. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1987.
- Cash, Johnny. *Man in Black*. Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1975.
- Charles, Ray, and David Ritz. *Brother Ray: Ray Charles' Own Story*. Cambridge, MA: Da Capo Press, 2004.
- Christe, Ian. *Sound of the Beast: The Complete Headbanging History of Heavy Metal*. New York: HarperEntertainment, 2003.
- Chuck D. *Fight the Power: Rap, Race, and Reality*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1997.
- Cohen, Barney. *Sting: Every Breath He Takes*. New York: Berkley Books, 1984.
- Cohen, Rich. *The Record Men: The Chess Brothers and the Birth of Rock and Roll*. New York: W. W. Norton, 2004.
- Cohn, Nik. *Rock from the Beginning*. New York: Stein and Day, 1969.
- Coleman, Ray. *Lennon*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1984.
- Conn, Charles Paul. *The New Johnny Cash*. Old Tappan, NJ: F. H. Revell, 1973.
- Crombie, David. *The Synthesizer and Electronic Keyboard Handbook*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1984.
- Crosby, David, and Carl Gottlieb. *Long Time Gone: The Autobiography of David Crosby*. New York: Doubleday, 1988.

- _____. *Since Then: How I Survived Everything and Lived to Tell About It*. New York: Putnam, 2006.
- Crumbaker, Marge, and Gabe Tucker. *Up and Down with Elvis Presley*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1981.
- Curtis, Jim. *Rock Eras: Interpretations of Music and Society, 1954–1984*. Bowling Green, OH: Bowling Green State University Popular Press, 1987.
- Dalton, David. *Janis*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1971.
- Dannen, Frederic. *Hit Men*. New York: Vintage Books, 1991.
- Davies, Hunter. *The Beatles*. 2nd ed. New York: W. W. Norton, 1996.
- DeCurtis, Anthony, and James Henke, eds. *The Rolling Stone Album Guide*. With H. George-Warren. New York: Random House, 1992.
- _____. *The Rolling Stone Illustrated History of Rock and Roll: The Definitive History of the Most Important Artists and Their Music*. New York: Random House, 1992.
- Dickerson, James. *Women on Top*. New York: Billboard Books, 1998.
- DiOrio, Al. *Borrowed Time: The 37 Years of Bobby Darin*. 2nd ed. Philadelphia: Running Press, 1998.
- Dundy, Elaine. *Elvis and Gladys*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 2004.
- Dylan, Bob. *Writings and Drawings*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1973.
- _____. *Chronicles*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2004.
- Eisen, Jonathan, ed. *The Age of Rock: Sounds of the American Cultural Revolution*. New York: Random House, 1969.
- _____. *The Age of Rock 2*. New York: Random House, 1970.
- Eliot, Marc. *Rockonomics: The Money Behind the Music*. Rev. ed. New York: Carol, 1993.
- Epstein, Brian. *A Cellarful of Noise*. New York: Doubleday, 1964.
- Erlewine, Michael, Vladimir Bogdanov, and Chris Woodstra, eds. *All Music Guide to Rock*. San Francisco: Miller Freeman Books, 1995.
- Everett, Walter. *The Beatles As Musicians: Revolver Through the Anthology*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- _____. *The Beatles As Musicians: The Quarry Men Through Rubber Soul*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.
- Experience Music Project. "Riot Grrrl Retrospective: Evolution of Grrrl Style." <http://www.empsfm.org/exhibitions/index.asp?articleID=668> (accessed August 29, 2007), 2002.
- Farley, Christopher John. *Before the Legend: The Rise of Bob Marley*. New York: Amistad, 2006.
- Fernando, S. H. *The New Beats: Exploring the Music Culture and Attitudes of Hip Hop*. New York: Anchor, 1994.
- Fong-Torres, Ben, ed. *The Rolling Stone Reader*. New York: Warner Paperback Library, 1974.
- Friedlander, Paul, and Peter Miller. *Rock and Roll: A Social History*. 2nd ed. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 2006.
- Friedman, Myra. *Buried Alive: The Biography of Janis Joplin*. New ed. New York: Harmony Books, 1992.
- Frith, Simon. *Performing Rites: On the Value of Popular Music*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1996.
- Fulford-Jones, Will. "House." In *The New Grove Dictionary of Music and Musicians*, 2nd ed., edited by S. Sadie, 758. London: Macmillan, 2000.
- George-Warren, H., and P. Romanowski. *The Rolling Stone Encyclopedia of Rock & Roll*. 3rd ed. New York: Fireside, 2001.
- Gillett, Charlie. *The Sound of the City: The Rise of Rock and Roll*. Rev. and exp. ed. New York: Random House/Pantheon Books, 1983.

- Gioia, D. "Disappearing Ink: Poetry at the End of Print Culture." *The Hudson Review*, Spring, 2003.
- Gleason, Ralph J. *The Jefferson Airplane and the San Francisco Sound*. New York: Ballantine, 1969.
- Goldman, Albert. *Elvis*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1981.
- . *The Lives of John Lennon*. Chicago: A Capella, 2001.
- Goldrosen, Jon. *Buddy Holly: His Life and Music*. Bowling Green, OH: Popular Press, 1975.
- Goodman, Fred. "Music Business Sings the Blues: Declining Sales Spark New Layoffs." *Rolling Stone*, February 14, 2002.
- Gorbman, Claudia. *Unheard Melodies: Narrative Film Music*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1987.
- Gore, Tipper. *Raising PG Kids in an X-rated Society*. Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press, 1987.
- Gracyk, Theodore. *Rhythm and Noise: An Aesthetics of Rock*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press, 1996.
- Haislop, Neil, Ted Lathrop, and Harry Sumrall. *Giants of Country Music: Classic Sounds and Stars, from the Heart of Nashville to the Top of the Charts*. New York: Watson-Guptill, 1995.
- Hamm, Charles. *Yesterdays: Popular Song in America*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1979.
- Harbinson, W. A. *The Illustrated Elvis*. New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1976.
- Harker, Dave. *One for the Money: Politics and Popular Song*. London: Hutchinson, 1980.
- Harrington, Richard. "Rock with a Capital R and a PG-13." *Washington Post*, September 15, 1985, section H-1.
- Haynes, Michael K. *The God of Rock*. Linsdale, TX: Priority Ministries, 1982.
- Heilbut, Tony. *The Gospel Sound: Good News and Bad Times*. Rev. ed. New York: Limelight Editions, 1985.
- Helander, Brock. *The Rock Who's Who*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1982.
- Henderson, David. *Jimi Hendrix: Voodoo Child of the Aquarian Age*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1978.
- Herman, Gary. *Rock 'n' Roll Babylon*. Philadelphia: Courage Books, 1985.
- Hibbard, Don, and Patricia Kaleialoha. *The Role of Rock*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1983.
- Hirshey, Gerri. *Nowhere to Run: The Story of Soul Music*. New York: New York Times Books, 1984.
- Hopkins, Jerry. *Elvis: A Biography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1971.
- . *Elvis: The Final Years*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1980.
- Humphrey, Clark. *Loser: The Real Seattle Story*. Portland, OR: Feral House, 1995.
- Jackson, Blair. *Grateful Dead: The Music Never Stopped*. New York: Delilah, 1983.
- Jackson, John A. *Big Beat Heat: Alan Freed and the Early Years of Rock and Roll*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1991.
- Jancik, Wayne. *The Billboard Book of One-Hit Wonders*. Rev. and exp. ed. New York: Billboard Books, 1998.
- Kelley, Norman. *R&B Rhythm and Business: The Political Economy of Black Music*. New York: Akashic Books, 2005.
- Kempton, A. *Boogaloo: The Quintessence of American Popular Music*. New York: Pantheon Books, 2003.
- Knopper, Steve. "Radiohead: Band of the Year." *Spin*, January 2001.
- Kot, Greg. "You Say You Want a Revolution." *Chicago Tribune*, February 24, 2002, section 7.
- . "Cyberspace: It Continues to Be a Bumpy Ride for the Record Industry." *Chicago Tribune*, March 3, 2002, section 7.

- Leaf, David. *The Beach Boys*. Philadelphia: Courage Books, 1985.
- Lennon, John. *In His Own Write and A Spaniard in the Works*. New York: New American Library, 1965.
- Lewis, Myra. *Great Balls of Fire*. With Murray Silver. New York: William Morrow, 1982.
- Loza, Steve, Ailo Alvarez, Josefina Santiago, and Charles Moore. "Los Angeles Gangsta Rap and the Aesthetics of Violence." *Selected Reports in Ethnomusicology* 10 (1994): 149–61.
- Lulow, Kalia. *Barry Manilow*. New York: Ballantine, 1985.
- Marcus, Greil. *Ranters and Crowd Pleasers: Punk in Pop Music 1977–92*. New York: Anchor Books, 1994.
- Marsh, Dave. *Born to Run: The Bruce Springsteen Story*. Garden City, NY: Dolphin Books, 1979.
- . *Elvis*. New York: Arlington House, 1982.
- . *Before I Get Old: The Story of The Who*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1983.
- Martin, George. *All You Need Is Ears*. With Jeremy Hornsby. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1980.
- Martin, Linda, and Kerry Seagrave. *Anti-Rock: The Opposition to Rock 'n' Roll*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1993.
- Mason, Michael, ed. *The Country Music Book*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1985.
- McDonough, Jack. *San Francisco Rock*. San Francisco: Chronicle Books, 1985.
- Mellers, Wilfrid. *Twilight of the Gods: The Music of the Beatles*. New York: Viking Press, 1973.
- Meltzer, Richard. *The Aesthetics of Rock*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1970.
- Merriam, A. P. *The Anthropology of Music*. Chicago: Northwestern University Press, 1964.
- Miller, Jim E., ed. *The Rolling Stone Illustrated History of Rock and Roll*. Rev. and updated ed. New York: Rolling Stone Press, 1980.
- Murray, Albert. *Stomping the Blues*. New York: Vintage Books, 1982.
- Naisbitt, John. *Megatrends: Ten New Directions Transforming Our Lives*. New York: Warner Books, 1982.
- Nelson, Havelock, and Michael A. Gonzales. *Bring the Noise: A Guide to Rap Music and Hip-Hop Culture*. New York: Harmony Books, 1991.
- Nite, Norm N. *Rock On: The Illustrated Encyclopedia of Rock 'n' Roll*. Vol. 1, *The Solid Gold Years*. New York: Thomas Y. Crowell, 1978.
- . *Rock On: The Illustrated Encyclopedia of Rock 'n' Roll*. Vol. 2, *The Years of Change: 1964–1978*. Updated ed. New York: Harper and Row, 1984.
- Norman, Philip. *Shout! The Beatles in Their Generation*. New York: Warner Books, 1982.
- . *Symphony for the Devil: The Rolling Stones Story*. New York: Linden Press/Simon and Schuster, 1984.
- Norris, Chris. "Eminem: Lunatic Genius, Potty-Mouth, Hatemonger, or All of the Above? Some Thoughts on the Surreal Slim Shady." *Spin*, January 2001.
- O'Brian, Lucy. *She-Bop II: The Definitive History of Women in Rock, Pop, and Soul*. New York: Continuum, 2002.
- O'Grady, Terence J. *The Beatles: A Musical Evolution*. Boston: Twayne, 1983.
- Orloff, Katherine. *Rock 'n' Roll Woman*. Los Angeles: Nash, 1974.
- Orman, John. *The Politics of Rock Music*. Chicago: Nelson-Hall, 1984.
- Peel, Ian. "DJ(ii)." In *The New Grove Dictionary of Music and Musicians*, 2nd ed., edited by S. Sadie, 406–7. London: Macmillan, 2000.
- Perris, Arnold. *Music As Propaganda: Art to Persuade, Art to Control*. Westport, CN: Greenwood Press, 1985.
- Peters, Dan, and Steve Peters. *Why Knock Rock?* Minneapolis, MN: Bethany House, 1984.

- . *Rock's Hidden Persuader: The Truth About Backmasking*. Minneapolis, MN: Bethany House, 1985.
- Porter, Steven Clark. *Rhythm and Harmony in the Music of the Beatles*. Ann Arbor, MI: University Microfilms International, 1979.
- Postman, Neil. *Teaching As a Conserving Activity*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1979.
- . *Amusing Ourselves to Death*. New ed. New York: Penguin, 2006.
- Potter, Russell A. *Spectacular Vernaculars: Hip-Hop and the Politics of Postmodernism*. Albany, NY: State University of New York Press, 1995.
- Presley, Priscilla Beaulieu. *Elvis and Me*. With Sandra Harmon. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1985.
- Reid, Jan. *The Improbable Rise of Redneck Rock*. New ed. Austin: University of Texas Press, 2004.
- Reynolds, Simon. "Laptop Punk and Powerbook Pop." *Spin*, August 2001.
- RIAA. "Recording Industry Releases Yearend 2001 Latin Music Statistics." <http://riaa.com/newsitem.php?resultpage=&id=3C1F4FCC-B2E6-B822-0C57-696C892EEF9A> (accessed August 29, 2007), 2002.
- Robbins, Ira A. *Trouser Press Record Guide: The Ultimate Guide to Alternative Music*. 4th ed. New York: Collier Books, 1991.
- The Rolling Stone Interviews*. Vol. 1. New York: Warner Paperback, 1971.
- The Rolling Stone Interviews*. Vol. 2. New York: Warner Brothers Books, 1973.
- Romanowski, Patricia, and Holly George-Warren, eds. *The New Rolling Stone Encyclopedia of Rock and Roll*. Rev. ed. New York: Fireside, 1995.
- Rose, T. *Black Noise: Rap Music and Black Culture in Contemporary America*. Hanover, NH: Wesleyan University Press, 1994.
- Rosen, Craig. *The Billboard Book of Number One Albums: The Inside Story Behind Pop Music's Blockbuster Records*. New York: Watson-Guptill, 1996.
- Roxon, Lillian. *Rock Encyclopedia*. New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1969.
- Sanchez, Tony. *Up and Down with the Rolling Stones*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1996.
- Sauer, Wendy. *Elvis Presley: A Complete Reference*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 1984.
- Scaduto, Anthony. *The Beatles*. New York: New American Library, 1968.
- . *Mick Jagger: Everybody's Lucifer*. New York: David McKay, 1974.
- . *Bob Dylan*. Updated ed. New York: New American Library, 1979.
- Schaffner, Nicholas. *The Beatles Forever*. Harrisburg, PA: Stackpole Books (Cameron House), 1977.
- Shaw, Arnold. *The Rock Revolution*. London: Collier, 1969.
- . *Dictionary of American Pop/Rock*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1982.
- Shelton, Robert. *No Direction Home: The Life and Music of Bob Dylan*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1997.
- Sherman, B. L., and J. R. Dominick. "Violence and Sex in Music Videos: TV and Rock and Roll." *Journal of Communication* 36 (1986): 79–93.
- Smith, Joe. *Off the Record: An Oral History of Popular Music*. New York: Warner Books, 1988.
- Soocher, Stan. *They Fought the Law: Rock Music Goes to Court*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1999.
- Stambler, Irwin. *Encyclopedia of Pop, Rock, and Soul*. Rev. ed. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1990.
- Stancell, Steven. *Rap Whoz Who: The World of Rap Music*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1996.
- Stark, Steven D. *Meet the Beatles: A Cultural History of the Band That Shook Youth, Gender, and the World*. New York: HarperEntertainment, 2005.
- Sting. *Broken Music: A Memoir*. New York: Dial Press, 2003.

- Stuessy, Joe. *The Confluence of Jazz and Classical Music from 1950–1970*. Ann Arbor, MI: University Microfilms, 1978.
- Szatmary, David P. *Rockin' in Time: A Social History of Rock and Roll*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1987.
- . *Rockin' in Time: A Social History of Rock and Roll*. 2nd ed. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1991.
- . *Rockin' in Time: A Social History of Rock and Roll*. 6th ed. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Pearson Prentice Hall, 2007.
- Taraborrelli, J. Randy. *Call Her Miss Ross*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1991.
- Tobler, John, and Pete Frame. *Rock 'n' Roll: The First 25 Years*. New York: Exeter Books, 1980.
- Toop, David. "Hip hop." *Grove Music Online*. <http://www.grovemusic.com> (accessed August 29, 2007).
- . *Rap Attack 3: African Rap to Global Hip Hop*. 3rd rev., exp., and updated ed. London: Serpent's Tail, 2000.
- U.S. Congress. Senate. Committee on Commerce, Science, and Transportation. *Hearing Before the Committee on Commerce, Science, and Transportation: Contents of Music and the Lyrics of Records*. 99th Cong., 1st sess., September 19, 1985.
- Walley, David. *No Commercial Potential: The Saga of Frank Zappa and the Mothers of Invention*. New York: E. P. Dutton, 1972.
- Ward, Ed, Geoffrey Stokes, and Ken Tucker. *Rock of Ages: The Rolling Stone History of Rock and Roll*. New York: Rolling Stone Press, 1986.
- Weisbard, Eric. *Spin Alternative Record Guide*. With Craig Marks. New York: Vintage Books, 1995.
- Whitburn, Joel. *Billboard's Top 3000 Plus, 1955–1990*. Menomonee Falls, WI: Record Research, 1990.
- . *The Billboard Book of Top 40 Albums*. 3rd ed. New York: Billboard Books, 1995.
- . *The Billboard Book of Top 40 Hits*. 6th ed. New York: Billboard Books, 1996.
- . *The Billboard Book of Top 40 Hits*. 7th rev. ed. New York: Billboard Books, 2000.
- . *Top Pop Albums, 1955–2001*. Menomonee Falls, WI: Record Research, 2001.
- . *The Billboard Book of Top 40 Hits*. 8th ed. New York: Billboard Books, 2004.
- . *The Billboard Book of Top 40 Country Hits*. 2nd ed. New York: Billboard Books, 2006.
- White, Adam, and Fred Bronson. *The Billboard Book of Number One Rhythm and Blues Hits*. New York: Watson-Guptill, 1993.
- White, Charles. *The Life and Times of Little Richard*. New York: Pocket Books, 1984.
- White, Timothy. *Rock Stars*. New York: Stewart, Tabori, and Chang, 1984.
- . *Rock Lives: Profiles and Interviews*. New York: Henry Holt, 1990.
- Wicke, Peter. *Rock Music: Culture, Aesthetics, and Sociology*. Trans. Rachel Fogg. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1990.
- Wild, David. "Musicians Unite Against Record Labels." *Rolling Stone*, January 31, 2002.
- Williams, Allan, and William Marshall. *The Man Who Gave the Beatles Away*. New York: Macmillan, 1975.
- Williams, Don. *Bob Dylan: The Man, the Music, the Message*. Old Tappan, NJ: Fleming H. Revell, 1985.
- Winfield, Betty Houchin, and Sandra Davidson, eds. *Bleep! Censoring Rock and Rap Music*. Westport, CN: Greenwood Press, 1999.
- Wise, Herbert, ed. *Blood, Sweat and Tears*. New York: Amsco Music, 1971.
- Woodward, Josef. "The Darker Side of Michael McDonald." *Musician* 86 (1985): 76–83, 106.
- Zimmer, Dave. *Crosby, Stills, and Nash: The Authorized Biography*. Boulder, CO: Da Capo Press, 2000.



Glossary

12-bar blues. A musical form that is extremely common in R&B, rock, and jazz (also found in country music); consists of three four-bar phrases; the basic chord progression (one chord per measure) is shown in the following:

first phrase:	I	I (or IV)	I	I
second phrase:	IV	IV	I	I
third phrase:	V	V (or IV)	I	I

In the most traditional blues, the lyrics (and often the melody) follow an AAB pattern.

a cappella. Without accompaniment.

anomie. A French word for a person or society that lacks purpose, identity, or ethical values, thus leading to a feeling of rootlessness; without these qualities, the individual (or society) may be less capable of making decisions, viewing all alternatives as equivalent.

AOR (album-oriented rock). An FM radio format that concentrates on longer album tracks, album sides, and even entire albums (as opposed to Top 40 singles); developed in the 1960s; sometimes referred to as “adult-oriented rock”).

A side. A term developed in the 1950s in reference to the 7-inch vinyl record (“single”); the A side is the

featured song—the one the record company expects to be the hit.

acid rock. A style of rock developed in the late 1960s that was associated (sometimes correctly, sometimes incorrectly) with LSD; frequently characterized by high volume levels, long improvised solos, and drug-related lyrics; loosely interchangeable with *psychedelic rock*.

augmentation. Lengthening the note values of a previously stated melody (e.g., doubling the length of each note in a given theme or tune).

B side. A term developed in the 1950s in reference to the 7-inch vinyl record (“single”); the B side (sometimes called “flip side”) is a song that is not expected to be a hit.

backbeat. Extra emphasis on the second and fourth beats in quadruple meter; a basic characteristic of rock and roll (and some of its predecessors and later offshoots).

backmasking. A technique in which a musical and/or lyric passage is mixed into a recording backward.

bar. A notational device that allows for the grouping of beats (delineated by a vertical line at the beginning and end of each group); used interchangeably with *measure*.

barbershop quartet. An ensemble of four voices (traditionally male) that sings pop songs a cappella in four-part consonant homophony (usually in block chords).

- Beatlemania.** A term that was coined to describe the extreme frenzy of popularity related to the Beatles; Beatlemania (both the phenomenon and the term) began in England in 1963 and hit the United States in 1964.
- beats.** Metrical pulses found in most music; usually grouped into recurring patterns (meter).
- block chords.** A series of chords in which the notes of each chord all move simultaneously to the notes of the next chord; thus all voices are dependent on each other (no independent movement).
- boogie (boogie-woogie).** A piano style popularized in the 1930s; usually based on the 12-bar blues and characterized by a rhythmically active and repetitive bass pattern (left hand) accompanying elaborate improvisations (right hand).
- break dancing.** A style of dancing that developed in the 1970s related to the hip-hop culture; practiced by individuals (not couples), the style is characterized by high-energy, improvisational, gymnastic elements.
- cadence.** A brief harmonic progression that closes a phrase or section of a song.
- calypso.** A popular style of music developed in the Caribbean, especially Trinidad and Jamaica; originated in the very early 20th century; since the 1940s, associated with the timbre of steel drums.
- camp.** A term used to describe something (such as a song) that appeals because it is so out of style; something that is so extreme and/or ostentatious that it acquires a perversely sophisticated appeal.
- chain (ownership).** A business model in which one owner or set of owners controls a series of local enterprises; in the case of radio, a string of local stations, all of which are owned by one corporate entity.
- chitlin circuit.** A series of venues in the eastern and southern United States that catered to African American performers and audiences; such nightclubs and theaters thrived in the 1940s to 1970s (although there are venues that were successful before and after those decades).
- chord.** Three or more pitches sounded simultaneously.
- chromatic (chromaticism).** The melodic and/or harmonic use of pitches not contained in the diatonic scale of a given key.
- close (slow) dancing.** A dance style popular through the early 1960s in which partners moved in a position resembling an embrace (usually to slow music); typically, they held hands and placed the other hand around the partner's waist or on the partner's shoulder.
- close harmony.** A type of harmonization in which at least the three upper voices are within an octave; typically, the top voice takes the melody note, and the second and third voices take the nearest adjacent chord tones.
- coda.** The closing section of a musical form.
- codetta.** The closing section of an internal part of a larger musical form.
- complex (assymetrical) meters.** Meters in which the grouping of subdivisions is irregular (asymmetrical) instead of regular (symmetrical); for example, in quadruple meter, the eight subdivisions might be grouped as 3 + 2 + 3 instead of the normal 2 + 2 + 2 + 2.
- compound meter.** A meter that has three subdivisions per beat.
- concept album.** An album in which all (or most) of the songs are related to a single idea or story; very different from the more traditional practice that simply gathers a series of unrelated songs onto an album.
- conjunct.** A melodic style characterized by primarily stepwise motion (i.e., each note moves up or down to the nearest note in the key); creates a very smooth melodic contour.
- contour (pitch contour).** The overall linear shape of a melody as the pitches rise and fall.
- countermelody.** A secondary melody; it coexists with the primary melody and adds interest to the overall musical texture.
- cover version.** A subsequent version of an original song.
- crooner.** A singer in the pop style, characterized by a rich, resonant voice, wide range, and perfect enunciation and intonation. Traditionally applied to male ballad singers.
- crossover.** A song that originates in one segment of the music market but achieves success in one or more other segments.
- death metal.** A style of rock that combines the volume and distortion of heavy metal with the tempo and driving rhythm of speed metal, with lyrical references to graphic images of death and destruction.
- diatonic.** The melodic and/or harmonic use of the pitches of a given key's scale.
- diegetic music.** A type of film music that is assumed to be audible to all characters in the on-screen narrative.
- dirty saxophone.** A style of playing the saxophone characterized by a "growl" (produced by humming a different note than the one being played); especially popular in R&B and 1950s rock bands.

disjunct. A melodic style characterized by leaps (i.e., notes moving to nonadjacent notes); creates a more angular melodic contour.

dissonant (interval). In traditional pop styles, intervals other than those contained in the major or minor triad, thus seconds, sevenths, and tritones; psychologically, we have been conditioned to expect these intervals to resolve to more stable intervals (e.g., thirds, fourths, fifths, sixths, octaves, unisons).

dissonant (chord). In traditional pop styles, chords that contain one or more dissonant intervals; increased dissonance adds more tension (or “bite”) to a given harmony; psychologically, we are conditioned to perceive increased dissonance as “uglier” and increased consonance as “sweeter.”

DIY (do it yourself). A musical development evident in both the punk and alternative music scenes that actively challenged the separation of contemporary society into listeners and trained music specialists; bands such as the Sex Pistols and White Stripes exemplify this approach (even though some of the participating musicians may attain relatively high levels of musical ability); sometimes referred to as a garage band ethic.

doo-wop. A style of R&B and soft rock characterized by the use of nonsense syllables; in its most basic form, it features a small vocal group (e.g., trio or quartet) singing a cappella; the addition of vocal rhythmic patterns (using nonsense syllables) takes the place of the missing instruments and provides a stronger rhythmic element.

double entendre. Double meaning (often used when one meaning has a risqué connotation).

dub. Developed primarily by producer Lee “Scratch” Perry, this music consists of a remix of existing reggae recordings that provide a foundation for improvised vocal solos; the addition of reverberation, echo, and sound effects by the DJ are common.

duck walk. A stage movement made famous by Chuck Berry; consists of a series of forward jumps on one leg, while moving the other leg back and forth; sometimes Berry would add a bobbing head motion to heighten the effect.

dynamics. Refers to degrees of loudness in music; indicated by a variety of musical notations.

echo effect. An audio effect that records a signal and then plays it back after the desired delay (ranging from several milliseconds to several seconds); originally achieved using tape loops; now accomplished electronically.

eight-bar blues. A musical form related to the 12-bar blues; although there are frequent variations to the basic pattern, the eight-bar pattern often has the following chord progression (one chord per bar): I-I-IV-IV-I-V-I-V.

electronica. Heavily influenced by Chicago house and Detroit techno, a musical style that consists of danceable grooves, loose song forms, and a primary focus on finding a new sound; most early electronica was danceable, but some later styles were intended for listening; eventually fragmented into numerous sub-genres and fusions, including ambient house, experimental techno, electrotechno, and many others.

emo. “Emotionally oriented rock”; a subgenre of *indie rock*, characterized by lyrics that are deeply personal and often include intimate confessions uncharacteristic of many of the harder styles of rock; representative groups include Dashboard Confessional, Coldplay, and Jimmy Eat World.

EP (extended play). A record format that became popular in the 1950s (although it existed both before and after); typically contained four songs (two per side) on a 45-RPM, 7-inch disc.

expressive deviations. Intentional, often subtle, alterations in basic musical elements (pitch, loudness, timbre, and duration) by a performer that communicate nonverbal emotional cues to the listener.

falsetto. The male voice singing in a female range (usually alto).

feedback. The result of a sound loop between an audio input and output; for example, a signal received by a microphone is amplified and broadcast through a loudspeaker; the speaker output, in turn, is received again by the microphone and is further amplified and sent (again) to the loudspeaker, thus creating the loop; in most settings, feedback is unintentional and undesirable; however, many rock bands have intentionally created and manipulated feedback.

folk ballad. A song (traditionally from unknown origins) that narrates a simple incident, story, or plot; typically in strophic form, the folk ballad uses acoustic guitar or guitarlike instruments to accompany one or more singers.

folk music. Music (songs) of unknown origin that has been conveyed by the aural tradition from generation to generation (often with changes to melody and lyrics); some of the songs of the folk revival (see Chapter 5) were true folk songs; others (most) were newly composed in the style of traditional folk music.

folk rock. A style developed in the mid-1960s by artists such as the Byrds and Bob Dylan; combines some folk elements (e.g., strophic forms, serious lyrics) with rock elements (e.g., electric instruments, drum sets, backbeat, rock bass lines).

folknik. A fan of folk music (usually applied to the folk subculture that thrived in the late 1950s and early 1960s); also referred to as “folkies.”

form. The organizational structure of a piece of music; overall form is determined by the sequence of sections in a given composition and how each section relates to earlier sections (e.g., repeat, contrast, restate with variation).

free jazz. A style of jazz developed in the 1950s and 1960s as a reaction against conventional jazz styles; characterized by improvisation that may have little or no discernable relationship to a preexisting tune, chord progression, meter, or tempo.

fugue. A classical style of composition in which a relatively brief theme (subject) is stated in one voice and then imitated successively by the other voices; when not playing (or singing) the subject, voices may state a countersubject (a secondary theme) and/or develop motives contained within the subject or countersubject.

funk. A term applied to both jazz and rock styles to denote a combination of earthiness, emotionalism, and spirituality associated with the African American culture; often used interchangeably with *soul*, funky styles blend elements of R&B and gospel; characterized by repetitive riffs, a strong quadruple beat, and prominent bass lines.

fuzz tone. A distorted tone that results when an electric guitar signal is processed through a fuzz box (a commercially available electronic device that adds distortion to the incoming signal).

gangsta rap. A subgenre of rap with lyrics that emphasize the violence of street life, including gang warfare, misogynistic vignettes, encouragement of drug use, and materialism; representative artists include NWA, Snoop Dogg, and Tupac Shakur.

genre. A category or style, usually within one of the arts (e.g., music, art, literature, dance, architecture, etc.).

glissandi. A continuous sliding movement through a series of musical pitches (e.g., by sliding the fingers up or down the piano keyboard or sliding over a series of adjacent pitches on string instruments, trombone, or clarinet).

glitter (or glam) rock. A style developed in the early 1970s that often involved sexual ambiguity (androgyny)

and extreme costumes and makeup; more popular in England than the United States, glitter rock was less of a musical style than a theatrical style.

glottal stop. The momentary closing of the glottis (the opening between the vocal cords in the larynx); to feel the glottal stop, say the word *uh-oh*; used in rock vocals to subdivide syllables (such as Buddy Holly’s “Peggy Sue-ooh-ooh”).

grunge. A subgenre of alternative rock that emerged in the late 1980s from the Pacific Northwest, combining heavy metal and postpunk elements; primarily responsible for bringing alternative rock into the mainstream; representative bands include Mudhoney, Nirvana, and Pearl Jam.

hardcore. A subgenre of punk rock that originated in the United States in the late 1970s and early 1980s, serving as a transition between punk and the more intense form of heavy metal known as thrash metal; songs by hardcore bands were often short, loud, and distorted, providing passionate expositions on topics ranging from politics and anarchy to the hardcore culture itself.

harmony. A collection of pitches (two or more) sounded simultaneously.

heavy metal. Emerging in the late 1960s and early 1970s, this style of rock music had clear roots in blues-based rock and psychedelic rock; heavily guitar-centric and incorporating lightning-fast guitar solos and a relentlessly pounding drumbeat, heavy metal was louder, simpler, more distorted, and more rebellious than preceding forms of rock.

Hell’s Angels. An international motorcycle club founded in California in the late 1940s; although truly international (especially England, Canada, and the United States), it is often associated with California and has become the epitome of the biker culture.

hip-hop. A collection of urban art forms emerging in the South Bronx during the late 1970s, including lifestyle, fashions, fast-talking comedy, break dancing, graffiti art, poetry, double-Dutch jump-roping, and music; as an urban musical style, hip-hop tracks incorporated extant musical sounds, combining these previously recorded segments into a new composition performed on dual turntables by a DJ.

hocket. A technique in which a melody is passed back and forth between two or more vocal or instrumental parts, smoothly alternating such that when one part stops, the other part picks up where the other left off, providing the illusion of a continuous melodic line; occurring in polyphonic textures, it was used in

both art music and popular music of the 13th and 14th centuries; a similar style of back-and-forth delivery is evident in some rap music, especially that of Run-D.M.C.

homophony. A type of musical texture in which there is one predominant melody to which other parts are secondary; examples include the melody-and-accompaniment texture (typical of most popular styles, including rock) and the block chord texture (in which all parts move in the same or similar rhythm, as determined by the primary melody).

hook. Usually a specific line of lyrics in a song that is intended to be particularly appealing and memorable; the hook line is usually repeated often throughout the song; sometimes a hook can be musical (e.g., the riff in “Satisfaction” or the unusual cadence in George Harrison’s “Something”).

horizontal organization. An approach to musical composition (including improvisation) that is oriented more to melodic considerations than harmonic (vertical) considerations; with improvisation, the player is more concerned with the ongoing musical line and working with scales and motives than with conforming to underlying chord progressions.

house. A style of dance music that emerged from Chicago’s Warehouse Club during the early 1980s, obviously influenced by disco of the preceding decade; characteristics include a repetitive quadruple meter maintained by a drum machine, with bass drum pounding on every beat and hi-hat on offbeats, simplistic synth bass lines, and heavily synthesized string orchestrations reminiscent of the disco era.

indie (music). Refers to artists that intentionally placed themselves in opposition to the mainstream in musical sound, fashion, and/or image.

indie (record company). An informal term for an independent record company; small, individually owned companies that are distinct from the larger major record labels.

instruction song. A type of song made popular during the dance craze of the early 1960s; the lyrics of the song provided instructions (more or less) for performing the specific dance.

instrumental. A purely instrumental song (without vocals).

jam. A performance style that is typically less formal than a mainstream rock performance and in which each performer is granted a high degree of freedom and spontaneity.

jam-grass. An outgrowth of the jam band style, with its emphasis on improvisation, but strongly influenced by mountain music and bluegrass.

key (tonality). A combination of pitch relationships that establishes one of the pitches as the tonal center; for example, a “family” of pitches (F-G-A-B \flat -C-D-E-F) creates the key (or tonality) of F major.

key center (tonic). The pitch that begins and ends the scale of a given key (or tonality) and gives the key its name (e.g., the key of E major); the tonal center of the key.

key signature. An arrangement of the sharps (or flats) needed to create the scale of a given key; a notational device that appears at the beginning of the musical staff.

lead singer. The primary vocalist in a band or vocal group.

LP (long-playing). A recording format introduced in 1948 that became the standard album format, until replaced by CDs in the 1980s; originally a 10-inch vinyl disc, a larger 12-inch disc became the standard; LPs turn at 33 $\frac{1}{3}$ RPMs and usually contain about 50 minutes of music (about 25 minutes per side).

LSD (lysergic acid diethylamide). A mind-altering drug espoused by the hippie counterculture of the 1960s; originally created in 1938, its recreational use began in the 1950s among a few health professionals and socially/politically elite individuals; such usage expanded dramatically in the 1960s; banned in the United States in 1971.

macroform. The larger aspects of musical form (e.g., the sequence of movements, the overall form of individual movements).

major triad. A specific type of three-note chord in which the middle note is four half-steps above the lowest pitch and the top note is seven half-steps above the lowest pitch.

MC (master of ceremony). In the context of rap, refers to the individual who speaks rhythmically, often with improvised lyrics, over the musical foundation laid down by a DJ.

measure. See *bar*.

melisma. Extending one syllable of text over many notes; although used in many styles, it is a central characteristic of soul music.

mellotron. An electronic keyboard instrument developed in the early 1960s; based on a series of audiotapes, each of which carries about 8 seconds

of a prerecorded tone played by an acoustic instrument (or group of instruments) or voices; playback heads beneath each key activate the tape assigned to that key.

melody. A series of musical pitches (notes); in traditional music (including all pop music styles), the series creates a recognizable and memorable tune, or melody.

Memphis Mafia. The informal name of a collection of friends, employees, and associates of Elvis Presley; some performed specific duties; others were there for companionship.

Mersey sound. Refers to the rather vague blend of rock and roll, doo-wop, R&B, and skiffle produced in the early 1960s by Liverpool groups (e.g., the Beatles, the Searchers, Gerry and the Pacemakers); used interchangeably with *Liverpool sound*, the name derives from the Mersey River, which runs through Liverpool.

meter. The organizational grouping of beats; various meters are identified according to the number of beats that are grouped together; thus duple meter organizes the beats into groups of two, triple meter organizes beats into groups of three, etc. The vast majority of rock music is in quadruple meter (beats occur in groups or cycles of four); within each of these (and other) meters, there is a differentiation of stronger and weaker beats.

microform. The smaller, more detailed aspects of musical form (e.g., the relationship of phrases, the number of measures per phrase, the form of internal sections of a piece of music).

minimalism. A compositional style characterized by persistent repetition (sometimes with gradual variation) of short phrases or motives, a steady pulse, and relatively consonant harmonies; developed in the 1960s as a reaction to the complexities and dissonant atonality of serial music, minimalism (also called *process music*) became a predominant style of “serious” composition in the last decades of the 20th century.

modes (scales). Collections of pitches spanning an octave (i.e., from one pitch to its next recurrence); each mode (or scale) differs from others both by the number of pitches and by the pattern of intervals between adjacent pitches; in modern usage, *mode* usually refers to one of the seven modes derived (generally) from the old Greek modes and church modes (Ionian, Dorian, Phrygian, Lydian, Mixolydian, Aeolian, and Locrian); in informal usage, *scale* usually refers to either the major or minor scale, although in a broader sense, the word can refer to any octave-spanning collection of pitches (e.g., pentatonic scale, whole-tone scale, chromatic scale).

monophony. A type of musical texture in which there is only one line or melody, with no accompanying parts.

motive. A short, rhythmic and/or melodic idea; to be recognized as such, a motive should be distinctive enough to establish its identity and retain that identity through subsequent usage in a given piece of music.

Motortown Revues. Traveling live package shows sponsored by Motown Records to highlight new artists and new releases by more established artists.

Motown. The record company established by Berry Gordy Jr. in Detroit; thrived throughout the 1960s with African American artists whose backgrounds were in gospel, R&B, and doo-wop styles; by combining elements of these styles with pop styles, Motown and its various labels appealed to a wide audience of both blacks and whites.

MP3 (MPEG Audio Layer 3). A popular and highly compatible compression format for digital audio files that is commonly used in portable media players; the use of psychoacoustic models allows the process to eliminate auditory components that are less audible to the listener, retaining a high-quality sound but significantly reduced file size.

MIDI (musical instrument digital interface). A technology that enables real-time communication between electronic musical instruments and computers; this industry-standard protocol, developed in the early 1980s, allows for successful interface among a wide range of digital technologies.

musical theater. A theatrical form that includes songs, dialogue, dance, and musical accompaniment; with individualized characters, scenery, costumes, and plots, musicals (the informal name for this medium) are similar to opera but usually utilize more popular styles of music and incorporate spoken, rather than sung, dialogue.

music piracy. The act of stealing music by illegally duplicating a commercial recording in lieu of purchasing a copy; with the rising popularity of computer-based music, portable media players, and the Internet beginning during the 1990s, piracy continues to present a significant challenge to the music industry.

new wave. A sanitized descendent of punk rock, incorporating the musical simplicity and repetitiveness of punk packaged into a more palatable product for mass consumption; representative artists include Blondie, Devo, and music from the early periods of the Talking Heads, Elvis Costello, and the Police.

nondiegetic music. A type of film music intended to set the mood by highlighting (or contradicting) the action

of the narrative; this music is assumed not to be heard by onscreen characters and often remains at a subconscious level for audience members.

novelty songs. Usually humorous or whimsical songs that are counter to the prevailing popular style; using a catchy hook, novelty songs may gain unexpected popularity; some novelties take the form of parody (e.g., songs by Stan Freberg); others use a variety of gimmicks (e.g., the Chipmunks).

nu metal. A subgenre of rap, combining the musical elements of heavy metal with the spoken vocal delivery style of rap; exemplified by the music of Rage Against the Machine, Korn, and Limp Bizkit.

octave. The distance from a given pitch to its next occurrence in the musical alphabet (e.g., from the note G to the next higher or lower G); the frequency of the higher pitch is twice that of the lower pitch.

ostinato. A short musical pattern that is repeated persistently throughout a section of a song (or rarely, the entire song); representative examples in pop music include the bass pattern in boogie-woogies and the bass riffs of many rock songs.

overdubbing. A recording technique in which one or more supplementary tracks are added to previously recorded tracks.

package show. An entertainment format in which a roster of performers goes on tour as a package; typically, lesser-known acts begin the show, and the hottest acts close the show.

payola. An illegal practice in which payments or other inducements are offered by record companies to broadcasters to play specific recordings.

pedal point. A note that is sustained or persistently repeated (traditionally in the bass), while harmonies in the upper voices change; over the centuries, the concept has broadened to include “pedal points” in upper voices (with harmonies changing below); this is sometimes referred to as an *inverted pedal point*.

phasing (phase-shifting; flanging). An audio effect in which the original signal is passed through one or more filters that have nonlinear phase responses and then is applied back to the original signal; the result is a unique change in the timbre of the original signal. Flanging is a specific type of phasing that adds the original signal to a uniform time-delayed copy of itself. Phasing and flanging sound rather similar (sometimes described as a “hollow” sound or as “the wind blowing through the music”).

pitch. A sound created by a vibrating body; the greater the frequency of vibration, the higher the resulting pitch is perceived to be; sometimes used interchangeably with *note* or *tone*.

pointillistic. A term borrowed from the world of painting and applied to a style of musical composition in which pitches are presented in widely varied ranges and often in varying timbres; in painting, small distinct points of color are used to create an overall impression; the analogy in music resides in the use of small distinct points of pitch and timbre to create the overall effect.

polyphony. A type of musical texture in which there are two or more simultaneous, independent, and generally equal melodic lines.

pop. Short form of *popular music*; in the broadest sense, refers to widely disseminated music aimed at the general audience and includes various styles of rock, jazz, country, soul, folk, etc. In this textbook, *pop* refers more specifically to the style of music that was by and for the general (white) population of the United States in the first half of the 20th century; based largely on the Tin Pan Alley tradition, the music was frequently associated with Broadway musicals and the Hollywood movie industry.

pop punk. A subgenre of punk that maintains the high energy, punk attitude, and dissonant, distorted guitar sound of its progenitor but incorporates melodic hook lines and tuneful choruses; emerging in the early 1990s, representative artists include Green Day and Blink-182.

progressive rock. A term that replaced *art rock* and refers to the 1970s extension of the late 1960s art rock trend; sometimes shortened to *prog rock*, it refers to bands such as Yes, Pink Floyd, Jethro Tull, Genesis, Gentle Giant, and many more.

psychedelic. Related to hallucinogenic drugs or altered states of awareness.

psychedelic soul. A descriptive term applied to music that combines elements of psychedelic rock with elements of soul music; popular in the late 1960s and early 1970s; associated primarily with Sly and the Family Stone.

punk rock. An excessively rebellious musical form that branched from the harder rock mainstream during the mid-1970s in Britain; representing an initial foray into the DIY aesthetic, the music was played loudly and aggressively by working-class performers; compared to the mainstream rock styles, punk rock was simpler, more repetitive, and louder and was exemplified in the music of the Sex Pistols, the Clash, MC5, and the Velvet Underground.

quartal. Based on the musical interval of a fourth; may be applied to harmonies (chords built on the interval of a fourth) and melodies (tunes that rely heavily on the interval of a fourth); distinct from the more traditional tertian harmonies and melodies (based on the interval of a third).

range. The distance from the highest to lowest pitch; thus the range of a melody might be quite narrow or very wide; same with the range of a singer's voice.

rave-ups. Improvisational jam sessions featuring extended instrumental solos; developed in the mid- to late 1960s by certain British bands (e.g., the Yardbirds).

rhythm. The interrelationship between music and time.

R&B (rhythm and blues). A style of popular music associated with African Americans, especially from the 1940s to the 1960s; characterized by prominent rhythms, strong melodic bass lines, shouting vocals, and a reliance on the 12-bar blues form; typical instrumentation includes piano, electric guitar, bass, drums, saxophone, and vocals; R&B was the strongest and most direct progenitor of rock and roll.

Riot Grrrl. An all-female subgenre of alternative music that emerged from the Pacific Northwest, coalescing in 1991; heavily influenced musically by its punk roots and a DIY ethic, the message of the music took on a clearly aggressive feminist tone; not limited to female musicians, it included male activists and writers; representative artists include Bikini Kill and Calamity Jane.

ritard. Short form of *ritardando*; a gradual slowing of the tempo.

rockabilly. One of the early trends in rock and roll; a style of rock and roll that leaned toward country music; with roots in both R&B and C&W, rockabilly eventually developed into the various styles of country rock.

rock opera. A genre within art rock (later progressive rock) that utilizes the musical style of rock in the operatic format; thus it is a larger form that includes a series of songs that develop various characters within a plot; some rock operas were never actually staged; those that were emulated opera by including sets and costumes; there is an extremely vague, if not nonexistent, line between rock opera (e.g., *Tommy*, *Jesus Christ Superstar*) and rock musicals (e.g., *Hair*, *Godspell*, *Grease*, *The Wiz*, *Evita*).

root. The fundamental or generating pitch of a chord; thus, in the C major triad, the root is C.

salsa. A style of Latin rhythm characteristic of the music of Cuba, Puerto Rico, and the Spanish Caribbean that began to be incorporated into jazz, pop, and R&B during the 1960s and reemerged during the late 1980s and 1990s; an important component of this rhythmic style is a syncopated rhythm performed on the claves, a pair of cylindrical hardwood sticks; characterized by heavy reliance on a variety of percussion instruments and brass.

samples. (1) in rap, the use of previously existing music as the basis for a new composition; an early example of this technique is the Sugarhill Gang's "Rapper's Delight"; (2) electronically, the conversion of sound energy into a series of numbers representing the sound amplitude at discrete intervals of time; once transformed, the music can be easily manipulated (e.g., played backward, sped up, slowed down, combined with special effects, etc.) using the processing capabilities of a computer.

San Francisco sound. The style associated with the San Francisco bay area countercultural bands of the late 1960s and early 1970s; characterized by lengthy instrumental improvisations, very high volume, and lyrics that were either drug-oriented or poetic (often focused on peace, love, brotherhood, harmony with nature, spiritual self-realization).

scale degree. The numbered position of a pitch within a scale; may be indicated by number (e.g., second, fifth, seventh) or name (tonic, supertonic, mediant, subdominant, dominant, submediant, leading tone).

sequencer (step). The 1970s step sequencer was an electronic instrument that, when programmed, triggered a sequence of pitches, rhythms, timbres, and volume levels on the synthesizer; once programmed, the sequencer cycled the programmed pattern repetitively; in recent decades, the term *sequencer* has been broadened to include any device (including software) that allows the user to record, play back, and edit musical patterns.

shouter. Vocalists who, at times, purposely add a harsh, raspy sound to their voice by oversinging; often encountered in R&B styles, the shout carried over into rock and roll (e.g., Little Richard); opposite of *crooner*.

shuffle beat. A rhythm derived from the shuffle dance step, a dance of indefinite southern African American origin, characterized by a subdivision of the beat into uneven triplets and usually played at a relaxed tempo; the word *shuffle* is onomatopoeic, representing the rhythm's alternation of long and short syllables (SHUF-fle, SHUF-fle, etc.).

singer-songwriters. Performers who write the lyrics, compose the music, and sing their own songs; in many cases, they provide their own solo accompaniment; an extension of the folk music tradition; thrived especially in the 1970s.

skiffle. Folklike British pop music in which homemade instruments (e.g., washboard, cigar-box fiddle, kazoo, musical saw, comb and paper) provided the accompaniment for simple songs; although developed in the first half of the 20th century in the United States, skiffle enjoyed a revival in England in the 1950s; several British rock bands (most notably the Beatles) began as skiffle bands.

slap (bass). (1) slapping the strings of an acoustic bass with four fingers of the right hand in time with the drummer; (2) plucking an acoustic bass string so hard that it bounces off the fingerboard.

song cycle. A group of songs that creates a larger musical unit; typically, the songs share a relationship to a common general theme.

speed metal. A substyle of heavy metal that exudes the high level of intensity inherent in thrash metal but incorporates even faster tempos and a persistent, driving quadruple subdivision of the beat.

strophic form. A form in which each verse of lyrics is set to the same music; especially common in folk music and hymns (also in many classical songs).

subdivision. A secondary pulse within a beat of music; the most common subdivisions are duple (two secondary pulses per beat), triple, and quadruple.

suite. A series of shorter musical pieces conceived of and performed as a larger single work; in classical music, suites are instrumental; in rock, some suites include vocal sections (e.g., *Gemini Suite* by Deep Purple).

symmetrical form. Characterized by uniform, regular, and balanced lengths; for example, many 32-bar pop song forms can be subdivided into two 16-bar sections, four eight-bar sections, and eight four-bar sections; contrast such symmetry with some Beatles tunes, which have irregular lengths (e.g., “Hello Goodbye” with a 15.5-bar section that subdivides into phrase lengths of four, four and one half, three, and four bars each).

synthesizer. An electronic device that allows the user to generate and manipulate electronic signals to create music; although music synthesis can be traced back to the late 19th century, the practical use of synthesizers began in the late 1960s and was made accessible to most musicians in 1970 with the coming of the Minimoog, a prepatched synthesizer developed by Robert Moog.

talking blues. A song style associated with folk music and country music in which the “singer” speaks a narrative over an instrumental accompaniment (usually acoustic guitar); popularized by folk singer Woody Guthrie, who, in turn, influenced Bob Dylan; talking blues may be autobiographical or provide social or political commentary.

techno. A dance music style emerging directly from the disco era that blended the incessant disco beat with the high energy and attitude of punk; typically incorporates segments of previously recorded music, drumbeats, television chatter, and other found sounds into a style that is intentionally repetitive and noisy to provide a background for dancing and all-night partying.

teddy boy. A youth culture that developed in England in the 1950s; associated with American rock and roll; teddy boys (“teds”) dressed in long drape jackets (often with velvet trimmed collars and pocket flaps) and “drainpipe” pants; hair was greased into a pompadour and a ducktail; some teddy boys created gangs that could be violent.

Tejano music. A general term for Mexican-influenced popular music that emerged from southern Texas; related to *norteco* and *conjunto* styles, but with more American influences; sometimes performed by larger ensembles, including primarily acoustic instruments, horns, and accordion.

tempo. The relative speed of the musical beat; may be described subjectively (e.g., fast, slow, moderate) or objectively (e.g., 120 beats per minute).

texture. A term that describes the relative presence of musical lines and the way those lines relate to each other; thus the musical texture may be thick (many musical lines or events occurring simultaneously) or thin (few musical lines or events); also, the relationship among the various musical lines (monophonic, homophonic, or polyphonic).

theremin. An electronic instrument invented around 1920 by Leon Theremin; utilizes two oscillators and two antennas to generate a single tone; the player controls pitch and volume by moving hands in varying proximity to the antennas; the result is an eerie or alien sound; the most familiar usage is in “Good Vibrations” by the Beach Boys.

thrash metal. A blend of late 1970s heavy metal with the speed and intensity of postpunk hardcore rock.

through-composed form. A musical form in which each successive section is new; earlier material does not return; in songs, new music is composed for each new verse; an example of this infrequently used form

is *Karn Evil 9*, “Second Impression,” by Emerson, Lake, and Palmer.

timbre. Tone color; refers to the tone quality of various instruments or voices.

Tin Pan Alley. Nickname for a small section of Manhattan that housed the music publishers that dominated popular music in the United States in the late 19th century and first half of the 20th century; also used in a broader sense to refer to the pop style that was the predominant product of these publishers.

tonality. See *key*.

tone. See *pitch*.

tonic (note). See *key center*.

tonic (chord). A chord, the root (see *root*) of which is the tonic note (or key center); usually refers to a triad; thus the tonic chord in G major is the G-B-D triad.

trade-offs. An improvisational technique in which players alternate the lead for a given number of measures; thus players may “trade (or swap) fours,” meaning that they will alternate four-bar improvisations; related to the call-and-response practice found in African music and religious ceremonies.

trance. A subgenre of house dance music of the late 1980s and 1990s, emerging from the rave scene; characterized by fast tempos, soft electronic percussion, and repetitive chordal homophonic synthesizer parts.

tremolo bar. A lever attached to the bridge or tailpiece of an electric guitar that allows the player to vary the tension (and sometimes the length) of the strings; the result can include effects such as vibrato, pitch-bending, and portamento (a slide from one pitch to another).

triad. A chord consisting of three different pitches.

trip hop. A style of club dance music that emerged in the mid-1990s; closely related to hip-hop, though the tempos are slower quadruple meters with sparse instrumentation (typically including keyboards and percussion, but rarely an MC, guitars, or strings); arrangements emphasize the bass line (often synthesized), repetitive riff-based musical ideas, and minor keys; representative artists include DJ Shadow, Massive Attack, and Portishead.

tritone. Two notes that are three whole-steps apart (example: the tritone from F to B includes whole-steps from F to G, G to A, and A to B); it has several unusual characteristics that have led to special usage in music history (e.g., it divides the octave exactly in half; also, unlike any other interval, the inversion produces the same two-note tritone).

tune. A more informal equivalent of *melody* (see *melody*).

upbeat. (1) An informal term used to describe faster tempos; (2) the beat that precedes the downbeat (first beat) of the next measure of music; thus, in quadruple meter, the upbeat is the fourth beat of the measure.

verse-and-chorus form. A form in which verses alternate with choruses; each verse has new lyrics but the same music; each chorus repeats the same lyrics and music.

vertical organization. An approach to musical composition (including improvisation) that is oriented more to harmonic considerations than melodic (horizontal) considerations; with improvisation, the player adjusts melodic lines to fit the underlying chord progressions.

vibrato. A slight fluctuation in pitch to enrich or intensify the sound; the listener perceives a fast wobble in the pitch; some pop singers begin a given pitch with a straight tone (no vibrato) and then initiate vibrato.

voice box. An effect pedal used most often on the guitar that allows the sound of an instrument to be shaped by the performer’s mouth and vocal cavity, resulting in what sounds like a talking instrument; Peter Dinklage popularized the voice box in his live recording of “Do You Feel Like I Do?” in 1976.

volume. Informally used to describe the loudness levels of a sound (including music); the more technical term is *amplitude*, which refers to the amount of displacement of a vibrating body; the greater the displacement, the higher the loudness level (or volume).

worksong. As its name suggests, the primary purpose of this type of music is to facilitate and/or make more tolerable the completion of repetitive tasks; during the late 19th and early 20th centuries, freely extemporized songs were used for this function by field laborers, railroad workers, and prison chain gangs; the call-and-response nature of many of these songs passed directly into the musical style of the blues, R&B, and many early rock songs.

yodel. A vocal technique characterized by rapid shifts from the normal voice to falsetto (with female voices, from full or chest voice to head voice); with each shift, there is a new syllable and a new pitch; developed in the Swiss and Austrian Alps but adopted by country music singers.



Index

- Abbruzzese, Dave, 347–48
Abdul, Paula, 265, 291, 327
Abramson, Herb, 150–52
AC/DC, 236–37, 286, 358
Ackerman, Will, 267
Adams, Victoria, 304
Adler, Lou, 139
Adler, Steven, 284
Aerosmith, 233, 292, 318, 327, 358
Afrika Bambaataa, 316, 317
Aguilera, Christina, 304, 307, 308
Air Supply, 267
Akkerman, Jan, 242
Alabama, 257, 304
Alan Parsons Project, 240–41, 267
Alcatrazz, 286
Alice Cooper, 275, 279–81, 288, 336, 368
Alice in Chains, 292, 358
Allen, Steve, 49, 57, 290
Allison, Jerry, 50
Allman, Duane, 227, 234, 274
Allman, Gregg, 227–28
Allman Brothers Band, 227–28, 274
Almanac Singers, 65
Ament, Jeff, 347–48
Ameriea, 268
American Bandstand, 57
the Amps, 343
Anastasio, Trey, 260–61
Anderson, Ian, 241
Anderson, Jon, 204–5
Anderson, Katherine, 160
the Animals, 127, 247
Anka, Paul, 19, 32, 37, 50, 53–54, 61, 62, 255
Anthony, Marc, 307, 308
Anthony, Michael, 284–85
Armstrong, Billie, Joe, 349
Arnold, Eddy, 16, 30, 152, 269
Arnold, Malcolm, 200
Arrested Development, 327
Artist Formerly Known as Prince, 303
Ashanti, 328
Asher, Peter, 126, 248
Ashton, Tony, 200–201
the Association, 236
Atkins, Chet, 136
Atkins, Cholly, 160, 163
Audioslave, 287
Austin, Leon, 154–55
Autrey, Gene, 16
Avalon, Frankie, 19, 37, 54, 61, 62
Avory, Mike, 115
Axton, Estelle, 151–52
Azor, Hurby “Luv Bug,” 324–25
Babyface, 292, 327
Bach, Johann Sebastian, 206, 357–59, 365
Bacharach, Burt, 153, 233, 262, 339
the Backstreet Boys, 288, 304
Baez, Joan, 67, 135, 141–42
Bailey, Mary, 258
Bailey, Philip, 245
Baker, Anita, 321–22
Baker, La Vern, 150–51

- Balin, Marty, 171–72
 Ballard, Florence, 163
 Ballard, Hank, 72, 73
 Band, The, 135, 253
 Bangs, Leslie, 128
 Barger, Dave, 188
 Barrett, Roger “Syd,” 240–41
 the Barry Goldberg Blues Band, 185
 Bartholomew, Dave, 45
 Bartók, Béla, 188
 Basement Jaxx, 306
 Bass, Lance, 303–4
 the Bayside Boys Mix, 308
 the Beach Boys, 19, 65, 69–71, 73–76, 97
 the Beastie Boys, 318, 320, 325, 327, 329
 the Beatles, 5, 77–112, 124–25, 219–21, 239, 357
 Abbey Road, 99–100
 Anthology 1, 2, and 3, 102
 Apple Records, 98
 With the Beatles, 84
 The Beatles (White Album), 96–99
 breakup, 100–102
 Cavern Club, 81–82
 drug use, 86, 90, 95
 early recordings, 82–85, 292
 Eastern mysticism, 91, 95, 97, 101, 119
 Ed Sullivan Show appearance, 85–86, 290
 A Hard Day’s Night, 86
 Help!, 86
 instrumentation, 17, 21
 late work, 91–100
 Let It Be, 101
 Live at the BBC, 102
 lyrics, 15, 111, 235
 Magical Mystery Tour, 94–95
 middle period, 87–91
 musical form and style, 40, 103–11, 328, 359–60
 name, 80
 “Penny Lane,” 90–91
 Quarry Men era, 79–80
 Revolver, 89–90
 Rubber Soul, 88–89
 Sgt. Pepper’s Lonely Hearts Club Band, 71, 90, 91–96, 118
 Silver Beatles, 80–81
 “Strawberry Fields Forever,” 90–91
 “Twist and Shout,” 72
 U. S. tours, 85–87, 290
 Yellow Submarine, 98
 “Yesterday,” 87–88, 332
 Yesterday and Today, 89
 Beck, 350–51
 Beck, Jeff, 127, 181, 222, 246
 Becker, Walter, 246
 Beckham, Victoria, 304
 the Bee Gees, 297
 Beethoven, Ludwig von, 297, 309, 328, 357
 Belafonte, Harry, 65–66, 265, 367–68
 Bell, Ricky, 327
 Bell, Thom, 295
 Bell Biv DeVoe, 323, 327
 Benatar, Pat, 233
 Bennett, Tony, 9, 332
 Bernstein, Leonard, 206, 294
 Bernstein, Sid, 85
 Berry, Chuck, 22, 34, 42–43, 46–47, 63
 covers of, 97, 115–16
 hits, 51
 improvisation, 181
 influence, 74, 332
 lyrics, 236–37, 368
 vocal style, 33
 Berry, Jan, 69
 Best, Pete, 80–83
 Bettis, John, 301
 Betts, Dicky, 274
 Beyoncé, 305, 327
 the Big Bopper, 50
 Big Brother and the Holding Company, 175–76
 Bikel, Theodore, 135
 Bikini Kill, 349
 Bilk, Acker, 64
 Bill Black Combo, 56
 Bill Haley and the Comets, 17, 21, 27–28
 Billy J. Kramer and the Dakotas, 83, 126
 Birdsong, Cindy, 163–64
 Bivins, Michael, 327
 Björk, 353, 355
 Black, Bill, 29
 Black, Clint, 257, 260, 269
 Black, Jim, 209, 211
 the Black Eyed Peas, 328
 Black Flag, 342–43, 358
 Black Francis, 343
 Blackmore, Ritchie, 200–201
 Black Sabbath, 237, 278–79, 286, 288–89, 343, 358
 Blackstreet, 327
 Blackwell, Otis, 49
 Blackwell, Robert “Bumps,” 43
 Blind Faith, 222
 Blink-182, 349–50
 Blondie, 233, 342
 Blood, Sweat, and Tears (BS&T), 131, 185–88, 192–97, 206, 242–43, 247, 314, 357, 360
 Bloomfield, Mike, 185, 244
 Blow, Kurtis, 316
 Blue Cheer, 279
 Blue Öyster Cult, 237
 Bluesbreakers, 125, 127
 Blues-Breakers, 223

- Blues Incorporated, 114–15, 127
- the Blues Magoos, 177
- Bluesology, 224
- the Blues Project, 185
- Bobby Pickett and the Crypt-Kickers, 56
- Body Count, 287
- Bogart, Neil, 370
- Bolan, Mark, 336
- Bolton, Michael, 322
- Bonebrake, Don J., 343
- Bonham, John, 276–78
- Bono, 231–32
- Bono, Sonny, 142
- Boogie Down Productions, 323
- Boone, Debby, 238
- Boone, Pat, 19, 26, 37, 59, 61, 62, 64, 239
- the Boston Pops Orchestra, 297
- Bowie, David, 314, 335–36, 340
- Boy George, 336
- Boyz II Men, 266, 327
- Brecker, Mike, 191, 248
- Brecker, Randy, 185–86, 191, 229
- the Breeders, 343
- Brewer, Teresa, 9
- Brian Poole and the Tremeloes, 115
- Brodsky Quartet, 233
- Brooks, Garth, 252, 257–58, 274
- Brooks and Dunn, 260
- Brother D, 322
- the Brothers Four, 66
- Brown, Bobby, 323, 327
- Brown, Charles, 223, 285
- Brown, James, 152–56, 160, 339
 - covers of, 203, 314
 - influence, 116, 317, 321, 360
 - vocal style, 19, 168
- Brown, Jay, 48
- Brown, Melanie “Mel B,” 304
- the Browns, 54
- Brubeck, Dave, 241
- Bruce, Lenny, 280
- Bruford, Bill, 241
- BS&T. *See* Blood, Sweat, and Tears
- Buckingham, Lindsey, 223
- Buffalo Springfield, 142–43, 185
- Bulgakov, Mikhail, 119
- Bunton, Emma Lee, 304
- Burden, Eric, 127
- Burnette, Johnny, 35
- Burrell, Boz, 241
- Burrell, Stanley Kirk. *See* Hammer, M.C.
- Bush, George H. W., 240
- Butler, Jerry, 156
- Butterfield, Paul, 135, 185
- the Butthole Surfers, 358
- the Byrds, 135–38, 235, 247
- Byrne, David, 341
- Cadaver, 287
- Cage, John, 97–98, 211
- Calamity Jane, 349
- Cale, John, 339–40
- Campbell, Glenn, 256–57
- Capaldi, Jim, 188
- the Capitols, 73
- the Capris, 59, 60
- the Captain and Tennille, 263
- Captain Beefheart, 342
- Carcass, 287
- Carey, Mariah, 265–67, 291, 292
- Carpenter, Karen, 262–63
- Carpenter, Mary Chapin, 257, 260
- Carpenter, Richard, 262–63
- the Carpenters, 19, 262–63
- Carroll, Lewis, 95
- Carter, James, 252
- Carter, Jimmy, 254
- Casady, Jack, 171–72
- Casey, Harry Wayne, 295–96
- Cash, Johnny, 35, 48, 52–53, 64, 136
- Cashis, 326
- Cassidy, David, 263
- Castillo, Emilio, 245
- C+C Music Factory, 292
- Cervenka, Exene, 342–43
- Cetera, Peter, 189–91
- Chad Mitchell Trio, 66
- the Champs, 55
- Chandler, Gene, 59, 60
- the Chantels, 60
- Chapman, Mark David, 102
- Chapman, Tracy, 252–53
- the Charlatans, 176
- Charles, Ray, 34, 51–52, 64, 150, 265, 339
- Charlie Daniels Band, 254–55
- Chase, 242
- Chase, Bill, 191
- Chase, Brian, 353
- Chavez, JC, 303–4
- Checker, Chubby, 72
- the Chemical Brothers, 306
- Cherone, Gary, 285
- Chess, Leonard, 46
- Chic, 317
- Chicago, 40, 189–91, 242–43, 297, 357
- Chicago Transit Authority (CTA), 189
- Chicks on Speed, 306
- the Chiffons, 101
- the Chi-Lites, 321
- Chingy, 328

- Chisholm, Melanie "Mel C," 304
 the Chords, 38
 Chuck D, 322–23
 the Circle Jerks, 343, 358
 Clapton, Eric, 101, 125, 127, 181, 222, 233–35, 252, 292
 Clark, Dave, 126
 Clark, Dick, 53, 57, 58
 Clark, Gene, 136–37
 Clarke, Mike, 136–38
 the Clash, 252, 316, 337–38, 339
 Clayton-Thomas, David, 186–88
 Clemons, Clarence, 229–30
 Cleveland, James, 153
 Clifford, Doug, 225
 Clinton, George, 314
 Clooney, Rosemary, 9
 the Coasters, 39, 151
 Cobain, Kurt, 287, 343–47
 Cobham, Billy, 181, 243
 Cochran, Eddie, 35, 52, 113
 Coldplay, 350
 Cole, Cozy, 56
 Cole, Nat "King," 8, 9, 332
 Coles, Dennis, 324
 Collective Effort, 322
 Collins, Judy, 141–42
 Collins, Phil, 205–6
 Collins, Ray, 209
 Colomby, Bobby, 185–88
 Color Me Badd, 314, 327
 Colter, Jesi, 256
 Coltrane, Alice, 244
 Coltrane, Chi, 236
 Colvin, Shawn, 253
 Combs, Sean "Puffy," 323
 the Comets. *See* Bill Haley and the Comets
 Commerford, Tim, 287
 the Commodores, 264, 300, 323
 Como, Perry, 9
 Connelly, Christopher, 232
 the Contours, 161
 Cook, Stu, 225
 Cooke, Sam, 52, 60, 72, 73, 150, 152
 Cooper, Alice, 275, 279–81, 288, 336, 368
 Copland, Aaron, 208
 Corea, Chick, 242–43, 244
 Cornell, Chris, 287
 Cortez, Dave "Baby," 56
 Costello, Elvis, 233, 255, 339
 Country Joe McDonald and the Fish, 176
 Covay, Don, 148, 153
 Cowell, Simon, 265
 Cramer, Floyd, 56
 Crane, Les, 116
 Creach, "Papa" John, 172
 Cream, 125, 127, 222, 235
 Creed, 333, 334
 Creedence Clearwater Revival (CCR), 176, 225–26
 Creekwater, Bobby, 326
 the Crests, 61
 the Crew Cuts, 27, 38, 59, 60
 the Crickets, 17, 50, 80
 Croce, Ingrid, 248
 Croce, Jim, 248–49
 Crosby, David, 136–37, 143, 172, 250–51, 367
 Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young, 120, 143, 250–51
 Crow, Sheryl, 253, 349
 the Crows, 26, 38, 60
 Crudup, Arthur "Big Boy," 29
 the Crystals, 64
 Culture Club, 336
 the Cure, 314
 Curtis, Ian, 338
 Cypress Hill, 323
 Cyrus, Billy Ray, 260

 D12, 326
 D. J. Jazzy Jeff, 320
 Dae, Sonny, 28
 Daft Punk, 306
 Dale, Dick, 69
 Daley, Richard, 189
 Daltry, Roger, 202–4
 Damon, 366
 Daniels, Charlie, 136, 254–55
 Danny and the Juniors, 34, 54, 62, 72
 Darin, Bobby, 37, 53–54, 151
 Dashboard Confessional, 350
 the Dave Clark Five, 126
 the Dave Matthews Band, 261, 290, 334
 David, Hal, 153, 262
 Davies, David, 127
 Davies, Ray, 127
 Davis, Miles, 242–43, 333
 Day, Doris, 26
 the Dead, 175, 260
 Dead Kennedys, 343
 Deal, Kim, 343
 Dean, James, 26
 Dean, Roger, 204
 Dee, Joey, 72
 Deep Purple, 200–201, 212, 221, 276
 Def Leppard, 286
 de la Rocha, Zack, 287
 De La Soul, 317
 Los Del Rios, 308
 Densmore, John, 177–78
 Denton, Sandy "Pepa," 324–25
 Denver, John, 68, 268, 369

- Depeche Mode, 314
 Derek and the Dominoes, 222, 233–34
 Destiny's Child, 305, 334
 Devo, 314, 342
 DeVoe, Ronnie, 327
 Diamond, Michael, 320
 Diamond, Neil, 263
 Diamond Head, 286
 the Diamonds, 59, 60
 Diana, Princess of Wales, 224
 Diana Ross and the Supremes, 163–64
 Diddley, Bo, 116, 127
 DiFranco, Ani, 335, 349
 Diggs, Robert, 324
 Dinning, Mark, 53, 237
 Dinosaur Jr., 351
 Dio, Ronnie James, 278
 Dion, Celine, 333
 Dion and the Belmonts, 50, 54, 59, 60, 62
 Dirnt, Mike, 349
 the Dirty Dozen, 326
 the Disco Biscuits, 261
 the Dixie Chicks, 253, 259–60, 333
 Dixon, Willie, 116
 DJ Jam Master J, 319
 DJ Lethal, 288
 DJ Shadow, 306
 Doggett, Bill, 55
 Doherty, Denny, 138–39
 Dokken, 236
 Doldinger, Klaus, 242
 Dominick, Joseph R., 291
 Domino, Fats, 19, 21–22, 26, 34, 37, 42, 45–46, 332
 the Dominoes, 149–50, 156
 Donahue, Tom, 170
 Donegan, Lonnie, 79, 113
 Donovan, 143
 the Doobie Brothers, 225, 362
 the Doors, 177–78, 348
 Dorsey, Thomas, 149, 153
 the Dovells, 73
 Dowland, John, 342
 Dozier, Lamont, 159–61, 248, 255
 Dr. Drc, 323, 324, 325, 329–30
 Drayton, William, 322
 the Dreams, 191
 the Drifters, 64, 149–50, 247
 Dryden, Spencer, 171–72
 Dukowski, Charles, 343
 Durst, Fred, 288
 Dylan, Bob, 67–68, 88, 101, 111, 133–36, 137
 covers of, 206, 264, 292, 352
 later work, 252
 “Like a Rolling Stone” organ, 185
 lyrics, 235
 musical analysis of, 143–47
 vocal style, 97
 “We Are the World” fundraiser, 265
 Dylan, Jakob, 252

 the Eagles, 233, 254, 292
 Earth, Wind, and Fire, 21, 244–45
 Eastman, Lee, 98
 Easton, Eric, 115, 117, 124
 Eazy E, 320, 324
 Eddy, Duane, 55
 Eden's Crush, 293
 the Edsels, 38
Ed Sullivan Show, 57, 85–86, 116–17
 Edwards, Dennis, 161
 Edwards, Tommy, 55
 808 State, 306
 ekoostic hookah, 261
 the El Dorados, 38
 the Electric Flag, 185
 the Electric Light Orchestra (ELO), 202, 242
 the Electric Prunes, 206
 Ellefson, David, 287
 Elliman, Yvonne, 200–201, 297
 Elliot, Cass, 138–39
 Elliott, Missy, 305
 Emerson, Keith, 21, 181, 206–8, 212–18
 Emerson, Lake, and Palmer (ELP), 202, 206–8, 212–18, 221, 240, 357, 360
 Eminem, 324, 325–26, 329–30
 Eno, Brian, 241, 267, 314, 336, 341, 354
 Enrique, Luis, 308
 Entwistle, John, 202–4
 En Vogue, 325
 Enya, 333, 334
 Epstein, Brian, 82–83, 85, 89, 91–92, 126.
 See also the Beatles
 Ertegun, Ahmet, 150–52, 157, 236
 Erwin, Emily, 259
 Erwin, Martie, 259
 Estefan, Emilio, Jr., 307
 Estefan, Gloria, 307–8
 Estrada, Roy, 209, 211
 the E Street Band, 229–30
 Eubanks, Jerry, 255
 Evans, Dale, 16
 the Everly Brothers, 35, 59–62, 64, 247
 Exciter, 237

 Fabares, Shelley, 65
 Fabian, 53–54
 Fabolous, 328
 the Faces, 222
 Fagen, Donald, 246
 Faith, Percy, 64, 65, 296

- Faithfull, Marianne, 119
 the Falcons, 38
 the Fall, 338
 the Famous Flames, 154–55
 Farian, Frankie, 292
 Farrell, Perry, 351
 the Fatback Band, 316
 the Fat Boys, 320
 Fateh, Nusrat, 348
 Fatone, Joey, 303–4
 Fender, Leo, 18
 Ferguson, Maynard, 191
 Ferrante and Teicher, 64
 Fielder, Jim, 185–88
 50 Cent, 326, 328
 Finch, Richard, 295–96
 the First Edition, 257
 Fisher, Eddie, 9, 26, 332
 Fishman, Jon, 260–61
 the Five Satins, 59, 60
 Flack, Roberta, 268
 the Flamingos, 38, 41, 59
 Flavor Flav, 322
 Fleetwood, Mick, 125, 223
 Fleetwood Mac, 125, 223
 the Fleetwoods, 38, 54
 Fletcher, Andrew, 366
 Flickerstick, 293
 Flipper, 343
 the Flying Burrito Brothers, 137, 253
 Focus, 242
 Fogerty, John, 225–26
 Fogerty, Tom, 225
 Fontana, Wayne, 126
 Ford, Glenn, 26
 the Foreigner, 229
 Foreman, Richard, 206
 the Four Freshmen, 74
 the Four Seasons, 65
 the Four Tops, 159, 161, 295
 Frampton, Peter, 224–25
 Francis, Connie, 37, 55, 65
 Frankie Lymon and the Teenagers, 38
 Franklin, Aretha, 148–49, 152–54, 165–68, 247, 291
 Franklin, Farah, 305
 Franks, Chris, 267
 Freddie and the Dreamers, 73, 126
 Freed, Alan, 46, 58, 149
 Fresh Prince, 320
 Frey, Glenn, 254
 Friedman, Marty, 287
 Fripp, Robert, 241, 267, 341
 Frith, Fred, 341
 Froese, Edgar, 267
 the Fugs, 177
 Fuller, Jesse, 134
 Full-Tilt Boogie, 175–76
 the Funk Brothers, 160
 Funky Bunch, 327
 Furay, Richard, 142–43
 the Furious Five, 322
 Furnier, Vincent. *See* Cooper, Alice
 Furtado, Nelly, 334
 Gabriel, Peter, 205–6, 323
 Gamble, Kenneth, 295
 Garbage, 315
 Garcia, Jerry, 172–75, 253
 Garfunkel, Art, 139–41, 248
 Garrett, Siedah, 300
 Gary Glitter, 336
 Gary Lewis and the Playboys, 185
 Gary “U.S.” Bonds, 72
 Gaye, Marvin, 73, 158–60, 236, 238, 295, 321
 Geffen, David, 343
 Genesis, 205–6, 221, 323
 the Gentle Giant, 242
 the Germs, 343
 Gerry and the Pacemakers, 83, 126
 Gershwin, George, 175, 202
 Getz, Stan, 232
 Ghostface Killah, 324
 Gibb, Barry, 297
 Gibb, Maurice, 297
 Gibb, Robin, 297
 Gill, Johnny, 327
 Gillan, Ian, 200–201
 Gillis, John Anthony, 352
 Ginastera, Alberto, 208
 Ginn, Greg, 342–43
 Gioia, 329
 Gladys Knight and the Pips, 161
 Glaser, Tompoll, 255
 Glass, Philip, 267, 341
 Glover, Roger, 200–201
 God Speed You Black Emperor!, 353
 Goffin, Gerry, 153, 188, 247
 Goldberg, Barry, 185
 Goldstein, Richard, 370
 Gonzales, Michael, 316, 321
 Goodman, Jerry, 243
 Gordy, Anna, 159, 160
 Gordy, Berry, Jr., 156–62, 164–65, 298
 Gore, Lesley, 65
 Gorme, Eydie, 247
 Gossard, Stone, 347–48
 Graham, Bill, 170
 Grand Funk Railroad, 279–80
 Grandmaster Flash, 316, 322
 the Grateful Dead, 172–75, 181, 253, 260

- the Great Society, 171
 Green, Peter, 223
 Green Day, 349–50
 Greene, Pamela, 324–25
 Green River, 343, 347
 Greenwood, Colin, 353–55
 Greenwood, Jonny, 353–55
 Greer, Billy, 228
 Grice, Gary, 324
 Grohl, Dave, 343
 Grossman, Albert, 141, 175
 Gryndy, Bill, 337
 Guard, Dave, 66
 Gudmundsdóttir, Björk, 355
 Guercio, James William, 189, 190
 Guns N' Roses, 282–84
 Guthrie, Woody, 65, 134, 252
 Guy, 327
 GZA, 324
- Hagar, Sammy, 285
 Haley, Bill, 17, 27–28, 34–35, 51, 332
 Halligan, Dick, 185–89, 192–97
 Halliwell, Geri, 304
 Hammer, Jack, 49
 Hammer, Jan, 243
 Hammer, M.C., 314, 320, 321
 Hammett, Kirk, 285–86
 Hammond, John, 134, 152, 229
 Hammond, Laurens, 21
 Hancock, Herbie, 243, 244, 247
 Hank Ballard and the Midnighters, 72, 73
 Hansen, Beck, 350–51
 Haris, R.H., 150
 Harris, Emmylou, 260
 Harris, Wynonie, 19
 Harrison, George, 80, 98, 101–2, 115, 222.
 See also the Beatles
 Harry, Debby, 233
 Hart, Mickey, 173–75
 Harvey, PJ, 349
 Hatfield, James, 285–86
 Hawkins, Dale, 35, 225
 Hawkins, Lamont, 324
 Haydn, Franz Joseph, 357, 358–59, 365
 Hayes, Isaac, 151–52, 317
 Hayward, Justin, 199–200
 H-D-H (Holland, Dozier, and Holland), 159–61, 248, 255
 the Heartbeats, 60
 Hebert, Bob, 304
 Hebert, Chris, 304
 Helander, Brock, 203, 211, 250, 281, 282, 340
 Helms, Chet, 175–76
 Hendrix, Jimi, 139, 177–81, 219, 367, 368
 Henley, Don, 233, 315
- Henry Cow, 242
 the Herd, 225
 Herman, Woody, 191
 Herman's Hermits, 126, 247
 Hewson, Paul. *See* Bono
 the Highwaymen, 66
 Hillman, Chris, 136–37, 253
 the Hi-Los, 74
 Hirshey, Gerri, 150, 154, 155
 Hitler, Adolf, 367
 the Hives, 352
 Holdworth, Jeff, 260–61
 Hole with Courtney Love, 351, 352
 Holiday, Billie, 152
 Holland, Brian, 159–61, 248, 255
 Holland, Dozier, and Holland, 159–61, 248, 255
 Holland, Eddie, 159–61, 248, 255
 the Hollies, 126
 Holly, Buddy, 34–35, 42–43, 49–51, 63
 covers of, 255
 influence, 78, 80, 126, 332
 instrumentation, 17
 popularity, 113
 style, 256, 350
 the Hollywood Argyles, 56
 Hootie and the Blowfish, 292
 Hornsby, Bruce, 232
 Horovitz, Adam, 320
 Horton, Johnny, 52
 the House of Pain, 288, 325
 Houston, Whitney, 265, 303, 327
 Howe, Steve, 204–5
 Howlin' Wolf, 149, 223
 Hudson, Saul, 284
 the Hues Corporation, 295, 296
 Huey Lewis and the News, 232
 Huff, Leon, 295
 Humble Pie, 225
 Hunter, Jason, 324
 Hunter, Meredith, 120
 Hunter, Robert, 173
 Hüsker Dü, 343
 Hyland, Brian, 56
 Hyman, Jerry, 188
- Ice Cube, 291, 320–21, 323, 324
 Ice-T, 287, 323, 368
 Iggy Pop and the Stooges, 340, 352
 Iglesias, Enrique, 307, 308, 334
 Ike and Tina Turner, 119, 156–57, 178
 the Impalas, 38
 the Imperials, 38
 the Impressions, 156
 the Indigo Girls, 253
 Ingeber, Elliot, 211

- Ingle, Doug, 279
 the Ink Spots, 38, 150
 Inspectah Deck, 324
 Iron Butterfly, 279
 Iron Maiden, 237, 286
 Isbell, Jeffrey, 284
 Isley Brothers, 72, 83
- Jackson, Alan, 257, 260
 Jackson, Blair, 177
 Jackson, Jackie, 298
 Jackson, Janet, 291, 301, 303, 314
 Jackson, Jermaine, 298
 Jackson, Joe, 298
 Jackson, LaToya, 298
 Jackson, Mahalia, 149, 152
 Jackson, Marlon, 298
 Jackson, Maureen, 298
 Jackson, Michael, 254, 291, 298–300, 303
 dancing style, 154
 Dangerous, 327
 fame and influence, 98, 229–30, 327, 333–34, 362, 370
 “Speed Demon,” 358
 “We Are the World” fundraiser, 265
 Jackson, Millie, 317
 Jackson, Milt, 148–49, 150
 Jackson, O’Shea. *See* Ice Cube
 Jackson, Randy, 298
 Jackson, Tito, 298
 the Jackson Five, 165, 266, 295, 298, 321
 the Jacksons, 298–99, 327
 Jagger, Mick, 43–44, 114, 119, 129, 154, 360.
 See also the Rolling Stones
 Jam, Jimmy, 327
 James, Cheryl “Salt,” 324–25
 James, Elmore, 19, 22, 223
 James, Rick, 314, 321
 James, Tommy, 233
 the James Brown Revue, 154
 Jam & Spoon, 306
 Jan and Dean, 69, 237
 Jane’s Addiction, 351
 Janeway, Brother, 48
 Jardine, Al, 69–71, 74–76, 190
 Ja Rule, 334
 Jay-Z, 266, 292, 305
 the Jeff Beck Group, 222
 the Jefferson Airplane, 171–72, 235
 the Jefferson Starship, 172
 Jennings, Waylon, 50, 255–56, 265
 Jethro Tull, 241
 Jett, Joan, 233, 349
 Jewel, 252, 253, 349
 the Jimi Hendrix Experience, 177, 178–80
 Jimmy Eat World, 350
 Jimmy James and the Blue Flames, 178
 Joan Jett and the Blackhearts, 233
 Joel, Billy, 233, 249–50, 265
 Joey Dee and the Starlighters, 72
 John, Elton, 223–24, 233, 297, 336
 John Doe, 342–43
 Johnny and the Hurricanes, 56
 Johnny Burnette Trio, 35
 Johnson, Johnny, 47
 Johnson, Pete, 22
 Johnson, Robert, 274
 Johnston, Tom, 225
 Jones, Brian, 114–15, 117–19, 122.
 See also the Rolling Stones
 Jones, Davy, 335
 Jones, George, 339
 Jones, John Paul, 276–78
 Jones, Mick, 229
 Jones, Nora, 349
 Jones, Quincy, 265, 299
 Jones, Russell, 324
 Joo, Richard, 233
 Joplin, Janis, 19, 139, 175–76, 219, 336
 Joplin, Scott, 202
 Journey, 225–26
 the Journeymen, 66
 Joy Division, 338
 Judas Priest, 236, 286
 the Jungle Brothers, 328
 Justis, Bill, 55
- Kaempfert, Bert, 64
 Kansas, 228
 Kantner, Paul, 169, 171–72
 Kath, Terry, 189–91
 Katz, Steve, 185–88
 Kaukonen, Jorma, 171–72
 Kay, John, 279–80
 KC and the Sunshine Band, 295–297
 Keisker, Marion, 29
 Kempton, Arthur, 328
 Kendrick, Eddie, 161
 Kennedy, John F., 67–68, 78, 124, 132
 Kennedy, Robert, 124, 133
 Kenny Rogers and the First Edition, 257
 Kentucky Headhunters, 260
 Kesey, Ken, 172
 Kid Frost, 308
 Kid Rock, 288
 Kiffmeyer, John, 349
 Kilcher, Jewel, 253
 Kindale, Tyson, 343
 King, B. B., 48, 119, 149, 235
 King, Ben E., 150

- King, Carole, 153, 188, 247–48
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 124, 133
 King Crimson, 206, 241
 King Diamond, 237
 the Kings of Rhythm, 156
 the Kingston Trio, 66, 133, 252
 the Kinks, 127
 Kirkpatrick, Chris, 303–4
 Kiss, 236–37, 281–82
 Klein, Allen, 98, 117
 Knight, Gladys, 161, 295
 Knight, Marian “Suge,” 323, 324
 Knowles, Beyoncé, 305, 327
 Knox, Buddy, 52
 Kool Herc, 316–17
 Kooper, Al, 185–86, 244
 Korn, 287–88
 Korner, Alexis, 114–15
 Koschmider, Bruno, 80
 Kraftwerk, 242, 267, 303, 317
 Kramer, Billy J., 83, 126
 Kreutzmann, Bill, 172–73
 Krieger, Robbie, 177–78
 Kristofferson, Kris, 255
 Krokus, 286
 Krusen, Dave, 347

 L. L. Cool J., 320
 Labelle, 322
 La Bostrie, Dorothy, 43
 Laird, Rick, 243
 Lake, Greg, 206–8, 212–18, 241
 Lamm, Robert, 189–91
 Lance, Major, 73
 Landis, John, 299
 lang, k. d., 260
 Lange, John “Mutt,” 259
 Lanson, Snooky, 57
 the Larks, 73
 the Last Poets in Harlem, 322
 Lauper, Cyndi, 301
 Lawless, Blackie, 368
 Lawrence, Steve, 64, 247
 Laws, Ronald, 245
 Leadbelly, 65, 134
 Leary, Timothy, 133
 Ledbetter, Huddie, 65, 134
 Led Zeppelin, 128, 252, 276–78, 358
 Lee, Albert, 200–201
 Lee, Brenda, 37, 41, 55, 64, 65
 Lee, Geddy, 282
 Lee, Murphy, 327
 Lee, Spike, 317, 322
 Lehmann-Haupt, Hellmut, 367
 Leiber, Jerry, 151, 153

 Leitch, Donovan, 143
 Lennon, John, 78–80, 98, 101–2, 113–14, 136, 153, 328.
 See also the Beatles
 Lesh, Phil, 172–75
 Lewis, Bobby, 64
 Lewis, Gary, 185
 Lewis, Huey, 232, 370
 Lewis, Jerry Lee, 17, 19, 32–35, 42, 47–49, 63, 181, 368
 Lewis, Ramsey, 244
 Lewis, Terry, 327
 Li'l Jon and the East Side Boyz, 328
 the Limelighters, 66
 Limp Bizkit, 288
 Lind, Jon, 301
 Linkin Park, 288, 334
 Lipsius, Fred, 185–89
 Little Eva, 73, 247
 Little Feat, 259
 Little Richard, 34, 42–44, 46, 51, 63, 178
 covers of, 31, 37
 improvisation, 181
 influence, 77, 113, 152, 332, 360, 368
 instrumentation, 17, 21
 lyrics, 235
 vocal style, 19, 33, 47
 Lloyd Webber, Andrew, 204
 Lodge, John, 199–200
 Loggins and Messina, 143
 Lomax, Alan, 252
 Lopez, Jennifer, 307, 308
 Lord, Jon, 200–201, 212, 240, 276
 Los Del Rios, 308
 Loughnane, Lee, 189–91
 Love, Courtney, 315, 343, 351, 352
 Love, Mike, 69–71, 74–76
 Lovering, David, 343
 Lovett, Lyle, 260
 Sister Luc-Gabrielle, 65
 Lockett, LeToya, 305
 Ludacris, 328
 Luther, Martin, 366
 Lydon, John, 337
 Lymon, Frankie, 38
 Lynch, Laura, 259
 Lynne, Jeff, 101
 Lynyrd Skynyrd, 228, 273

 MacDermot, Galt, 202
 Macy, Robyn Lynn, 259
 Madonna, 230, 238, 301–3, 315, 358, 371
 Maharishi Mahesh Yogi, 91, 95, 97, 119
 the Mahavishnu Orchestra, 243
 Maines, Natalie, 259–60
 Malmsteen, Yngwie, 286
 the Mamas and the Papas, 138–39

- Mana, 308
 Manfred Mann, 127
 Mangione, Chuck, 21, 246
 Manilow, Barry, 19, 263
 Mann, Herbie, 296
 Mann, Manfred, 127
 Mannheim Steamroller, 267
 Manson, Charles, 100, 111
 Manson, Marilyn, 289
 Manzarek, Ray, 177–78
 March, Little Peggy, 65
 Marky Mark, 314, 325, 327
 Marky Mark and the Funky Bunch, 314
 Marley, Bob, 222, 251
 Marsh, Dave, 203
 the Marshall Tucker Band, 254–55
 Martha and the Vandellas, 158–59, 160
 Martin, Dean, 116, 126
 Martin, Dewey, 142–43
 Martin, George, 82–85, 87–89, 91–92, 97, 246
 Martin, Ricky, 307–9
 the Marvelettes, 64, 158, 160
 Maslin, Janet, 246
 Massive Attack, 306
 Masta Killa, 324
 Mather, Marshall. *See* Eminem
 Mathis, Johnny, 54–55
 Matthews, Dave, 261, 290, 334
 Matthews, Patrick, 352
 Mauldin, Joe, 50
 Maupin, Bennie, 242–43
 May, Derrick, 306
 Mayall, John, 125, 127, 223
 Mayfield, Curtis, 156
 MC5, 279–80
 McCartney, Linda, 98, 101, 233
 McCartney, Paul, 79–80, 248, 328
 Beatles' breakup, 100–102
 covers of, 153
 post-Beatles work, 233, 292, 299
 songwriting, 113–14, 126.
 See also the Beatles
 McCoy, Van, 296
 McCrae, George, 295, 296
 McCready, Mike, 347–48
 McDaniels, Daryl, 319
 McDonald, Country Joe, 176, 236
 McDonald, Ian, 229, 241
 McDonald, Mike, 225, 369
 McEntire, Reba, 257
 McFall, Ray, 81
 McGee, Stick, 150
 McGuinn, Jim, 136–38
 McKagan, Duff, 284
 McKernan, Ron "Pigpen," 172–74
 McLachlan, Sarah, 253, 349
 McLaughlin, John, 181, 242–244
 McLean, Don, 51
 McPhatter, Clyde, 149–51, 156
 McVie, Christine, 223
 McVie, John, 125, 223
 Megadeth, 237, 287
 the Mekons, 338
 Mello Man Ace, 308
 the Melvins, 343, 358
 Memphis Slim, 22
 Menudo, 309
 Menza, Nick, 287
 Mercyful Fate, 237
 Merman, Ethel, 297
 Merriam, Alan P., 366
 the Merry Pranksters, 172
 Messiah, 306
 Metallica, 237, 285–87, 333
 Method Man, 324
 MFSB (Mother, Father, Sister, Brother), 295, 297
 the Miami Sound Machine, 307–8
 Michael, George, 288, 358
 Miles, Buddy, 185
 Miller, Steve, 176, 225
 Milli Vanilli, 292
 Mills Brothers, 38, 150
 Mingus, Charles, 247
 the Minutemen, 342
 the Miracles, 158, 159, 295
 the Missing Links, 189
 Mitchell, Chuck, 247
 Mitchell, Guy, 52
 Mitchell, Joni, 142, 247
 Mitchell, Mitch, 178–80
 Mizell, Jason, 319
 Moby, 306
 Moby Grape, 176
 Modest Mouse, 350
 Monica, 253
 Monk, Theonious, 188, 293
 the Monkees, 247, 292
 Monroe, Bill, 29
 Monroe, Marilyn, 224, 302
 the Moody Blues, 21, 199–200, 212, 221
 Mookie Blaylock, 347
 Moon, Keith, 202–4
 the Moonglows, 26, 59
 Moore, Sam, 152
 Moore, Scotty, 29
 Morella, Tom, 287
 Morissette, Alanis, 292, 349
 Morricone, Ennio, 317
 Morris, Keith, 343
 Morrison, Jim, 177–78, 219, 348, 368

- Morrison, Sterling, 339–40
 Morthland, John, 180
 Morvan, Fabrice, 292
 Mother Love Bone, 343, 347
 Mother McCree's Uptown Jug Champions, 172
 the Mothers of Invention, 185, 202, 209–12
 Mötley Crüe, 236–37, 286
 Motor City Five (MC5), 339, 352
 Motörhead, 286
 Mottola, 266
 Mott the Hoople, 336
 Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 357–59
 Mudhoney, 343
 Mullen, Larry, 231
 Murphy, Walter, 297
 Murray the K, 58
 Mussorgsky, Modest, 207
 Mustaine, Dave, 287

 Naisbit, John, 220
 Napalm Death, 287
 Nash, Graham, 143, 172, 250–51
 Nelly, 327
 Nelson, Havelock, 316, 321
 Nelson, Ricky, 36, 62, 64
 Nelson, Willie, 244, 255–56, 265, 307
 Nero, Peter, 296
 the New Christy Minstrels, 66, 257
 the New Edition, 267, 323, 327
 the New Kids on the Block, 267
 Newman, Randy, 186
 New Order, 338
 the New Order, 313, 315
 the New Riders of the Purple Sage, 253
 the News, 232
 Newsted, Jason, 285–86
 Newton-John, Olivia, 264
 the New York Dolls, 337, 341
 the New York Rock Ensemble, 202
 Nice, 206
 Nicholls, Craig, 352
 Nickelback, 334
 Nicks, Stevie, 223, 259
 Nico, 339
 Nine Inch Nails, 353
 Nirvana, 291–92, 343–47, 349, 352, 358
 Nixon, Richard, 239–40
 No Doubt, 351
 Nommensen, John, 342–43
 Noone, Peter, 126
 Norman, Philip, 117, 121, 124
 Novoselic, Krist, 343
 *NSYNC, 303–4, 333–34
 Nu Shooz, 358
 NWA, 320–21, 323–24, 329, 370

 O, Karen, 353
 Oakley, Berry, 228
 the Oak Ridge Boys, 257
 O'Brien, Ed, 353–55
 the O'Jays, 295
 Oldfield, Mike, 242
 Oldham, Andrew Loog, 115, 117, 122, 124
 Ol' Dirty Bastard, 324
 Oliveira, Laudir de, 190–91
 Oliver, Sy, 38
 Ono, Yoko, 91, 95–96, 98–99, 101–2
 Orb, 306
 Orbison, Roy, 64, 101
 Oregon, 244
 the Orioles, 26, 38
 the Orlons, 73
 Osbourne, John "Ozzy," 237, 278–79, 288–89, 368
 Osmond, Donny, 268
 Osmond, Marie, 268
 the Osmonds, 268
 Osterberg, James, 340
 the Other Ones, 260
 O-Town, 292
 OutKast, 290, 329–30

 P. Diddy, 327
 Page, Jimmy, 127–28, 276–78, 286
 Page, Patti, 9
 Paice, Ian, 200–201
 Pallenberg, Anita, 117, 121–23
 Palmer, Bruce, 142–43, 212–18
 Palmer, Carl, 181, 207–8
 Pankow, James, 189–91
 Panzer, Marty, 263
 Paramhansa Yogananda, 204
 Parazaid, Walter, 189–91
 Parker, "Colonel" Tom, 30–31
 Parks, Van Dyke, 71
 Parnes, Larry, 80
 Parsons, Alan, 240–41, 267
 Parsons, Gram, 137, 253
 Parton, Dolly, 257
 Passport, 242, 267
 Pastorius, Jaco, 247
 the Patti Smith Group, 341
 Paul, Les, 18
 Paul, Sean, 305, 327
 the Paul Butterfield Blues Band, 135, 185
 Pavement, 351
 Pavitt, Bruce, 343
 Pearl Jam, 290, 343, 347–48, 358
 Pearlman, Lou, 304
 the Pebbles, 327
 Penguins, 26–27, 38, 59–62
 Penn, Sean, 302

- Penniman, Richard Wayne. *See* Little Richard
 Pere Ubu, 342
 Perkins, Carl, 35, 48
 Perris, Arnold, 366–68
 Perry, Joe, 318
 Perry, Lee “Scratch,” 306, 316
 Perry, Steve, 225–26, 265
 Peter, Paul, and Mary, 67–69, 133–35, 252
 Peter and Gordon, 126
 Petty, Norman, 50
 Petty, Tom, 101
 Phair, Liz, 253
 Pharrell, 328
 Phillips, John, 138–39
 Phillips, Mackenzie, 139
 Phillips, Michelle, 138–39
 Phillips, Sam, 29, 35, 48
 Phish, 260–61, 315
 Pickett, Bobby, 56
 Pickett, Wilson, 148, 151–52, 167–68, 178
 Pilatus, Rob, 292
 Pink, 334
 Pink Floyd, 177, 237, 240–41, 333–34, 357
 the Pixies, 343–44, 350
 Plant, Robert, 276–78
 the Plastic Ono Band, 101
 the Platters, 39, 41, 59, 61–62
 Pointer Sisters, 190
 Poitier, Sidney, 26
 Poko, 143
 the Police, 252, 316, 323, 341–42
 Portishead, 306
 Postman, Neil, 370–71
 Prater, Dave, 152
 Presley, Elvis, 4–5, 28–34, 48, 64, 77, 86
 death, 156
 Ed Sullivan Show appearance, 290
 “Hound Dog,” 13, 19, 24–25, 30–31, 39
 influence, 1, 332, 368
 instrumentation, 17
 Las Vegas performances, 187
 musical style, 18, 39–40, 45
 soft rock, 37, 59, 62, 239
 vocal style, 19, 33, 51
 Presley, Lisa Marie, 31–32, 300
 Presley, Priscilla, 31–32
 Preston, Johnny, 65
 Price, Lloyd, 26, 43, 51
 Price, Vincent, 299
 Priester, Julian, 244
 the Primes, 163
 the Primettes, 163
 Prince, 236, 238, 302–3, 314, 321, 358, 368
 Procol Harum, 201–2, 221
 Prodigy, 306
 Professor Griff, 322
 Prokofiev, Sergei, 188
 Public Enemy, 320, 322–23
 Puente, Tito, 308
 Pure Prairie League, 253
 the Quarry Men, 79–80
 Quatro, Suzi, 349
 Queen, 314, 357–58
 Queen Latifah, 253, 325
 Queensrÿche, 286
 Quicksilver Messenger Service, 176
 Quiet Riot, 286
 Quintanilla, Abraham, 308
 Quintanilla, Selena, 308–9
 Quintanilla, Suzette, 308
 Rabbitt, Eddie, 257
 Radiohead, 290, 353–55
 Raekwon, 324
 the Raelettes, 150
 Rage Against the Machine, 287
 the Raincoats, 349
 the Ramones, 337, 341
 Ratt, 286
 the Ravens, 38, 161
 Ray, Johnnie, 8, 9
 Reagan, Ronald, 240
 Rebecca’s Statue, 261
 Redding, Noel, 178–80
 Redding, Otis, 148, 151–53
 Reed, Jimmy, 116
 Reed, Lou, 314, 339–40
 Reeves, Martha, 158–60
 Reich, Steve, 267, 341
 Reid, Keith, 202
 the Replacements, 343
 Reynold, Jody, 237
 Reynolds, Nick, 66
 Reznor, Trent, 336
 Rhodes, Randy, 286
 Rice, Tim, 204
 Richard, Cliff, 85, 113
 Richard, Keith, 114, 336–37, 360.
 See also the Rolling Stones
 Richardson, J. P., 50
 Richie, Lionel, 264–65, 300, 323, 370
 Riddle, Nelson, 255
 Ridenhour, Carlton, 322
 Riley, Teddy, 326–27
 the Rising Force, 286
 Ritchie, John, 337
 Ritter, Tex, 16
 Robbins, Marty, 52, 64
 Roberson, LaTavia, 305

- Robinson, Smokey, 157–61, 163, 165, 255, 265
 Rogers, Bobby, 160
 Rogers, Claudette, 160, 165
 Rogers, Kenny, 256–57, 265
 Rogers, Roy, 16
 Rolie, Gregg, 225–26, 244
 Rolins, Henry, 343
 the Rolling Stones, 114–25, 219–21, 233, 332, 357
 Aftermath, 117
 Altamont concert, 119–20
 bad-boy image, 121–24, 362
 Beggar's Banquet, 119
 The Biggest Bang, 121
 Bridges to Babylon, 121
 Between the Buttons, 117
 December's Children (and Everybody's), 117
 Dirty Work, 121
 drug use, 117–119, 121–23
 early recordings, 115–16
 Ed Sullivan Show appearance, 290
 Exile on Main Street, 121
 Gimme Shelter, 120
 Goat's Head Soup, 121
 Let It Bleed, 119, 124
 Live Licks, 121
 lyrics, 236, 368
 musical analysis, 128–31
 musical form and style, 359–60
 reggae influences, 251–52
 sampling of, 317
 Some Girls, 121
 Sticky Fingers, 121
 “Sympathy for the Devil,” 128–31, 192, 194, 360
 Tattoo You, 121
 Their Satanic Majesties, 118
 Through the Past Darkly, 119
 Undercover, 121
 violence, 119–20, 123–24
 Voodoo Lounge, 121
 12 X 5, 116
 Ronstadt, Linda, 126, 255, 339
 the Rooftop Singers, 66
 Roper, Deidre “Spinderella,” 325
 Rory Storm and the Hurricanes, 83
 Rose, Axl, 283–84
 Rose, David, 64
 Ross, Diana, 159, 163–64, 265, 295, 300, 305, 307
 Rossington, Gary, 273
 Roth, David Lee, 284–85
 Rothrock, Tom, 350
 Rotten, Johnny, 337
 Rowe, Dick, 115
 Rowland, Kelly, 305
 Roxy Music, 336, 341
 the Royal Teens, 41, 185
 Ruffin, David, 161
 the Runaways, 349
 Run-D.M.C., 318–19, 323, 327, 329–30
 Rupe, Art, 43
 Rush, 282
 Rydell, Bobby, 37, 53, 64, 73
 Rypdal, Terje, 242
 RZA, 324
 Sade, 333
 Sakamoto, Kyu, 65
 Saldivar, Yolanda, 308
 Salt-n-Pepa, 324–25
 Sam and Dave, 151
 Sandoval, Arturo, 308
 Sands, Tommy, 37, 53–54
 Santana, Carlos, 120, 176, 225, 244, 307
 Santiago, Joey, 343
 Santo and Johnny, 56
 Sarkisian, Cher, 142
 Scaggs, Boz, 315
 Scarface, 323
 Schaffner, Joe, 160
 Schifrin, Lalo, 206
 Schneider, Ronnie, 119
 Schon, Neal, 225–26
 the Scorpions, 286
 Scorsese, Martin, 252
 Scott, Tom, 248
 Scott-Heron, Gil, 316, 322
 Seals and Crofts, 268
 the Searchers, 126
 the Security of the First World (S1W), 322
 Sedaka, Neil, 53, 64
 Seeger, Pete, 65, 67, 135, 137, 252
 Selassie, Haile, 251
 Selena, 307, 308–9
 Selena y Los Dinos, 308
 Selway, Phil, 353–55
 Seraphine, Danny, 181, 189–91
 Sessions, Roger, 367
 Severinsen, Doc, 296
 Seville, David, 55–56
 the Sex Pistols, 337–38, 358
 Shaggy, 334
 Shakira, 292, 308, 334
 Shakur, Tupac, 324
 Sha-Na-Na, 370
 Shane, Bob, 66
 the Shangri-Las, 237
 Sharp, Dee Dee, 73
 Sharpton, Rev. Al, 155
 Shaw, Arnold, 148, 338
 Shaw, Charles, 292
 Shawnaa, 328

- Shep and the Limelights, 59, 60
 Sheridan, Tony, 81–82
 Sherman, Barry L., 291
 the Shirelles, 64, 247
 Shirley and Company, 296
 Shocking Blue, 343
 Shorter, Wayne, 242–244, 247
 Sibelius, Jean, 206
 Sid Vicious, 337
 Sigur Ros, 353
 the Silver Beatles, 80–81
 Silverman, Stanley, 206
 Simmons, Gene, 282
 Simmons, Joseph, 319
 Simon, Carly, 248
 Simon, Paul, 139–41, 153, 248, 252, 265
 Simon and Garfunkel, 139–41
 Sinatra, Frank, 9, 32, 57, 188
 the Singing Nun, 65
 Sistah Souljah, 325
 Skaggs, Ricky, 257
 Slash, 284
 Slayer, 237, 287, 368
 Slick, Grace, 171–72, 176, 336
 Slipnot, 286
 the Slits, 349
 Sly and the Family Stone, 161–62, 176, 226
 Small Faces, 177, 222
 Smashing Pumpkins, 351
 Smith, Bessie, 152
 Smith, Clifford, 324
 Smith, Fred “Sonic,” 341
 Smith, James Todd, 320
 Smith, Mark E., 338
 Smith, Patti, 341
 Smokey Robinson and the Miracles, 158, 159
 Snap!, 327
 Snider, Dee, 369
 Snoop Doggy Dogg, 266, 323–24, 329–30, 370
 Snow, Hank, 16, 30
 the Soft Machine, 242
 Soloff, Lew, 186–88
 Sondheim, Stephen, 294
 Sonic Youth, 350, 351
 Sonny and Cher, 142
 Soul, Jimmy, 72
 Soul Asylum, 351
 Soule, Debra, 315
 the Soul Giants, 209
 the Soul Stirrers, 150, 161
 Soundgarden, 287, 289, 358
 the Southern-Hillman-Furay Band, 143
 Spann, Otis, 22, 34
 Spector, Phil, 101, 153
 Spencer, Jeremy, 223
 the Spice Girls, 304
 the Spinners, 295
 Springsteen, Bruce, 229–30, 233, 265, 292, 370
 Spungion, Nancy, 337
 Spyro Gyra, 244
 Squire, Chris, 204–5
 Stacy Q, 358
 Staind, 286, 288, 292
 Stallone, Sylvester, 308
 Starkey, Richard. *See* Starr, Ringo
 Starr, Kay, 9, 26
 Starr, Maurice, 267
 Starr, Ringo, 83, 101–2, 292.
 See also the Beatles
 Starsailor, 350
 the Starship, 172
 Starski, Lovebug, 316
 Static-X, 315
 the Status Quo, 326
 Steely Dan, 225, 246, 357–58
 Stefani, Gwen, 351
 Steppenwolf, 279–80
 Stereo MCs, 306
 the Steve Miller Band, 176
 Stevens, Cat, 249
 Stevens, Ray, 56
 Stewart, Ian, 115
 Stewart, Jim, 151–52
 Stewart, Rod, 222–23, 233, 246, 292, 297
 Stewart, Sylvester. *See* Stone, Sly
 Stills, Stephen, 142–43, 250–51
 Sting, 233, 292, 323, 341–42
 Stockhausen, Karlheinz, 211
 Stoller, Mike, 151
 Stone, Sly, 161–62, 176, 226
 Stone Temple Pilots, 351
 Stookey, Paul, 67–68, 252
 Storm, Rory, 83
 Stradlin, Izzy, 284
 Strait, George, 257
 Stravinsky, Igor, 209, 211
 Streisand, Barbra, 297
 the String Cheese Incident, 260
 the Strokes, 352
 Strong, Barrett, 157
 the Stylistics, 295
 Styx, 228, 357
 the Sugarcubes, 355
 the Sugar Hill Gang, 316–318
 Suicidal Tendencies, 343
 Sullivan, Ed, 57, 85–86, 116–17
 Sullivan, Niki, 50
 Summer, Donna, 236, 296, 309–12
 Sumner, Gordon. *See* Sting
 the Supremes, 159, 160, 163–64, 305

- Sutcliffe, Stu, 80–82, 94
 Sweat, Keith, 327
 Symphonic Metamorphosis, 191
 the System of a Down, 288
 Szatmary, David, 370

 T. Rex, 336
 the Talking Heads, 341
 Tamia, 328
 the Tangerine Dream, 267, 314
 Taupin, Bernie, 224
 Tavares, 297
 Taylor, Dallas, 250
 Taylor, Dick, 115
 Taylor, James, 126, 188, 248
 Taylor, Mick, 119, 125.
 See also the Rolling Stones
 Tchaikovsky, Peter, 206
 the Technotronics, 292
 the Teddy Bears, 54
 Television, 351
 the Temptations, 158, 160–61, 163, 295
 Terminator X, 322
 Terrell, Jean, 163–64
 Terrell, Tammi, 159
 Tharpe, Sister Rosetta, 149
 Theremin, Leon, 75
 Thomas, David, 342
 Thomas, Rufus, 317
 Thompson, Charles Michael Kitteridge, IV, 343
 Thompson, Chester, 245
 Thornton, Big Mama, 19, 175
 the Three-6 Mafia, 238
 Timberlake, Justin, 303–4
 TLC, 327
 the Tokens, 65
 Toly, Signe, 171
 Tom and Jerry, 139
 Tommy James and the Shondells, 233
 Tool, 289, 353
 the Tornadoes, 64, 113
 Torrence, Dcan, 69
 the Tower of Power, 176, 245
 Townshend, Pete, 181, 202–4
 the Toy Factory, 254
 Traffic, 177, 188, 222
 the Traveling Willburys, 101
 Travers, Mary, 67–68, 252
 Travis, Randy, 257
 Travolta, John, 256, 297
 Tresvant, Ralph, 327
 Trice, Obie, 326
 Tricky, 306
 Tritt, Travis, 257, 260, 269–73
 Triumvirat, 242

 the Troggs, 127
 Tucker, Ken, 211–12, 220, 285, 339
 Tucker, Maureen, 339–40
 Turner, Elgin, 324
 Turner, Ike, 119, 156–57, 178
 Turner, Joe, 19, 22, 27
 Turner, Tina, 119, 156–57, 178, 232, 265
 the Turtles, 317
 Twain, Shania, 258–59, 273
 Twin, Aphex, 306
 Twisted Sister, 237, 286, 368
 Twitty, Conway, 52
 Tyler, Steven, 318

 U2, 230–32, 333
 U-God, 324
 Ulrich, Lars, 285–86
 U-Roy, 316
 US3, 328
 Usher, 334

 Vai, Steve, 286
 Valens, Richie, 50, 307
 Valli, Frankie, 65
 Vandross, Luther, 266, 291, 322
 Van Halen, Alex, 284–85
 Van Halen, Eddie, 181, 284–86, 299
 Van Halen (band), 284–85
 Vanilla Fudge, 177
 Vanilla Ice, 314, 320–21, 325
 Van Leer, Thijs, 242
 Van Winkle, Robert. *See* Vanilla Ice
 Van Zant, Ronnie, 228
 Varèse, Edgard, 209, 211
 Vath, Sven, 306
 Vaughan, Ivan, 79–80
 Vedder, Eddie, 347–48
 Vee, Bobby, 37, 53, 64, 247
 Velvet Underground, 339–42
 Venom, 368, 370
 the Ventures, 56
 Verne, Larry, 65
 Verve, 317
 Vicious, Sid, 337
 the Village People, 297
 Vincent, Gene, 35, 52, 113
 the Vines, 352
 Vinton, Bobby, 53, 64

 the Wailing Wailers, 251
 Wakeman, Rick, 21, 181, 204–5, 212, 240
 Walker, Jerry Jeff, 256
 Waller, Gordon, 126
 the Wallflowers, 252
 Ward, Billy, 149

Ward, Clara, 152
 Warhol, Andy, 339
 the Warlocks, 172
 W.A.S.P., 286, 368
 Waters, Muddy, 46, 48, 115, 127, 149
 Watts, Charlie, 114–15.
 See also the Rolling Stones
 Watts Prophets, 322
 Wayne Fontana and the Mind-Benders, 126
 Weather Report, 21, 243, 247
 the Weavers, 9, 65
 Weezer, 350
 Weir, Bob, 172–75
 Weiss, Jerry, 185–86
 Welk, Lawrence, 64
 Wells, Kitty, 269
 Wells, Mary, 158, 159
 Wenner, Jan, 96
 Weston, Kim, 159
 Wetton, John, 241
 Wexler, Jerry, 151–153
 Whalberg, Mark. *See* Marky Mark
 the Whiskey Hill Singers, 66
 Whitburn, Joel, 266, 285
 White, Alan, 204–5
 White, Barry, 317
 White, Charles, 42
 White, Fred, 245
 White, Jack, 352
 White, Maurice, 244–45
 White, Meg, 352
 White, Verdine, 244–45
 the White Elephant, 191
 Whitesnake, 286
 the White Stripes, 352
 The Who, 139, 202–4, 221, 236
 Whodini, 318
 Widespread Panic, 260, 261
 Wilk, Brad, 287
 Williams, Alan, 80
 Williams, Billy, 38
 Williams, Hank, 49, 152, 269
 Williams, Hank, Jr., 260
 Williams, Lenny, 245
 Williams, Tentria “Michelle,” 305
 Williams, Tony, 39
 Williamson, Bobby, 38
 Williamson, Sonny Boy, 223
 Willis, Chuck, 150–51
 Wills, Bob, 46
 Wilson, Brian, 69–71, 74–76

Wilson, Carl, 69–71, 74–76, 190
 Wilson, Dennis, 69–71, 74–76, 190
 Wilson, Harold, 86
 Wilson, Jackie, 156, 178
 Wilson, Mary, 163–64
 Wilson, Tom, 211
 Winfield, Chuck, 186–88
 Wings, 101
 Winston, George, 267
 Winwood, Steve, 188, 222
 Wolfman Jack, 58
 Wonder, Stevie, 101, 121, 159–63, 224, 252, 265, 295
 Wood, Andrew, 347
 Wood, Chris, 180, 222
 Wood, Ronnie, 121, 222.
 See also the Rolling Stones
 Woods, Corey, 324
 Woods, Phil, 246
 Wooler, Bob, 82
 Wooly, Sheb, 56
 Wray, Link, 55, 56
 Wright, Eric. *See* Eazy E
 Wright, Johnny, 304
 Wu-Tang Clan, 324, 329
 Wyman, Bill, 115, 121.
 See also the Rolling Stones

X, 342–43

the Yardbirds, 125, 127–28, 170, 181, 222, 276
 Yarrow, Peter, 67–68, 252
 Yauch, Adam, 320
 the Yeah, Yeah, Yeahs, 352, 353
 Yes, 204–5, 221, 240, 357
 the Ying Yang Twins, 328
 Yoakam, Dwight, 257
 Yorke, Thom, 353–55
 You Am I, 352
 Young, Andre. *See* Dr. Dre
 Young, Neil, 142–43, 250–51, 255, 348, 369
 Young, Wanda, 160
 Young and Useless, 320
 the YoungBloodz, 328
Your Hit Parade, 57

 Zappa, Frank, 209–12, 236, 280, 286, 369, 370
 Zawinul, Joe, 242–43
 Zimmerman, Robert. *See* Dylan, Bob
 Zinner, Nick, 353
 the Zombies, 127
 Zoom, Billy, 342–43

ROCK AND ROLL

SIXTH
EDITION

Stuessy ■ Lipscomb

Rock and Roll is many things: It is show biz, it is money, it is record contracts, top 40 radio and role models. It is all this and much more, but strip all that away and one still comes to one inescapable fact: Rock and Roll is a musical style. Many books speak of performers' lives, tell amusing stories, and reveal sales statistics but neglect to describe what is fundamental to all of the above; the music.

Rock and Roll: Its History and Stylistic Development remains the definitive academic resource for this subject. I have yet to see a textbook match it. I plan to continue using this text as long as it remains in print.

Douglas Jones, Jefferson Community College, Louisville, KY

In my opinion it is a very good textbook.

Terence J. O'Grady, University of Wisconsin, Green Bay, WI

I think that the Stuessy & Lipscomb text is the best on the market for my needs.

James F. Payne, University of Nebraska, Kearny, NE

PEARSON

Prentice
Hall

Upper Saddle River, NJ 07458
www.prenhall.com

ISBN-13: 978-0-13-601068-5
ISBN-10: 0-13-601068-7



9780136010685
2015-10-09 9:32

22